

Palmerin D'Oliva.
THE FIRST PART:

SHEWING
THE MIRROVR OF NOBILITIE, the Map of Honour, Anatomie of rare
Fortunes, Heroicall preferences of Love, wonder
of Chivalrie, and the most accomplished
Knight in all perfection.

Presenting to Noble minds, their Courtly desires,
to Gentiles their expectations, and to the inferiour
sort, how to imitate their Vertues: Handled with
modestie to shun offence, yet delightfull
for Recreation.

Written in Spanish, Italian, and French: and from
them turned into *English*, by A. M. one of the
Messengers of his Majesties
Chamber.

Patere & Abstine.



LONDON,
Printed for B. ALSON and T. FAVVET, dwelling in
Grub-street neere the lower Pumpes.
1637.



TO
THE VVORSHIPFULL,
M^r. FRANCIS YONG, of Brent-
Pellam, in the County of Hertford Esquire,
and to Mistrisse SUSAN YONG his wife,
and my most kind Mistrisse, health, and
their hearts contentment, con-
nually wished.



Being indebted to you both for your ma-
nifold kindneses. I am bold to contri-
bute my Labour begun, concerning the
course of my promised Historiet, this
being the first part of PALMERIN D'
OLIVA, ringleader to all the rest, and
therefore the Originall from whence they which follow
have bin derived. Though in my translating they came last
which should have bin first, now I have good hope, that by
the reprinting of them over againe, as length they will
come to a just order, and each have his place as their course
describeth. The Second part of this will shortly follow: then
the Third and last that I am now in hand withall, which
conclu-

The Epistle Dedicatorie.

concluding with PALMERIN of England, and PRY-
MALLION of Grecco; their severall last Part, will
perfeet the whole Historie, and make it compleat in eve-
ry Part. As therfore, so I commend this to your Worship-
full protection, remaining alwayes yours with my most
endeavours, and praying that your Prosperity may
never faile

Your poore well-willer
till death,

A. M.



TO



To the Reader.



When I finished my second Part
of *Palmerin*, of *England*, I
promised this worke of *Pal-
merin D'Oliua*, because it de-
pended so especially on the o-
ther: to discharge that debt,
for promise is no lesse accoun-
ted, with the new yeere I send
him abroad, a friendly com-
panion for the long evenings,

and a fit recreation for other vacant times.

But because some (perhaps) will make exceptions a-
gainst me, that being but one Booke in other languages,
I now devide it twaine: my answer is, That to glut men
with delight, may make them surfeit, and so in expecting
thanks for my paines, I should remaine condemned by
generall misliking. Beside, a Booke growing too bigge
in quantitie, is Profitable neither to the minde nor the
purse: for that men are now so wise and the world so hard,
as they love not to buy pleasure at unreasonable price. And
yet the first Part will entice them to haue the second, when
(it may be alledged) the cost is as great, though it had come
altogether: yet I am of the minde, that a man grutched
not so much at a little money, payd at severall times, as hee
doth at once, for this advantage he hath, in meane time he
may imploy halfe his money on more needfull occasions,
and raise some benefit toward buying the second part. A-
gaine, the other part will be new at the comming forth,

To the Reader.

where now it would be stale : For such are Affections now a dayes, that a Booke a fennight old, is scant worth the reading. Thus no injury is offered by dividing my Booke, but profit both to you and mee : Yours I have rehearsed, and mine is, that a little pause doth well in so long a labour; beside, this advantage would I take, that if my first Part deserved no liking, you should never be offended by me with the Second.

Yet herein I am encouraged, that what hath past with so great applyance in divers Languages, can hardly merite to be despised in *England*, being matter altogether of delight, and no way offensive : For Noble and Gentle minds, are farre from injuring the Historie, that hath so highly pleased the Emperours, Kings, and mighty Potentates, if then the Inferiour sort mislike, it is because they are not capable of so especiall deserving.

And yet I am perswaded, that both one and other will friendly entertaine *Palmerin D'Oliua*; because his History is so plentifully stored with choyse conceit, variety of matter and exquisite conveyance : as nothing can be re-proved but my simple Translation, yet that I hope will be pardoned too, in that to translate, allowes little occasion of fine Pen-work.



THE FIRST PART
OF THE ANCIENT
and honourable Historie of the
valiant Prince *Palmerin D'Oliua*,
Emperour of *Constantinople*;

Sonne to King *FLORENDOS* of *Macedonia*,
and the Faire *GRIANA*, Daughter to *Remigius*, Emperour of *Constantinople* :
a History full of singular and
Courtly recreation.

CHAP. I.

Of the secret Love that the Prince *Tarissus* bare to the young Princesse *Griana*, and the arrivall of the Prince *Florendos* of *Constantinople*.



THE ancient Histories of the famous Emperours of *Constantinople* doe record, that the eighth Emperour succeeding *Constantine*, the Founder of that ancient and famous Citty, was named *Remigius*, who governed so justly, and with such exceeding honour, as not onely his Subjects intirely loved him, but of the Kingdomes about him
be

The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

he was so feared and reuerenced, that his Empire increased more large then in the time of his Predecessors. This Renowned was of such a Princely and munificent mind that no knight whatsoeuer came into his Court, without very honourable respect and bountifull rewards: expressing the good nature of a virtuous Prince, whose deeds were held of no small reckoning amongst his very Enemies. He married with the King of Hungarias Daughter, a Princesse for wit and Beauty, equall with any of her time, which caused her to be so especially loved of her Lord the Emperour, as he altogether gaue over the exercise of Armes: notwithstanding, his Court did not diminish one tole of the former glory for good and hardy knights, but daily increased in such sort, as that he took great delight to haue young Princes, knights and Gentlemen, nurtured and educated from their Infancie in his Palace, especially after the Emperesse had brought him a Sonne, which was named Caniano, at whose Birth was no little reioycing throught the whole Empire.

Within two yeares after, she was likewise deliuered of a goodly Daughter named Griana, who growing to foureteen yeares of age, was of such rare beauty and singular good grace, as those that beheld her, esteemed her for the chieftest piece of workmanship that euer Nature framed.

Whereupon it chanced, that Tarisius Sonne to the King of Hungaria (who had bene brought up in company with the young Prince Caniano) fell into such amorous conceit of the young Princesse, as he deuoted himselfe onely to her service, being unable to concesso the object of his affections, but that time made her acquainted with the cause of his alteration. Many meanes he found to enuise her good opinion towards him, but she carrying a religious zeale to live in some other Climate, made no reckoning of his importunate and diligent seruice, which was to a Heel of tormenting thoughts upon Tarisius, seeing his fate and seruice so deeply despised.

Nevertheless

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

Nevertheless (to compass his intent) he desired his Cousin Caniano, to cause a Triumph be published whereunto all knights might be summoned, as well strangers as others: not doubting, but he should spend so well in deeds of Armes, as thereby he might deserve the loue of the saye Griana, and so afterwards make meanes by the Emperesse to demand her in marriage, all which he concealed from his Cousin Caniano: who very gladly did consent to what Tarisius had requested, watching opportunity to finde the Emperour his Father at lecture, when he made his Highnesse acquainted with the whole enterprize, of himselfe and his Cousin Tarisius, desiring him that all knights might haue warning for preparation, against a day the next month appointed for the purpose. The Emperour was very well pleased with his Sonnes request, accounting himselfe highly honoured by his demand: whereupon he caused heralds of Armes presently to be dispatched, to signifie his intended Tournament throughtout all Countries farre and nere.

In the meane while Tarisius could not rest day nor night, but still endeoured to doe what he iudged might please the Princesse Griana, to whom as yet had not uttered the effect of his longing desires, albeit, by exterior actions he daily made shew sufficient of his tormenting passions. But it so fell out not long after, that one day in her walking he had sought her alone from all the other Ladies and Gentlemen, in a place commodious for a Louers discourse, where falling from one argument to another, the fury of his oppressions imboldened him so farre, that at length he brake with her in manner following:

Goddame, you are not ignorant of the honourable assembly, that is appointed at the feast ensuing, when I hope to receiue the order of knighthood, and if it shall like you to thinke so well of me, as to grant me one request, euen enough for you to afford me, perswade your selfe that I shall imagine

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*,

imagine my fortune equall with the happiest knights that euer liued, in that it may be the onely meane, whereby I shall enioy the prize and honour of the Triumphy.

Griana knowing assuredly that Tarisius bare her great affection, as I haue before rehearsed, returned him this answer. In both Cousin, it would please me maruellously well to be the meane of so good fortune as you promise your selfe: Nevertheless, I haue not learned so little modesty as to grant any thing before I know what is desired.

When Tarisius vnderstood her modest excuse, he perswaded himselfe that he should obtaine that of her, whereof vntill that instant he had liued in despair: whereupon the teares standing in his eyes, he began in this manner. I humbly beseech you good Madam, to take in worth what I am to acquaint you with: for when I determined to knowther my griefe in secret, the extremitie of my affection grew to such a surpluse, as it brake the strings of my thoughts, almost to wey for euer silent, to reuenge that to you which my selfe dare but reuerently thinke, such is my feare to displease you, otherwise, I know no meane can warrant me from sodaine and cruell death: so settled is the vnspeotted Love I beare you, which when I strue to overcome and my selfe also, the more I would decrease it, the more it augmenteth, and that so strongly, as while you are in presence, my spirit forsaketh euery part of me, to liue in you onely. For which cause I haue determined (if you thinke it good) to request you of the Emperour your father for my Wife, and if he regard me with so much honour, the Realme of Hungaria may well challenge, and my selfe likewise, the highest rone in earthly felicity, hauing a Mistresse of such unspeakable quality. In the meane time, if you please to bestow on me any Iewell or fauour, commanding me to weare it as your knight and seruant: you shall well perceiue how aduenturous Love will be in defence of my right, by the advantage I shall recouer in the vertue of a gulf so acceptable.

Griana,

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 1.

Griana, who made but slender account of his passions, and being not well pleased that he held her with such vaine discourses: modestly returned him this answer. If you had such regard of me as I well deserue, you would not attempt me with speeches so vnbefitting my hearing: for if your desire be such as you giue me to vnderstand, you ought to make it knowne to the Emperour or Emperesse, who haue greater authority ouer me then I haue my selfe. Wherefore I desire you henceforth not to aduenture the like on perill of your life, otherwise I shall let you know how highly you offend me: on which condition I am content for this time to pardon your want of discretion, in that I perceiue my selfe to be the onely cause thereof, granting you time and leysure thus priuately to assaile me, for which oversight, I repent me at the very heart. With which words shee slung away and left him alone, declaring by her Countenance to be offended with his request in that she desired rather to dye then accept him for her husband, or to allow him the name of a friend.

If then Tarisius was giuen into a quandarie, we need not maruaile: wherefore troubled as he was, and not caring greatly whither he went, he entred the Emperesse chamber, where she and her Sonne Caniano stood conferring together: without saluting the one or other, he sat downe in a Chaire, and gaue such bitter sighes, as the Emperesse hearing, was somewhat moued therewith, doubting he had eithere receiued some great injury, or else could not prouide himselfe so sufficiently as hee would for the Triumphy, whereupon she left her Sonne, and calling Tarisius aside, thus began with him:

Nephew, I see you very melancholy, which makes me to iudge, that you want some needfull thing for the Tourneyment, which my Sonne hath caused to be published. With which words she beheld Tarisius more wisely then she had done before, and perceiued the teares to trickle downe his cheekes,

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

cheetes, which made her more desirous to know the cause of his griefe, but his heart was so confounded and shut vp in anguish, as he could not speake one word vnto her. Neuerthelesse, the Emperesse who loued him as her owne Sonne, found so many meanes to perswade him, as in the end hee disclosed the loue he bare to *Griana*, and the answer likewise which she made him: whereby I am assured (quoth he) that nothing but death can cease my torments. The Emperesse who of her selfe did many times determine to make that marriage, (perceiuing now how fitly the occasion offered it selfe) began to resolve on the consummation therof: and to content her Nephew, in excusing the Princesse *Griana*, spake as followeth. Doe you Nephew mislike the answers of my Daughter? Belieue me, therein she did but her duty: for she cannot dispose of her selfe, being young, and vnder controul, but by consent of the Emperour and I, whom you ought first to make acquainted with your request. But since I perceiue how you are affected, I promise you I will conferre with my Lord the Emperour: and hope to preuaile so wch in the cause, as you shall speed of that your most desire.

As they continued these discourses, they were giuen to vnderstand by a Messenger, that the Prince *Florendos* the Kings sonne of *Macedon*, was newly arriued with a train of company of knights. But his coming to the Emperour was not as his Claiffe or Subiect, because the Kingdome of *Macedon* was at that time no way beholding to the Empire, but onely to see the faire young Princesse *Griana*; the renowne of whose Beauty and vertues had so pierced his thoughts, as before he saw her, he loued and honoured her so that for this cause onely he journeyed to *Constantinople* where he was very honourably entertained, both of the Emperour and his Sonne *Caniano*, as also of the Emperesse and faire *Griana*, who oftentimes heard him reckoned and esteemed amongst the most honourable and gracious Princes that liued at that day.

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

CHAP. II.

How the Emperesse conferred with the Emperour, as concerning the Marriage of their Daughter *Griana* with *Tarissus*, Sonne to the King of *Hungaria*; whereof they both determined, and of that which happened in the meane time.



The Emperesse was not forgetfull of her promise made to her Nephew *Tarissus*, but endeauoured by all meanes possible to finde the Emperour at such leysure, as she might impart the whole vnto him: and because she had so hardily taken the matter vpon her, shee would gladly it should sort to effect, as commonly Women are couetous of their owne desires: Therefore no maruell if she were earnest in following her intent.

Soone after, walking alone with the Emperour, and smoothly couering the matter she was desirous he should swallow, she desired him to grant her one request, whereof she would not willingly be denyed. The Emperour neuer before hearing her so importunate, consented at the first to whatsoever she demanded: Now perswading her selfe, to speed, thus she began.

My Lord, hauing often considered with my selfe, that our Daughter *Griana* is of yeares and discretion able for a husband, I am the more desirous to see her honourably betrothed. And for that the young Prince *Tarissus* hath bene trained vp in your Court, and (which I little thought) some good-will appeareth too betwene them: I should thinke it not amisse to vntie them in marriage together: for hardly shall we finde (in mine opinion) a Lord of greater blood and birth then he, being by ye apparant to the Crowne and King-

Kingdome of Hungaria : besides, they haue beene so long time conuersant together in their young yeares, will entertaine a more speciall regard of loue betwene them, then can be in any other that may moue the question to her. Madame (answered the Emperour) thee is your Child, and I doe not thinke but you woud her good : therfore I like the motion well, for that indeed I esteeme so well of Tarisus, as of mine owne Sonne, and since we haue so happily fallen into these discourses, we will forthwith certifie the King his Father by our Ambassadors, that wee may vnderstand his opinion herein. The Emperesse gratified her Lord with very hearty thanks, being not a little glad she had so well prevailed, wherfore she immediately aduertised Tarisus. But for Griana, her affection was else where, for she bare a certaine secret good liking to Florendos, so soone as she beheld him, fearing so great report of his knightly bounty and prowesse, so that beholding them together, and their eyes deliuering the good content of each other, one might easily iudge, that Loue had so mightily mastered her thoughts, as if hee consented, shee had set downe her rest for her choyse, and hee on the other side was drawne into the same compasse, notwithstanding each of them (for the time) concealed what they rather desired should be knowne betwene them. Yet this hidden fire stroue to gaine place of issue ; for diuers times the Princesse Griana being amongst her Ladies, talking of such knights as woud shew themselves at the Tournament, the Prince Florendos was commonly first spoken of, and so highly woud the Ladies commend him beyond all the other, as Griana could not re- strain from changing colour, so that the alteration hee found in her Spirit might be evidently perceived, howbeit none of the Ladies as then noted it : and thus she continued till the Feast of Saint Maria d'Augusta, which was the Day appointed for the Tournament, on which day the Emperour knighted his Sonne Caniano, and Tarisus, Nephew to the

the Emperesse, In honour wherof, hee held a greater and more magnificent Court, then before times he had done : for he suffered the Ladies to accompanie the knights at the Table : Albeit they were not wont to doe so often till that time, yet full well it pleased the Prince Florendos, who sate opposite to the Princesse Griana ; During which time of dinner, though many piercing Lookes, and smothered sighes were sent from each other, as messengers of their semblable opinions, yet cunningly they shadowed all from being discovered, and after the Tables were withdrawn, and each one preparing for the Journey, Florendos so well behaved himselfe, as hee found the means to speake privately with his new friend : and thus he began :

Madame, the Heavens haue not a little fauoured me, in setting vs so commodiously together : What I may shew before I enter the Lyons Royall, the occasion why I left the Realme of Macedon, to visite my Lord the Emperour. I sweare to you upon my knightly faith, that your Gracious selfe was the onely cause of my Journey : and while I live, I shall euermore adventure my selfe, in ought that may stand with your favour and liking ; And the first argument of my happinesse, I should account, if you woud Command me this day to arme my selfe for your knight : Otherwise, I must be content to absent my selfe, being assured, that without your regard, it is impossible for me to doe any thing that can returne me estimation and Honour. And albeit I haue not as yet done any service to you, whereby I should deserue to be accepted : Yet such is the hope I repose in your vertuous nature, as you will not refuse my honest request, being the first I ever desired of you, and not the last (I trust) shall doe your Honour. Now as you haue heard before, Griana earnestly affected Florendos : Nevertheless, as a modest and well advised Princesse, doubting least hee feigned those speeches of course, dissembling her selfe to be somewhat displeased, returned this Answer :

I did not thinke my Lord Florendos, that you would so faire forget your selfe, to hold me with speeches not be-
 ming the Daughter of so great an Emperour as I am; He-
 verthelesse, knowing you are a stranger, and Ignorant (it
 may be) of the modestie which should defend Knights, deba-
 sing with Ladies, I will not be such rigour towards you
 as I ought, yet must I tell you, that I finde my selfe offended.
 You desire that as my Knight you may enter the Journey:
 for that I grant you, to the end I may perceiue the effect of
 the promise, which each one so much commendeth in you,
 the rest, it is my pleasure that you should beare.

Madame (quoth he) if I haue vsed any such speeches as
 agree not with your patience, for Gods sake (in my excuse)
 accuse my small compasse of libertie, which remaineth onely
 at your disposition. What quoth she, thinke you, that I will
 lobe any but he that must and ought to be my Husband? Ah
 sweet Lady, said Florendos, that is it that I so earnestly de-
 sire: and thinke not that I sollicite you with any other kind
 of lobe, but onely to make you the Mistress of my selfe, and
 altogether to dispose of me and mine: for proofe whereof, I
 will hereafter imploy my selfe in the Emperours service, in
 such sort (as if you like it) I hope to purchase his consent.
 Truly Sir, quoth she, that onely appertaines to the Empe-
 rour and not to me, to whom you are to make knowne what
 you intend: for he hath Authority to command, and I am
 bound by duty to obey. At which wordes the Emperesse cal-
 led her away; when Florendos making her courteous re-
 verence, departed to his Chamber to arme himselfe, for
 many knights were entred the City, and he in short space
 came thither for company: where he behaued himselfe with
 such Valour, as he not onely got the Honour of the first day,
 but of the foure dayes following, while the Journey enu-
 red, and wonne the Prize, which Caniano had prepared for
 him that best deserved it, which made him be greatly este-
 med of the Emperour, and of the whole Court in generall,
 especially

especially of the sayre Griana, whose heart by little and lit-
 tle, Lobe brought in subjection, to the no small content of
 Florendos, which doubtlesse had the Prince Tarisus beheld,
 I imagine he would haue hardly liked it.

But now during the time of these great feasts and Tri-
 umphes, Fortune the sworne Enemy to all quietnesse, pre-
 sented the Emperour with other occasions, to cut off these
 pastimes and Courtly deuises: for after many of the
 knights assembled at his Court, had taken leaue to returne
 into their Countreys, Gamezio Sonne to the Soldane of
 Babylon, who was on the Seas with a mighty Armie, in-
 tending to conquer Alexandria, was by extremitie of winds
 and weather, driven into the Straights beside Constanti-
 nople. Which when the Pilots and Partners perceiued,
 not one amongst them but greatly rejoyced at this great
 good fortune, but chiefly Gamezio, who perswaded himselfe
 that his Gods had sent him thither, that the most Noble and
 flourishing Citty of the world might fall into his hands:
 whereupon the windes somewhat appeased, and the Seas
 calmed, he assembled the chiefe and principall Captaines of
 his Armie, and thus he began to speake:

My good Friends, I beleue assuredly, that our great gods
 would not suffer us to arrive in Alexandria, because wee
 went against them of our owne Law and Religion, but ra-
 ther it liked them better, that we should aduersitate our selues
 to this Countrey of Christians, eyther to rinate it altoge-
 ther, or at least to bring it under our Obedience. Therefore
 I am determined at this time, to deferre the rebenge of the
 insults, which the King Calameno did to the Soldane, and
 as much as in me lyes, imploy my Forces in Conquest of
 this Countrey: for which cause, I desire that each of you
 would particularly incourage your people, assuring them (if
 we can conquer this Citty) the Riches thereof will counter-
 baile their pains and travaile.

The Captaines failed not to accomplish their Charge to
 the

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

the bittermost, summoning every one presently to Armes: So providing their Shipe, their Ensignes, and all things else needfull for their defence, they hoysed their sayles, making towards the Shore, where with such provision as they had they took Landing, making such a noise with their Drums, Trumpets, and clamours, as was heard with no small feare in every part of the Citie. Nevertheless, they were received with better resistance then they looked for, as following the Discourse, you shall at large understand.

CHAP. III.

Of the Battell fought before the Citie of *Constantinople*, betweene the Emperours power, and the Armie of *Gamezio*.



As soon as this huge Armie on the Sea was discovered by the Sentinels of the Citie of *Constantinople*, the rumour arose so great, as the people ranne on heapes to defend the Haven, where the Moores thought to have made their first entry. In the meane while, *Canniano*, *Tarissius*, and the other principall knights with their men at Armes, put themselves in Equipage, ordaining their Army in such warlike manner, as now they marched forth of the Citie, to succour those places where the Moores gave most eager Assault. The Prince *Florendos* being left behind, made no little hast to gather his Company: And as hee galloped with them by the Emperours Pallace, he espied the Princesse *Griana*, standing at her Chamber window, casting many a ruefull look towards the Gates of the Citie, which so deeply pierced the gentle Princes heart, as immediately he said within himselfe. By Heaven (*Sweet Lady*) either will I dye this day

Emperour of *Constantinople* | PART. I.

day, as remours the griefe that seemeth so neere to touch you. And with this resolution hee putting spurs to his horse; it was not very long before he got among the thickest of the Moores, where he beheld the Enemy so strong, and the Christians so weak, as the day was like to prove dangerous and dismall. For the Prince *Gamezio* was esteemed one of the best knights through all Asia, and that day he behaved himselfe so roughly amongst the Christians, as sooth to say, they were enforced to retire towards the Citie.

Whilst when the Emperour beheld, who remained with no great strength to defend the Citie, he was not a little grieved to see his men turne their backs on their Enemies, and dispose themselves in such fearefull and dismayng sort. But *Florendos* and the Prince *Canniano* used such meanes, as they got them some in Aray againe, and returned on the Enemy with a fresh and hardy charge. *Tarissius* shewed himselfe very valiant, and adventuresome, striving by all the meanes he could to equall the Prince *Florendos*, who that day gave testimony of most rare exploits: So these two noble Gentlemen past from watch to watch, sending all to the earth that durst withstand them. *Gamezio* seeing his men so bloody slaughtered on every side, meeting with *Tarissius*, would take revenge on him, delivering him such a cruell stroke on the head with his sword, as soone he fell to the ground so astonished, as his Enemy might even then have slaine him: And so he had done but for the Prince *Florendos*, who seeing the Moore advancing himselfe on his Approps, to ready a full stroke at *Tarissius* on the ground, listed him quite out of his saddle with his lance, and bare him so rudely to the earth, as breaking his neck with the fall, he gave up the ghost.

When the Moores beheld *Gamezio* their Generall slaine, and the Christians make such havoc of them, their hearts falling them to make further resist, and so fast as they could

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

towards their Ships, when had not the night too soon presented them, not one had escaped death or taken Prisoner, notwithstanding, the greatest part were put to the sword, others making hast to get away by Boates, were drowned in the Sea, and many of chiefe account brought backe Prisoners; Thus with Altozie returned the Emperours potner backe to the City.

So many of the Moores as escaped to their Ships, being not a little glad they were so farre from their Enemies: set saile and returned towards the Soldane, to whom they declared the summe of their Misfortune, as also the Death of his sonne Gamezio; which tidings made him wel nie man with rage and anger. But being old and crazed with sickness, he could not goe in person to reuenge his death, which made him bothe and sweare, that in soone as his other Son came to yeares to beare Arms, he would send him with such a puissant strength, as easily he should destroy the Emperour and his Countrey: in the meane time he sent the Mansons to redeme them that were taken prisoners: where he will leaue the Soldane, and returns to Caniano, and the other Princes, who being now come againe to the Citie, the Emperour hauing heard the worthy seruice Florendos had done that same day (and how he had recelued some few dangerous wounds in the Battell) sent for him in all hast that might be to his Wallace, because his owne Chyrurgions and Physicians should haue care of him. So was Florendos brought very honourably to the Wallace, and conducted to a Chamber besaming his estate, where the Emperesse and Griana came presently to visite him: to whom the Prince Caniano did declare, how Tarisus had bene slaine by Gamezio, but that Florendos stepped betwene his death and him, but (quoth he,) the Moore excused Tarisus; for in my presence he gaue his last farewell to this world, so that now we may say the Altozie is ours, albeit before it hung in hard suspense.

While

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

While Caniano continued these and such like Speeches, Griana cast many a stout looke on the Prince Florendos, and he answered his object with the selfe same messengers of his heart. Thus contented they their generall passions with modest and vertuous regard, as none present could suspect their secret meaning. The Emperesse and her Daughter courteously taking their leaue, Florendos and his Chyrurgians we leane a while together, they to apply medicines to his wounds, and he the remembrance of his Mistress to his heart. On the morrow, the Emperour with his Retiue rode south of the Citie, to see the slaughtered bodies, among whom they found Gamezio, who was easily knowne by the richnesse of his Armour, which Caniano caused to be taken from the dead Body, and brought to Florendos, as the desert of his trauell; when the Emperour himselfe (the more to honour him) made present thereof to Florendos at his returne, with these Speeches:

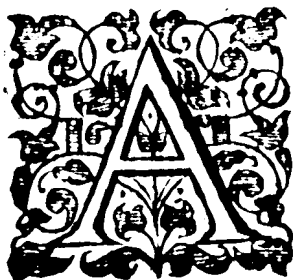
My noble Cousin, by your Valour and Knightly prowess, have I had the upperhand of mine Enemies: may I but live to requite thy good deserts, I shall account my selfe happie and fortunate: Notwithstanding, account of mee as thy Kinsman and continuall Friend, and bee there ought in my power shall like thee to demand, on the faith of a King I vow to give it thee.

Florendos most humbly thanked the Emperour, as well for the great Honour hee did him, as also for his large and beautifull promise, whereon he builded so assuredly, as he almost accounted sayre Griana for his owne: who with the Emperesse her Mother, came daily to visite him, by which meanes their mutuall Loue increased more and more, and Florendos recovered his health in the shorter time, which when he had obtained, he solicited the Emperour with this suite following.

The History of *Palmerin D'Oltra*.

CHAP. III.

How *Florendos* intreated the Emperour, to give him in Marriage his Daughter *Griana*, and what answer the Emperour made him.



After that *Florendos* was thoroughly healed of his wounds which he had received in fight against the Moores: finding the Emperour one day at leisure, and alone in his Chamber, he began to salute him, as hereafter followeth:

Most dread and soveraigne Lord, so Princely and gracious have your favours beene towards mee, since first I entred your royall Court, as the King my Father and I shall never answer such exceeding courtesie. And to the end this kindnesse may rather increase then any way diminish, I beseech your Highnesse not to deny me one request, which among the infinite number of your Princely graces towards mee, I shall account it to exceed all other. In briefe, it is the Princesse *Griana* your Daughter, whose love and honourable Fame, made me forsake the Realme of *Macedon*, onely to desire her in Marriage, if either any desert in mee, or your owne Princely good conceit, might repute me worthy of so high a favour. And for I would not your Highnesse should any way misconceive of me, as that the motion proceedeth from a youthfull and unadvised head, or that I have enterprized it without the good liking of the King my Father: I humbly desire your Majesty to rest satisfied, both in these and all other opinions, in that my Fathers consent, brought me with no little speed hither, and the hope of yours during my abode here,

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

heere, hath taught me to place my Love with discretion and continue it with honorable loyalte. With this addition (under your Highnesse correction) that were shee mine, as I am wholly hers, the faithfull service of a thankfull Son, would answer the gentlenesse of so good a Father, and the irrevocable vowes of holy Love, assure *Griana* of her *Florendos*.

Right dearly did the Emperour love the Prince *Florendos*, as had hee been his owne Sonne *Caniano*: his knightly valour and manifold other Vertues justly inducing him thereto: and gladly he would have consented to his Request if his promise made unto *Tarilius* did not binde him to the contrary, whereupon he returned him this answer.

Believe me good Couzen, I am not a little a-grieved, that I cannot satisfie your gentle Request, for that *Tarilius*, Nephew to the Emperesse hath already prevented mee: to him have I past my promise for my Daughter, and daily I expect the Ambassadors comming from *Hungaria*, to finish the Marriage, so that I had rather loose the best of my Cities, then it should be said I falsified my word. Notwithstanding, of one thing I can assure you, that you are farre higher in my grace and favour then hee: yet necessity is without Law, and the regard of mine Honour must intreat you to hold me excused.

Greatly abashed was the Prince *Florendos*, seeing in one instant that hope stricken dead, that had maintained his life, since his coming to Constantinople: and so night in the head was he with the Emperours answer, as he stood a good while in a daze, not speaking one word; at last he began thus. God forbid, that so great a Prince should break his promise by my occasion: Nevertheless, my truth and loyalte to your Highnesse shall not any way diminish, but I shall remaine the most forward in Duty, of any that owe Service or Allegiance to your Majesty. Neither will I (said the Emperour) imagine the worse of you, but love

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

loue you rather better then I did befoze. Then entred officers, Noblemen and Gentlemen, which made them bzeake off from further speeches, and Florendos taking his leaue, went to his Chamber, so full of griefe and extreame beautifull, as easily he could haue bene induced to commit some violence vpon himselfe: but casting himselfe vpon his bed, he thus began to breath forth the furie of his passions, to ease the heauie burthen of his oppressed Spirit:

Unhappy wretch that I am beyond all other, what hope of life canst thou flatter thy selfe withall, seeing the man that should maintaine the continuance thereof, forbids thee (fond man) to hope any longer. What angry Planet not governed thy Ratiuite, that he to whom thou gapest life, should this day be the cause to end thine owne. Well woe me Tarisius, had I made trall of this inconvenience befoze, hardly should I haue put my person in such danger amongst the Moores, to sheld my life: but in defending the Sword out of thy sheate, I haue deseruely thrust it in mine owne, so that by lengthning thy dayes, I haue expired mine owne hate, and that with a death so miserable and cruel, as no Enemy whatsoever would wish to another. But were it not that my Duty to the good Emperour countermandeth me, thou couldest not with such ease either outbzeau me in my Loue, or thus vnrpe the gracious reborn of my Mistresse Grian, were affliction ballanced with desert, or lone measured by vertue, as it is by opinion. Notwithstanding, to dye for her Loue I shall account my selfe happy, in that she cannot but pittie my vnluckie death, and my spirit should passe with greater quiet to his end, if she knew with what content I take my destinie: but saye Grian, would God I had eether not saue thee at all, or soe tyme had bene favourable to me in choyse. At which words, the extremitie of his passions took away the liberty of his speech, so that he could not finish what he would gladly haue spoken, but falling from his Bed to the ground in a swoone, amazed

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 1.

amazed one of his Esquires that was in the next Chamber, who hearing the fall, ranne in immediately, where seeing his Master lying dead (in his judgement) ranne and called Frenato, who was Cousin to Florendos, and one that knew most of his priuate affaires, notwithstanding, he was ignorant in the cause of this accident, who taking him by in his armes, with cold water and Vinigar cast in his face, at length he got life into him againe: when Florendos opening his Eyes, and seeing his Cousin so busie about him, breathing forth two or three bitter sighes, said:

My deere friend and Cousin, I beseech you hinder not the end and issue of my life, for being out of all hope to recover my Lady Grian, there is no meane left to maintaine my life. When Frenato heard these words, he doubted that the Prince had receiued some contrary answer from the Emperour, as concerning the Marriage betwene him and his Daughter, for whose Love onely hee left the Kingdome of Macedon: wherefoze, he perceiving that she must be the onely meane to ease his torment, he began thus roundly to answer the Prince. And what of this? Must you therefore dispaire? Alas said Florendos, what would ye haue me doe? The Emperour hath long since past his promise for her to Tarisius, as his Highnesse assured me by his owne words. Very well Sir (answered Frenato) but doe you know if she haue given her consent? I promise you I am perswaded that she loves him not, but that her favourable regard is much more towards you then him: and soe you say so much, to morrow will I sound the bottome of this matter, so that (if I can) I will frustrate the Emperours intent towards Tarisius. Doe you in the meane time but learne to dissemble your griefe, and shew not your selfe male-content for anything that hath bene said: but be of good chere, and referre your fortune in this case to the successe of mine endeavours. These and such like perswasions Frenato said to the Prince, whom he thus left in his Chamber, and returned to the Palace as was his manner.

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliva*,

All this while the Emperour bethought himselfe on the speeches that had passed between him and Florendos, which made him the night following to discourse thereon with the Emperesse, perswading her, that she could moze willingly accept of him for his Sonne then Tarilius. But she who highly fauoured her Nephew, reproued his opinion with many answers, so that by importunate intreaties, teares, and other subtill fetches, which Women are wont to vse to accomplish their desires, she so farre dissuaded the Emperour, as he promised her againe not to giue her to any other, then to him to whom he first past his word. Of which words, the Emperesse was not a little glad, and therefore all that night she deuised, by what meanes she might from that time forward so much as in her lay, to hinder Florendos from speaking to her Daughter: whereupon she daily kept her Chamber of presence, and held a moze strict lookie on Griana then before she had done: which greatly increased the passions of Florendos, and brought him into so weak estate, as the learned Physicians could not deliuer the cause of his Sicknesse, to the no small grieve of the Emperour, but especially of Caniano his Sonne.

Yet for all this, would not the Emperesse at any time visite him; because she would hinder the occasion of her Daughters seeing him, rememb'ring what speeches had past betwene him and the Emperour. And albeit, Griana made no outward shew thereof, yet in her heart she was greatly displeased at her Mothers dealings, so that one day when her Brother Caniano came to see her, to recount vnto her in what extremity he had left his friendly company, and what grieve it would be to him if he dyed, as he greatly doubted: What my Lord (quoth she) it is not so I hope: Be certaine (quoth he) and I feare he will very hardly escape this day. At which words the water stood in her eyes, yet so well as she could she assembled her Passions: neuerthelesse, she could not hold it in, but said, I meruaile

Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

much that the Emperesse my Mother makes so tender account of him, as since his Sicknesse she would not touchsafe once to visite him: I feare she hath forgotten what god hee did for vs, that day when he valiantly slew the Turke Gamezio. Beleeue me (my good Lord and Brother) I am heartily sorrie for his Sicknesse, for if he dye (as God forbid, quoth she secretly) the Emperour my Father shall loose moze then he thinketh on: the great service he hath done for him already, may giue instance of my weedes, and he being the Sonne of so great a Prince as he is. By this time had such extreme grieve overburthened her heart, as she was constrained (feigning to goe to the Emperesse Chamber) to leave her Brother, that she might alone by her selfe bemoane her Friends hard Fortune.

CHAP. V.

How *Griana* sent a Ring to the Prince *Florendos*, by *Cardina* her Mayd, desiring him (as he loved her) to comfort himselfe; And of the Answer hee sent her.

Griana thus leaving her Brother, went vnto her Chamber, where moze and moze she lamented for the Sicknesse of Florendos, and with her teares she coupled these discourses. May it be, that any liuing Creature can deserue so grieuous punishment as I doe, that endangers the Life of the worthiest Knight in the world? Unhappy that I am, that I love, yea, the love he beares to me, should bring so vnto a Gentleman to so hard an exigent: But if he dye, such just vengeance will I take vpon my selfe, as that I will not remaine one houre alieue after him, and let our Ghosts seek their owne quiet in Death, that Fortune would not afford vs in Life. Yet will I thus farre first adventure, and that before any sleep enter these Eyes of mine, try if it consist

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oltra*,

in my power to ease his extremity, that buyes my Loue at too deere a price. And in anguish of minde, he called one of her Damoysels, the Daughter of her Purse Cardina, whom above the rest she trusted most, and to her she began to speak in manner following :

Cardina, thou knowest the love I alwayes bare thy Master, and for her sake how well I have thought of thee, I have knowne thee a long time a true and faithfull Servant : but now Cardina, is a time beyond all other, to make tryall of thy truth, and to witnesse thy loyalty to mee, onely as thou art sure, so to be secret, and so secret as I must put my Life and Honour into thy secrecie. Cardina, who was wise, and of good government, hearing Giana his such earnest speeches, imagined that she would commit no common matter to her with such Consecration, whereupon she modestly returned this answer : *Padame*, rather had I be some pece meale in sunder, then any thing you command for secret, should by me be revealed without your licence : and so assure your selfe, that while I live, you shall finde me as faithfull in deed, as I promise in word. I never hitherto (quoth the Princesse) had any other opinion of thee : listen now therefore what I shall command thee.

I have understood for certaine Cardina, that the grievous sicknesse of the Prince Florendos, is caused by very earnest Love which he beares to mee, and for I account it great pite to lose so good a Knight ; doe so much as take the paines to goe to him from mee : and say, I desire him to be of good chere, and if there be any thing in my power may doe him good, I will gladly accomplish it, as she that loves him as her owne selfe, and to assure him thereof, say, I send him this Ring, which I will him to keepe as a pledge of my Love.

Padame, answered Cardina, Fortune spee'd me so well, as my paines may give ease to both your Passions : and might my sentence like you *Padame*, I know no Knight so worthy of your Love as Florendos. Was then, said Giana, and returns

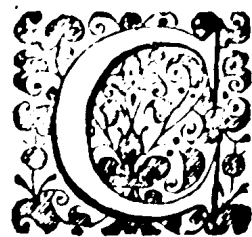
Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

turne againe so soone as thou canst. So went Cardina straight to the lodging of the Prince Florendos, at the entrance she met the Prince Caniano so heauble and penfull as might be, because he perceived his friend to consume away every day more and more. But Cardina, who had well learned her lesson, kept asse, and would not be scene of Caniano : who being gone, she went up to the Chamber, where when she was ready to enter, she heard the Prince complaine in this sort. Ah poore wretch, must thou needs dye without any hope of remedie ? And as he would have proceeded on, Cardina stepped to him, and after she had saluted him, said to him secretly, That the Princesse Giana had sent her to him, to understand of his health : And bidde me good Prince quoth she, I never saw Lady so sorrowfull for your sicknesse as she is. Whoe commendeth her selfe to your Honour most heartily, and hath sent you this Ring, as an earnest of the Love she beares you, desiring you to be of good chere and comfort your selfe, because she desires to see you, to conferre with you of matters that concerne you both nœrely. These wordes so ravished the spirit of Florendos, as a good while he doubted, whether he dreamed, or that he might give credite to what he heard : for albeit he knew the Messenger so well as any in the Court, yet could hee not perswade himselfe that he was so fortunate. At length, betwene hope and dispaire hee took the Ring, which hee entertained with many devout kisses, and embracing Cardina so well as hee could, thus answered : Alas my sweet friend, may it be possible that my Lady hath such regard of him, who never was able to doe her any Service ; Doubt not therefore my Lord, answered Cardina, and if you will declare your Love answerable to hers in vertue, you must give testimony thereof, by comforting your person, that he may see you so soone as may be. Ah saye Virgin, quoth he, let my whole life be employed, in what shall like her divine nature to command me : and I assure you, that these trybings hath beaten

thed such new life into my very soule, as already I finde my selfe wonderfully changed, yea, and that in such sort, as be, soe thre dayes be past, I shall attend her Gracious will with seruiceable diligence. In the meane while, I shall be, sure you faire friend, to let my soveraigne Mistressse understand, that I kisse her Highnesse hand in humble dutie, and had ere this given Farewell to this life, had not her sweet regard called me againe from Death. Thus parted Cardina from the Prince, taking her way speedily towards Grian, who longed not a little to heare from Florendos, whom she had made Lord of her gentle affections.

CHAP. VI.

How *Cardina* recited to the Princeesse *Griana*, what Speeches had passed betweene her and *Florendos*; And of the Counsell shee gave her Mistressse, to conferre with him in the Garden, so soone as hee was recovered.



Cardina thus dispatched from Florendos, made no little hast towards the Princeesse, who remained all this while silent in her Chamber: and no sooner perceived Cardina to enter, but she demanded if Florendos receiued her Token in good part or no. Welcome me Madame, answered Cardina, I thinke you neuer did any thing in all your life, where by you could obtaine more Honour and applause, then by that you vouchsafed to doe at this instant; for in my judgement you haue performed a miracle, in giving him life that was in the very saues of Death. Then from point to point she recounted the talke passed betwene them: first, how she found him in the midst of his regrets; and lastly, what Message he had sent her.

Thus while Cardina continued her discourse, every word

tooke hold on the gentle heart of the Princeesse, and wounded her with such pittifull regard of the Prince his torments: as what she desired inwardly, she shewd with modestie, as loath to receiue shame in her Love, having carried her selfe with such Honour all her life, quoth she to Cardina. Who might I (good Seruant) ease this weightie oppression: Very well (said Cardina) when Fortune alloweth opportunity. But thou knowest (quoth Griana) a Princeesse as I am, to be seene secret with so base a Gallant, doth greatly hazard my life and Honour. As for that Madame, (said Cardina) my Sister can better advise you then I, as any that I know: By her meanes may you speake with your Knight, the bravest Gentleman in the world, and one whom I know to be so farre devoted yours, as he will rather lose his life, then impeach your Honour any way: and otherwise then in loyalty to make you his Lady and Wife, I am well assured he loveth not, which loue (Madame) you may well entertaine. Returne then Cardina (quoth the Princeesse) to my Lord Florendos, and assure him that so soone as he is recovered, I will come and speake with him, in such a place where he may well adventure: And desire him as he loveth me, that it may be with all convenient speed.

Cardina without any further delay, went with this Message to the Prince Florendos: Who heartened himselfe so well upon these speeches, as within five dayes he found himselfe thoroughly amended, whereof the Emperour and Caniano his Sonne, was not a little glad: But Tarisius was scant well pleased therat, for he had conceived a secret jealousy, because he was so earnest in affection towards Griana, who by her Mayd Cardina had warned Florendos, that the Night following he should come into the Garden, where into her Chamber had a secret entrance, and there would he and she conferre of their Love, without suspicion of any.

Florendos seeing these affaires sort to so good an end, purposed what ever happened, not to faile the time and place:

which made him think this day a rare in length, so long he looked and desired for the night. But now the wished is come, when Florendos with his Cousin Brenato (who was private to the Prince's secret labors) departed from their lodgings, and coming to the Garden, they saw the wall was very high and hard to climb, notwithstanding, greater things are possible to Lovers, chiefly when a cause of such weight is in hand, so that in short time Florendos had got to the top of the Wall - and afterward went to the place where Grianina stayed his coming, who had no body with her but Lerina, Sister to Cardina, to whom likewise she purposely bewrayed her secrets. He having espied them, came and fell on his knee before the Princess, but she took him up in her armes, embracing him so sweetly: as Lerina withjoy to her selfe amongst the Trees, not with any intent of feare to displease them, but with a certaine kinde of griefe which overcame her, that she wanted a Friend to participate with her in Love, as her Mistress had, before whom Florendos being on his knee, said: Madam, by vertue of your commandment, I am thus bold to enter your presence, yielding my whole ability to you, as to the divine Goddess that hath shielded me from Death, which Grace being your Princely nature hath afforded me, my Life for ever hereafter remains at your Sovereigne pleasure: The unfeigned promise whereof, I binde to you by irrevocable vovles, but especially by my Faith, the onely ornament of a true knight, that I desire no longer to breathe this ayre, then to Honour your Name with my continuall service, for life without your grace and Favour, is more plesome to me then a thousand deaths. But by your favour my Lord (answered Grianina) how or from whence hath this hot Love sprung, let me know I desire you: Madam (quoth he) as I have heretofore, so at this time I assure you, that in my native Country of Macedon, I heard the renowne of your excellling Beauty, at which very instant I dedicated my selfe onely yours:

and

and ever since continuing in this religious service, I have so confidently set downe my rest, in gracious regard of your sweet selfe, as being yours in service, I live: If otherwise, I dye. In sooth saith the Princess, I see then you have given your selfe wholly mine, and so I am well contented to accept you. When Madam (quoth he) to seale the assurance of this divine favour you have vowe me, let me intreat to kisse those sweet Lippes that delivered the sentence I have long looked for. Which to grant, though for modestie sake, at first she seemed dainty, yet at length Love had so surprized her, as he needed not strike when no resistance was offered. Thus with teares and solemn kisses, they breathed into each others souls the mute arguments of their Love, and faire Cynthia, amiable favouring this delicate encounter, added such courage to the minde of this lovely Champion, as breaking his Lance in the face of Venus, he bequeathed the successe of his desire to the gracious Aspect of that Planet. And among a number of soft and sweet love Speeches, he discoursed to her his talke with the Emperour her Father, how he had requested her in Marriage, and how he excused his consent, by the promise he had made before to Tarisius, through the daily and earnest perswasions of the Empress. Notwithstanding (quoth he) in respect you have not consented thereto, I hope they shall finde themselves saire beyond their reckoning. Now for the Princess, she never knew that Tarisius had laboured to have her to his Wife, because she made so light account of him, as she would rather dye then consent thereto: Whereupon she returned Florendos this answer. The Emperour my Father hath reason to thinke hardly of my Mother, and great discredit will it be to her, to procure my Marriage against my will, for never shall I consent thereto: and therefore my Lord I desire your advice, how I may prevent this insuing danger: Madam, answered Florendos, my service is laid already, to please you to accept thereof, I will convey you hence secretly

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Olive*,

cretly, and before the Emperour or any one know of it, into my Countrey of Macedon, where I and mine shall entertain you with great reverence and Honour, and you shall be our gracious Lady and Princess. Beléus me, said she, it is doubtfull in such a Journey what dangers may happen, notwithstanding, having bowed my selfe onely yours, be it to the liking or disliking of my Father and Mother, I had rather breake through the Straights of a greater hazard, then be forced to partle him, whom while I live I cannot like: Therefore doe you expect the advantage of the time, and I will adventure with you whither you please. Madame (answered Florendos) continue you this resolution, and referre the rest to my charge, which you shall see effected ere these dayes be past: In the meane while I intend to take my leave of the Emperour your Father, with this excuse, that the King my Father commandeth my returne home: for which cause I will send my trayne before, reserving onely but tenne of my best Knights to accompany me. For that (quoth Giana) doe what you thinke best, and without any further expecting me in this place, certifie me how things happen, by your Cousin Frenato, or my Mayo Cardina. But now you see the day begins to breake, wherefore let me desire you to depart, that no scandal or suspicion arise of our meeting. Florendos kissed the Princess hand, though longer he would have stayed, humbly took his leave, and by the helps of Lerina, he got over the Wall againe, where Frenato stayed his coming, to whom when he was entred his Lodging, he imparted the appointment betwixt him and the Princess, desiring him to discharge his trayne, except ten of his best appointed Knights, to helpe him if any hinderance presented his intent: As for the rest, they should be going on before, and stay his coming at an appointed place, these dayes journey from Constantinople.

In the Evening he awaited the Emperours coming abroad, to whom he said, that he had received Letters from the

Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

as he would not obey his Fathers command: but so soon as he was indifferently amended, he intreated the Emperour to pardon his Daughter, accusing his owne men, who indiscreetly had raised this false rumour of her and Florendos. By this meanes, the Emperesse and her Ladies obtained libertie daily to accompany Giana; but all the night time he caused her to be locked up as closely as before, committing her to the charge of an aged Gentlewoman named Tolomestra, whom he commanded upon paine of Death, not to be a minute of an houre without of her company.

CHAP. VIII.

How *Florendos* arriving on the Frontiers of *Macedon*, made many sorrowfull Complaints, for not bringing away *Giana*, according to his Enterprize.

N sooner had Florendos and Frenato overtaken their Company, but they ride on in such haste (fearing to be followed) as at length they got the Frontiers of Macedon. And because Florendos imagined himselfe without life, not hearing any tidings from his Mistress Giana, he concluded to rest at the first Towne he came unto, there to expect the returne of the Esquire he sent to Constantinople: who returned towards his Master sooner then he looked for, by reason of the little abode he made in the Emperours Court; For he stayed not when he heard that Giana was imprisoned, and that Tarisus was not alive, as his Master was perswaded. These newes did wonderfully afflict the Prince, as well for the hard usage of his sweet Friend, as that he had failed in killing him, by whose Death he well hoped to recover his love: all the whole day would he receive no satisfaction, but locked himselfe close in his Chamber, and tumbled on his Bed as a man halfe desperate. But Frenato,

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

who would not be long absent from him, fearing least his Father would cause him to take some violence on himselfe, made such meanes that he got into the Chamber, at what time the Prince was thus lamenting.

Alas sweet *Madame*, how I bozne in such an unhappie houre, that without desert you must endure imprisonment for me? What satisfaction may your *Florendos* like to make, in requitall of this iniurie? When did you ever merit to be so hardly intreated for him? Woe be to me, could you be discharged so soone as I could wish it, *Wells*, *Lockes*, no; *Walls*, could hold you a thought while: yet withing is not action, eberything is contrary to me, all helps refuse me, and death likewise denies me: but by my sword (and therewith he started up) in spight of whatsoeuer, I will deliuer you. *Frenato* seeing him rise in such a furie, came and took him by the arme, demanding what he would haue. Death (quoth he) if I could, for it grābes me to liue any longer. You speak very wisely (quoth he in mocke) all this is for the imprisonment of *Griana*: Is it not better she should be there, then in the custodie of *Tarinius*? Her Captiuitie you know cannot long endure, but were she married, she could neuer be recovered. Therefore, let good hope perswade you, and now send another Messenger, with speed to *Constantinople*, to know what accidents haue happened since, and to praaise the meanes to speake with *Cardina*, who will certifie you from *Griana*, what is or may be done in these affaires. This Councell liked well *Florendos*, whereupon he presently dispatched a Gentleman of trust, who with all diligence did execute the command of his Master. For in good time he arrived at *Constantinople*, when *Griana* had liberty to speake with her Gentlewoman: which when he heard, he was not a little glad: whereupon he searched earnestly, till he had found *Cardina*, to whom he deliuered his Masters minde, as also in what sad and humble plight he left him, desiring her with all speed to certifie

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. R

As the *Princesse* thereof, and what service she would command him to his Master. *Cardina* knowing how glad the *Princesse* would be, to heare these tydings from *Florendos*, went to take her Sister *Lerina*, to whom she imparted what you haue heard, and she, well aduised of the time and place, discoursed the same to the *Princesse*, busie, and not suspected of old *Tolomestra*. How joyfull she was of this message, I cannot utter, nor you conceiue, but she was resolved, never to haue any Husband but *Florendos*: And therefore to comfort him, she devised to write unto him: that he might hope as well as she did: But well she knew not how to accomplish her intent, by reason she wanted *Penne*, *Inke*, and *Papery*, and she was forbidden to haue any. Notwithstanding, she so well perswaded her woman *Tolomestra*, (as feigning to write to the Emperour her Father) she recovered the meane to execute her desire. Then withdrawing her selfe apart, first she wrote a letter to the Emperour, and afterwards one to *Florendos*, wherein she desired him not to be offended, albeit things fell not out to his liking: for (with the labours of *Fortune*) the end would be as pleasant to him, as the beginning had bene unhappie to them both: withall, that as he desired to prolong her life, he should do nothing to the prejudice of his owne person.

These two Letters thus written and sealed, she called *Tolomestra*, and gaue her that she had written to the Emperour, charging her to carry it presently to his Majesty: by whose parting, she had opportunity to conferre with *Lerina*: In these she desired her to goe seeke the *Esquire*, that he might turne to his Master, with the Letter she sent him: which he did actually, and the gentle *Esquire* made no little haile to his Master. Who receiuing the Letter from his Sister *Griana*, was not content alone to read it, but kissed it a hundred times, saying: Ah sweet Letter, written with the hand of the onely fairest *Princesse* this

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

this day living : And (for her sake will I keepe thee) as the best token a true Knight can receive from his Mistress.

CHAP. IX.

How the Emperour promised *Tarissus* that hee should Marry *Griana*, whether shee would or no : and how shee was delivered of a faire Sonne, without the knowledge of any, but old *Tolomestra*, who had her in guard.



When the Emperour had received the Letter, which *Tolomestra* presented him from his Daughter, although he found nothing therein might provoke him to anger, saying that she earnestly desired him to pittie her estate, being innocent of anything was layd to her charge : yet he shewed himselfe more discontented then before, sending *Tolomestra* backe with this answer :

Say to *Griana*, that seeing she was so adventuresome to incur my displeasure, she shall well know, that I will not spare to punish her offence : And let her assure her selfe, that I will never looke on her while I live, if she match not with *Tarissus*, to whom I have given her. All this *Tolomestra* tolde to *Griana* : which rather then to obey, she desired to dye.

Wherefore when any came to visite her, she would shew her selfe more pleasant in their company then she had done in respect of unexpected heavinesse that secretly touched her, feeling her selfe so farre conceived with Child, as she knew no meanes to save it and her Honour, if it should happen to be perceived. One onely helpe shee had in this extremity, that being so weak and sickly, the Physicians could not discerne his offense ; but reputed her likely to dye, which she with all her heart desired, yet did what injurie to her selfe.

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

Shee could, she had better health then she desired to have. In the end feeling her selfe so grosse and unwelthy, shee durst not leave her bed, but kept it dayly, till her time drew very neere at hand, when the Emperour (by the earnest importunity of the Emperesse) happened to come and see her, bringing with him the Prince *Tarissus* : who being thus entred the Tower, they found her in such grievous and dangerous estate, as for all the anger the Emperour had against her, it moved the teares to stand in his eyes, which he shewd so well as hee could, framing his speeches to her in this sort. Well daughter, it likes you to contrary me, in that which concernes your Honor and profite, and without any feare (as is thy duty) thou hast boldly refused the Husband which I have appointed thee : but (by mine honour) I will cause thee know that thou hast displeased mee, for wilt thou or not (before I leave thee) I will give thee to him whom I have promised. Then taking her by the hand, and causing *Tarissus* to come neere, hee said. My Sonne, in regard of my word, which I will keepe inviolably, I give thee here *Griana*, from henceforth account of her as thy wife : And hold thee, here is the Key of the Tower, keepe her in thine owne custody, and hereafter thinke of her as thou findest occasion. Well saw *Griana* that perforce shee must obey her Fathers will : wherefore with great wisdoms covering her secret thoughts, with extreme teares delivered this answer. Alas, my good Lord and Father, I never thought that your highnesse would use such cruelty towards me : as to enforce mee take a Husband contrary to my liking, not (my good Lord) but that *Tarissus* hath much better deserved : but that which toucheth me most in opinion is, that our neere alliance in kindred, is sufficient to continue the love betwixt the King his Father and you, without any such unbleis'd taking of new uniting. And moreover, good Father, his education in your Court with my Mother *Cassiana* and me, once our very youngest

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

youngest yeeres to this present, had bene of such equall and familiar condition: as it seemes to mee impossible to reuerence him with that iustire duety, which women must and ought vse to their Husbands. Wherefore my good Hozb and Father, I perswade my selfe (vnder your correction) that you should support me in this iust request: the rather in respect of my present estate, which may induce you somewhat to conceiue, that the obsequies of my buriall is moze likely to be solemnized, then those holy ceremonies that should be blessed at my marriage. And with these words shee pteined forth such abundance of teares, as the Emperour knew not what to answer: but overcome with pittie, withdrew himselfe, leaving Tarisius with her: who hoping to haue better words of her, said Madame, I beseech you not to send your selfe for any thing the Emperour hath said concerning me, for I will not doe any thing to your discontent, and rather would I suffer all my life, then cause the least doubt to incurre your dislike, hoping that in time to come, you will take such pittie on mee, as being perswaded of the loue I beare you, and the reuerent desire I haue to see you seruaice, you will grant that with good will, which the Emperour desires to gaine perforce, assuring you that nothing can be moze grievous to me, then the hard dealing which hitherto hath bene vied towards you. And to the end you may resolve your selfe of that I say, your Father hauing deliuered mee the Key of your Prison, and the guard of your person, I here commit both to your gentle pleasure. So kissing the Key, he laid it by her, and without expecting any answer, with great reuerence hee departed, leaving her with Tolomestra, so rapt into a dumber of trances as her Keeper would not for pittie trouble her. The Princesse in this silent passion, thought that shee saw a fierce Lyon beseege her, with open throte to deuoure her, and nere at hand she espied an armed Knight, to whom shee laboured for defence, crying, that for Gods sake he would sheeld her from

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

from the beast: but the Knight with stern and angry countenance, thus answered. I will not defend thee, but with my sword will take thy life from thee. Thou hast so much offended the heavenly powers in disobedience to thy Father, as I ought rather to diuide thy head from thy shoulders, then to hinder this beast from deuouring thee. Thinkest thou to contrary their diuine pleasures? Sufficeth not the fault thou hast committed with Florendos? Content thee, and shewde thy shame, in regards of the fruits in thy wombe, whose worthinesse thou shalt know moze of hereafter. If thou dost not, thou dyest an euerlasting death, from which thou canst haue no meanes to defend thee. The Knight did so affright Grian, as shee promised him to accomplish the Emperours commandement without fayle: whereupon the Knight and the Lyon vanished away, leaving her (as shee thought) by a fayne fontaine, enuironed with Trees and diuersity of flowers, the sweet sent whereof was so pleasant and odoriferous, as made the cheerefull blood to reuiue againe in the Princesse, and with breathing forth a vehement sigh shee awaked, invocating on the powers to pardon her transgressions, and promising to obey the will of her Father, albeit shee could hardly forget Florendos so soone. Within two or thre dayes after, the Prince Tarisius came to visite her, to whom shee shewed better countenance then shee had done: and as they were deuising together in amorous talke, shee said. Welcome me Sir Tarisius, you haue vied such honest and gentle courtship towards me, as henceforth I will giue my selfe wholly yours: therefore being sorry for my long disobedience to my Parents and you: triumph now Tarisius in the honour of my loue. These words pleased Tarisius, it is not to be doubted: for for whereof hee went presently to the Emperour, and made him acquainted with these happy tidings: so that (to make short) after many promises and solemn oathes to the Princesse, not onely to accept her as his spouse

and wife, but as his Soueraigne Lady and Mistress, he brought her with him to the Emperour, who hearing the resolution of his Daughter, embraced her and took her into as good conceit as euer he did.

Notwithstanding, Tolomestra was constrained to attend on her still: wherefore Giana knowing her time to draw nere, and hardly could she conceale her fortune: after many difficult doubts and fears beheld in her thoughts, at last she imparted the whole to Tolomestra. This old Gentlewoman after many motherly rebukes, for the fault committed, as the danger eminent, thought better yet to couer this misfortune, then to publish that which would displease many, and profite none: so leaving to reprehend when care and comfort was more required, at that instant, the Princesse was deliuered of a goodly man child. Thus in the ninth moneth, after the returne of Florendos towards Macedon, on Sunday at night about eight of the clocke, the Princesse had her houre of deliuerance: When Tolomestra receiuing the Child, saw it so beautifull and well formed, as it grieved her meruailously to thinke what hard fortune it brought with the birth. For the honour of the Mother could not be defended, but by the price of the infants life: wherefore hauing wrapped it in swaddling clothes which the Princesse had prepared of some value, she brought it to the sorrowfull Mother, saying. Trust me Spadame, it much displeaseth me that we must thus lose this louely child, whom I could haue esteemed happy, and the mother likewise, if it might liue without displeasure: but he sweet babe must suffer the punishment for the offence, whereof he is not any way culpable.

Alas (said the Princesse) what shall we doe: Would God it were dead, or out of danger: then taking it in her armes, and washing his face with floods of teares, after many sweet kisses, thus said: Ah my little dainty, and must I needs leane thee? Must the safety of thy life remaigne in the mercy of a

strange

strange woman, who not knowing thy Parents: may deale with thee discourteously: Well, if thou dye, thy Mother will not be long after thee. And as she thus mured oer her Infant, she perceived on his right cheek a little marke in likeness of a Crosse: which made her call her vissen to reembrance, and the words of the knight, that promised good fortune to the Child: which made her conceiue a comfortable hope, whereupon, about his necke she tied a faire Crucifixe of Gold. Now was the night very late spent, and Tolomestra feared they should be prevented, wherefore (quoth she) Spadame it is time to determine of some thing, leaue mourning I pray you any longer on the Child, and let me goe carry it to Cardina to be bozne forth of the Court. The weeping Mother seeing she counselled for the best, for her last adue sealed many sweet kisses on the face of the Infant, and so in great griefe deliuered it to Tolomestra, who went and found Cardina, to whom she gave it, and she without any tarriance mounted on Horsebacke, and not knowing what way she took, rode on which way fortune guided her. Very doubtful was she how to be discharged of her carriage, for she feared to let any woman in the neighbour Villages haue it, lest so the Princesse might be discovered: For that it was commonly blazed through the Empire, that the Princesse was imprisoned for the loue of Florendos. At length the day began to appeare, when she perceived her selfe on a high Mountaine, which was very thicke set with Palme and Olive trees: When she alighted from her Horse, and made a little bed of sweet Herbes, wherein she layd the Child, hoping some body would passe by, that would take some compassion on it. So committing the tender Infant to the protection of the powers above, she returned to the Citty in very good time.

CHAP. X.

How *Gerrard* passing where *Cardina* had left the Childe heard it cry, and so brought it home with him to his Wife to nourish it.



The Mountaine where *Cardina* had left the Princesse young *Senne*, was about a dayes journey from Constantinople, and was commonly called the Mount of Olives, where nere at hand dwelt a wealthy farmer, who having the occupation of the ground, grew very rich by gathering the fruits of the Palme, Olive, Date, and other Trees, and like a good Husband he daily followed his affairs, being named *Gerrard*. His Wife the same Morning likewise was delivered of a Man-childe, which being dead bozne, caused this good man to walke forth into his Grounds in great heaviness, for he had but one Daughter aged thre yeares, and his Sonne would have bene a great comfort to him. In these Melancholy passions, as he went nere the Tree, where *Cardina* had left theilly Infant, he heard it cry: whereat he greatly marvelling, approached nere, and saw the sweet Babe pittifully mourning, wanting the nurture that should comfort it.

He took it very tenderly in his armes, and seeing it so sweet and lovely, was perswaded that God had sent it him, in recompence of his owne that was dead bozne: and so joyfully went home with it to his Wife, who was named *Marcella*: and to her he beginneth in this manner: Behold sweet Wife, in the place of your young dead Sonne, God hath this day sent us another, which I have brought you home. Then recounted he to her, how he found it on the Mountaine under an Olive Tree: And therefore (quoth he) I pray thee nourish

it in stead of thine owne, for a goodlier Child I neuer behold. The good Woman took it, and unwrapping the swaddling clothes, saw they were rich and of good value, but chiefly the Crucifixe which hung about his neck: whereupon she indged it of some noble house, and mixed with pity, thus sayd. I believe sweet Infant, that thy mother is in no small griefe for the losse of thee, but seeing thy fortune hath brought thee to mee, I will foster thee as thou were mine owne Sonne. And from thence forthward she used it so lovingly, as every one thought it to bee *Gerrards* owne childe: and bringing it to Baptisme, because he found it so among the Palme Trees, hee caused the Childe to be named *Palmerin*, who grew on in yeares, both in comely feature and gentle behaviour. Not long after *Marcella* brought her husband another son whose name was *Colmelio*, and him did *Palmerin* love as his owne brother, and companion, as hereafter you shall more at large understand: but here I will crave leave to pause for a while, and following the intent of the Epilogue, you shall understand how *Griana* governed her selfe, after shee had escaped this hard adventure.

So soone as *Cardina* was returned to the Court, *Griana* sent for her, to know what shee had done with the Infant: to whom shee discoursed in what sort shee had left it: which grieved her asmuch as the weight of her offence.

Notwithstanding, considering how happily she had escaped Shame and disgrace, from thence forthward shee disciplined her passions better, and shewed her selfe so well rejoyced, as the Emperesse much rejoyced thereat, hoping now to end the matter for her Nephew *Tarissius*: whereupon one day finding her Daughter alone, shee took occasion to conferre with her thus. Daughter will you now accomplish that, which your Father and I have long bene importunate for, I pray you hold of no longer, leass you give him into anger againe, which can no way returns you benefite.

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

When Grianah heard her Mother speake so gently, and knowing well, (that whether he would or no) it must soe to that conclusion, she answered: Madame, haue you thought good (will I, nill I) that I should match with your Nephew Tarisius, I must then by force doe that which willingly I cannot, nor while I liue shall I conceiue better opinion: If then (Mother) hereafter our fortunes fall out so contrary, that any misfortune happen by this your willfulness, you need not complain but of your selfe, being the inuenter and procurer thereof.

All these speeches of Grianah could not alter her opinion, but without regard of any danger, she went presently to the Emperour, desiring him (seeing Grianah was recovered) to end the Marriage betwixt her Nephew and her: Where to he gaue such sodaine consent, as before a fewenight was finished, Tarisius and she were married together, to her great griefe, as her Countenance declared; for when every one were at their feasting, dancing, and other delights, the two full Princesses thought on the great iniurie she had done to Florendos, accounting her selfe the most unhappy on the Earth, and to her selfe thus sorrowed:

O my deare friend, what wilt thou say, when thou hearest these tidings, that I am become so false and disloyall to thee? What excuse may plead for me to thee? By good reason may I soeuer be excluded from their company who haue kept their faith inuiolable to their friends, and continue in possession of their vnchangeable affections: for neuer did Woman commit such treason as this that I haue done: and yet (my Lord) altogether against my will, as my wofull heart may giue eident witness, which shall be thine while it remaines in this miserable body, which Tarisius must now haue, though in justice it be thine. And in this sort continued her dolorous complaints till night approached, when she must yield that honour to Tarisius, which with better will she could haue bestowed Florendos.

After

Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

After the feasts and triumphs of the Marriage were finished, Grianah desires to absent her selfe from her fathers Court, because the remembrance of Florendos passions was so grieuous to her: Desired Tarisius to make soot his way, and set forward to Hungaria, whither the Emperour her father caused her to be so honourably conueyed, as becometh the Daughter of so great a Prince. But as she was taking her leaue among the Ladies, the Emperesse came to her most pitifully weeping: Which when Grianah beheld, she said: Madame, I am abashed to see what heaviness you shew for the departure of your Daughter, to whom you alone haue borne so cruell, as by your meanes she is banished for euer from you and your Countrey: Why lament you then, seeing it is your pleasure to make her vnforgotten while she liues? I heartily desire the Heavens to pardon you, and that the first R.wes, hereafter you shall heare of me, may be the true report of my Death. This said, she mounted on horse backe, and without any shew of discontent took her leaue of her father: So being honourably accompanied, in soot time she arrived in Hungaria with Tarisius, whose love to her so vehemently increased, as he reputed himselfe the most fortunate Prince in Europe, hauing gained the Paragon among all Ladies.

Soone after the aged King dyed, by which meanes Tarisius came to the Crowne. Grianah highly esteeming all such as she had brought with her from Constantinople, to wit, Lerina and Cardina, but especially Tolomestra, to whom she very often imparted the whole secrets of her minde, leading so strict and constant a life, as all the Court did wonder at her. But the remorse of Conscience, which daily touched her for the losse of her Sonne, caused her to spend day and night in deuout Meditations, that the heavens would forget her paynouss offence.

CHAP. XI.

CHAP. XI.

How *Florendos* understood by the Esquire hee sent to *Constantinople*, the Marriage of *Griana* and *Tarifi* : Whereat hee conceived such inward griefe, as he had like to have dyed with extreame sorrow.



At this while continued *Florendos* on the frontiers betwixt *Constantinople* and *Macedon*, till at length he heard that *Griana* was released of her imprisonment : whereof he was so glad, as now he thought to brale more lustily then he did before : whereupon he dispatched *Lyomenus* one of his Esquires towards her, with a letter of earnest and intire affection, wherein he desired to know, if he might compass the means to come and see her, and he doubted not to bring her so secretly on her journey, and with so good provision, as before they should be againe discovered, they would be safely arrived to *Macedon*. But this hope was soone frustrate, for *Lyomenus*, being come to *Constantinople*, found the marriage betwixt *Tarifi* and *Griana* consummated: which hee tooke so displeasingly, as without giving the letter, or speaking to the Princesse, he returned hastily againe to his Lord and Master. Who being advertised of his coming, sent for him immediately by into his Chamber, at whose entrance the Prince discerned the newes by his countenance : whereupon he demanded, if *Griana* were sicke, or how shee fared : My Lord (quod he) happy had shee bene, if she had bene tenne yeares since : for I doubt (doubte you arme your self with wonderfull patience) that what is done will highly endanger your person. Why (quoth *Florendos*) what happened ? Tell me my Lord (quod he) the very words that

can be for you, *Tarifi* hath espoused her, and (despight of her) the Emperour caused it to be done. So soone had *Lyomenus* spoken the words, but *Florendos* cast himselfe cruelly against the ground, saying. O my God, take pittie on my soule, for my body must needs suffer misfortune. At which words he fell in a swoone, when *Lyomenus* thinking him dead, ran hastily and called *Frenato* : who knowing well the cause of his passion, laboured by all means he might to perswade him, but notwithstanding all the intreaties he used, in foure and twentie houres hee could not get one word of him, whereupon hee sent for an ancient Hermit neere at hand, whom *Florendos* made very much account of : who being come, and applying diuers souveraigne Herbes to his temples, whereof the old Father knew well the vertue, at length *Florendos* recovered his senses, and opening his eyes, beheld the old Hermit, to whom with very feeble voice hee said. Ah good Father pray for me, for I feele my end nigh at hand. Not so my sonne, sayd the Hermit, what ? are you so vnprovident of blaine perswasion, as you will lose both body and soule for a matter of so meane consequence ? Hast thou liued so long, and yet ignorant of the inconstancy of women which is no other then thou beholdest in *Griana* ? Knowest thou not, that as the sayle of the Ship is subiect to all winds, so are their affections to continuall mutability ? And knowest thou not, that what they purpose to execute irrevocably, in one moment they are suddenly dissuaded from ? My Sonne, hearken my counsell, and with as much pleasure learne to forget this folly, as with extreame paine thou diddest first imprint it in thy thoughts. Ah Father (quoth *Florendos*) neuer seeke in this sort to perswade me, being assured if you knew how things have past, you would not thus in teares disgrace my Lady : for shee is mine, and *Tarifi* hath no right to her, to whom the Emperour hath married her perforce, els would she neuer haue broken her faith to me : and while

while I live. Father, none but he can be called the Wife of Florendos, Sonne to the mighty King of Macedon. The wife old Father seeing him in Choller, and being loth like wife to offend the Prince, would no longer crosse him in speeches, but fearing to moue him too much, mildely thus spake: May be (my Sonne) he hath bene deare to you, and I would your consent in leue had answered your liking: But thus to dispaire, and in danger your owne Life, trust me it is not well done; therefore I desire you to perswade your selfe, and by your Constancie conuenie her lightnesse, taking patiently what hath happened. These and such like good words vsed the old Father, but Florendos would take no sutenance, neither be removed from his opinion, soe sundry daies while the Old man stayed with him: Neither would hee looke cherefully as he was wont, but continued evermore sad and melancholique, noz could the King his Father call him like of any Wife, but onely Griana, soz whom continually he neuer left Mourning.

CHAP. XII.

How young *Palmerin* sleeping, had a strange Vision, which provoked him to know whose Sonne hee was: and of the talke which passed betweene him and *Dyosena* the Daughter of *Gerrard*.



Yong *Palmerin* being now come to the age of fifteene yeares, nourished in the Mountaine as the Child of *Gerrard* his supposed Father, well beloved of him and *Marcella* his Wife, as their owne Sonnes: grew in stature so tall, comely and well nurtured, as well might be knowne of noble Parentage. For albeit he compared with *Gerrard's* Children, who vsed him after their rustic

capacities: yet he desired more to passe the Mountaines with his long Bowe, to chase the Beares and Bozes thoroowe thicke and thinne, and to keepe Halkes and Dogges, rather then Sheeps and Cattell as the other Children did. In these sports hee had such wonderfull delight, as oftentimes he would come home very late and soze wearied: but one time among the rest, he came home so ouerlaboured, as he was glad to lay him downe to rest, and he was no sooner fallen a sleepe, but he was solicited with a maruailous vision, the effect whereof thus followeth. He thought (as he was pursuing a goodly Hart thowto a Forrest) hee met with the sayrest Lady that euer eye beheld, who sat on the side of a goodly Mountaine, and called him vnto her saying:

We not abashed *Palmerin*, though I am come from the farthest parts to finde thee in this Country, soz I am well assured that ere many daies be past thy bounty and prowellle shall make thee renowned through the world, soz one of the hardiest Knights that euer liued. Leane therefore this obscure & rustie all kind of life, and henceforth lift thy mind to high occasions which are offered thee: and hercof beloeue me, as she that loveth thee as her own life, being deuoted onely thine at all times as nature may witnesse who hath marked me with the like Character. When shewing her arme, she said. Behold in this hand, and on this side of my heart, one like & selfe same marke, as thou broughtest on thy face from the Mothers tombe. To which wordes *Palmerin* would haue answered, but the Lady vanished away so sodainly, as he could not perceive what was become of her. Whereupon raising himself, and maruailing from whence this occasion should proceed, hee desired the beauty of the Lady he saw in his sleepe, which was so liuely in his remembrance, as he judged her present before his eyes. But perswading himselfe that such apparitions happened by idle thoughts, or by some vapour of no effect: made no account thereof, whereupon, the next night following

following the same Lady that appeared to him in the Forest, presented her selfe to him againe, holding in her hand a sumptuous Crowne of Gold, and thus spake. See here (my Lord) the honour which I hold, being given me onely for the loue of you.

In this sort continued this vision for fouretene or fiftene daies following, till at length the Lady shewed her selfe very angry, saying. I am ashamed Palmerin that you refuse so long to seeke me out: doo you think the promises I haue made you are frivolous? No, no, the time and trouble thou takest (if thou giuest credit to my words) shall make thee know that thou art the Son of a King, and not of the Countrey swaine that hath fostered thee. From henceforth therefore expect me no more in this Mountaine, but if my beauty haue found place in thy heart, seeke then to conquer me, that thou mayest be the Lord and possessor of mee. Thus departed the Lady leaving a desire (more than accustomed) in the heart of Palmerin, who till that time made little reckoning of so high matters, for the past all life hee led with Gerrard and his family, seemed the most happiest to him in all the world, not hauing seen any person of greater calling then he. When now new affections so elevated his minde, as hee intended to go seeke her, whom in sleepe he had beheld so often: For (quoth he) if shee assure mee to descend of a royall linage, may well presume she knowes me better then my Father Gerrard, else would she not so often induce me to follow her fortune, and the good that is provided for me: well might he be accounted a foole, if I would not adventure on so especially an occasion, therefore happen what will, I meane to seeke the whole world till I haue found her, and not that shee shall euer be my Mistresse. But how can it be that I am descended from so high a place, seeing my Father such a simple Countryman? Hath my Mother, being so full of her reputation, that some Prince or great Lord should become my Father? Well, I will know of her (if I can)

before I depart, and if she will not tell me, I will search for her that shall assure me. Thus was Palmerin confounded with remembrance of his Willons, as from that time he became marvellous peniue and solitarie: then bethought he, how he might know of his Mother Marcella, the end of his desire, whereof Dyofena (who loved him dearly) partly advertised him.

You haue heard heretofore, how when Gerrard found Palmerin among the Oliue-trees, he had a Daughter threeteares old, named Dyofena, indifferent fayre, who as she increased in yeares, became so amorous of her supposed brother, that hardly she could dissemble her affection: notwithstanding, shame and regard locked vp her Lippes, but she durst not speake what she gladly would, but seeing Palmerin in like sadnesse as he was, she imagined that one stroke she had stricken them both, wherefore calling many doubts as she lay in her Bed, in the same Chamber her Parents used, she heard them enter into this discourse. Haue you not seen Palmerin (quoth her) how heaue and sadde he hath bene a long time? Yea truly haue I (quoth she) it may be that some haue told him he is not your Sonne: so falling out of one matter into another, Dyofena heard them repeat the manner how they found him, which she desirous to let Palmerin vnderstand, arose early the next Morning, and coming to Palmerin, thus conferred with him. Brother, if you know so much as I doe, peradventure you would be not a little abashed?

Why good Sister (quoth he) I pray you let me vnderstand the matter. In sooth (quoth she) I euer thought till this time, that I had bin mine owne naturall Brother, but by chance hearing some talke betwene my Father and Mother this last night, I am no other then your Friend, and he that I loue so dearly: Which I haue euermore hitherto feared to let you know, doubting the nearnesse of our Consanguinitie, which I now perceiue cannot hinder our Marriage, if you will

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

will request me of my father, who I am sure will not deny you. And so he rehearsed the manner of his finding which so well liked Palmerin, as he gave the more credit to the things he had said, nevertheless, he thus dallyed with Dyofena. It may be sister, you misanderstand our Parents, my selfe will demand the truth of our Mother, if she assure me as you haue done, then will I talke with them concerning our Marriage. So shall you doe well (said Dyofena) to be thozowly assured, yet had you not repoynt me to haue informed you, least thereby you bring me into my Parents displeasure. Palmerin thus leaving Dyofena, chanced to finde his Mother Marcella alone, to whom he said: Mother, I beseech you grant me one request that I shall demand of you. What will I my Sonne (quoth she) if it be in my power to doe. Vnderstand then good Mother (quoth he) what I haue oftentimes dreamed how I am not your Son, so that I know not what to say, unless you please to assure me better. When Marcella heard these words, she was stricken in a stude: but Palmerin was still so importunate, as at last she thus answered: In good faith (saie friend) I neuer knew thine owne naturall Parents, yet haue I loued thee as if thou wert mine owne Sonne: And so what words Dyofena had before reported, Marcella confirmed, taking him with her into her Chamber, where she shewed him the costly Swabling clothes that he was found in, and the Crucifixe likewise that hang about his necke, which he intreated her to be slowe vpon him, for the end (quoth he) that for your sake I may keepe it while I liue. Marcella would not deny his request, but put it about his necke her selfe.

From which time forthward, Palmerin shewed himselfe of more cherefull disposition, desiring how he might compass the meane to goe seeke his fortune, whereto his sundry apparitions had so often incited him. And as none can thinke what is ordained him by Diuine prouidence, not many dayes after, as he was walking alone vpon the Mountaine, he heard

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

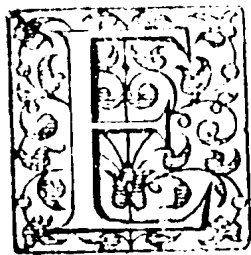
heard a voice cry very pittifully for helpe and succour: wherupon Palmerin ranne that way which he heard the voyce, where he beheld a Lyon greedily deuouring a Horse. Palmerin hauing no weapon to defend himselfe withall but a Staffe, very hardly set vpon the beast, giuing him such a stroke betwene the eyes, as he fell downe dead to the ground, then coming to him, he heard one comaine, said: I haue my friend in some part reuenged thy wrong. Alas, Sir (quoth he) and had you not bene, my life had perished, for as I travelled on my iourney, this Lyon furiously set vpon me to deuoure me: which the rest of my company perceiuing, took themselves to flight, leaving me as you found me. The best is, (said Palmerin) that you haue escaped with life, and if you please to goe with me, not farre hence where I haue some nourishment, you shall haue the best entertainment that I can make you. My friend (quoth the stranger) you haue already done so much for me, as if you will goe with me into the Countrey where I dwell, I haue wherewithall to reward your trauell richly. Is it farre hence Sir (said Palmerin?) In the City of Hermida (quoth he) in the Realmes of Macedon I dwell, from whence I departed a moneth since with my merchandise, which I haue left at Constantinople: from whence returning homeward, this vnlooked for mischance befell me, which had made an end of me without your resistance. As they were thus conferring together, one of the strangers servants came to looke him, and finding him so happily escaped, was not a little ioyfull, reporting that he had left his companions not far off. Returne then (said the stranger) and will them to come to me to the next villiage, where I mean to haue my wounds dressed, which the servant performed immediately, and all this while stood Palmerin debating with himselfe, if he should thus leave his father Gerrard or not: at length, (after many opinions) fearing if he returned home againe not to finde the like opportunity, concluded to

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

to depart with the stranger. So was he set on a very good palfrey, and setting forward to Macedo, that night they were entertained in a very good lodging, where the stranger caused his wounds to be searched, reporting to every one how by the ayde of Palmerin his life was preserved, for which cause he accounted of him as his owne Sonne. All this while Gerrard and his wife little thought of this mishap, but expected Palmerins returne till darke night, and seeing he came not as he was wont, both he and his wife the next day searched the Mountaines, but they could not finde him, which made Gerrard to question in himself, what euill he had offered him, that should make him thus depart. **N**ow durst not his wife Marcella tell him, the talke betweene her and Palmerin, but accompanied her husband in sorrow for their losse: especially Dyofena and her brother Colmelio were most sorry, Dyofena for losse (as she thought) of her husband, and Colmelio for the company of his supposed Brother, whose absence went so nere his heart, as he intended neuer to giue over search till he had found him.

CHAP. XIII.

How *Palmerin* went with this Merchant named *Estebon* to the Citie of *Hermida*, who afterward gave him Horse and Armour to be made Knight.



Estebon the Merchant thus conducting Palmerin on his way, at length arrived in the Citie of *Hermida*, where hee was lovingly welcommed home by his wife, both young and beautifull as any in that Countrey, to whom he reported his dangerous assault by the Lyon, and without Palmerins helpe he had bin deuoured: but (quoth he) good fortune sent him at the very instant that

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

Hele him, for which I shall be beholding to him while I haue a day to liue, therefore good wife entertaine him in the best sort you can deuise, for he hath well deserved it. This speech had the Merchant with his faire wife, who embracing Palmerin, said: What nature had omitted nothing in her workingmanship, making him so nimble, and full of hardiness. Palmerin seeing himselfe so saoured of so beautifull a woman, hauing before spent his time among Sympheards, Swineheards, and loathly Swaines of the Countrey, with modesty began to blush, and was so well stored with civility to make her this answer. I desire Mistress that my behaviour may be such, as may continue my Masters good liking and goes towards me. So from that time he followed the Merchants, and profited so well in the course of traffique: as Estebon committed all his affaires to Palmerins trust, who rather gave his mind to Martiall exercises, and followed knightly dispositions so much, as very nature declared the noblenesse of his mind, for he delighted to manage great battles, to fight at all manner of weapons, to fight dangerous Combates, to frequent the assembly of knights, to talke of Armes and honourable exploits, and in briefe, to exercise all the braveries of a noble Courtier.

With great Estebon marvelled so much, as falling in talke with him, he said. He thinks it is strange Palmerin, that thou being the Sonne of a Judge, and nourished on the Mountaine of *Oliues* (as thy selfe hath often told me) shouldst lead the life of a Merchant, frequenting the company of hardy knights, as though thou couldest take Lance and Shield to enter the combat. Syr (said Palmerin) I know not if my Father be such as I haue told you, but I know well my heart so serues me, as I can thinke of nothing but actions of Honour and knighthood. The Merchant was contented to heare Palmerin in these tearmes, because he perceived that his wife saoured him greatly, whereat he became a little jealous, and gladly would remove the occasi-

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

en, wherefore he said: Seeing it is so *Palmerin*, that thou hast nominde to follow mine *Assayes*, I am well content thou shalt exercise *Chivalrie*, being the thing thou naturally affectest, and wherby thou mayest attaine credit and account. For mine owne part, because I will not hinder so good forwardnesse, thou shalt haue of me *Houey*, *Horse*, and *Armour*, that thou mayest go to *Macedon* to the King, where, if thou request of the *Prince Florendos* his *Sonne*, he will not refuse to giue thee thy *Dyer*. *Palmerin* returned him very hearty thanks, and having prohibited all things excepted for his journey, took his leaue of the *Merchant Ettebon* and his *Wife*, hoping to spend well in his adventurous enterprise.

CHAP. XIII.

How *Palmerin* arrived at the Court of *Macedon*, hoping to receive the Order of Knighthood, at the hand of the *Prince Florendos*, Sonne to the aged King *Primalcon*, by the favour of the Lady *Arismena*.



Being departed from the *Merchant*, *Palmerin* made such speed, that on the fourth day following, riding by a *Moor* side, he found a *Dwarfe* sitting heavily weeping, of whom he demanded the cause of his mourning. Alas Sir (said the *Dwarfe*) as I was riding by the commandement of my *Master*, to a *Lady* whom he dearly loveth, a knight cuen now take my *Horse* from me, and very villanously offered me out-rage, which yett both not so much grieue me, (as being thus on foot) I know not how to get over the *River*. Mount up behind me (said *Palmerin*) and at the first *Colonne* we come vnto, I will provide thee of another *Horse*.

Then

Emperour of *Constantinople*: PART. I.

Then mounted the *Dwarfe* up behind him, and having pass the river, desired to know of *Palmerin* whether he traueled: for (quoth he) I neuer saw man inquisit I had greater desire to serue then you. *Dwarfe* (said *Palmerin*) I now journey toward the Court of *Macedon* to the King, where I hope to finde the *Prince Florendos*, who is accounted one of the worthiest knights in the world, and by his hand I desire to be knighted, if I may. And after you haue receiued your order (said the *Dwarfe*) I hope you will not be so vnwise to hazard the adventure wherein so many haue sayed and lost their liues. What adventure is that, quoth *Palmerin*? To goe to the *Mountaine Artifaria* (said the *Dwarfe*) in hope to kill the *Serpent*, which hath bene the death of so many valiant knights. And what occasion sayd *Palmerin*, moued them to fight with the *Serpent*? What I wil tell you answered the *Dwarfe*. The King *Primalcon* father to *Prince Florendos* whom you seeke, thre yeares since fell into a very strange Disease, for which no remedy can yet be found, notwithstanding, the diligent endeouours of the *Quene* and *Lady Arismena* her Daughter, one of the fairest and most vertuous Princesses that euer was heard of, who seeing her father in such dangerous estate, hath often assembled the best Physicians in the whole world, who haue practised all possible meanes to recover his health: yett hitherto all hath bene to no purpose. Whereupon she sent to an ancient knight, the most skillfull in the Art of *Magromancy* this day liuing, who returned this answer: That he should neuer be healed, except he be first washed with the water of a *Fountainne*, which standeth on the top of the *Mountaine Artifaria*, whither foure times a yeare resort thre *Monks*, *Magicians* of the *Isle Carderia*, to gather vertuous *Herbes* which there they wash, and whereof they frame all their enchanements. This place is defended by the *Spanner*, wherof I tolde you, that no man as yett durst approach it. Which notes when the Princess

Arifimena understood, hoping by strength of men to recover the water and vanquish the Beast, leant a great number of Souldiers well appointed, who were no sooner entered the Mountaine, but the Serpent came suddenly out of his Denne, throwing fire and smoake out of his mouth, and beating his wings together with such terrour, as the very hardiest durst passe no further, but were all glad to take themselves to flight, yet could they not depart with such expedition, but the greater part of them payd theyr lives for their bold attempt, the Mountaine was so stozed with Lions, Beares, Wolves, Harts, Wygers, Dunces, and other wilde ravenous Beasts that deuoured them.

Now at length many Knights had tryed themselves in this adventure, thinking by their valour to performe more then the other: but all the worse, for not one of them returned backe alive. And why goes not the Prince Florendos himselfe said Palmerin, that is esteemed the most valiant knight through all Greece? Alas sir, sayd the Dwarf, some other matter hath so drownded his mind in melancholy, as he liues like one that despiseth himselfe. While the Dwarf continued his discourse, the desire of honour and renowne did so lively touch the spirit of Palmerin, as he sayd to himselfe. It may be that Arifimena was the Lady which in my sleeping thoughts visited me so often, if the Destinies haue vovled her mine, why should I feare the Serpent, or all the other beasts wherewith this Dwarf doth so terrifie me? Wane not I staine a Lyon already with a staffe? Well, the more danger is in the place, the more Honour depends vpon the victorie. If I leane my life there, I am not the first: If I returne with conquest, I shall be beyond any yet in fortune: therefore fall out as it will, no perill shall dismay me from giuing the adventure, whereupon he said to the Dwarf. But tell me my friend, how that brings the water from the mountaine to the King, what advantage shall be derived? My Lord (quoth he) it hath bene many

many times published, that his reward shall be the best City in all this Realme. So then Dwarf said Palmerin, one man more will hazard his life in this enterpryse, albeit I should receive but thanks for my travell, wilt thou goe with me? What wilt thou (answered the Dwarf) if you please, and neuer will I forsake you while breath is in my body. Thus set they on till they came to the great City of Macedon, at what time Florendos was gone to the Temple in such hauintesse, as he seemed a man of another world, being accompanied with many Knights, and his saye after the Lady Arifimena, to whom Palmerin boldly addrested himselfe: and as though he had bene a Courtier all his life time, with seemely modesty he set his knee to the ground before her, and thus began. Madame, I humbly beseech you to vouchsafe me one request, which well you may not deny me, in that I am a stranger, as also in respect of the desire I haue to doe you ser vice. And trust me sir (quoth she) you shall not be refused, what is it you would haue me to doe for you? What at your request (said Palmerin) the Prince Florendos your Brother, will giue me my Knighthood. Arifimena seeing Palmerin so amiable, and well disposed of body, marvelled of whence he was, and sayd. In good sooth sir, such matter nothing appertayneth vnto me, for (as I iudge) such a motion should proceed from your selfe: yet taking him by the hand, she presented him to her Brother, saying. I pray you my Lord grant to this young Gentleman as yet not knighted, the thing he hath desired me to demand. Florendos hauing not as yet beheld him, looked vpon him, when an exceeding passion, presenting the Princesse Grianato his thoughts suddenly touched him, and being rapt into more conceit of her then he had bene accustomed, demanded of Palmerin if he would be made knight. With right good will my Lord, quoth he, if it shall like you to doe me so much honour, for above all things else it is my onely desire. My friend,

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

said Florendos, it is necessary I should first know, whether you be noble bozne or no. My Lord, quoth Palmerin, as yet I neuer know my father nor mother, nor any of my kindred: notwithstanding, mine owne heart makes me iudge no lesse of my selfe, and moze gladly would I dye, then doe anything that were not vertuous, and well worthy the name of a Gentleman. And trust me, said Florendos, I am of the same opinion: this night therefore you must obserue the religious watch as is accustomed, and to morrow will I giue you your order, and put the Sparre on your heele my selfe. Palmerin on his knee humbly kissed the Princes hand, and continuing in talke togither, Florendos took a great delight in beholding him, so that he demanded his name and Countrey. My Lord, quoth he, they which found me amongst the Idume Trees on the Mountaine of Oliua, not farre from Constantinople, haue giuen me the name of Palmerin. By mine Vncler, said Florendos, I ought well to know the Title whereof you speake, as the place wherein my dearest affections took their first life, and not long since, are bequeathed to death, awaiting now but the houre to be discharged of the burden.

Thus hauing in his company his unknowne Sonne, begotten by him on the Princesse Grian, knew little that his loue had soyled to such effect: neuertheless, nature prouoked him to like so well of Palmerin, as none in the Court contented him moze then he. And longer would they haue continued their talke, but that saye Arismena interrupted them, asking Palmerin if he would discharge her of the request he demanded. What doe I Spadaine (quoth he) and in requittall thereof, dedicate the whole circuit of my life to your gracious seruice: and to begin my deuoure on your behalfe, so soone as I haue receiued my knighthood, I will take my journey towards the Serpent, in hope to bring the water that must recover the laing your fathers health. Alas good Sir, quoth she, God forbid that you should fall in
such

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

such danger by my meanes. I know well, answered Palmerin that I can die but once, and if it be now, then am I dispatched, and if I escape I shall doe that whereof many other haue failed, and this is my resolution saies Spadaine. Welcome me, said Florendos, we thinke you are as yet too young, to finish an action wherein consists so great a danger, I pray you therefore referre it vnto such, as haue had moze experience in Armes then as yet you haue. My Lord, said Palmerin, in other matters I shall obey when you command, but this I must desire you not to dissuade me from. Well then (quoth Florendos) seeing you will needs haue it so, I am content, you shall in the meane while keepe me company: as for Swoord and Armour, trouble not your selfe to provide any, because my selfe will furnish you sufficiently.

Thus all day Florendos accompanied Palmerin, demanding of him what things he had seene in Constantinople, and falling from one discourse to another, he asked him what Cquire he had to attend on him. When he shewed his Dwarf named Vrbnillo, such a deformed and small creature it was, as euery one that saw him laughed heartily: whereupon Palmerin said to Florendos. By my faith my Lord, as vnseemely as he is, I thinke so well of him, as I should be displeased if he were any way injured. Assure your selfe, said Florendos, that he will stand you in great stead when you haue need of him, and take that you leave nothing behind you, that is needfull to fight against the Serpent, and trust it in his discretion to bring after you. When Vrbnillo perceived euery one fell with him, he was halfe angry, and in some choller thus sayd to the Prince. I can no way my Lord, better my shape or proportion, but if I liue, this little deformed body of mine shall giue you to vnderstand that I beare so good a mind, that where my master leaues his life, I meane to finish mine, and though in meane while I can doe him no other seruice, yet shall be assured of my fidelity and loyalty. Be not offended (Dwarf my good friend)
said

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

says Florendos, so I thinke well of thee and of thy behaviour. And so because the Tables were covered so supper, they brake of talke, Palmerin preparing himselfe to his watchfull deuoure in the Chappell.

CHAP. XV.

How *Florendos* gaue to *Palmerin* the Armour and Sword of *Gamezio*, whom he slew before *Constantinople*, and afterward Knighted him: and how a *Damosell* came to the Court, who presented him with a Helmet and a rich Shield,



The time being come, that *Palmerin* should performe his deuout watch in the Chappell, before he receiued his knighthood, according to the auncient custome: *Florendos* gaue commandement, that the Armour of *Gamezio* should be brought him, which the Emperour had given him, after his conquest of the Soldane of Babilons army on the Sea, as you haue heard before, and these he shewed to *Palmerin*, saying. My friend, this armour sometimes belonged to the best knight of his time, whom (neverthelesse) I conquered, being then moze pleasant, joyfull, and at better content, then I shall be while I haue a day to liue. And because I haue some speciall opinion of your prowesse, and that these ornaments of defence you will better implay, then any other, on whom I shall bestow them: I pray you henceforth to weare them for my sake.

My Lord, says *Palmerin*, my desire is, that my seruice towards your honour, may be witnessed in my good employment of this gentle gift. When *Frenato* and blazers of that knights aid helpe to arme him, and afterward accompanied him to the Chappell, where all that night he spent in

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I

in solemn exercises, that God would endue him with strength to vanquish the Serpent, that so the King might againe receive his strength.

At the break of day, as *Florendos* went to the Chappell to giue him his Order, there entred among them on the suddaine a comely *Damosell*, bearing a Helmet and a Shield of Azure, the goodliest and most beautifull that euer was seene, upon his Shield being portrayed a Ladies arme, having her hands fast closed together: the *Damosell* coming before the Prince *Florendos*, began thus. I pray you my Lord to pause a while, till I haue conferred a little with *Palmerin*. *Florendos* was greatly amazed at this accident, in that he had neuer seene the *Damosell* before: notwithstanding he returned this answer. Saye *Damosell*, and my friend, good leaue haue you to say what you please. When coming to *Palmerin*, and falling on her knees before him, she said. Sir *Palmerin*, a knight that hath authority to command me, and whom as yet you doe not know, hath sent you by me this Helmet and Shield, where in you shall finde the very secrets of your heart. And if you desire to know whence this honour proceedeth, it cometh from him who hath proued the effect thereof, and that knowes moze of your nearest affayres then you doe your selfe, albeit as yet he hath neuer seene your *Damosell*, says *Palmerin*, where may I finde the learned man that hath thus honoured me, whom I may remunerate with my chiefeft endeouours hereafter: You cannot as yet know him, said the *Damosell*. I pray you saye *Virgin*, quoth *Palmerin*, that you will answer on my behalfe, how in any place I shall come hereafter, I remaine ready to doe what likes him to command me. It sufficeth (quoth she) looke that hereafter you remember your promise: When coming to the Prince *Florendos*, she said. My Lord, the same Man from whom I haue saluted *Palmerin* gaue me in charge to say, that you should not feare or doubt to dubbe him knight: but to per-

swade

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

swore your selfe, that both by Father and Mother hee take
 more as he hath well deserue it, and him hereafter you
 will loue beyond all other, so by him you shall enjoy the
 thing you most desire. Thus having no longer
 licence to stay with you. I humbly desire you to excuse my
 departure. Sweet maide, said Florendos, may your words
 soe to good end, as you haue promised. So departed
 the Damosell, leaving Palmerin on his knees before the
 Prince, who taking the sword that sometimes belonged
 to Gamezio, knighted him saying: And mayst thou prove
 as famous and fortunate, as my hope perswades me thou
 wilt. Then was he honourably conveyed to the Palace,
 where the faire Arismena embraced him and covered him
 with a rich mantle of white Satten, imbrodered all over
 with sumptuous flowers of gold: beside, no one in the troupe
 but highly reuerenced him, for the worthy report the Da-
 mosell made of him. And albeit the Princesse Arismena
 dissuaded him so well as she could, that he should not endan-
 ger himselfe against the Serpent, because by him her Mo-
 ther should overcome his melancholy, and fearing his losse
 without hope of recovery: yet needs would he be gone the
 same day, but that her importunate intreaty perswaded
 him to stay eight dayes longer. Palmerin being soone after
 alone by himselfe, hee remembered the words of the Damos-
 sell, who promised him to shew the secrets of his heart in
 his shield: whereupon he well advised himselfe, and saw
 that the hand portrayed in his shield, had the same marks
 which the Lady had, that appeared to him in his dreame,
 whereat not a little maruailing, he said within himself: It
 must needs bee without all doubt, that he which sent me
 this present, knoweth full well the scope of my fortune, for I
 am well assured that the Lady which spake to me in my
 dreame, when I abode in the house of my Father Gerard,
 shewed me her hand with the selfe-same marks I see here
 placed, by which I may perswade my selfe, that she will
 not

Emperour of *Constantinople*: PART. I.

not cease to follow and finde me out, untill such time as I
 might speake with her. Whereupon he found himselfe so
 sorely inuigiled with her Love, as that hee thus com-
 plained: Ah Palmerin, well mayest thou see that thou canst
 not resist this impression, but whence should this Honour
 proceed? To loue her thou never sawest, nor knowest
 where is her abiding: If it fall out that thou dyest in the
 pursuit, these Passions shall soone haue a small end, and I
 gaine the greatest felicitie that I can desire. By this time
 had he spent the Eight dayes, which he had promised Aris-
 mena for Florendos his company, when as well to begin the
 search of her he loved so well: as to end the Adventure he
 intended of the Serpent, he prepared to depart, providing
 himselfe a huge Piece of Iron, which did him good service,
 as you shall read hereafter.

CHAP. XVI.

How *Palmerin* fought with the horrible Serpent of the
 the Mountaine *Arteseria*, and slew him, bringing the
 Glaile filled with the water of the Fountaine, whereby
 King *Primalcon* of *Macedon* recovered his health.



When the Eight dayes were fully expired
 which Palmerin had stayed with Floren-
 dos, and in company of the fayre Prin-
 cesse Arismena, who (feeling that hee
 would neuer returne from the Moun-
 taine *Arteseria*) was very pensive and
 sad: And oftentimes she intreated him,
 not to hazard himselfe against those cruel, rauenous and su-
 pernaturall Monsters, but rather to witness his valour a-
 gainst Knights of account like himselfe, but all her speeches
 profited not, for he was resolved to depart. I shall not desire
 you said the Princesse, that for my sake you will take with
 you

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

you three Esquires which I will giue you, which may send you succour if any inconuenience should befall you. Then he called the Esquires, and presented them vnto him, with the Glasse that he should bring the water in from the Fountaine, if fortune should with him to finish the adventure. Palmerin mounting on horseback, and Florendo accompanying him halfe a dayes journey on the way, left him on his journey towards the Mountaine Artaxia, where he arrived on the last day of April. When he commanded the Esquires and his Dwarfes Vimbello, to expect his returne at the foot of the Mountaine, for he would suffer none of them to goe by with him: so ascended he the hill by a little tracke safe-path, with his green Bace on his necke, and the Glasse for the water fastened to his girdle.

Having thus traualled vp till about midday, he found the passage so thicke set with Trees and brakes, as he was constrained to alight from his Horse, whome he vnbuddled and left there sleeping: and much further had he not gone, but the night came vpon him, yet did the Greene thing bright and cleare, which made him still traualle onward, till he beheld the Rocke where the water was, and the Serpents denne, who was come somewhat lower to recreate himselfe among the Greene hearbes, where he had closely couched himselfe. But when he heard Palmerin coming bee began to swell, and with his tayle together very strangely: all which could not dismay this aduenturous Knight, but commending himselfe to God, set downe his Glasse, and with his Bace marched stoutly against his enemy, saying, Why Palmerin? Didst thou so often request of Florendo and the Princesse his sister, to try thy strength against this Diuell; and now thou art come in sight of him, wilt thou faint? Doth it not become thee better to die with honour, then to liue with shame? Let the one encourage thee to follow thy enterprise, and the other tell thee when thou offerest to retire. And with these words he encouraged

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

anced him to the Serpent, and the Serpent fiercely began to assault him, and with his tayle he smote him downe, but that he nimbly presented the Stroke, deliuering the Serpent so force a blow on the head with his Bace, as made him reele and stagger, and cry so terribly, as the whole Mountaine rebounded with a miruallous Echo, and to reuenge himselfe, with his talents he got hold on Palmerins Armour, which he rent violently in two or three places, wounding his body very dangerously. When Palmerin perceived in what hard plight he was, he took heart afresh, and watching his advantage, strooke the Serpent with his Bace so strongly on the necke, as he fell to the ground in a manner dead, and Palmerin plyed him with so many strokes one after another, as he left him not while any life was in him. After this happy victorie, for which devoutly he praised God, binding vp his woundes as well as he could, with extreme heartinesse he laid him downe and slept: when he seemed to see the three Sisters wherof we haue spoken before, who were the Daughters of a Knight, Lord of the Isle Carderia, to whome none might be compared for knowledge in the Magicall science, and so well he had instructed his Daughters, as after his death they alone excelled in this Arte, so that the men of the Countie commonly called them the Goddesses of Destiny, because they could denie before what should follow after. And if any one did happen to injury them, they would reuenge themselves by their Enchantments, so that they were greatly feared and held in reuerence. They vsed diuers times this Mountaine Artaxia, as well to gather Hearbes for their necessary vse, as also for the Water of the Fountaine, for the defence wherof they had left this Serpent, who was in time growen so huge and monstrous, as he rather seemed a Diuell then a naturall Beast. Notwithstanding how hideous former he was, Palmerin as you haue heard, overcame and slew him, finding the three Sisters in
the

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

the manner as I haue told you : who were not greatly discontented with him, but esteemed so well of him, as in his sleep the eldest of them thus spake to him. *Belatus me Palmerin*, thy beginning is so honourable, as great pittie it were to let thee goe here, chiefly for the want that all Greece shall haue of thee in time to come, the whole Empire whereof is predestinated thine : and therefore will I heale the wounds thou hast at this time receiued. I will then do somewhat more for him, said the second Sister, I will Enchant him so well for his quailie, as hereafter no Coniuration or Witchcraft shall haue any power to hurt him. Truly said the third Sister, for my part, I will giue him such fortune, as the first time he shall see his Lady Polinarda, (who so many times saluted him in his *Dreames*) he shall loue him so intirely, as no dolor or torment shall make her forget while she liues, the happiness she shall receiue by his occasions. When the eldest sister took a Golden Cup, and filled it with the water of the fountaine and bringing the ioyce of certaine hearbes into it, washed therewith Palmerins wounds, so that they were immediatly healed.

Now felt he very well all they did, but his slumber took away the liberty of his Speech, untill such time as they were departed, but first the eldest of them thus spake. Since this Knight hath had so good a beginning, and that his strength hath depriued our guard of our fountaine, I pray you let vs suffer him to haue a Glasse of our water, that by his means the King of Macedon may be healed, which a number of other Knights haue failed of heretofore. Wherein they all consented, and so it came to passe : then gathering their hearbes as they were wont, and washing them, they took their way to the *Isle Carderia*.

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

CHAP. XVII.

How *Palmerin* descended from the Mountaine, with his glasse, full of the water of the enchanted Fountaine, and how joyfull *Urbanillo* and the other Esquires were, seeing their Master returne with so good fortune.



When these three Sisters were departed, *Palmerin* awaked and arose, not a little marrelling at that he had heard & seen, but most of all when he felt his wounds healed, and saw his glasse full of the water he came for : so rendering thanks to heauen for his good successe, he went by higher on the mountaine, thinking to see the fountaine, but he could not, wherefore without any longer stay he descended downe again, thus saying to himselfe. How happy may I count my selfe, to find so good fortune in this desolate mountaine : for now I know her name that is destined to be mine, henceforth shall she not conceal her selfe from me, may I finde the place where she abideth, and this I know by him that made me, that I will not cease to seek her through the world, till I heare some tidings of her : and were it not for the promise I haue made the *Princesse Arimena*, to bring her this water to recover the King her Father, this day would I begin this religious enterprise, in hope (if the Ladies spake truth that appeared to me in my *Dream*) hereafter to be one of the happie Knights in the world. So walked he on till he came where he left his horse whereon he mounted, and came to *Urbanillo* and his other Esquires, who hauing heard the cry of the Serpent, when *Palmerin* gaue him his first stroke, perswaded themselves that their Master wasaine : but when they saw him coming,

ming, *Vrbaniillo* aboute all the rest was most ioyfull, and ran apace to meet him, desiring to know how he had sped. Well well I thank God, said *Palmerin*, who gaue me strength to kill the Monster, and to bring sufficient of the Water, I hope, to win the King *Primalcon* his health. When haue I the thing, I most desire, said *Vrbaniillo*, albeit I greatly feared, that you had accompanied all the other Knights in death, that aduentured befoze you, and could not speed so well. So mounted they all on horseback, and made so good journeyes as they arrived at *Macedon*, whereof *Florendos* and saye *Arismena* were not a little ioyfull, especially when they were assured, that *Palmerin* had brought with him the things health, by means whereof it is not to be demanded, if he were highly honoured and receiued at the Court.

CHAP. XVII.

How foure Knights would have taken the glasse of fall water from *Vrbaniillo*, before *Palmerin* arrived at *Macedon*, and of the Combate betwene them.



You must here vnderstand that the same day *Palmerin*, in company of his esquires departed from the mountaine, he sent *Vrbaniillo* the Dwarfes befoze, towards *Macedon* with the glasse of water: when it so fortun'd that foure Knights mette with him, one of them saluting him in these hard termes: Deformed villain, giue me that glasse, or I shall take thy head from thy shoulders. *Palmerin*, who came not farre behinde, seeing the Knights offer injury to his Dwarfes, gaue spurs to his horse, and thus answered: What now Gentlemen: are you not ashamed in my presence to abuse my servant: trust me, I neither can nor will so put it by: and so touching his Lance, he encountred one of them

(o

so roughly, as he fell from his horse dead to the ground. When the other three saw their companion thus felled, they altogether set upon *Palmerin*: but their fortune fell out so ill, as two of them were soon vanquished, and the third took himself to flight, very hardly escaping *Palmerin* made no account of following him, but leaving them rode on his way, his Dwarfes thus comming to him: Welcome me my Lord (quoth he) he is to be accounted our scottish baron, that at the weapons point seeks to offend you: I dare boldly assure my words, by euidence of the fortune of these foure knights.

In that, said *Palmerin*, thou maist be deceiued, but God is alwayes friend to justice and equity, and enemy to such as goe against them. But because you shall know the occasion why these foure Knights would haue taken the glasse from *Vrbaniillo*, you must note that they were all Sonnes to a great Lord of a Castle, which was a dayes journey of the Mountaine *Artifaria*, who hauing intelligence by shepheardes and other peasants, what good fortune had befallen *Palmerin* to kill the Serpent, and bring away the fall water, repined greatly thereat: for the Lord did highly malice the King of *Macedon*, because he had enforced him to surrender a *Dowry*, which he against all right held from one of his Sisters, and for this cause, knowing that by the vertue of that water the King should recouer his health, he sent his foure Sonnes to take it from *Palmerin*, whose success in their attempt fell out as you haue heard. Now *Palmerin* by this time is come to *Macedon* to the King, whom with great reverence he saluted on his knee, when the King embracing him so well as he could, sayd. Trust me my good friend, next to God I must esteem you dearest, for that as he by his Goodness hath made me breath this ayre, though weak and sickly: by diuine providence he hath sent you to restore my bodily health, from henceforth therefore I shall intreat you to command me and mine

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

at your pleasure. My gracious Lord, sayd Palmerin, the heauens giue me successe to doe you serbice, for I know no Prince liuing this day; for whom I would moze gladly aduenture my life. I thank you good Sir, queth the King, but the griefs I haue sustained for the sorow of my sonne Florendos, brought me into such a long and lingering extremitie, as well may I blesse the time, that by your good seruice am so happily deliuered: let me therefore entertaine you as my second sonne, and perswade your selfe of such a Father, who will loue you as if you were his own naturall child, in that I, and the greater part of my Kingdome shall be at your disposition. *Whereby* Sir, said Palmerin, woorthily might I be repated amongst the world in the world, refusing the honour you please to offer me, especially in such an extraordinary kind of fauour: for the rest, (being thus accepted in your Princely grace) I haue sufficient being furnished with Horse and Armour to doe me serbice. With these words the King embraced him, and more for caused the teares to trickle downe his cheekes: so that Palmerin stayed longer with him then he made account to doe, till the Duke of Durace sent for him, as you shall reade in the discourse following.

CHAP. XIX.

How Duke *Astor* of *Durace* sent to the King of *Macedon*, desiring him to send him the Knight that had slaine the Serpent on the Mountaine *Artifaria*, to ayde him against the Count *Passaco* of *Mecena*, who layd siege to one of his Cities.



Part of this blazey was so farre spent which Palmerin had against the Serpent, on the Mountaine *Artifaria*, as at length the Duke *Astor* of *Durace* heard thereof, against whom the

Emperour of *Constantinople* PART. I.

the Count *Passaco* of *Mecena* longed battaile, and seeing him selfe unable to resist his enemies, minded to send to the King of *Macedon*, requiring ayde of the Knight that slew the Serpent at the enchanted Mountaine: and hereupon he dispatched one of his Gentlemen towards the King. who made good hast till hee came thither: When doing his reuerence, and deliuering his Letters of credit to the King, hee said. *Worthy* Lord, the Duke of *Durace* my master most humbly salutes your Majesty by me. The King hauing read the Letters, and noting the contents, had the Messenger discharge the rest of his message. It is to Sir, said the Gentleman, that of long time my Lord and Master hath bene assaulted by the Count *Passaco*. who in such small sort hath warren on him, as he hath well nere destroyed the whole Countrey, for he hath taken the City of *Mizzara*, and against all right doth challenge it for his owne. After this the Duke my master rayding his Reges to his him battaile, Fortune hath bene so contrary to my Lord, as his noble Monnes are slaine, and the greater part of his woorthie Gentlemen. Not contented with all this, the Count pursues him still to his very City of *Durace*, which he hath begirt with Reges so strongly, as he is doubtfull of a further danger. But within these eight dayes hee vnderstand that your highness hath here a Knight, that slew the Serpent on the enchanted Mountaine, in whose valour my Lord repositeth such confidence, as would you graunt him licence to come thither, my Lord will accompany him with so many hardy men at Armes, as hee doubts not to enforce the Count to leaue his Countrey: and so that the matter requireth expedition, he desires your assistance with all possible speed. I am soze, queth the King, that the Duke my Nephew is in such extremitie, and I promise you I did not thinke as yet to part with Palmerin: but seeing the necessity is so urgent I will intreate him to goe with you, and so many appoynted Knights with him, as the Count shall perceiue

I am not well pleased with his hard dealing towards my Nephew. Now was Palmerin present when the Gentleman delivered his message, which pleased him not a little, because he would gladly leave the thing to follow his fortune, and was thus held from his desire by importunate requests: but seeing the thing had granted to send him to the Duke, he fell on his knees, using these speeches. In respect of my good Lord, that the Duke your Nephew hath by gentle occasion to employ me, and in that his suit is only for me, without any other of your people, I beseech you suffer me, to goe alone to him, for my hope is so good, in a cause of truth and right, that we shall be sufficient there to end the controuersie. Not so my good friend Palmerin, said the King, you shall not hazard your selfe alone, but take such company as I shall send with you. My Lord, quoth Palmerin, hee demaunds me without any other company, and therefore let me perswade you to satisfy your request: so turning to the Gentleman, he bid him prepare to set forward, for he was ready. worthy Sir, answered the Messenger, with what expedition you please, for neuer was a knight expected with more earnest longing for, then you are. This suddaine resolution of Palmerin displeased Florendos: wherefore taking him aside, he said. I see then my deare friend, you will needs be gone, albeit your company hath giuen me greater solace and delight, then anything else since I lost my onely content: yet is my regard of your honour such, that I feare more to heare your misfortune, then I pittie the necessity of my Cousin the Duke of Durace. Yet let me intreate you, that finishing your intent with fortunate successe, you make your present returne to the King my Father, whose loue, and whose liberality you neede not doubt of. My Lord (quoth Palmerin) the King and you haue so highly honoured me, as wherefore I shall come hereafter, I tell yours in my very best seruants deuours.

Edw

These words old Prolome heare, the Sonne of Frenato, whom Florendos had kept since the time he was his Page, and was now old enough to receive the Knighthood: which made him desirous to purchase honour by some meanes, especially if the thing would moue Palmerin to take him with him, his request he perswaded himselfe would not be denied, whereupon, kneeling before the King, he beganne thus. If it please your Highnesse, that at your hands I might receiue my order of Knighthood, before Palmerin departed from your Court, I am assured he would not disdain me for his companion, especially if your Majesty did moue the question on my behalfe. Welcome me, quoth the King, so good a motion shall not be hindered by me, and therefore to morrow will I giue you your order, and such Armour as shall well become a knight, prepare you in meane time to performe your watch. Highly contented was Prolome at these speeches, and gave order for his provision of needfull occasions, till evening came, when he entred the Chappell, where he spent the night in devout orisons, that heauen would so further the whole course of his time, as might stand with the advancement of justice and his owne Honor. Early in the morning, the King accompanied with his Sonne Florendos and many other Knights, entered the Chappell, where finding Prolome on his knees, he gaue him his Knighthood, wishing his Fortune to prove such as might make him famous where euer he came: afterwards he desired Palmerin, that this new knight might beare him company in his trauels, whereto Palmerin willingly consented, accepting so well of Prolomes behaviour, as he purposed thence forward not to forsake so good a companion. When they both took their leave of the King and Florendos, and departed with the Gentleman towards the Duke of Durace, making such good expedition in their journey, as hauing cross the Seas with a prosperous winde, they landed in the Countrey of Durace. Now because the City was

besieged on all sides, they were doubtfull how to get in
vantage of the enemy: which the Gentleman their guide,
performed so well, as by private Agnes made to the Gentle-
man, at length they got in without any danger. The Duke
hearing tidings of their arrivall, left his Chamber and came
to welcome Palmerin, whom he entertained with great
honour, spending the most part of the night in familiar con-
ference with him, till having brought him to his Chamber,
he left them both to their good rest, till the next morning,
when he came againe to visite them, thus saluting Palme-
rin. Your arrivall, Sir Knight, doth arme me with such
assured hope, as by the helpe I shall receive at your hand,
mine enemy (I trust) shall not overbawe me as he hath done
hitherto: and therefore you with your worthy companion,
are both so welcome as you can desire. My Lord, (quoth
Palmerin) the King that sent me to you, hath bound me to
him by so many courtesies; as for the loss of him and Flo-
rendos his Sonne, you may assure your selfe of my utter-
most service, so long as I shall be able to hold my sword.
The Duke returned his noble offer many thanks, and
walked into the Hall, where the Duchesse there expected the
comming of Palmerin: so after many welcomes and courtly
entertainings, the Tables being covered, they sat downe to
Dinner: all which time, Palmerin eyes were fixt on the
Duchesses Daughter, who was one of the fairest Virgins
that ever he saw, and so busied was his thoughts in behol-
ding her, as he gave small regard to the Dukes words,
who reported what shamefull injuries the Court had of-
fered him from time to time, and how many skirmishes
had passed betwene them since the beginning of the wars.
Thus spent they the Dinner time, till the Tables being
withdrawne, the Duchesse with her Daughter were gone
into their Chamber, and the Duke questioned with Palme-
rin as concerning Ptolome, who was very much allied to
the Duke: and so with discoursing of newells of Macedon, as
also

also the doubtfull affaires of the warres, they passed the
whole day till night came: when Palmerin and Ptolome
departing to their Chamber, Palmerin could take no rest,
the beauty of the Duchesses Daughter so troubled his
thoughts; which made him desire to know her name, if
this were she the Duke's daughter spoke of on the mountains,
and was before promised him in his sleeping visions. Palme-
rin was not alone thus passionate, but on the other side the
young Lady became an amuse of him: but fortune would
not permit their love, as you shall here more hereafter.
The Count having all this while maintained very straight
Rege, intending now to lose or gaine all, gave fierce assault
upon the City, first calling all the chiefe Lords and
Captaines of his Army, moving them with earnest and
souldier-like persuasions, to forese the advantages, and
to encounter their enemies with magnanimous and reso-
late courage. When he had thus imboldened his men to
the fight, with sound of Drums, Trumpets, and Clarions
they had the City battails: then might they behold how
they bestirred themselves with fagots to fill the Ditches,
and Lances, set scaling ladders to the walles, how the
one side assaulted and the other defended, that many lost
their life or departed maimed: such harocke did Palmerin
and Ptolome with the Dukes power, make on the ene-
mies, notwithstanding they were in number farre beyond
them, and marvellous well provided of all necessaries. But
then Palmerin remembred a sodaine policie to prevent a
mischief, for as the enemy retired to prepare for the second
assault, he called the most part of the best knights that
the Duke had, willing each one to betake himselfe to his
hoyle and follow him, leaving the rest well appointed for de-
fence of the walls. The Counts power sounding the alarme
and comming roughly againe upon the Citie, Palmerin
with his company privily issued forth at the Postern gate
on the backs of their enemies, and gave such a bawle, as

as they were enforced to forsake their scaling ladders to resist this encounter. There were many Croakes delivered on either side, the Count and most part of his knights being on horsebacke, which made them hold the longer play with Palmerin and his men notwithstanding, the Count seeing such a hardy attempt given on a subaine, and doubting fresh supply would come from the City, with fears beganne to retire, and with one of his Brethren laboured to resist this desperate assault: but Palmerin and his company gave them small time to rest, laying on loads with marvellous fierceness, whereat the Count was so offended, as coming to Palmerin, he gave him such a cruell Croake on the helmet, as he fell therewith to the ground, yet did he quickly recover himselfe againe, and requited the Count with so sound a salutation, as he made him tumble from his saddle headlong to the earth, at what time on the other side Ptolome had so canbazed the Counts brother as he sealed him an acquittance with his sword for his life. Then began the Counts shouldours to dispaire for their successe, and Palmerin with his traine to follow them so closely, as they were glad to take themselves to flight, leaving their Master overthrowne in the Arme, where he was troden to death with the trampling of the Horses. Thus did the victory remayne to the Duke, his enemies scattering in flight glad to save their lives, whom Palmerin commanded to follow no further, least gathering themselves together againe, and espying advantage, they might so endanger them: for oftentimes the vanquished too narrowly pursued, recover courage and daunt the pursues of the conquerors. For this cause he returned with his men into the City: the Duke understanding the scope of his enemy, which made him with a great number of worthy Citizens to goe meete Palmerin and Ptolome, whom embracing he thus entertained. Ah good knights, by you is my estate recovered, and the death of my Wonne revenged on the murderer, there-

fore

fore dispose of me and mine, what you thinke best: To which wordes Palmerin thus answered. My Lord, let heaven have this honour of our victory: as for me I have done, and will hereafter what I can, for the great kindness of the King of Macedon your brother, whose path directed me in sending me to you, and other recompence I never did or will take. As they thus parled together, the Duke perceived by the blood on Palmerins Armour, that he was wounded in many places: wherefore (quoth he) I see you are sore wounded, let us make hast to our Palace, where a Lady attending on the Duchesse, and well skilful in Chyrurgery, shall give attendance on you till you are recovered. So mounting on his horse he rode to the Palace, where Palmerin was lodged. Being brought into his Chamber, the Duchesse and her Daughter helpt to waime him, when the Lady dressed his wounds, perswading him there was no danger in them to be feared. Thus each one departing, Laurana and the Duchesse daughter called Virbanillo, the Dwarfe saying to him. My friend, beare thy Master to make bold of anything he wants, and that for my sake he will dispute of nothing. Whan, says the Dwarfe, you have good reason to wish my master well, as well for the good assistance he gives the Duke your father, as also in respect of his benefits, which are as honourable as any that ever came in this Court. These wordes Palmerin very well heard, having his eye continually on her: wherefore when she and all the other were departed, he called Virbanillo, denouncing what talke he had with the Princess, which he reported, and his answer also. Camerle says Palmerin, I pray thee and the Duke to let her know, that I am her servant and knight, ready to accomplish any thing that she shall command me. Heferre this matter to me, quoth the Dwarfe, I know what saint will patronize these matters, and what offering must be layd on his Altar.

CHAP. XX.

How *Palmerin* became highly enamoured with the Beauty of the Princesse *Laurana*, thinking her to be the Lady that solicited him in his Visions.



VUrbanillo the Dwarfke not forgetfull of his Masters commanndement, the next day when *Laurana* came with her mother to visit *Palmerin*, she took the Dwarfke aside, demanding what tell his master took the night past. *Spadam* (quoth he) indifferent, I thanke God and you, for in you two consisteth the disposition of my Masters health. As how, quoth she; Thus *Spadam*, said *Urbanillo*: The first day that he beheld you, he gave the whole possession of himselfe to firmly to you, as day and night he meditates on your diuine perfections, vowing in requitall of his seruice to my Lord your Father and his Countrey, whose lines and yours he hath defended, himselfe shall be repaid with sobaine and cruell death: for, had he not some say you safety, well had he escaped this dangerous extremity. When seeing (saith *Spadam*) that his valent hath bene the means of your deliuerance, hee not so degenerate from gentle nature, as to kill him that gave you life. Why, my friend (quoth she) what shouldst thou haue me to doe? Hee loue him, saith *Spadam*, quoth he, as he doth you. Alas, said she, thou wilt assure thy selfe, that none can with thy Master better then I doe, being my deere and his desert: with which words she changed colour with such modest bashfulness, as it might be perceiued she could hardly master her affections. Which, when the Dwarfke beheld, as one not to learne his lesson in this sort, perswaded himselfe by the very looked of *Laurana*, that his Masters

long

love would sozt to happend, and thereupon he followed the matter thus. I thinke *Spadam*, that you with my Master as well as any, but that is not enough, unlesse your will agree with his in this point, that you grant your selfe his onely Lady and Mistress, as he hath vowed himselfe your Knight, and Seruant. If it may please you to with this good to my Master, vouchsafe this labour as a present of your liking: that so soone as he shall finde himselfe better in health, you will but consent to speake with him alone, in some such conuenient and unsuspected place, as he may haue liberty to acquaint you with the secrets of his thoughts. Alas, quoth she, how should I so do, without offering too much impeach to mine owne honour. *Spadam*, said the Dwarfke, the right giues labour to lober sweet enterprizes. By this time the Dutcheffe was ready to depart, which *Laurana* perceiving, said to the Dwarfke: Assure thy master from me, that I am more his then mine owne, and I will doe soz his welfare, what I may with modesty.

By reason of *Lauranaes* departure, the Dwarfke could not make her answer, but shadowing the matter as he had done befoze, went about his Masters busynesse, till he came and found him alone, when he discovered all that had passed betweene the Princesse and him, which so well contented *Palmerin*, as nothing could moze: because he perswaded himselfe, as I haue sayd already, that this was the which the three Sisters promised him, by whom he should receiue the honour that *Destiny* allowed him. For this cause thencefozward he was very desirous to know her name, commanding *Urbanillo*, very straitly to enquire it, which he did, enforming his Master that her name was *Laurana*: whereupon he well saw, that he was deceived, in that the three Sisters had named his Mistress *Polinarda*, and therefore he resolved to withdraue his affection, and to depart thence so soone as he could be able to beare *Aristote*: But it may be easily presumed, that when one hath so farre ventured

ventured in loue, that he perceiues himselfe beloued as the Dwarfie perswaded his Master, hardly can he giue over so faire a beginning: yet here it fell out contrary, as you shall well perceiue, that the end was moze sodaine then the beginning. Palmerin now knowing the Princes name, beganne to vse other countenance to her then he was accustomed: but the good Lady (in his excuse) conceiued better opinion then she had cause: yet as it euermoze falleth out in loue, then when Ladies see themselves but tenderly courted by their friends, they grow importunate in theyr amorous desires: so came it to passe with Laurana, who perceiuing her self not solicited by Palmerin as she was wont, one night somewhat late she called the Dwarfie and thus beganne. Now comes it to passe my good friend, that thy Master is not of so pleasant disposition, as heretofore he hath been: it may be thou hast not let him understand my last salutation, or else feare withholdes him from following his determination: I pray thee see the message of my earnest good will to him, and tell him that I long to impart our affections together, to the full resolution of our desired thoughts, which I haue found the way unsuspected to accomplish, so please him to come to my chamber to morrow at night, where I shall not faile to expect his presence. When the Dwarfie heard Laurana vse these words, thinking his Master was still in his former cogitations, thus answered. Trust me, saye Madam, within these few dayes, my master is become so melancholike, as I haue many times feared his death, and I am sure he hath no other cause to torment him so, but onely the fury of the extreme loue he beares you: yet seeing you haue promised him such great fauour, let me alone to change this unpleasant humour. Saye not then (quoth she) to let him know my mind. I ges presently sayd the Dwarfie, to acquaint him with these long desired things. So taking his leaue he went to his masters chamber whom he found

fast a sleepe, when not daring to awake him, let he say his message till the next morning, and so layd him down to rest, at what time sleepe had thoroughly possessed him, he began to cry and complaine so loude, as his Master hearing him, arose, and demaunded of him the cause of his lament. Alas, my Lord (quoth he) neuer in all my life was I so affrighted, me thought that one of the sayrest Ladies that euer eye looked on, held a naked sword against my throat, saying, Wile, and villanous creature as thou art, darrest thou presume so much to offend me, as to make thy Lord and master amorous of Lady Laurana, and to forsake me & justly dost thou deserue to die on this weapon for thy parricide, and if hereafter thou carry any message to persuade my right, assure thy selfe, that I will chastice thee in such sort, as all deformed villaines shall receiue example by thee. I tell thee Traytor, Palmerin his fortunes climbe higher then the name of Laurana, and where he is moze loved for the royalty of his linage, then for his base and parricidal education. With which words she gaue me such a stroke on the head with her sword, as I, (fearefull of my life) cryed so loude as you say, you heard me. This motion made Palmerin easily perceiue, that Polinarda had made this threatening to the Dwarfie for Laurana: which concealing to himselfe, he said in laughter. I thinke thou dost forget to drinke when thou comest to bed, and so thy heart being dry, conceiued this vision: I pray thee sleepe, and trouble me no moze with such tale passions, the Dwarfie betooke him to rest, but Palmerins thoughts were all night hammering on this dreame, so that he resolved to depart thence the next morning, and seeke elsewhere his adventures, seeing he was aduertised by so many aduertisements, So at the day rising, he called the Dwarfie, and commanded him to prepare his Armour, for he intended to take his leaue of the Duke. Prolome hearing this, and hauing noted besides all the Dwarfie told his master in the night,

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

night, dissembling the matter, as was his manner, he came and bad Palmerin good morrow, who answered Ptolome in this manner. My deare friend, I haue concealed none of mine affayres from thee, since the time we receiued our Knighthood, and parted together from the Court of Macedon: now therefore will I impart to thee what I haue determined.

It is so, that vrgent occasions constrain me presently to leaue this Countrey, and hence forth to frame my course which way fortune will direct me, by which occasion I & we must be enforced to leaue each other: notwithstanding let me intreate that our absence may no way impayre our friendship, not doubting but in good time we shall meete together againe. In meane space, if you see the King, or Prince Florendos, forget not the humble duty of their vowed Seruant, I beseech you, who dedicates his life and honour in all attempts to their gracious fauours. My God sayd Ptolome, let who will doe the message for me, for neither death nor danger shall separate me from you: but I will beare you company while life and soule hold together, if you be so resolu'd, said Palmerin, shame were it for me to refuse you. Set forthward then when you please (quoth Ptolome) for we neither must nor will depart, thats flat. So being both armed, they came to the Duke, who marvelled much to see them so prepared, and therefore demanded whither they went. My good Lord (answered Palmerin) in that your Countrey is now quieted, we must intreate you for our departure, because weighty affaires in other places doe so commaund vs. How happens it sayd Friends, (sayd the Duke) that you will so soon leaue me: My Lord (quoth Palmerin) we are so enforced and therefore we humbly intreate you not to be offended. If your altaies be such (said the Duke) loath I am to bid you, commaund of me and mine what you please, for all remayne at your disposition. Spoke humble thanks said Palmerin, and Ptolome

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

Ptolome returne to the Duke, and ere they went to Dyssoback, they came to take their leaue of the Duchesse and Laurana, who was well nigh dead, seeing her hope vntreated, for she expected the sight comming, when she and Palmerin should conferre together of their loves: but seeing him now departing, she was out of all hope to see him againe, the extreme griefe whereof so ouer-came her, as giuing a great shake she fell in a swoone.

The Ladies and Gentlewomen in great amagement came about her, ignorant of her suill, but only Palmerin and the Dwarfes, which he likewise would not reueale to any, for the reason you heard discouered before: and rather would he entertaine her owne death, then make knowne a secret of such importance: Wherefore hauing somewhat recovered her selfe, and not able to conceale her anguish, with an extreme sigh she thus breathed forth her sorrow. Ah Palmerin, easily hast thou kindled the fire, which with great shame thou leauest consuming vnpurged. Who would haue thought that such treason could harbour, where faire conditions and honourable valour shined so brightly: Well may I condemne all men of disloyaltie, seeing thou hast failed resembling so excellent. Believe me Knight, thou hast done me great wrong, and thy selfe much more: for which, where ever thou comest, be thou named the most ingratefull Knight that euer drew sword, seeking her death so cruelly, who loues thee dearer then her owne life.

These complaints made Laurana before the Duchesse, not sparing to discharge the whole burthen of her oppressed heart, her Mother not daring to gaine-say her, but expected when she should depart this life: wherefore perswading her selfe from despair, she stoutly promised to make so with Palmerin, as he should say, and enjoy her to his will. But all this was in vaine, for he mounted on his stecke, and accompanied Ptolome and Urbanillo, left the City of Durace, no one knowing which way they were ridden: Palmerin

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

rin converted into such heavineſſe, as nothing could ſoiment him more, ſo earnest was his deſire to ſee her, whom fate and Fortune had appointed for him.

CHAP. XXI.

How *Palmerin* and *Ptolome* met with a Damoſell, who made great mone for a Casket which two Knights had forcibly taken from her, and what happened to them.



Being thus departed from Duraco, theſe knights rode along, thinking in what heavineſſe they had left the Dukes Daughter: When *Palmerin* accusing himſelfe as guilty of this miſchance, within himſelfe thus ſadly diſcourſed. Unhappy man that euer thou cameſt into this Countrey, where thou haſt left ſo hard an opinion of thy ſelfe, as while thou liueſt thou ſhalt be the worſe eſteemed: and well worthy, for juſtly mayſt thou be accuſed of diſloyalty, in making meanes to obtaine the love of the faire *Prinſſe Lurana*, and having conquered where thou deſireſt, to make ſo little account of her as thou haſt done. What death prevented thee beſore, ſhe had bene ſatiſfied, thine Honour defended, and thy unknowne *Polinarda* no way injured: Which ſpeeches made the teares to trickle downe his cheeks: When *Ptolome* looking aſide eſpyed him, and queſſing the cauſe of his ſickneſſe, ſaid. Merely I neuer thought to ſee ſuch womanlyſh behaviour in you, nor that any griefe or miſfortune ſhould haue ſeares ſo ſone at commendement. How will you hereafter withſtand ſo many caſualties, hard adventures, and dangerous ſtrata-gems, with many and ſundry narrow bynnts that you muſt paſſe through, when I ſee you unable to overcome your own ſelfe, being ſurprized by her teares, to whom you haue done honour

Emperour of *Conſtantinople*. PART. I.

honour to afford a good countenance: If you had receyued of her the ſweets of Love, reaſon might then pleade in your excuſe: but hauing no way miſprieſed her honour, or offered offence to moſt chattiſſe: what injury may ſhe ſay that you haue done her? Forget I pray you theſe vniſanicle ſaſhions, hardly agreeing with a knight of ſuch repute as you are: let vs finde ſomething elſe to talke on: and tell me which way you intend to iourney? By my life (quoth *Palmerin*,) I knowe not, but let vs take which way Fortune ſhall pleaſe, to conduct vs. I thinke it beſt then (ſaid *Ptolome*) that we ſhape our courſe towards Rome, where we ſhall find people of all Nations, by whom we may be inſtructed, as concerning Adventures worthy our trauell, and giuing to honour. On then cheereſly (quoth *Palmerin*,) and ſo they trauelled eight dayes together, not meeting with any Adventure worthy to be ſpoken of, till at length they met with a Damoſell heavily mourning, who ſaid: Alas, what will ſhe ſay, whoſe truſt was onely in me, having loſt the thing whereſu conſiſted her hopes, to recover the higheſt of her noble beſtes? *Palmerin* hearing theſe wordes, and moved with compaſſion, rode to her, and demanded the cauſe of her mourning? For knight (quoth ſhe) I was ſent by a Lady with a Casket, wherein was one of the beſt ſwordes in the whole world, which is ſo Enchaunted, as none can draw it out of the ſcabbard, but he that is ſufficient the worthieſt knight living: but beſore any be admitted to make proſe of this Adventure, hee muſt grant a requieſt that I am to aſke him, with this ſword haue I trauelled many Strange Countreies, as France, Italie, Sclavonia, and diuers others, whereof many haue tryed, but no one yet could finiſh the Adventure: whereupon I was this day traueſſing towards the Emperours Court of Greece, and here by I met with two knights, who hearing heard the cauſe of my long trauell, made proſe of their Aſſiſtance, and after and after, and both failed, whereat they were ſo offended,

sended, as they took the Casket from me perforce, and are gone therewith I know not whither: which doth so much grieve me in respect of her love towards whom I am, as death would be more welcome to me then life.

Faire Virgin (saide Palmerin,) do not discomfort your selfe, but shew me which way they rode that dealt with you so discourteously. Gentle Knight (quoth she) if your hap be to restore my love againe, you see the most gracious aide that ever Knight did see a distressed Damsell. These Traytors to honour (wherof the one is in Clifton Amour, bearing in his shield three Lyons heads) took this way by the Wood, and as yet I am sure they cannot be farre hence.

Then Palmerin clasped his Helmet, and taking his sword and Lance, desired Ptolome to guard the Damsell and follow him, galloping that way which she had shewed him: and by the time he had rid two miles, he espied them he looked for, talking with another Knight they had met, and they three together were saying to open the Casket, unto whom Palmerin cryed, Treacherous villaines, that cannot make with Ladies on the way, but must offer them injury, deliver the Casket or ye die: One of the two turned presently, and seeing him that thus threatened them to be alone, not moving a foot, began to laugh, and scornfully returned this answer. Softly, softly, good Sir, God pardon thy soules whom you kill so easily: but for all his words, Palmerin ranne against them, and they at him, so that he received a small wound on his shoulder: in recompence wherof, he gave one of them a passe-port into another world, and laid so lustily on the other, as he set him quickly besides his saddle. When the third saw his companions at so hard a reckoning, he said to himselfe. By my faith he spake not unadvisedly that said, A safe escape is better then a bad carrying: And altho' this sentence for currant in his owne opinion, gave the spurs to his horse, making hast away with the Casket, as fast as he could: but Palmerin being

some

somewhat better mounted, got such advantage of this Knight, as with his sword he parted his right arme from his body, wherupon he fell to the ground and the Casket with him. When Palmerin alighted, and took it up, and leaning the Knight there, returned which way he came: when opening the Casket, he took great pleasure in beholding the sword, which was marvellous costly: yet would he not prove to draw it forth, because he knew not her pleasure to whom it appertained. At length he espied Ptolome coming, who came apace (if needs had bene) to have assisted him: but when he knew how he had overcome the Knight, and recovered the thing was so desired, no man could be better contented, especially the Damsell, who leaping from her horse, came and kissed Palmerins feet, saying. And may all happiness repay this gentle dame, faire knight, so but by you, my death had bene best welcome to me.

Damsell (quoth he) is here the Casket according as I found it, I know not whether they that took it from you have abused it or no. No, no, (saide she) they could no way wrong it, the sword being here that belongs to the best Knight. I pray you (quoth Ptolome) let me make tryall of my strength, albeit I know my selfe no such man as you speake of: so taking the Casket, offered to begin, when the Damsell desired him to forbear, so (quoth she) you must first grant me one request, what ere it be, saide Ptolome, I grant it: and so set all his might to his intent, but could not accomplish it. Wherefore quoth he, to the Damsell, be lieve me Lady, he that wrought this Enchantment, did more by his Arte, then I can by my cunning, and in my opinion you may traveill long enough before you finde him that shall quit your expectation. The more will be my trouble, (quoth the Damsell) being tyed by necessity to such a Knightes fortune. When Palmerin saw that his Companion had failed, he doubted whether he should take it in hand or not: yet seeing he could speake no words then others had done, he

said to the Damozell, will you any thing with me before I adventure my selfe, for my friends shall not be mal-content for a fellow. Gentle Knight (quoth she) I will nothing, but that you make the like promise your friend did, & that doubt you not, said Palmerin: so laying hands ballantly on the Sword, without any great labour he drew it forth, being the richest and goodliest Sword that ever was seene.

Oh good Knight, (said the Damozell) happy be the day of thy Battell, for thou hast delivered me from incredible labour. The Sword is yours, but by your promise you stand bound to goe with me where I shall conduct you, to doe that shall please my Lady to command you. Lead the way Damozell (quoth Palmerin,) and be sure we will not leave thy company. So mounted the Damozell on her Palfrey, and took the way towards Rome, where she that delivered her Casket remained in devotion, and with such speed they dispatched their Trauaille, as they arrived at the Gate of a strong Castle, where the Damozell alighted, desiring Palmerin and Ptolome to expect her returne a while. The Gate being opened, she went straight to her Mistress and her Sister, who being glad of her coming, demanded if she had found out the man she went to seek, where Ladies (quoth she) I haue, and hither he is come with me, but this I dare assure you before hand, that a more goodly and ballant Gentleman liues not this day: for in my presence he vanquished thre Knights, who perforce took the Casket from me, and for the sword he drew it forth so easily, as it had been that he weareth by his side. Soe, said the Lady, and canst thou come nere, and come Sister let us goe to the gate to enter, saue him. When was the draw Bridge let downe, when Palmerin and Ptolome riding to the gate, met there the Ladies, whom they saluted with great reuerence, and each Lady leading a Knight in by the hand, conducted them to their Chambers to be armed.

CHAP. XXII.

How the Lady of the Castle declared to *Palmerin*, what moued the Giant *Darmaco* to take from her, her Daughter and her goods, whereupon *Palmerin* promised to enter Combate with the Giant: as much for pittie, as to acquite his promise made to the Damozell that brought the Casket and the enchanted Sword.



Two Knights being thus entred the Castle and armed, the Ladies brought each of them a rich Mantle of Crimson Damaske, embordered with Gold and Pearls to cover them, and so came with them into the Hall to meate, where wanted no choise of dainty delicacies: so after the Tables were withdrawen, and many other speeches passed betwene them, the Lady thus beganne to Palmerin.

Sir Knight, as now I am a poore and disinherited Gentlewoman, that sometime was Wife to one of the wealthiest Knights in this countrey, with whom I long time remained not having any Child, till at length it pleased God to send me a Daughter, so faire a creature as ever Nature framed, who at my Husbands death was left with me but five yeares aged. My Lord and Husband learned in the Art Magicke, and for his skill renowned in this Countrey, the day before his death he call'd me to him, saying these speeches. Dear Wife, let it suffice thee that I know what shall happen to thee after my death, and that one shall take perforce from thee not onely such Goods as I leave thee, but also thy faire Daughter: to helpe which extremity, I haue somewhat provided for thee before my departure.

Thou shalt finde in my Cabinet a Sword, which I my selfe

selfe haue enclosed in a Casket, and haue set so many En-
 charmed spells on that Swozd, as no man shall be able to
 draw it out of the scabbard, unless he be the best appzoned
 Knight in the World, and he it is that must glue the suc-
 cour, and helpe to recover againe thy losse. Now true fell out
 my Husband's speeches: For shortly after Darmaco the Gy-
 ant came hither, and as his custom was to abuse whom he
 list, so took he from me the best of my Castles, and in de-
 spight of me took my Daughter from me, saying: that he
 would glue her to one of his Sonnes in marriage, a villaine
 farre more vicious then his father, and so despoiled, as Pa-
 lmerin D'Oliua ashaied at her owne wickednes. Now in
 respect I would not consent to this unlesse marriage, such
 gods as was left me he most violently took from me, this
 Swozd onely excepted, which you haue worthily conquered,
 and that had gone with them too, but that my Sister hid it
 very secretly. Now worthy Knight, if ever pittie took place
 in thy gentle heart, reuenge me on this villaine, that hath
 thus robbed me of my goods and my Daughter, whose youth
 (being as yet but ten yeares olde) is the cause that the Gy-
 ant hath not consummated the marriage. And if it shall like
 you to doe thus much for me, you shall not onely fulfill your
 promise to the Damsell that brought you hither, but you
 shall doe a worde acceptable to God, profitable to me, comfort-
 able to my poore Child, and honourable for ever unto your
 owne selfe. *Palmerin* (answered *Palmerin*) it is no mar-
 uelle if Darmaco haue done you this wrong, in that Giants
 doe take a habit in trecherous dealing: wherefore did not
 my promise binde me to your Damsell, I would not passe
 so lightly out of this Countrey, here I compelled him some-
 what to recompence this injury, and this shall I (God wil-
 ling) doe to morrow, so please you I may be conducted to
 him. At gentle Knight, said the Lady, what I am not a-
 ble, Heauen will no doubt repay that: And because it was
 now somewhat late, after they had spent a little more time
 together

together in conference, these Ladies accompanied him and
Ptolome into their Chamber, and taking their leave, com-
 mitted the Knights to their good rest for that night, which
 they passed with quiet repose, and on the next morning af-
 ter they were armed, they demanded their guides of the La-
 dy, that should direct them the way towards the Giant.
 When she called the Damsell that carried the Casket, and
 two Knights of her owne, whom she commanded to goe
 with *Palmerin*: so committing him to God and good suc-
 cesse, they took their way straight to the Castle of Dar-
 maco, where they arrived in the morning, when they espi-
 ed a Squire on the walles, who was appointed there to
 keepe the watch, to whom *Palmerin* said. My friend, I
 pray thee if Darmaco be within, cause him to come forth,
 for I would speake with him. And what would you with
 him, answered the Squire? I would intreat him, said
Palmerin, to vse himselfe, more courteously then he hath
 done heretofore, and that he would doe right to a good
 Lady whom he hath dishonoured, namely to send her her
 goods and her Daughter againe: and if my intreaty may
 not preuaile with him, to bid him, if he dare come to the
 Combate, wherein I will make him confesse under my
 Swozd, that his actions haue bene villainous, trayterous,
 and dishonourable. In good sooth Sir, answered the Squire in
 perdition, you may saye so haue reason, and they that sent
 you likewise, but your journey I feare me will not amount
 to so much: therefore, if you will be ruled by me, get you go-
 ing, vntill you are willing to leave your heads for a signe
 to our Gates. The Lady, said *Palmerin*, my Swozd holds
 so good an edge, and mine arme so sound strength, so
 leaue a farewell of such price so easily: goe therefore when I
 bid thee, thou wast my friend, otherwise adieu thy sake if I han-
 quish thy Spallier, that thou with the rest shall surely paye the
 death, for soone, said the Squire, shall I see your message:
 and if any harme happen to you, say my good friends you
 were

these counsellors before: but as for my Master Darmaco, he hath not bene within for this houre and more, yet is his Sonne Mordano here, who can bid you welcome as well as his Father. So departed the Squire, and in short time Mordano the Giants Sonne came vpon the walles, demanding of Palmerin what he sought for: I tolde the Squire, answered Palmerin: but tell me, art thou the Son of the Giant, that delightest in offering villainy to Ladies? And how then, said Mordano, what if I am? I pray thee, said Palmerin, bid thy Father that without any further quarrell he deliuer the Lady that he detaines violently, otherwise I shall cause him to see it whether he will or no. I shall make thee answer, said Mordano, if thou darrest tarry but till I arme my selfe: and so presently departing, in short time he came forth very well appointed, with a meruailous strong Lance in his hand, and mounted on a very lusty Courser, so praucing towards Palmerin, he said. Watch, art thou come to seeke thy same death? I pittie thee: yet if thou wilt geue thy selfe to my mercie, I will spare thy life, and suffer thee to waste thy time in one of the base Dungeons in this Castle. From looking there, God forbid me, quoth Palmerin: and being moued with these rough words of his enemy, he encountered Mordano with such courage, as their Lances being broken, both of them were dismounted, Palmerin not hurt, but Mordano was wounded on the right side, the trenchion of Palmerins Lance being left in his body. Notwithstanding he recovered himselfe quickly, and came furiously towards Palmerin, and gaue him such a crisell stroke on his head, as the blood beganne to trickle down his face: which when he perceived, and how it stood him in hand now to be victorious, he requited Mordano with so sound a greeting, as he parted one of his armes quite from his body, and astonished him likewise that he fell to the ground: but recovering himselfe, he ranne towards the Castle, and Palmerin after him.

him. The Seruants of the Castle, seeing their Lordes Sonne in such danger, with Janelins and other weapons came against Palmerin, whom they had murdered, if Prologie and the other Knights that were sent with him, had not speedily come from their close ambush to defend him: and so manfully did they behaue themselves, as they brought them into the base Court, where Mordano fell dead at Prologies feet, who deserring no faine, presently with his sword toke his head from his shoulders. The seruants this seeing, dispersed themselves and ranne into cotters, so that Palmerin and his company had no body left to resist them, some lying there wounded to the death, and other escaping forth at a back Gate, which they made fast after them, least they should be followed. When Palmerin sawe all things fall out so effectually, he called for the Damosell and the Knights that came with him, who being not a little glad of this great good fortune, desired first to seeke for Eimerinda their Ladies Daughter, for they were well assured that she was in the Castle. Search in euery place, quoth he: and because the night drew on, the Gates were made fast, and there they determined to lodge for that night. In the mean while, the Damosell went about the Castle, and there the Giants Chamber she found Eimerinda, who immediately knowing her, came running and caught her lovingly about the necke: for before, (not knowing that her Father had conquered the Castle) she and the other Ladies that kept her company, were greatly feared: but now the Damosell gaue her perfect assurance, that all was done as she desired, and by the whole Knightly multitude, who had taken upon her the charge, she was now safe. As they continued this while, Palmerin came to them, before whom the young Gentlewoman Eimerinda humbled her selfe on her knees: but he taking her by the hand, and with these words comforted her little soule, your Lady mother hath got as desire to see you, will not you goe with her to get some thing, haue you? I will.

was in my life desired any thing more, then to see my Father: but I greatly doubt, that the false *Darmaco* will make us by the way. so he went this morning to the funerall of one of his sisters, and it will be so manye before his returne. when if he hap to make us, we are but dead. Let me deale for that good Lady, sayd *Palmerin*: I haue already killed the Goane, I doubt not but this small practice will make me be as much to the Father. While *Palmerin* and *Ptolome* thus deuised with *Esmerinda*, the *Damoell* and *Urbanillo* had provided supper, which being ended they went to rest, expecting the morning, when they prepared the woman to laye backe: and having taken what they best liked out of the Castle, they set fire on the rest, and so took their way towards the sorrowfull Widow: who expecting good tryings, continued in earnest and deuote Prayers, that the good knight might overcome her blood-thirsty enemy, and returne with victory, and her Daughter *Esmerinda*.

CHAP. XXIII.

How *Palmerin* running with his company to the Ladies Castle, happened to meete with the Giant *Darmaco*, who lost his life in Combat with *Palmerin*.



Thus rode *Palmerin* and his company very ioyfull of their good fortune, especially *Esmerinda*, above all the rest: but this pleasant humour lasted not long, for she had espied *Darmaco* coming forth of a wood, having with him his wife and tenne well appointed knights: whereat the young Lady was so affrighted, at she cryed out, saying: O God, now are we all cast away. At which wordes the other women began to discourage themselves, and seeing the Giant so nere, had not whither they were best to goe forward or backe againe: whereupon

on *Palmerin* said to *Ptolome*. I pray the good friends, while I fight with *Darmaco*, see you and these two knights deale with the rest: in the meane while, I thinke it good that my Dwarf *Urbanillo* convey these notes into the thickest of the wood. He had no sooner thus said, but they beheld the Giant make apace towards them, who not thinking what had happened, yet seeing faire *Esmerinda* so belaboured, in wonderfull rage, not taking eyther sword or shield with him, hee stauiced towards *Palmerin*, who entertained him so soundly on the head with his staffe, as this Giant tumbled sooth of his saddle, hanging in his stirrop by the left foote, and was no way able to recover himselfe.

The Wyfe seeing his Master from his backe, and his burthen to weigh so heavy on his backe, the Giants wife likewise tickling him in the flank, began to course about, and to beate his Master with his fists every way he could reach him, when *Palmerin* on the other side laid him on such strokes, as at length he sent his soule to the diuels, the patrons of his villanous life. Now thought *Palmerin* he had no more to doe, but got helpe his companions against the other knights, wherein he was deceyued, for the Giantesse to reuenge her husbands death, gave so cruell a stroke at *Palmerin* with her husbands spere, as had he not hymke aske she had slaine him, and so continued moe like a Lyon then a Woman, doubling stroke after stroke: which seeing *Palmerin* for his regard of himselfe, seeing no means of perswasions could preuaile with her, to sent her packing after her husband. And now his knights had bent so well with the rest, as on the coming of *Palmerin* they had dispatched them all, of fresh supply had neede to them: as you shall heare more anon.

The Lady of the Castle Mother to *Esmerinda*, so soon as *Palmerin* departed thence towards the Giant, sent to fetch a young Gentleman named *Crispino*, to whom she promised

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

promised her Daughter in marriage, if so be she could recover her againe out of the Giants power: who saying not long after this message, made haste to the Castle, the Lady entertaining him in this manner. Not long since, my good Friend, there departed hence a Knight, who intends to revenge my wrongs on the Giant Darmaco, and because I knowe not to what end this enterpryse will sort, I pray you arme you, and take some of your hardiest men with you, to helpe the good Knight if he should be distressed. Crispino soon consented to this motion, and in his way towards the Castle, it was his chaunce to meete with the Dwarfes and the Ladies that fled into the wood. It is not to be imagined how pleasing this sight was to him, beholding Esmerinda whom he loved as himselfe: of whom he demanded where their company was, and she reported in what state they left them at time of their flight. Whereupon he commanded some of his men to guide the Ladies to a kinsmans house of his that was nere at hand, and he with the rest of his traine galloped to the place, where Palmerin, Ptolome, and the Ladies two Knights encountered with the fresh supply that came to Darmacos men. He was no sooner arrived, but he beheld Palmerin and Ptolome wounded very sore, and one of the Ladies Knightsaine among the rest, which moved him and his men to bestirre themselves: so that (short tale to make) the Giants men were all vanquished in the end, and then Crispino declared to Palmerin, how he had sent Esmerinda and the Ladies to his Cousins house not farre off, whither if it pleased him to walk, he should receive what courtesie could be performed on so sudden warning, in respect of the happy fortune the whole Countrey should stand by him, being thus delivered of Darmaco and his Sonne, but above all, for the safety of his best beloved Esmerinda. Thus rode they together with Crispino, whose Cousin made them very generous welcome, rejoicing greatly at this happy victory: and afterwards

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

terward they set forward to the good ~~Widdow~~, Crispino by the way reporting to Palmerin his love to Esmerinda, and how her Mother had promised him her in marriage, desiring him to assist the matter that it might be finished: which he promised to doe, and so at length they came to the Castle, where when the Lady saw her Daughter, and heard how her chiefest enemies wereaine, it is hard to expresse her exceeding joy, which her cherefull countenance somewhat made manifest, welcōming Palmerin with these words. Ah gentle Knight, how might I be able while I live to recompence this inestimable favour? The comfort of mine age, and my oppressed soule have you brought me, may neuer harmes befall so good a Knight. Lady, quoth he, give the praise to God, as for me, judge if I have borne as good as my promise to your Damosell or no: and if there be any thing else to doe, Lady I am ready now to performe it. You have done so much for me, said she, as nothing remaineth more to be desired, unless of your bounty you will cause me to receive what the Giant took from me by force: so saying he is dead, they that withheld it from me, will now willingly restore it againe. What shall be likewise accomplished, quoth Palmerin: but because he and Ptolome were sore wounded, as you heard, they stayed to be cured, and sent Crispino with his Cousin and a good sufficient traine, to demand the Ladies Castle and her goods. They that held it of the Giant, understanding his death, made present deliverance thereof, and committed themselves to the Ladies mercy: whither she sent her Daughter, so soon as Palmerin and Ptolome were healed, to whom the Subjects bowed their faith and allegiance, and with great triumphes honoured the marriage of Crispino and Esmerinda. On the morrow, as the Knight sat at meate, there entered the Wall a Squire, who said to Palmerin, that a Damosell stayed without to speak with him. Let her come in, quoth he, and say her pleasure. The Squire bringing

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliva*,

bringing her into the Hall. He fell on her knees before Palmerin, saying. Sir Knight, doe you not know me? As in good sooth, answered Palmerin, Welcome me (quoth the Damosell) then hath my service bene well employed which sometime I did you, and whercof I am sure you have heard good account. Then Palmerin knee'd her (the bringing the Shield and the Helmet when Floendos knighted him) wherupon he rose from the Table, and embracing her, said. Faire Damosell and my Friend, I pray you pardon me, for the length of time since I first saw you, did quite exempt you from my remembrance: please it you to command me any service? Sir Knight, said the Damosell, when I presented you the Helmet and Shield, wherewith you take your order of knighthood, you promised mee (if you remember) that you would use it with right good will, in any affaires the Knight had that sent it you, and when he should require such performance: now is the time to command your deeds with your words, for he hath sent me to you with humble intreatie, that without any stay you goe where I shall conduct you, otherwise you are the onely cause of his death. God shield me from such misfortune, said Palmerin, rather would I goe with you presently from the Table. So doe I pray you (quoth she) for I have haste. When he called for his Armour, and the Table withdrawne, he went into his Chamber to arme himselfe, and so did Proleme also: returning, they took their leave of the Ladies and mounted on horsebacke, the whole company being so sorry for their departure, as Esmerinda came to the Damosell, saying. I promise you Damosell, you have done us wrong in your opinion, to hinder us of the presence of so good a Knight. Lady, answered the Damosell, thinke you he was hoine for you onely: content your selfe with the good you have received by him, and suffer such as have neede of his protection, to receive his assistance as you have done. And good reason, said Esmerinda, if it be to so good an end, that no resistance be offered when

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

when helpe is required. So departed the two Knights with the Damosell which way she guided them, and very desirous was Palmerin to be with the Knight that sent to seek him: because he would gladly know, of whence he was that sought him so well, as his message declared by the Damosell the same day he was knighted.

CHAP. XXII.

How *Palmerin* and *Proleme* arrived at the Court of the King of Bohemia, where they entered Combat against the Count of Ormeque and his two Cousins, who accused the Knight and his Sonne of treason, that sent to seek *Palmerin*.



any miles had these knights with the Damosell, when Palmerin at length desired her to tell him, what he was that sent him the Helmet and the Shield: whereto she answered, that liking he was so desirous to know, listen, quoth she, and I shall report the whole unto you. The Knight too (quoth she) is descended of very royal blood, being uncle to the King of Bohemia that reigns at this present, as also to the Emperour of Alemnaine, the very best friend in Germany this day living. This noble man is named Prince Adrian, who never liked to live in the Court of the King his Brother, but contented with what patrimony his father left him, at length married with a very beautiful Lady, of whom in time he had a Sonne named Dyardo, which was named his Brother the King of Bohemia, nourished up in his Court with his owne Sonne. So mutually in love grew these two young Princes, as after the death of the aged King, the young Dyardo should jointly rule with his Cousin the King, wherunto he took the Daughter to

to the Duke of Lorraine, bringing her with him into the Countrey, in company of her Sister, a Princess so wise and vertuous as euer liued. It so came to passe, that Dyardo my Lords most noble Sonne, framing his thoughts to the inspirations of loue, affected so highly the other Sister, as he determined neuer to haue any other, to his wife, if he might compass what he intended. For her good Lady, he could not be deuoted to his amorous desires, he found her lone so equall with his, yet did they shadow their affections so discreetly, as none could perceiue them, but Domarto the trayterous Count of Ormeque, one of the best knights in all that Countrey, were he as familiar with vertue and honesty, as he is with malice and disloyalty. This Traytour enterprised to match with the Queenes Sister, beloued as you haue heard by my Lords worthy Sonne, and thereupon after many solicitings, made knowne his intent vnto her, whereof she made so slender account, as she forbad him any more to trouble her. Domarto seeing my Lords Dyardo his onely pleasure in lone, intended a malicious villanie, and on a suddaine accused the Prince, that he intended to poison the King, so to obtaine a Crowne, as descended of a nearer consanguinity. And as it often falleth out in such cases, when one seekes to crosse anothers fortune, there is no time wasted in following such wylde ends: for this Traytour, knowing the young King alone, began his matter in this tolerable sort. My gracious Lord, the faith and allegiance I owe to your Highnesse, binde me to make your Princely eares acquainted with such newes, as God is my witness, sayd the Traytour (lifting his eyes and hands to heauen) mine owne death were more welcome to me, such is the lone I beare them to whom it concernes, being all so nere allied to you in birth, as soere am I they should be detected: but in yours regard my gracious Lord, the action touching you in such sort as it doth, let me die rather then spare any living creature, he not my selfe, had Nature giuen me any.

any. This noblest exordium haue I made to so foule an occasion, albeit truth needs no colours or eloquent figures: and therefore in blessing my Lord, this is the summe, I am credibly enioyned, that your Highnesse Cousin the Prince Dyardo, and Madame Cardonia Sister of the Queens, haue laid the platfowme to poison your Highnesse, and this haue they attempted, by the procurement of olde Adrian your Uncle, who pretends that the Crowne of Bohemia is his. I know not whether it be for want of discretion or no: but howsoeuer it be my Lord, you should not leaue such a villanie unpunished. The thing began greatly to maruaile at these newes, and know not well what to thinke: whereupon he answered the Count, that he could not believe this accusation, But the Traytour set so smooth a countenance on the matter, and did sweare it still with such stout protestations, as he induced the King to beleue him: so that a day or two after, the King being walking in his Garden, seeing Dyardo and Cardonia at the Queenes Chamber window, secretly conferring of their amorous affections, commanded them both to be carried to prison. The Count glad thereof, provoked the King still with such anger against them, as immediately he would haue them both put to death: but that the Queens and the Lords of his Council, found meanes to qualifie his displeasure, declaring what discredit his Highnesse should receiue, if he did not suffer them to be openly convicted of their offences. All this while good Princes, were they ignorant of this detection, till at length the King discouered the whole matter to them, and likewise who was their accuser: nor did the Count fail to maintaine his charges openly, offering to make it good in light, against any that durst say the contrary: and because he had two Cousins, hardie and valiant knights, conspirators likewise in this faction, there could be none found that would enter the combat against them. Which when the noble Prince Adrian perceived, very grieuouse had well

more than him, in respect he had no Child, but this Dyardo
as also for that he was accused with that he neuer thought.
Whereupon he went presently to the King his Nephew, and
peruailed so well with him, as he obtained the space of two
Moneths, to bring with him one or two that might main-
taine the innocencie of him, his Sonne Dyardo, and the
Princesse Cardonia, against the Traytour Domarto and
his Cousins. And this is the cause he sent me to seek you
forth, in hope that you are as much his friend as he is
yours, which you may somewhat perceiue, by the friendly
presents he sent you by me to Macedon. So helpe me
God, said Palmerin, you haue reported a most strange dis-
course, and neuer did I thinke, that such treason could enter
the thoughts of any Knight, or other inferiour person. All
this is true, quoth the Damoysel, and it is appointed that the
Prince Dyardo, with his aged and crazed father, shall de-
fend their owne causes, without seeking helpe of any other:
but he neuer as yet receiued the order of Knighthood, & there-
fore is constrained to desire your assistance. And that shall I
doe with all my heart, said Palmerin, would God we were
there where he expecteth vs, for the desire I haue to see
him, as also to vnderstand what he knowes of my follow-
ing fortunes. Those matters are hid from me, quoth she,
yet this haue I heard him say diuers times, being in talk
of you, that he accounted you the most honorable knight in
the world: and that if he neuer chanced to see you, he would
advise you to goe to the Emperour of Allemaignes Court,
to be the knightly Seruant to the Princesse Polinarda,
When Palmerin heard the name of Polinarda, he remem-
bered that it was her name, whom he had so long since
sene in his traunces, for which cause he asked of the Da-
mozell, what the Lady was of whom she spake. My Lord,
quoth she, Polinarda is Daughter to the Emperour, and
piece unto my Lord Adrian, the most beautiful Princesse
that euer eye beheld. By my faith, said Palmerin, the more
easily

easily may I be induced to grant her my seruice, and thi-
ther intend I to traualle, when I haue finished your Lords
business. So rode they with much more haste then before,
till at length they came to the City of Almedya, where the
King remained, and the Prince Adrian expecting Palmerins
comming: which when he heard, he came to meete him,
each embracing other with mornailous courtesie, and the
good olde man with the teares in his eyes, thus said. Ah good
knight, what may counteruaile this year exceeding paince,
to maintaine the right of my Sonne and me, who are
falsely accused of such villanous treason, as (on the perill
of my soule) we neuer did imagine: Whereof am I cer-
tainly perswaded, answered Palmerin, and therefore am I
come to enter the Combate with him, that dare affirme o-
therwise. Since olde age, quoth Adrian, might excuse me
henceforth from bearing Armes, but being vnable to en-
dure so wilde a Raunber, so long as life and soule will holde
together, shall I doe my deuoir: so please your companion
to make the second, as olde as I am I will be the third, for
the trayterous Count hath two of his Cousins that take part
with him. And if my fortune so fall out as I dye in this try-
all, I shall receiue my lot very contentedly, if mine eyes
might first behold mine intury redressed. I pray you, said
Palmerin, goe presently to the King, to the end that his
Highnesse may graunt vs the field, for my friend and I
thinke long till we haue made your accuser know his trea-
chery. Adrian immediately went to the King, and on his
knees thus began. My Lord, you know that the Count
of Ormeque hath accused me, my Sonne Dyardo, and Pa-
dame Cardonya, of the crime of Lesa Majestatis, and in
that we all are innocent, I am ready to maintaine, that he
hath falsely and maliciously belied vs, which I my selfe
will approue vpon him, & two more with me, against him
and his Cousins, if they dare enter the field with him in
this quarrell, where we will either make knowne their vil-

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

line, or receive the reward belongs to disloyall Traitors. As for the wrong which you (my Lord) have done me; being your Uncle, and my Sonne Dyardo your Cousin germaine, that I referre to God to recompence, and to the better knowledge you shall receive of me hereafter, being now too olde to be a Trayteur, and my Sonne too young to prove disloyall. The King was abashed to heare his Uncle speake so audaciously, doubting now whether he should give credite to what had bene reported, especially against him, so neere his Highnesse in blood, who so liberally offered to enter the Combat: notwithstanding his white head and aged body made him unfit for such actions, wherefore he thus answered. Good Uncle, impute not me any thing faulty in your accusation, and that the proofs shall manifest that must be made. The Count being present, was stricken in a quandary at these wordes, and gladly he would have denied this former slander, but he could find no way cleanly to doe it: wherefore saying of force he must needs enter the Combat, he boldly fel on his knees before the King with these wordes. My Lord, what I have said is very certaine, and most true it is, that by the Counsell of Prince Arim here present, his Sonne practised with Lady Cardonia, to poison you, that he might be King, which to make good, there is my gage, on the behalfe of my selfe and my Cousins. Thou liest Traytour in thy throat, said old Adrian, I take thine offer: and as he would have gone on with further speeches, Palmerin stept before the King, saying. Most my Lord, saying the effect of the wordes must be put in execution, which have bene here spoken on both sides before your Majesty: may it please you the Prince Dyardo and Lady Cardonia may be sent for, to take with us their oathes as in such cases is required, and in meane time let each one goe put himselfe in equipage for the Combat. Good reason said the King, and presently he commanded the Princes to be brought, who being come, Palmerin be-

manded

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

manded where they were that tooke part with the Count: whereupon he presented his Cousins, the one named Edron, proud and arrogant, and the other Edward, of selfe same quality. These two tooke their oathes with the Count that the Princes accused, conspired the Kings death, in such sort as hath bene before declared: and olde Adrian, Dyardo, and faire Cardonia sware the contrary. But it is true, and I will not deny it (said the Prince Dyardo) that I have and doe love Lady Cardonia, as much or rather more then mine owne selfe, yet neuer did I carry any other intent but to request her in holy wedlocke, so pleased the King and Queene to like so well thereof as we could. But that euer I intended treason or villany, it is most false, and Count thou liest in thy throat, and thy copartners that have sworn with thee. It is sufficient, said Palmerin: but my good Lord, quoth he to the King, if we be conquerors, the accused shall be delivered, and the accusers hanged: What say you Count, said the King? Good reason Sir, the like doe we request if we be victors. Will you (said Palmerin) that each shall helpe his fellow as he finds it convenient? What else? said the Count that is expedient. While this talke endured, Edron regarded so well Palmerin, that he espied the sword which the Damsell carried in the Casket, and brought to that Court as she did to others, which shewing the Count, he said out aloud. Where did the diners find this Knight to giue him this sword? Belike they gaue him strength to draw it out, else he might have failed as many other did: the Damsell was unwise to bestow it in such bad sort. At which wordes Palmerin being angry, returned Edron this round answer. I see (Knight) there is in thee more brauery and foolish glory then manly action, thou blamest me before thou knowest me, but ere you and I part, I'll find better reason to bestow on you, and beate better government into your pate with this sword that likes you not. This caused every one wisely to

behold Palmerin, the King rememb'ring that he had sent the Sword, which none in his Court could deserve to conquer: whereupon he esteemed so well of Palmerin, as he commanded Edron to silence, and all to goe Arme themselves, because he intended that day to see the Combat fought.

CHAP. XXV.

How *Palmerin*, *Adrian*, and *Ptolome* entred the Combat, against the Count of Ormeque and his Cousins, whom they honourably vanquished.



After the King had commanded the Knights to goe arme themselves, hee gave charge to foure of his ancientest Knights to see the field provided, and there to place the Judges, according to what was wonted in Bohemia: the Knights being carefull of the Kings commandement had some prepared all things in readinesse, wherefore the King, his Ladies, Ladies and Gentlewomen, went to see the issue of this valiant enterprise. When was the Prince Dyardo and faire Cardonya brought into the field, before whom was made a very great fire, wherein they should be burned, if the Count conquered. Soone after came the sixe Combatants, who entred at two places appointed one against the other, the Challengers being conducted by two of the Judges to their place, and the defendants by the other two where they were appointed: so the Judges being placed, the Marshall summoned the field, and the Veralds bid the Champions doe their enueaueur.

Palmerin had good regard to Edron, whose words striking on his Remacke, called now for revenge, wherefore couching his Lance, he encountred him with such a full carriere, as his Lance passed through his body, and Edron tumbled

tumbled head to the ground. In the meane while the Count and Prince Adrian had unhorsed each other, Adrian so sore wounded as he could hardly helpe himselfe: as for Ptolome and Edward, they had assailed each other with sailes from their Horses, but they recovered themselves quickly, and with sharpe strokes beganne to charge each other valiantly. Greatly ashamed was the Count to be unhorsed, and therefore to recover his honour, he came with great furie towards his enemy: which Palmerin perceiving, kept betwixt them, saying. Come Count, to me, who will bid moze for thy head then any in the field. With which words he reached him such a sure stroke on the head, as made the fire flye forth of his eyes: notwithstanding, as a man of good courage, he kept aside, and thrusting his Sword into Palmerins Horse throte, enforced him quickly to take him to his fate: but all the worse for him as it fell out afterward, for Palmerin having beaten him out of breath, he slung away his weapon, and caught him about the middle, where they tugged so long together, that Palmerin getting him downe, and his knees on his belly, with his Sword soone took his head from his shoulders. All this while Ptolome had good play with his enemy, and after many dangerous wounds received on either side, at length he had the better of the day by killing his adversary. When he and Palmerin went to the Judges, who giving them sentence of honorable victorie, they took off their Helmes, and came to see in what estate the Prince Adrian was. Enill enough (quoth he) my noble good friends, but the lesse account doe I make of my life, in that mine eyes have seen one vengeance on mine enemies. When was he nobly beque for of the field, the King commaunding to lodge him in his chiefe Pallace, and the Chirurgeons searching his wounds, found them mortall, which newes did grieve the whole Court in generall: the good olde Prince yet being of some courage, was joyfull to dye in so good sort, having defended his owne

owne honour and his Sonnes, whom he sent for, and in the presence of all the standers by, said. My Sonne, seeing it hath pleased God thus to send for me, good reason is that his will be fulfill'd, but ere I depart, this I command thee, that (next God) thou truly serue and love my Lord and King, bearing towards him a heart so faithfull, as I haue done to the houre of my death: and conceiue no offence at what hath passed between thee and me: hauing come to passe (as I Iudge) more by euill counsel, then any settled perswasion against vs. For the rest, to thy bittermost remember the good thou hast this day receiued by that noble knight, who is called Palmerin: then calling Palmerin to him, he said. My Palmerin, Death seized so surely on mee, as I cannot let you know a number of things that concerne you very nercely: I counsell you therefore to trauell to the Emperours Court of Allemaigne; where you shall heare trydings of that you seeke so earnestly. With which words he deliuered by his ghost. And because it seemeth good, ere I passe any further, to let you knowe how the Prince Adrian came by the knowledge of Palmerin, thus it is;

I haue heretofore reported, that he was a notable Cabalist or Magician: by meanes whereof seuerall secrets were concealed from him: so calling his Kalender of most honourable Writings, he happened on Palmerin: and perceiving the high Fortune he was bound to, chiefly, that he should procure a most notable knight, and the greatest Lord in Europe: he was desirous to contract a Parriage betweene him and his Niece Polinarda, presenting her to him in his visions, as hath bene declared. He thus deceasing, the King highly discontented at his Uncles hard fortune, caused him to be buried in most sumptuous manner: making him a Tombe in forme of a Pyramides, y^e most excellent and stately that euer was in Bohemia, and ouer against him were hanged the boyes of the Count & his two Cousins for his Trophe. Thus every thing quieted, and the Funerals of the Prince Adrian solemnized

solemnized, Palmerin would presently haue departed toward Allemaigne: but Ptolomes Wounds were so dangerous, as he was constrained to stay longer then he intended, In the mean space the King did them all the honoz that could be deuised, in hope to stay them still in his Court, but it was impossible, for Palmerin told him he must needs go to the Emperour, about affaires of very great importance. I know your meaning well enough (said the King,) you intend to goe combat with the Enchaunted Knight: and in so doing you shall lose both your paines and your life, as many others haue done before you.

What Enchaunted Knight is it (said Palmerin) on my faith (my Lord) I neuer heard any one talke of him but you. When will I tell you, (qd. the King) since I haue begun the matter. Not long since in the Countrey of the Emperour my Uncle, in the Title of Ymanes, dwelled a wealthy knight, who had a faire Daughter, amorous of a Gentleman: and they loue kept so secret as none knew it but themselves. It so fell out, that her Father married her to another Gentleman in his house, but for any good acceptation, or cheerefull countenance of the Gentlewoman, the Bride-grooms could haue none, so highly esteemed she his first Lene: and continued in opinion towards him so firme, as she granted him entrance into her Chamber, at an appointed time, where he murdered her Husband, and caried the Lady with him whither he pleased. The bruit hereof was so soon spread abroad, as the Mother of the murdered Gentleman heard thereof: Whereupon she made her complaint to the Emperour, who immediately sent to summon the other before him: but they refusing to come, and hauing betaken themselves to a very strong Castle, were in the end so straightly besieged, as the Lady with her louer, at length were taken, and hauing confessed the truth of their offence, sentence was giuen on them, that they should both be burned. The Father of this knight offender so grieved hereat, as he went to one of his

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

suffers, intending neuer to see the Emperour and his Court
 againe. His Father seeing him in this extremity, (as no
 mallice or bad inuention is comparable to a *Womans*) be-
 uiled to Enchant one of her *Spoues*, a good & hardy Knight,
 in such sort, as hee should neuer be overcome in fight, but
 with an Enchantment of greater force. Besides, he gaue
 him a Bow, and a great company of empoisoned Arrowes,
 wherewith he should kill the Emperour and his Children,
 or any other whome himselfe pleased: which hee had not
 failed to haue done, but mine Uncle *Adrian* vnderstanding
 thereof, did take such carefull regard to the matter, as he could
 not hurt them, but many of his people: so that the Countrey
 is wonderfullie perplexed. For he is mounted on a Horse
 Enchanted as himselfe, the swiftest in pace that euer was
 knowne, wherewith he flies into many cut places of the Em-
 pyre, committing a thousand harmes, and cannot be stayed,
 for who soeuer comes to him Armed Knight, or Peasant, all
 dyes the death, and none escapes him. And that which is
 worst of all, it is commonly reported, that if mine Uncle
 will not giue him his eldest Sonne *Trineus* and faire *Polinarda*
 his Daughter, to doe with them what shall like his
 humour, hee will neuer depart the Countrey, till he haue
 thoroughly ruinated it. By my sword (my Lord) said
 Palmerin, in all my life I neuer heard so strange a tale, were
 I sure to dye a thousand deaths, I will fight with this Di-
 uell, and deliuer the Countrey, if my strength will compasse
 it. Alas my good Friend (said the King) it would much dis-
 please me that you should hazard your selfe in such a dan-
 gerous aduenture: for where such diuillish Enchantments
 are, strength of man (how great soeuer it be) both not pre-
 uails: therefore for my sake I pray you forbear. Let come
 what please God (said Palmerin) for if I dye now, I shall be
 excused for euer hereafter. Well (said the King) that hee
 could not change his minde, therefore he left off any further
 to intreate him: and so long he thought he carried for *Pro-
 mes*

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

mics health, so desirous was he to be with the Emperour,
 hoping that his Combat with the enchanted Knight, would
 graunt him meanes to see and talke with faire *Polinarda*.
 Wherefore when his companion had gotten a little strength
 they took their leaue of the King and the Ladies, chiefly of
 the Prince *Dyardo*, and saye *Cardonia*: who after theys
 departure had such successe in their Leue, as with the Kings
 consent the Marriage was solemnized. Now are *Palmerin*
 and *Ptolome* on the way to *Gaunt*, where the Emperour
 made his continuall abode: the Enchanted Knight to perse-
 cuting him, as he durst at no time come forth of his Castle.

CHAP. XXVI.

How *Palmerin* and *Ptolome* arrived at the Cittie of
Gaunt, where the Emperour of *Allemaigne* kept
 his Court: and of the Combats between *Palme-
 rin* and the Enchanted Knight.



God by his will made wise Knights in
 their Journey, till at length they arrived
 at the Cittie of *Gaunt*, where the Empe-
 rour of *Allemaigne* then resournd, not
 knowing how to depart thence, because
 the Enchanted Knight watched him at
 all houses, and mighte being thus come
 thither, lodged in the house of a wealthy
 Margerie, where they were entertained in very honourable
 manner. They were no longer dismounted from their Horses,
 but the whole Cittie was on a ladder of spurs, and the
 people ranne on brayes from one place to another: which
 made him remember what the King of *Bohemia* had told
 him, and presently he imagined what after folloved, for
 hee was in great feare, considering what danger
 hee was in, and how hee mighte be gotten

gotten the gates of the Cittie, and in despite of the Guard he is entred: Wherewithall is the harme that he will now doe, if the Prince Trineus and Saye Polinarda be not rescued. Can defend such hard Fortune (said Palmerin,) rather will I fight with him, and if I dye, I shall accompany many others in infinitimate successe. With these words he took his Lance, and galloped that way where he heard the tumult, which was at the Emperours Castle, where the Enchaunted Knight was, shooting his poisoned Arrows at the windowes he espyed open. Joyfull was Palmerin to finde him in such a place, where the Lady Polinarda might give judgement of his valour, which opinion did so renew his courage, as presently he marched towards his Enemy, who held in his hand a Persian Bow, with an Arrow in it ready to shote, hauing a great fort more at his backe, in his manner he was of unreasonable Nature, yet with a countenance both serene and courageous, all which could not dismay Palmerin, but called to him in this manner. Wroude Knight, that by the ayde of Diuells and euill Spirits, hast committed monstrous cruelties: It is now time that he inhorn thou seruest should haue his pay, which is the soule into endlesse perdition. And so without saying for an answer, he ranne valiantly against him: but the Enchaunted Knight taking his aduantage, shot an Arrow at him so violently, as it pierced through his Armour to the bare flesh. Palmerin hauing broken his Lance, with an Iron Space he had, he reached such a stroke to the Knight, as he brake his Bowe in two pieces, and the blowe falling on the head of his Horse, made him therewithall fall dead to the ground. The Knight hauing recovered himselfe took a Space that hung at his Saddle bowe, and came against Palmerin, who was now on foote likewise: So sayde they on eache terribly with theyr Spaces, that the Emperour and his Nobles, Ladies and Ladies, hearing the strokes, came to the towne, to see the Combat, little thinking that any one such as Palmerin should

die with his enemy: yet all this while the Knights neuer breathed, although their shields and Armburrs were very much mangled, and theyr bodies wounded in many places. And because Palmerin sawe the fight endure so long with the Space, he threw it downe, and took him to his sword, where with he did so bumbaste him about the head, as he could scant tell where to strike againe: but the Knight on a sudden lifting vpp his Space, gaue Palmerin such a stroke between the head and the shoulders, as made him stagger, and reele too and fro amazedly, yet committing to himselfe, and seeing the Knight faint, with his great effusion of blood, closed with him, and casting his legges behind him, threw him to the ground, when setting his foote on his brest to kepe him downe, with his sword he parted his head from his body.

What question were it whether the Emperour reformed hereat or no: who for his whole Empire would not he were alive againe, being so well beloued from his onely enemy in the world, but could so molest him and his Countrey with such mischieuous cruelty. And so to say both, the Enchaunted Knight was altogether invincible: nor could Palmerin haue thus prevailed against his wonderful Enchantments, but that the three Sisters of the Mountaine Artificeria highly fauoured him: as you heard before what wonders they made him.

The Combats being thus ended, and the Enchaunted Knight dead, the Emperour (giving thanks to God for his victorie) let open the gates of the Castle, and came forth himselfe to welcome Palmerin: who kneeling on his knee before the Emperour, thus spake. High Prince, such renowne haue I heard through the world of your great honoz and bounty, as I haue travelled many farre countries, to come offer you my seruice: desiring your Highness (if my fortune may seeme reasonable) to accept of my service, forth amongst your knightly seruants. As for a Knight, (answered the Emperour) it is for me to know of you, how

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

I may remunerate this unspeakable courtesie, for but by you mine enemies had triumphed in my spoile: so much then is my selfe, my Children and Countrey bounden to you, as no satisfaction is sufficient to regratiate. So taking him by the hand and perceiving his body wounded in many places, he conducted him into one of the fairest Chambers in his Castle, where he was unarmed, commanding his Chirurgions to take diligent care of him, because in truth they much doubted his life. Wherefore getting him into his bed, all needfull things for his health were applyed to him, and no cost was spared to save his life that preserved the whole Countrey.

CHAP. XXVII.

How the Emperesse came to visite *Palmerin*, who kept his Chamber, because he had received such dangerous wounds in the Combat with the enchanted Knight, and of the speech he had with the faire *Princesse Polinarda*.



The Emperesse with her faire Daughter *Polinarda*, gladd of the death of the enchanted Knight, came to *Palmerin*'s chamber to visite him, who hearing of their coming, call'd a night mantle about him, which the Emperour had sent him, and came with great reverence to welcome them: so desirous was he to see her, for whom he had travell'd so many strange Regions. In this place it is necessary that you remember, what gracious gifts the three fatal Sisters bestowed on him, in the Mountain Artiferia, one of them granting him this special favour, that he should be highly esteemed of her to whom he was debted, so soon as she beheld him, which came to passe as here shall be declared.

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

Palmerin expecting the extreame of the Emperesse and her daughter in his chamber, meeting them at 2 doore falling on his knees, did with great humility kisse their hands: but the Emperesse taking him up in her armes, saluted him with these speeches. Gentle Knight, right happy may we count our selues by your coming hither, the Realme being more desolate then it hath bene since heretofore, and not without cause, in respect of the great injury the Knight did us, whom you have slain, he having strowne the death of my children that neuer offended him: but God be thanked the lot hath fallen on himselfe, which he determined to inflict on other: for which great grace they stand so deeply bound to you as to their Father that first gave them life, which by your protection you have happily preserved: this second gift bring of no lesse account then the first, worthily may you be called their second Father. *Palmerin* giving care to the Emperesse salutations, had his minde more busied in beholding *Polinarda*, whose many regards to marshall his opinions, as heart, heart, thoughts and will were now set to worke: yet secretly he shap'd his answers to the Emperesse. Madame, what I have done for you and yours, is nothing in respect of my great good will: for since the time I first had knowledge of myselfe, and before I receiv'd the order of Knighthood, understanding of my love the Emperour, and what honourable entertainment was in his Court, I dedicated my services to him only, and for this cause Madame came I hither. But how is it possible Sir, said she, that you can content your selfe to be one of his Knights, your desert being so great: Why well Madame, quoth he, and your love, so please your Highnesse to assigne me such favour, which all my heart Sir, said she, shall I entertaine you towards the Emperour, and on mine owne behalfe will provide better for you then I will speak of: who did it like you, I would accept you for a worthy Knight done, and none other. Whereupon she called her Daughter *Polinarda*; being faire

Faire Daughter, this knight as yet hath little acquaintance in the Court, I pray you see his entertainment may be good, because his desire is to make stay with us, and for your owne part, looke that you intreate him well, with this request, that you accept him for your servant, and he shall be your knight. And are you both agreed Ladies, said Palmerin? Heauen forsaake me if I refuse honour of so high account. And as they would haue proceeded on, the Emperour came in and brake of their talks, and coming to the Emperesse, said Adam, I beseech you haue good regard to the health of this knight, and let our Chirurgions not trifle the time with him, for I perswade my selfe, that the enchanted knight with his venomous arrowes, hath wounded him with great danger inwardly, and hath besides soze bruised his body with the weight of his space. But Palmerin hauing Polinarda so nere him, neither minded his wounds, or what the Emperour had spoken, his object more delighted, then his wounds grieved him; then the Emperour taking him by the hand, said, I pray you my deere friend to be of good comfort, dispayre not for any thing I beseech you, and be aduised by them that haue care of your health, for you shall want nothing if my Crowne will purchase it. So departed he and the Emperesse, with their Daughter Polinarda, whom Ioue had already so inbelgled, that she (being yet but tender of yeres) found her selfe so restrained of her liberty, as she scant knewe howe to discemible this suddaine affection: and from that time forward she became so sad and pensiue, as one of her Ladies, the most fauoured and familiar with her, named Brionella, Daughter to the Duke of Saxon, well perceiued it, yet durst she not presume to demand, whence proceeded this strange alteration, but so circumspectly did she regard the Princeesse, as she well noted the ground of her griefes. Whereupon it happened, that one time amongst other, they two being alone together, Brionella iudging that her

Lady

Lady delighted to heare speech of Palmerin, now to hit the nalle on the head, she thus began. What say you Adam, (by your fauour) of the new-come knight: did you neuer see a braver and more accomplishe Gentleman? Upon my faith Adam, in mine opinion I thinke that nature hath wrought all perfections in him, and fauoured him aboue all other knights in manhood and Chualry. Ah Brionella, answered the Princeesse, thou art not alone of this opinion, for I neuer thought as much though I kept it in silence: would God I had as great authorite ouer him, as he already hath gotten ouer me. Is the matter so with you, said Brionella? it would seme you are in loue with him then. To tell thee the truth Brionella (quoth she) I am, and did I not doubt some other hath pained me, I would aduenture to make him mine. In good sooth Adam, said Brionella, you two being vnited together in one reciprocal league of loue, well might it be reported the most honourable match, and of the two noblest young Princes though the whole worlde: and seeing you haue made a choice so worthy, dismay not good Adam, but proceede in your determination. Thus deuised the two Ladies together on Palmerin, who was no lesse in affection for the loue of Polinarda, whom he had searched with so great pains and trauaile, and had now found with so high good fortune. As Ioue was so earnest with him before in his sleeping visions hauing not seene her, much more vehement was the impression now hauing her in presence. Whereupon the day following he called for his garments and as he was making himselfe ready, the Emperour by one of his Gentlemen sent him his good morrow, desirous to vnderstand in what plight he felt himselfe. Good Sir, answered Palmerin to the Gentleman, I beseech you doe my humble dutie to the Emperour for this grent courtesie; and you may thus assure him, that (heauen be prayd) I sale my selfe in so good estate as euer I did. Which the Emperour hea-

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

king was highly contented, and sent to desire his company to the Chappell, where Palmerin (never before so joyfully touched with the lovable assaults of love) glauced so many times, looked on the Princesse Polinarda, and breathed so many sighes, the secret Ambassadors of his heart, as it was a heaven to him to be in these passions. The Emperour and all the traine returned from the Chappell, they went to meals, and Palmerin being placed right against Polinarda, was in such fits as he knew not what countenance to use: for his colour went and came in such manner, as the Princesse might easily judge the cause of his sorrow, whereupon she presently presumed, that she had more interest in his thoughts then ere she looked for. The like opinion conceived he of her, yet was no other testimony delivered on either side, then sad countenances, the revealers of a tormented spirit. Thus continued these two lovers, till the Tables were withdrawne, and then the Lords and Ladies fell to dancing, in which delight and sinners other, the whole day was spent, till the Emperour and her Ladies departing to their Chambers, the good night on all sides was reverently given: when Palmerin went to his lodging in such an agony, as most likely to dye therein, he lay on himselfe on his bed, where having sighes and sorowes long time grievously, at length he brake forth into these termes. Ah Palmerin, unhappy, forsaken and most miserable, how art thou entred into such a Labyrinth, as impossible for it for thee to get out againe with life, but what should move thee to so high an enterprise, being no way able to equall her that is loved to none? Alas, how doe I plainly see the small credit to be reposed in Dreames, and that the visions I sawe in my Father Gerrards house, on the Mountain Arifferia and elsewhere, are frivollous illusions, and of no account, with them may I forgoe the promise made me by old Adrian, who boasted to know so much of my fortunes, for love is not of such power on my behalfe,

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

behalfe, that faire Polinarda either can or will make any reckoning of me. When Palmerin resolved the selfe suddenly to dye, that this lovable and consuming fire, which by little and little melts the away, may be extinguished, and the selfe eased. With these words he breathed forth such an extreme sigh, as Urbanillo the Dwarf (being nere) heard him, who doubting least any new mischance had happened by the private wounds the enchanted Archer gave him, in haste to know the cause of this evil. Ah Urbanillo, quoth Palmerin, I have my selfe farre worse then dead. What say you, said the Dwarf, now you ought to be of best of position. Will you receive us with this alteration? The Emperour never gave you bad countenance since your coming, whence then should proceed this strange conceit? No, no Urbanillo, quoth he, it is not the Emperour, but a Lord of greater power then his majestie. It is I have my Lord, the first commander of the stoutest mindes, he hath conquered me, and will I live or I shall die, if thou doe not finde the meane to helpe me. By my faith my Lord (quoth the Dwarf) so please you to tell me how and wherein I may helpe you, let me die a thousand deaths if I doo it not. And thus then sayd Urbanillo, said Palmerin, that this strange alteration, proceeds from the diuine looks of my percellesse Polinarda, whose stee beames have searched to me every corner of my thoughts, as I must die because I live too dearely. But couldest thou make knowne to her the least part of my insupportable vexations, may be she would have some pittifull remoyse of my martyrdom: for well may it be judged, that a Lady accomplished with so many vertuous perfections, must needs be stored with superfluous favour and pittie. Not unlike my good Lord said Urbanillo, but doe you not remember how I was punished, when in the like case I ventured to sollicite your love to Laura, Daughter to the Duke of Durace? by my faith my Lord, I shall not forget it while I have a day to live, and

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

am afraid to fall againe into the like danger. And this spake *Urbanillo* with such grace, as that *Palmerin* could not but laugh, noting with what feare the deformed fellow gaue it forth, whereupon he said. Thou needest not be dismayd, if she that smote thee in thy sleep be that *Polinarda*, for whose loue I am thus tormentd, and for whom I was bozne, as many haue enioyned me: I pray thee therefore speake to her, and vnder no colours. It is good, said *Urbanillo*, that you would haue me more hardy then you are your selfe: speake to her your selfe if you dare, for I dare not aduenture it for feare of my life. If thou dost not (quoth *Palmerin*) assure thy selfe thou shalt neuer henceforth serue me. Nay then (quoth the Dwarf) I will rather put my selfe in jeopardy, to be better beaten then I was the last time, before I will loose so good a Master. I pray thee doe, said *Palmerin*, in respect thou seest the earnestnesse of mine affections. Feare not (quoth the Dwarf) albeit you were a great deale more fit to breake the matter then I: but I will gage my life to gaine you the Lady, and hereupon they rested till the next morning.

CHAP. XXVIII.

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

CHAP. XXVIII.

How *Polinarda* desired *Palmerin* to give her his Dwarf, and of the Speech which shee and *Urbanillo* had afterward together.



Early the next morning *Palmerin* arose, and having walked abroad to contemplate his desires, returned into the chamber of presence, where he found *Trineus* the Emperours Sonne conferring with the Ladies: at which being instant the Dwarf entered, whose bad shaped body and face, made them all fall a laughing, so that *Trineus* came to his Sister *Polinarda*, saying. Sister, did you ever behold a more proper Page to attend on Ladies, then this gaunt Squire that serues my Lord *Palmerin*? In good sooth Brother, quoth she, he is farre unlike his noble Master, yet would I like well enough if he were mine. I beseech you Sir *Palmerin*, said *Trineus*, bestow your Seruant on my Sister *Polinarda*. Madam, quoth *Palmerin*, were he better, he is yours, and his Master likewise. Then called he *Urbanillo*, who kneeling to vnderstand his Masters pleasure, he said: *Urbanillo*, I haue giuen you to my Lady *Polinarda* as her man, will you not serue her honourably and truly aboue all other? Yea my Lord, quoth he, next after you, but you will I not leaue while I liue, although you would dischaunge my seruice. Good reason hast thou, said the Princess, and well am I pleas'd it should be so: yet during the time of his stay here, you shall forsake him and abide with me. For that Madam, quoth the Dwarf, I am well contented. Then looke you faile not, said the Princess, henceforth to giue your attendance. These speeches were thus blis as it were for present time, that she might thereby deceiue the iudgements of others:

ther: but her whole intent was, to know of *Vribanillo*, if his *Waster* were affected to any other Lady, by whose meanes her loue might be frustrate. For as you haue heard, a little before, that lone had brought her vnder such obedience, as did not the regard of honour withhold her, her selfe would first breake the Ice of her vexations, rather then stay so long and not be satisfied. Many other deuises had the Ladies with *Vribanillo*, who knew so well how to be haue himselfe, as from thence forward he grew so familiar amongst them: as he would enter their Chambers when himselfe pleased, vnder colour of attendance on the *Princesse Polinarda*, from time to time to moue his *Wasters* messages. But at length he presented him in this sort, for being alone at a windowe in the presence Chamber, he called the *Dwarfe*, and making her entrance by other occasions, he asked him whose *Soome Palmerin* was. God knowes *Madame*, quoth he, hee I doe not, nor himselfe neither: but of this I can assure you, that neuer was knight, by *Chualtie* better employed by any then by him, for since the time of my knowledge, he hath done such noble acts, as it is not remembered that euer knight in this age did the like. And then from point to point he discouered all that *Palmerin* had done since his coming to him: And can you thinke then good *Madame* (quoth the *Dwarfe*) that he is descended of noble lineage? Must mee Lady, I haue my selfe heard by many learned Magicians, and others, that their *Diuinations* were no lesse then I say.

Polinarda heard the *Dwarfe* thus speake on his *Wasters* behalfe, if before his loue had kindled her liking, now it was well increased: so that now she could not longer conceale what she had hitherto couered, and therefore said to the *Dwarfe*, I beseech thee *Vribanillo*, by the faith and duty thou bearest to thy *Waster*, tell me one thing that I desire to know of him, which shall tend to nothing but to his honour and aduantage. You haue so Conjured me, saide

Madame

Madame (quoth the *Dwarfe*) as death shall not compell me to hide whatsoever you shall please to command, if it lye in me to resolue you. Know then *Vribanillo*, said the *Princesse*, that I loue my *Waster* as dearly as my *Brother Trineus*: and am desirous to know of thee, what Lady it is he esteemes above all other: because when I know her, I may loue her the better for his sake: Withall, that I may commend the Ladies happynesse, whose fortune is to be loued of so haue a Gallant: And so perceived the *Dwarfe*, that euer now or neuer was the time to befit his himselfe, according to the promise he had made to his *Waster*: wherefore he answered the *Princesse* in this manner: Believe me *Madame*, were it to any other, I would not reueale such secrets of my Lord as you desire to know: but to you that are his Lady & *Princesse*, I am content to be true to the whole. Sufficeth then *Madame*, that he loueth in such sort, that if the *Queens* send him not remedy the sooner, vnpossible it is that his life should long endure: for I see him so farre be liued himselfe, and tormented with so many passions, as euery houre his death is expected. What wilt thou Lady that I say? He complaines, he sighes, and day by day is in such dispaire for his Ladies Loue: As happy might I haue counted him, had he neuer sawe her: or that his dayes were as short as his desires. If then *Polinarda* were in doubt (not judging her selfe to be thus) it may easily be imagined, and presently was she brought into such perplexity, as the *Mercurian* colour in her cheeks beganne to change, such sudden feares possessed her minde, & so many sundry varieties of opinion thwarted her concept, as fast she should haue spoken, but could not of long time, whereby the *Dwarfe* discerned the cause of her alteration, yet he did not bid what he saw, and thus continued onward his discourse.

Now considering (saide *Madame*) the high deserts of my Lord and *Waster*, may he be esteemed happy (as you say) that shall cause the losse of the best knight living this day?

Ab

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

Ah *Pistresse*, if he dye (as God so wils) farewell the onely
 flower of all true Noblenesse, and the most assured friend
 to distressed Labyes. Wherefore I beseech you pardon me,
 I shall name her vnto you: and let me intreat you to deale
 with her so farre, that the courtesie wherein she is indebted to
 so good a knight as my Lord and Master is, may be shewed
 effectually, as that she would loue and fauour him, as he both
 and hath very well deserved. Trust me *Urbanillo*, answered
 the *Princesse*, when I know the Lady I will, and beside, if
 she doe not regard his passions as she ought, I will intreat
 her at my request to be more pittifull. These wordes procu-
 red a sudden jealousy in her, that she should promise to ano-
 ther what she much desired herselfe: yet somewhat earnest
 to be resolved, she vowed to fulfill her promise, and therefore
 desired him to tell her Name. So you will giue me your
 word *Madame* (quoth the Dwarfes) not to take in ill part
 what I shall say, I will satisfie your request presently. Wel-
 le, me sayd the *Princesse*, I will not, rather perswade
 thy selfe, that herein thou dost me great pleasure. Ah faire
Princesse (quoth the Dwarfes) it is for you and no other, that
 my Lord is thus tormented, it is for you that he lyes, and
 dyes an hundred times a day: Sweet Lady haue pity on
 him, and sake not the losse of so good a knight, who loues you
 dearer then his owne life. At which answer she was sur-
 prized with incredible pleasure, for selgning the contrary, she
 sayd: Is it I: And how long I pray you? By my faith
Madame (quoth he) that can I not tell you: But I haue
 heard him say of a long time: more then foure yeares before
 he was knighted, he vowed himselfe yours: since which
 time, all his honourable Actions hath he onely dedicated to
 your praise. So that for to finde you, he left the King of
 Macedon, and his Sonne *Florendos*, with whom he was in
 such estimation, as no man the like: yet that honour he for-
 sooke to doe you service: and for your loue he yelded himselfe
 as vassall to the Emperour your Father, and gaue himselfe
 your

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

your knight, if you beigne to accept him. When *Polinarda*
 had well heard the Dwarfes (albeit her heart floated in ioyes)
 yet could she so well command her thoughts, as she seemed
 to make small account of his wordes: notwithstanding,
 returned him this answer. I promised the *Urbanillo*, not to
 conceiue till of ought thou shouldst tell me, nor doe I: yet
 would I haue thee to regard my calling, being Daughter to
 so high and mighty a Prince as is the Emperour: But if it
 be so, that *Palmerin* thy Lord and Master beares me such
 speciall affection, I must let him know by thee, that it would
 haue ben farre more seemely, himselfe to haue told me, then
 to make the Ambassadors in such secret affaires: Neuer-
 thelesse, I mislike not of his honourable done and goodwill,
 whereof I shall thinke better, when I know the effect is con-
 sovable to thy protestations. *Madame* (quoth the Dwarfes)
 so you would please to boughsale him time and place, he will
 make you acquainted with strange matter, concerning both
 your Desires: which courtesie can no way impeach your
 honour. Why tell him (sayd the *Princesse*) he shall haue me
 daily here in the Chamber of presence, where he may say
 his pleasure with safety: In meane space I accept him as
 my knight, charging him that he doe not depart the Court
 without any licence, if he desire to doe me pleasure.

The Dwarfes well pleased with so good an answer, on his
 knee kissing the *Princesse* hand, tooke leave of her to returne
 towards *Palmerin*: who meeting him by the way, in place
 conuenient, said:

How now *Urbanillo*? what newes hast thou brought me?
 Life or death? Master (answered the Dwarfes) as you haue
 good occasion to repute your selfe the most fortunate knight
 that euer bare Armes. When *Palmerin* embracing him, said:
 Ah tell me what they are: Hast thou spoken with *Polinarda*?
 Takes she any pity on my consuming cares? That both she
 (my Lord) (qu. the Dwarfes) and commands
 you by me, if you be so holued hers as I haue perswaded) that
 hence,

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

henceforth you depart not the Emperours Court, without her leave. When recited he the whole talke betwene them; and lastly, the pleasure she conceiued in so good things: so that she accepted him onely for her knight. Whilist the Dwarf continued this discourse, Palmerin was raiſed with such inward joy, as with a great sigh, he said: O heavens, how doe you fauour mee? Now see I well that my seruall apparitions on the Mounts of Olues and Artileria, are preteſtinations, ordained to me by your Gracians presence: I beseech you theretore humbly, that what you haue promised may ſome come to effect, for the regard of incomparable Polinarda. When demanded he, by what meanes he might attaine to ſpeake with the Princeſſe? She ſaith (quoth he) that you ſhall haue her daylie in the Preſence, or in the Emperours Chamber, and there may you ſafely impart your whole minde vnto her. But I haue other newes to tell you, for I vnderſtand certainly, that the Emperour intends a matter greatly for your aduantage: he minded to morrow to viſite one of his Caſtles nere at hand, and there alſo, to paſſe the time, in honour of the Ladies will haue a Tourney. So that there (better then any where elſe) may you and Polinarda conferre together: theretore courage your ſelfe, and goe keepe companie with my Lord the Emperour, it may be himſelfe will acquaint you with this Enterpriſe.

Now credite me Virbanho, (ſaid Palmerin) thou haſt done ſo much for me, as I ſhall neuer recompence thee while I liue: but I pray thee tell me, did ſhe not at the firſt take my meſſage ſtrangely? What did ſhe quoth the Dwarf) when I perſwaded her that you loved a Lady in ſuch ſort as hardly could you liue without her fauourable regard: then ſhe thinking it was ſome other and not herſelfe, changed her colour maruellous paſſionately, but let it ſuffice you, that ſhe is as deepe in loue as you are or can be.

So went Palmerin to the Emperour, who calling him to him, ſaid: My noble Friend, I ſhall make knowne to you what

Emperour of *Conſtantinople*. PART. I.

what hath bene concluded in your abſence. The Ladies of our Court haue been ſo long lockt in, ſo ſore of the Enchanted knight whom you haue ſaine, as they haue deſired to pergreſſe a little: ſo which cauſe, and to pleaſure them I am thus determined; Two leagues hence haue I a goodly Caſtle, enuironed with Woods and pleaſant Meadows, there may wee hunt the wilde Hart and Boar, with other paſtimes: but now haue I cauſed ſcaffolds and other prouiſion to be made there for a Tourney, and forty knights will I appoint in this Action, tenne againſt tenne, and the firſt Conquerours ſhall keepe the field againſt tenne other, that ſhall reuenge the tenne vanquiſhed: ſo hauing all ſoundred, they ſhall fight at Barragers, with rebated Swords, and the beſt Champion ſhall haue a rich Jewell, which the Emperour hath provided for that purpoſe. Now would I haue you one of the ten Challengers, and my Nephew Gannerino, on the Deſendants ſide: for him doe I eſteeme one of the beſt knights of my Courts: Will you not doe thus much at my request? God forbidde (ſaid Palmerin) that I ſhould reſuſe any thing you pleaſe to command. Theſe newes were immediately publiſhed thorough the Court, which made every knight ſpeedily to prepare himſelfe, hoping to be of that number of the forty, that ſhould perſorme the Tourney: and thus they priuily imparted to their Ladies, how they would beate both Sword and Lance for their Loue. Among whom Proleme was not the laſt, for he ſo affected the young Princeſſe Brionella, as he had made her ſole Miſtreſſe of his hart, yet could he not find the means to acquaint her therewith: But the next day, as ſhe rode among the Ladies, they had good leſure to conferre together before they arrived at the Caſtle, they diſcouered thoroughly vnto each other their Affections, promiſing mutually ſuch a full conſent in Loue, as the one ſhould beag of the others happineſſe.

Whils they thus continued their lonely amorous diſcourſe,

The History of *Palmer in D'Oliua,*

discourse. Palmerin who had but newly presented himselfe to Polinarda, was much discontented, because so soone as he came to her, the Emperesse called her, and left not talking with her till they alighted from Horsebacke: notwithstanding, before night, he gained recompence for that disadvantage: for after supper, the Emperour and the Ladies went a walking, by a goodly Miners Rode, there to dispose themselves, in the coole of the evening. Now was it the merry May month, when the fields were richly decked with flowers, Tapisstry, and Cupid gaue good opportunity to his subjects, to contemplate they sweet and affable desires, and well came it to passe for Palmerin, while Trincus and Prolome were conuersing with the Emperesse, that he taking his Lady and Mistresse by the Arme, walked with her among the faire flowers, and seeing the time & place serue him so well, trembling, (as surprized with a vehement passion) thus beganne. O Madam, your gracious nature will not count it strange, but rather take it in good part, that I a knight Errant, and as yet unknowne among Courtly assemblies, should presume to make knowne a secret to you, which my selfe dare not imagine without reuerence, & death can cause me declare to none: nor may I proceed without some assurance of my vncertaine hope, by her diuine pittie that giues me life. And although your words of my Dwarfes haue acquainted me with your princely fauour, sufficient to expell all feare and suspicion of reproche: yet such is the height whereunto I aspire, as the greatest Monarch in the world can scarcely deserue, then well may I esteeme my selfe unworthy. But doubting whether your words were such, or that my Dwarfes (perhaps as he often may doe) hath reported more then he had giuen him in charge: I am desirous, (trusting on your benignity and speciall fauour aboue all other) to vnderstand if your good pleasure be so highly to honour me, as henceforth to accept me for your knight and seruant. And if such undeserued fauour and grace may haply fall to my lot, I shall not

Emperour of *Constantinople.* PART. I.

not only acknowledge, that fortune hath directed my course, to the onely place of honour, but shall haue good occasion beside, to make knowne by my knighthood, that I am the fauourite of the most faire Princeesse. Wherein good Madame, you shall not dissent from reason, if I hauing lost my Liberty (by being onely yours) want the modesty that should shield me in your high regard: Wherefore may you sweet Lady, in mine excuse, accuse I come, and your celestially beauty: both stronger to command me, then I to gainsay. My Dwarfes hath let you know (as he told me) part of the paine I endure for your sake, which you cannot but think well of, in that my Dwarfes so commanded me, long time before I saw or knew you, not alone in visions, but by manifest sollicitings, so that in search of you, I haue suffered such trouble, as maruell it is, that Nature could make me able to sustain. Notwithstanding, I account all right happily bestowed, if I might but gain fauour in your gracious eyes, without which, it is impossible for me to liue: for there is no part possessing either life or spirit in me, that is not towd to your only service. These words were said in teares, and beset with many a bitter sigh, which moued Polinarda to such compassion, as taking him by the right hand, she began to play with his fingers, her trembling testifying her secret affections: and then breaking off Palmerins discourse, as he thought to haue continued longer, thus answered. My knight, it cometh by your countenance that you despair of something, or else haue more soltitude then I can conceiue.

Esteeme you me of simple judgement, that knowing your valour and knightly perfections, I should not account my selfe happy to haue so braue a Champion: Let it suffice you that what Urbanillo told you is true: and in regard of the paine you suffer for my Loue, and fancying me so firmly as you doe: Beldue me good knight, you shall see no griefe, but it is as familiar with me, so that what thought you haue of me,

me, the like have I of you, as time and the unpotted love I
bears you shall witness: in meane time promise me not to
depart my Fathers Court without any consent. And be-
cause I see the Ladies approaching, refers we the rest untill
some other time, when we shall have more leisure to con-
ferre together. And tell me now, if you be determined to
goe to morrow: Cha: will I Pabame, (quoth he) if it
shall please you to command me. In sooth (said she) I will
not hinder you, because I know the honour of the Tourney
will be yours: For my sake therefore shall you wear this
Bacelet, as a signe of my favour, and pledge of my Love.
So taking off her Bacelet, she gave it to Palmerin, who re-
ceived it with no little content: And so concluding their fa-
miliar talk, because many Knights and Ladies came about
them, they walked where the Emperour and the Emperesse
were dentling with Ptolome and Trineus. Now because
dark night drew on, and the Evening dew was dangerous,
they returned to the Castle, intending the next day after
dinner to begin the Tournament.

CHAP. XXIX.

How *Palmerin* gained the honour of the Tourney, and of
that which happened afterward.



After the order of the Tourney was set
downe by the Emperour, as you have
heard, Palmerin did but expect the houre
to goe to it, not doubting to performe
such chivalrie, as his Ladies favour
should be worthily honoured: wherefore
having prepared all his necessities rea-
die immediately after dinner, accompanied with other
Knights bravely armed, whereof Ptolome was one, he en-
tered the lists royall. And espying his Spittelle Pollarda in the

the window with the Emperesse, after he had done her hui-
ble reverence, he began to manage his horse with such brave
carriers, as every one delighted to behold him, but especially
the Princesse, whose heart he had bravely conquered, so
that she gloyed to be beloved of a Knight so worthy & com-
mendable, as that her eye was never from the object of her
sweet desires. And marking his shield, she beheld in a field of
hable, a silver hand fast closed, the impost whereof caused
her to merruile, in respect what had passed between them
before, and gladly would she have knowne the meaning, but
the place would afford no such countenance: wherefore per-
suading herselfe so the time, she was content in seeing her
Bacelet, which her Knight wore upon his arme. And
after many courtes and lofty points done by Palmerin and
other Knights before their Ladies, among whom Ptolome
spelled so correspondent, as the presence of his Lady Bryo-
nell highly pleased him. Then entered the Prince Gana-
reno, nephew to the Emperour a Knight of no small re-
ckoning amongst the Allmaignes, and with him nine other, in
most sumptuous armour: and their banners likewise con-
ded to their Ladies (yet nothing comparable to Palmerin
and his companions) they went to their tent, and while the
Trumpets and Clarions summoned the field, every Knight
prepared himselfe in readines. Palmerin, not so much to win
common applause, as her love who had the sovereign pow-
er over him, seeing Ganareno ordering himselfe to run first,
took a strong Lance, & encountered him with such puissance,
as horse and man were both overthrowen and very sore bru-
sed: notwithstanding he was soon recovered by his company-
ons, and in a Chaire carried forth of the field. One of his thr-
ty Knights would needs revenge his misfortune, & was him-
selfe in like sort served: in briefe, the other eight had all one
payment, not one of them being able to move Palmerin from
his saddle. Palmerin joyfull of his good success, was depar-
ting away with his company, when one of them thus spake
unto

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

unto him. Sir Palmerin, you haue saued our labour, and got the honoꝝ that we desired. The time will come (quoth Palmerin) when you may doe as much for me: but for this time (if you please) you may excuse me. All that were present, as well Lords as Ladies, marvelled at the valour of Palmerin, and among the rest the Emperour, who said aloud, that he neuer knewe moze valiant Gentleman. Polinarda being so nere as she heard her fathers woꝝs, and had her selfe beheld his high good fortune, was sodainely sollicited with such affectionate pleasure, as forgetting her selfe, and where she was, she thus spake to Brionella indifferent loud. What say you faire friend: hath not Palmerin worthily deserued to be loued? By my faith Madame, answered she, I neuer saw knight giue such rough encounters with the Lannce, as he did to Ganareno and the rest of his copantons. Polinarda would haue proceeded further, but there entred ten other knights, the foremost being Ptolome, not content (as it seemed) that he ran not at the first: and then entred ten knights moze, of whom the foremost was Cormedes an Allemaigne knight. They ranging themselves in order, Ptolome and Cormedes brauely encountred, but neither were unhorsed: which grieved Ptolome to doe no better in presence of his Lady: wherefoꝝe taking anotheꝝ Lannce, at the second course Cormedes was cast quite out of his saddle, and thꝛe moze of his fellows after him for company. Which when the Duke of Lorraines Brother perceiued, a knight well accounted of in the Countrey, desirous to recouer the honour his foregoers had lost, spake thus to Ptolome. It seemes that these Grecian knights are come to rob vs of the honoꝝ that is ours by inheritance, in an vnknappe houre were the Allemaignes bozne if they suffer it: and so couching his Lannce, met Ptolome with so full a cartere, as loosing saddle and stirrups he fell to the ground, and foure moze of his knights after him had like entertainment, but a hardy knight of the Emperours named Menadus, met the Dukes brother

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

brother so rudely, as downe he fell to the ground with his saddle betwene his legges. There were many braue encounters with the Lannce, to vanquish one another, and all for the loue of their Ladies, who delighted to see their knights so brauely behaue themselves. The Just Ankerd, each one alighted, and with their blunt woꝝs fell to the Warriors, and so cruelly they laid on each other, as they would not suffer one another to take breath: especially Ptolome, who buckled with the Duke of Lorraines Brother, to winne the honour he lost in the Jousting. And newe afresh entred noble Palmerin, who was the onely man to whom Honour and Fortune were favourable, ranged among the thickest, and with his sword made way among them bravely: at length he came to the Duke of Lorraines Brother, and so ranged him about the pate with his blunt fauchion, as he fell to the ground greatly offended, charging him to speak no moze in disgrace of the Grecian knights. All the sport ended, the knights withdrew themselves into their Chambers to be unarmed, and each knight wrapping himselfe in his mantle, Palmerin was in his Ladies livery, for she had sent him a very rich one, and so comming into the Chamber of presence, the Emperour welcomed him in this manner. Welcome me my Lord, I account the Prince happy that hath you for his friend. As I am, my gracious Soueraigne, answered Palmerin, I am your humble and obedient servant during life, ready to accomplish what shall please you to command me. The Emperour highly thanked him, and presently came the Emperesse, and one of the Ladies bringing with her a rich Cloak, and covered with pearles and stones of great value, which she presented to Palmerin, as the prize and honour he had wonne in the Tourney, and said to Polinarda; Faire Daughter, I am sure you will bestow some gift on Sir Palmerin, in that he hath so worthily deserued.

These woꝝs raised a sweet blissing in the Princesse

countenance, not a little reioycing that he whom she loved had carried away the prize from all the other knights: so with a pretty modest smile, she took a chayne of Gold from about her neck, saying; See here Sir Palmerin what I giue you, this gift is to tie and chayne you in such sort, as you may neuer depart from the Emperours service. Palmerin with exceeding contentment received the chayne, and on his knee humbly thanked the Emperesse and the Princeesse, to whom he spake as followeth. *Madame*, I am well contented to abide in such a prison: and neuer will I desire any other liberty, but still will be his vassalle that hath power to command me. This answer pleased the Emperour exceedingly, in that he desired to haue Palmerin still abide in his Court. Wherefore he sayd to Polynarda, you haue done well Daughter thus to binde Palmerin, so now he cannot escape away when he list. As the Labels being covered, the Emperour and all the knights of the Tourney came dolow to meet. where much talk was spent as concerning the successe on all sides, but Palmerin and Polynarda had enough to doe to view each other, their eyes doing their office, and carrying betwixt them the message of their passions, yet so discreetly shadowed, as none could perceiue them. Supper ended, the knights and ladies went to dancing, and afterwards to their Chambers, because the Emperour commanded the next day another Tournament: a blessed report whereof may very well serue, in that you can imagine there wanted no brave Chivalry. What Palmerin did that day, it were in vaine to tell, because the former day makes known his worthinesse, and Ptolome behaued himselfe in so good sort, that Bryonella was as proud of him as the Princeesse of her knight, and therefore presented him with a very rich Diamond, as a token of his desert and loue. Thus while the Tourney endured, the Duke of Lorrayne had great familiarity with Palmerin, because he had deliuered his sister Cardonya, from the false treason of the Count of Ormeque. All

All passions thus finished, the Emperour returned to Gaunt, where Palmerin intreated his sisters to appoint him time and place, where they might more privately discourse on their loue, the which she promised, and awaited opportunity.

CHAP. XXX

How *Polynarda* discoursed her secrets to *Bryonella*, and of the talke she had with *Palmerin*.



Polynarda not forgetting the promise she made her friend, to meet him in some place where they might argue on their loue, determined to discourse her affection to *Bryonella*, the beloved of *Ptolome*: well perceiuing, that without her help, she could not attaine the end of her desire, wherefore without any longer stay, she thus began with her. My chosen friend, I would make knowne one thing vnto thee, which death can compell me to disclose to no other, wherefore thou must haue care to keep secret my speeches, in respect of my calling, not doubting but in time to recompence any payne thou takest for me. Faire Princeesse, said *Bryonella* in that you doe me such honour, as to impart your thoughts to mee, rather will I dye then sayle one jot of your commandement, and therefore assure your selfe, that what you declare shall neuer be discovered. Then *Polynarda* revealed to her the loue she bare *Palmerin*, what passions had tormentted her, and in what extremity her desires had binen her: and therefore sweete friend (quoth she with a deep sigh) finde thou the meane that I may privately talk with him. *Bryonella* admiring the earnest loue of the Princeesse, knew not readily what to answer, but seeing that by this meanes she might more easily conferre with *Ptolome*, whom she likewise intirely loued, thus spake.

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

spake. It is no wonder *Padame*, you being so incomparable, as I know no Prince living of whom you are not worthy, if you haue rescued your loue in noble *Palmerin*, in that there is no knight in the world better deserves you, his rare *Chastity* being such, as it cannot otherwise be, but that he is descended of a royall lineage, being accomplished with so many speciall perfections. Therefore *Padame*, to like you, I haue devised well for your purpose, as thus. Your knowing Chamber window stands so commodious, as you may with safety conferre with him at pleasure, which you may let him vnderstand by his Dwarf, and appoynt him time as you shall thinke convenient. This counsell did not a little content the *Princesse*, because she longed to talk with her *Loner*, and therefore concluded at his departure to appoynt *Palmerin* his time. Now was the Chamber of *Bryonella* jeyning to the City wall, and had a goodly passage into the fields, and *Palmerin*'s lodging was nere vnto it, facing the wall as the other did, so that one might easily passe betwene the lodgings, nothing being betwixt them but a little Garden, vnto which decked with flowers, and goodly fruit Trees. The time appoynted, *Polinarda* called the Dwarf to her, saying. *Urbanillo*, thou shalt goe to thy Master from now, and after thou hast saluted him with my manifold well wishings, till him this night to come secretly to my Lady *Bryonella*'s Chamber, where at the window we may safely talke together: and bid him not misdoubt my Lady *Bryonella*, for I haue made her acquainted with all my secrets. And because thy selfe mayst conduct him to the place, come, and I will presently shew it thee. So went the Dwarf with *Polinarda* to *Bryonella*'s Chamber, where hauing scene the window, and glad to carry such tidings to his Master, being well assured how they would content him: he departed, and tarried not long on his Message, because *Palmerin* thought each houre a yere to heare from his Mistress: wherefore he beholding the Dwarf

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I

Dwarf coming, took him in his armes, and demanded what newes he had brought him? The Dwarf with a cheerefull countenance thus answered. My Lord. Fortune spied you as lucky, as the newes that I bring you doe well deserue. By this beginning *Palmerin* perceived that he brought such tidings as he long looked for, which was how he might speake with the *Princesse*: wherefore embracing him againe, he commanded him to make report of that his sweete Mistress had giuen him in charge. When the Dwarf deliuered how the *Princesse* had great desire to see him, and where she did intend to speake with him. Which when *Palmerin* heard, filled with vnspokeable ioyes, he receiued the wordes to himselfe with many aspirations, and the more often he spake the wordes, the more his delights increased. But tell me (quoth he to the Dwarf) dost thou marke the place well where I must talke with my goodesse? Therof doubt you not my Lord, sayd the Dwarf, for I shall not faile to bring you sure thither, if it be your pleasure I shall go with you, because the *Princesse* her selfe, in company of Lady *Bryonella* shewed it me. How am I beholding to her, sayd *Palmerin*, for this high fauour, which else were my death if I should be denyed? Upon this he called *Ptolome*, to whom he imparted every circumstance, which *Ptolome* reputed for his great waight: thus offering the means for him to visit *Bryonella*, and therefore they concluded to goe together the night ensuing, to the place appoynted for this louing encounter. The houre of rest being come, and euery one in their Chambers as best beloued, *Palmerin*, *Ptolome* and the Dwarf, remained together, and being the time ready to countenance their enterprise, took each of them a rich Spaulle, and with their Swords under their armes, went out at a window vpon the walles: and albeit the passage was somewhat dangerous: yet none had so encouraged them, as without regard of danger so fast, they came to the window which

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

which the Dwarfes had shewed them, not seen by any. Polinarda who was most attentive, hearing the trampling of his feet, said to Bryonella. Is not this Palmerin? So opening the Casements, she saw Palmerin and Ptolome attending like diligent Seruants. At then both parties were pleased, it is not to be doubted, nothing in the world more contenting them then the sight of each other. And truly Palmerin and the Princesse had great reason, for becke that their fatall destiny did so prouoke them, their equall natures were so commendable and correspondent, as though they had neuer sene, yet were they bozne to loue together. Now was Polinarda very bzabely accoutred in a glorious night mantle, and such soft white silks, as she shewed bzighter then the morning Starre, her stery pointed lookes so wounding Palmerin, as rapt by as it were into a second heauen, he remained silent a long time, not able to speak a word. The Princesse was likewise in the same conceit, and so overcome with regard of her Paramour, as she continued mute, and loth to giue the onset. Palmerin assumed to accompany his Lady with such silence, began thus mildly to Court his Mistress,

I did neuer think, (saye Madame) that Fortune would honour me with such extraordinary fauours, directing my course to your noble Fathers Court, to be thus entertained into your gracious seruiue, hauing no deserts in me to induce you to your choise: but it may be in respect of some good report by such, to whom I account my selfe highly beholding, hauing thus found the place where I was preordained to loue. My Starre hath thus appointed it, and withall, to make me the happiest man liuing. And it may be Madame, that such as enuy not my happinesse, haue acquainted you with some of my exteriour actions, which God (not I) hath brought to passe: but they, ignorant of the entire and serment loue I beare you, could make no just report thereof to you, being a secret so speciall, and not to be comprehended: Besides, the
depth

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

depth and wonderfull nature thereof not to be measured, therefore to be buried in your heauely opinion, which both ample so euer you please to grant me, the more I am bound both in duty and affection, which in despite of enuy and his confederates, shall remaine immoueable, and plead the continuall loyalty of your Knight and Seruant.

And if I should report how many times your diuine person hath been presented me in sleepe, I would therewithall discourse infinite passions, which I endured, seeing my selfe frustrate of that I now behold. How many Countreys and Citties? What perils and dangers haue I past to find you, prouoked on still with neuer changing loue? If this then were sufficient to make me run through a world of dangers, I leane it to your iudgement (Sweet Madame) what it may doe now. Seeing with mine eyes what I dreamed on before, and now may with safety say (incomparable Beauty). Here hence then proceedeth, that these my extreme affections haue overcome all other parts in me, not once able to imagine how many reuerend opinions I be of you: which must intreat you on my behalfe, that your accustomed clemency, will pardon my presumptuous conceits, because being not mine owne, but yours owne, I may easily offend. These speeches mofstened with the teares of his eyes, and luke-warme Blood of his heart, deliuered manifestly, denced how truly he loued the Princesse, who hearing him, comping in all arguments of Loue, thus answered. I doubt not Sir Palmerin, but that the loue you beare me is exceeding great, noting your earnest Affections, and the great trouble you haue sustained in search of me, and no other certainty doe I request to be perswaded by, being as vehement in affection towards you, as you are to me: For prooue whereof, this present attempt may suffice, that against my duty I should be seen thus secretly in a place so suspicious, and the time so unnecessary. But yet if I haue offended herein, then excuse those seemly perfections which I haue observed in you,
and

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

and the confidence I repose in your good Concept, coupled with the honourable estimation that is generally reputed in your virtues. Warden me (sweet Lacie) said Palmerin, if by my longing desire to speak and conferre with you, I haue in any thing displeased, for earnest good will to doe you service, constrained me to be thus importunate. The matter is far from any defect of offence (quoth the Princesse) for hither are you come only by my commandement, to the end that we might see one another, and talk of such things as nextest concerne vs: and therefore resolve your selfe good knight, that I esteem you aboue all other, and promise you by the faith of a Prince, & a loyall friend, to die, rather than any other shall be Lord of me. Which very wordes, so rauished his senses, as very hardly he could sustaine himselfe: Whereupon Polinarda put forth her hand out at the Window, which he in often kissing well marking, beheld the Character thereon as you haue heard before. Ah (sweet Madam, quoth he) this is the token that makes me the happiest man this day liuing. As how I pray you (said she) what know you hereof? When Palmerin discoursed all his Dreames and visions, and lastly ran through repetition of his whole life, how the wise Adrian had sent him the Shield of Sable, where in was figured a Wand fast closed together, signifying the same hand I hold at this present, because this hath the same marke the other had in figure. In truth (said the Princesse) I was desirous to know the meaning of that Shield, where in I saw a Gluer hand closed, which you bare the first day of the Tournament, being now a little glad in that you haue so satisfied me. Afterwards Palmerin made knowne unto her the marke himselfe had on his face, which agreed with hers in perfect likeness. O God (quoth she) happy be the time of this meeting: Blame me not my Lord to be thus surprized with your Loue, seeing our fatall Destinies haue so appointed: This will cause me to liue in more hope of good success, then before I did, and that our amitie will last to such

Emperour of *Constantinople*: PART. I.

such end, as our two hearts shall both be combined in one: and yet let me see I beseech you, the mark on your face, how nere it resembles this on my hand. She fetching a Taper which burned in her Chamber, lifted by his comely lock of haire, and saw them both shap'd in one forme, wherefore suddenly setting away the Light, she embraced Palmerins head in her armes, and sealed many sweet kisses on his amiable Character. The like louing kinde salutations passed betwixt Ptolome and Bryonella, at another Casement of the Window, with solemn Vowes and Protestations, neuer to faile each other in their loue, and this to be the fittest place for conuersing on their desires, till Fortune afforded them better opportunity: and longer would they haue there continued, but that the Dwarfes came to his Master in this manner. My Lord, I think you can neuer finde time to make an end: Will you haue the day-light present you, and so discredit you all? Insooth it is time you were in your Chamber. Palmerin who was loath to depart from the pleasure of his thoughts, made small account of the Dwarfes wordes, and continued on in amorous deuises: But the Princesse, a little more fearefull then he, rememb'ring the Dwarfes said true, and loath to be some suspiciously, sayd: My Lord, it is time to breake off, but I pray you sayle not of your promise: Let us visit one another, now you know the way and place. So Palmerin and Ptolome tooke leaue of their Ladies, and passing to their Chambers without suspition: The success of their Leue you shall vnderstand hereafter, as time and place shall fit for the purpose: but now to satisfie you with choice of daylight, we will returne a while to another discourse.

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

CHAP. XXXI.

How the King of *France* kept a Royall and magnificent Court: And how his Sonne *Lewes* became enamoured of the Duchesse of *Burgundy*.



During the time that the Emperour of *Allemagne* lived in this happynesse, accompanied (as you have heard) with many hardy knights: there reigned in *France* a mighty Prince named *Agariell*, valiant, wise, and virtuous, who had three sons, whereof the second was the hardest knight at *Armes*, being named *Lewes*.

This King *Agariell*, the more to honour his knights and noble Gentlemen abiding in his Realme, determined to keep open Court for all comers, as none of his predecessors ever did the like before him, and therefore sent abroad his *Herolds*, Gentlemen of his *Chesury*, and others, to summon his Lords, and Barons of *France*, that on a day appointed, they would all meet at the Court.

And because none should be ignorant what he intended, he requested that all Gentlemen professing *Armes*, at the Feast of *Easter* following, should repaire to *Paris*, being the head and chiefest City of the whole Kingdom. The Duke likewise advertised all Ladies and Gentlewomen at whose command every one obeyed, so that in few days, the Court was well furnished with Lords and Ladies: nothing now intended, but delights and Courtly Pastimes, which made the Duke of *Burgundy* likewise repaire thither. Now was the Duke aged, a man of good providence, and a tryed knight, having matched in Marriages with the King of *Denmarkes* Sister, a young beautifull Lady, and of virtuous education: the Duke hoping to have issue by her, because

Emperour of *Constantinople*: PART. I.

because by his first Wife he could not have any. The King advertised of the Duke coming, commanded his Sonne *Lewes* with an honorable traine to go entertain him, which he did, so that many solemn ceremonies passed between the Duke and him, as also to the Duchesse, whom as he welcomed with many salutations, so did he earnestly contemplate her excellent Beauty, repating her farre fairer then the sayrest, and on a sudden became amorous of her: Such a violent breach made love into his heart at the very first sight of her. In this great and unlooked for veneration, he conducted her to the lodging which was prepared for the Duke, dissembling so well as he could his new desire. But so vehement was his oppression, as without returning againe to the King, he went to his Chamber. Prince *Lewes* being thus alone by himselfe, (and) not a little triumphing of his new prey, tormented his thoughts with so many conceits. As all the night he spent in sighs and dolorous laments, his minde still travelling by what meanes he might compass his intent. Sometimes, he thought it impossible in respect of the Duke, then againe as easie, because of his age, a contrary way, some in his eyes, for the sweet flourishing youth of the Duchesse: all which imaginations wrought so diversly in him, as his spirit forsaking counsell and reason, made him break forth into these exclaymes. Ah Heavens, have you formed Beauty with such Excellency, as to cause me endure a torment more then mortall: Ah mine Eyes, too late were you in beholding her, who cannot chuse but utterly disdain thee, thou hast an acquaintance with her, and therefore let thy death chastise thy boldnesse. Yet mayst thou be deceived in thine own opinion foolish man: perhaps in offering her thy service she may chance to accept it, for the Duke is old, and likely to dye: how happy were it for thee to be his Successor for his Lady: Despayre not then man, for things though impossible are easiest oftentimes in performance. In these and such like tearmes he spent the night, & saving the fair morning

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

ning salute him at his Chamber window, he arose, intending that day to bestow his passions to the Dutchesse: and knowing that the Duke would goe visit the Queen, accompanied with many knights, he came to bid him good morning. Which the Duke taking very kindly, requited him with many thanks, ignorant that for the faire Celice, he was so courted by the olde Duiband.

The Duke having taken his way to the Queen, Lewes kept company with the Dutchesse very manfully, waiting opportunity to discover his affections, and renewing her beauty so perfect and rare, not able longer to hold, began thus. It is marvellous, *Madame*, if faire beauty should be so bitter, as a man cannot suffer but he must needs dye. The Dutchesse not knowing by whom the Prince spake, nor as yet regarding that he was in Love, answered. Asaith my Lord, the Lady hath small reason, that she should use you so hardly, if you meane it of your selfe. It beseemeth *Madame* (quoth he) it is you that wronged me, and none but you can ease my afflictions: If then (sweet Lady) you retain such pittie, as all your other Excellencies be to you to have, you will not dissaime to giue me remedy, which if you doe, for euer I remaine your knight and layall friend. And in mine opinion, *Madame*, you cannot well refuse my sute, seeing hard fortune hath been such an enemy to you in Marriage, the Duke being olde and full of melancholy, you young, tender, fresh, and daintie as may be: We more wile to keep company with *Antropos* the most fall goddes, then live with a saint of so rare perfections. But had my luck been such, before you were espoused to haue knowne you, I would with valour have binde your Widing so, or fortune should have sorrowfully denied me: For such is my religion in Love, as better death then discontent, and had I bene a King of Europe, you had been Lady. notwithstanding *Madame*, so like it you, I may be your friend and knightly servant: for love wants no wiles to compass desire, and my sute is modest. if you count

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 1.

count it not unseemly. The Dutchesse whom sweet love could easily intice to folly, hardly might resist a present conquest: wherefore changing her countenance, and not daring to reueale what she gladly would, said. Trust me (my Lord) your speeches are not comely, to violate chaste modestie: so monstrous, as you can have no privilege to aske, nor I to grant, and therefore content you.

This answer, albeit it was sharp, and scant pleasing to the Prince, yet labo he perswaded him, that the Dutchesse had another meaning then she bewayed: For, noting her countenance so full of change, he guessed that some spark had fallen among her affections, wherefore he began again. I beseech you *Madame* accuse love, if I have spoken to your liking, yet I hope I to see the time, when I shall make knowne how great my affection is to doe you service: and continuing this talk, he brought her to the Queens lodging, Love following them both so narrowly at the heels, as the Dutchesse was no lesse affectionate, then Lewes was most patient. Which when he had gotten some light of, in hope to purchase his desire, he solicited her in a more secret manner then he was wont: so that being one day in a place where they might familiarly talk, Lewes persevering in his enterprise, declared what torments he suffered for her love: whereupon the Dutchesse not only by the Princes reasons, which were perswasive, but as well to mitigate her own oppression, thus answered: Great is the force of your persuasions (my Lord) but greater is that of love, which hath made me yours: so that what you request I cannot denie, & although it stand not with mine honour, yet such is my fortune. Let me intreat you therefore to conceale this love so discreetly, as none may know it, especially my Lord the Duke, and expect the day that shall yield me content, & make us happy.

This answer so highly liked the Prince, as never man thought himselfe in greater solicite, and tendering her as gaye manifold thanks, he sayd:

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

I sweare to you *Spadams*, by the diuine sojce of *Lone* that gouerns vs both, to be soj erer your Knight, and neuer shall any other desire abide in me, then you shall like and well allow of: so otherwise I were not worthy of this speciall fauour. The *Duchesse* thanking him, departed: and thenceforth so secretly shadowed their *Lone*, as none suspected that the *Prince* loved the *Duchesse*.

CHAP. XXII.

Of the enterprise of *Lewes* the Prince of *France*, for the *Duchesse* of *Burgundy*.



Long continued the King of *France* this state in all magnificence, there meeting many noble personages, as well Strangers as of the Realme, that it was marvellous to behold, as also the Ladies and Damoisels that accompanied the Queen: who on a day in the presence Chamber among many Knights, conferred of the beauty and prowess of the flourishing yonge young Courtiers: among whom the *Prince Lewes* making one, each one spake in behalfe of his Ladies beauty, yet concealing their names to themselves, till better occasions might cause them deservedly to be knowne. All this talk the *Prince* well marking, who for the *Duchesse* lone was deprived of liberty, threw many stout glances at the *Princess* of his affections, perswading himselfe, that nature neuer made a more perfect creature, and not able to make her like againe, but her mould, whereupon he sayd, *Koyes* and *Ladies*, who with such advantage haue chatel'd on beauty, vnderstand that such as you haue yet spoken of, as generally in your stonethoughts shall thinke vpon, may not be equall with one that I knowe, such she that is Lady and commander of my heart, whose beauty is so farre beyond

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

beyond all other, as bright *Cynthia* from the goodliest Star in the firmament. And because that none shall imagine, how (being carryed away with private opinion) I vse these speeches, I will make good my wordes by deedes of Armes, against any Knights whatsoever that dare say the contrary. Now in regard that none shall plead ignorance, I will aduertise all Knights, how the first day of *May* next ensuing, and seauen dayes more immediately following, I will be in open field in my Tent, where I will erect a stately monument, on the toppe whereof shall be her figure whose Knight I am: and there will I defend it in this honourable quarrell, against such Knights as will Combat for the beauty of their Ladies, I affirming mine to excell all other in perfections. This condition must be obserued by such as enter the field, that they bring the Ladies figure with them whom they honour most: and if fortune frowne on them in such sort as they be banquished, there shall they leane their Ladies Image, to be placed vnder my *Princess* as her subject. Now if my unhappy Starre so crosse me, as I lose the credit I would be loth, the conquerour shall enter in my Tent, and in my Ladies place shall his *Princess* be mounted, if he meane to maintayne her with such conditions as I doe mine. And he that last shall accomplish these ought dayes, shall beare away the honour with the portraictures of the Ladies, which by him or any other all the sayd time haue bene gayned. And this liberty shall be granted, that he which receiues the sould with the Launce, shall Combat with the sword (if he please) before he yield. Now that this mine enterprise might be openly knowne, and put in execution as the vertue requirerth: I will send *Hoyes* men through all the prouinces of *Christendome*, that all Knights willing thus to aduenture, shall be heere receiued. His speeches ended, the Gentlemen present could not meruell sufficiently, at this great and high enterprise of the *Prince Lewes*, and the danger whereto he thrust him

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

selfe, yet not knowing who was the Lady he would thus adventure for: but she being present, perceived that the Prince in honour of her love, took in hand this perillous hazard, wherein she conceived such secret content, as the passions of love having penetrated her heart, made her feare his misfortune, which she would not for her life. In this assembly was present the Duke of Savoy, a young Prince, brave, hardy and courageous as might be, and esteeming so well of himselfe, as he thought no knight in the world could vanquish him, who to answer the Prince Lewes, arose and thus spake. My Lord, I would not willingly have entered the Combat against you, but that I heard you so farre outreach your selfe, as she whose beauty you maintaine, is more perfect then all other Ladies, but she that is the commander of my heart, is such a brave accomplished Lady, as (in truth) her beauty may not be matched through the whole world. And to affirme what I say, I sweare by the order of my knighthood, that the morrow after you have finished your eight dayes enterprise, I will enter the same field, and avenge against all knights, that the Goddess to whom I am dedicated, excels all other Ladies in her beauteous gifts: and he that dare maintayne the contrary, under my sword I will make him confesse it. All such therefore as will make proofe of their valour, shall find me there in my Tent at my appointed day, and nine dayes after to sustaine the same quarrell in playne Combat, either at the Lance, the Pike, the sword, on horseback or on foot, at his choice. And though I vanquish one knight, it shall not be lawfull for me to rest a minute space, but presently take him in hand that shall follow: and be it my fortune to be foyled by him, he shall keepe the field in manner as you my Lord desired. And to the end all may be the better executed, please you that in such places where your intelligences shall come, my enterprise may likewise be declared, in respect I hope to behaue my selfe so well, as my
Lady

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

Lady will make speciall account of me. The Lady for whom the Duke of Savoy thus attempted, was Daughter to the King, and Sister to Lewes named Lucemania, whom he loved intirely, and above all things desired in Marriage: which to compass, and to honour his Lady, he thus offered the Combat against all knights. These Princes, intending to go thither with their intent, concluded betwene them, that the Duke of Savoy should breake it to the King, to gaine his good will: whereupon the Duke departing towards the Queens Chamber to finde the King, espied him at very good leisure walking in his Garden, to whom he went in all haste, and on his knee thus began. So please it your Highnesse to grant me one boone, I shall be bound to continue the love I have borne your Highnesse, which is to prolong my life in your service, as the most forward knight in your royall Court. The King who had long time favoured the Duke, taking him by the hand, thus answered. Demand my good Cousin what you please, and it shall be granted. When the Duke deliberately discoursed, what the Prince Lewes and he had intended for the love of their Ladies: wherewith the King scant content, and marvelling at his hasty enterprise, said. My Cousin, doe you imagine your selues able to maintayne so hardy a taske, in resistance of so many hardy knights, wherewith the world is now plentifully storied? Believe me, in many Countreies are Ladies of greater Beauty (I doubt) then is at this time in our Realme of France. I promise you, I hardly like what my Sonne and you attempt, but seeing my word is past, you shall not now be hindered: doe therefore what your selues thinke expedient, with this consideration alwayes, that the ending of matters is greater then the beginning. The Duke humbly thanking the King, answered. I doubt not my Lord, but by the helpe of God and favour of our Ladies, to end our affaires with fortunate successe: but if now we should give over, and not go forward with our
promise.

promise, we might woorthily be reproued of shame and conu-
arise, the most villainous reproches that can be to a noble
heart.

The King perceiuing the earnest affection of these two
young Princes, & that to deny their request would be moze
hurtfull then to grant: commanded him againe to proceed
with their inst, with such safety against all strange knights,
as what losse or victorie hapned to them, they must be con-
tent with all that fell out. The Duke not a little ioyfull, his
sing his highnes hand departed, and immediately acquainted
Prince Lewes therewith, but now the Queen vnderstanding
her Sons enterprize, sent for him, and with sad countenance
thus spake. I would (my Son) that the intent of you and the
Duke of Savoy, were either a while deferred, or utterly for-
gotten, because I greatly doubt, that the end will bring a far-
ther consequence then you expect. For thinke you, that by all
your forces and Chivalries, the beauty of your Ladies shall
be any jot increased: no believe me: but if they lose you as
loall Friends ought to doe, as greatly will they dislike your
enterprize, as fear the danger wherinto you may fall, a mat-
ter causing other desire then you think on, and moze offensive
(perhaps) to them, then any honour you can win can please
them. Lewes, who by no means would be dissuaded from
his conceits, answered. Good Mother, if for no other cause,
this matter shall not be rebolled, in regard of the shame, and
never dying dishonour I shall gain thereby, which makes me
desire a thousand deaths, rather then not to be so good as my
word: therefore perswade your selfe good Mother, that al-
beit her beauty for whom I enter the Combat, cannot be
moze perfect hereby, in that it is without imperfection, yet
such is my resolution in a matter so certaine, as her sweet
looks shall deliuer me strength enough to end my taske,
without dread of any inconuenience that may happen. The
Queene (enflamed with Love) hearing these words on
her behalfe, must needs speake, and thus began. I know
not

not (my Lord) who is the Lady you loue, nor what are
her vertues, but hereof I can assure you, that she is highly
beholding to you, and (except great reason to the contrary)
ought to loue you, considering what perill you thrust your
selfe into for her Beauty. Madame (quoth the Prince) the
travell I will take, and the bad fortunes may befall me,
are little and of no account in respect of her gracious deserts,
therefore for her honour I will beare my inward paines
with secret content, and attempt these outward actions
with the greatest courage I can possible, daring no other
recompence then her fauourable conceit, wherof once assur-
ed, nothing can seeme difficult to me, as, were it to dye in
her diuine service. And as he would haue continued longer,
the King (not yet thoroughly content with his promise past
to the Duke of Savoy) entered the Chamber, by whose coun-
sellence, Lewes well knew he was male-content with him,
wherefore falling on his knee, he said. My Lord, no
one is ignorant, how all my well-fare and reputation con-
sisteth onely in your Majesty, as a Prince and a Father, the
most vertuous that I know: which great good in some part
to recompence: I haue enterprised a matter vnwoorthy of
dislike, to please your Highnesse (of your accustomed bounty)
to excuse and accept it in good part, in respect that such as
are borne to the highest place of dignitie, ought to be moze
prompt and ready to all magnanimous actions, then their
inferiours, chiefly in power, Chivalry, and deeds of esti-
mation. What brought such renowne to Horatius, Mutius
Scævola, Marcus Curtius, Manlius Torquatus, and a num-
ber moze of Romane Knights, if not the couragious follow-
ing of occasions offered? What made for ever immortall
the name of Marius the Romane Citizens, Hanniball the
Carthaginian, and Agesilaus the Greeke, if not the vnban-
ished valour of their mindes, bellured in their deeds of king-
ly consequence? Assuredly I believe, that their Fathers,
Uncles, and ancient progenitors neuer made them noble

so ought renowned: what then? onely vertue, the very
fountain of all nobilitie. For this cause my good Lord
and Father, hauing now opportunity, as my Cousin the
Duke of Savoy had binformed you, may it please your Grace
to permit my endeauours with fauour, to the end I may be-
lieue perfect testimony, that I no whit degenerate from your
heroycall and kingly vertues. The King somewhat mope-
rattig his former opinion, answered. Trust me Sonne, full
well you know how to disguise and couer your folly with
vertues colours, God send it to fall out so well: arise, and
be it as your Cousin and you haue requested. So in means
time that you prouide all needfull occasions, that when the
day comes nothing be wanting. Lewes humbly thanking
his Father, arose, every one present not a little rejoycing,
because they feared all would be squandered. Then began
the Lords and Ladies to conferre together, and the Du-
chesse departing to her Lodging, being manned by the
Prince, bid not (as I thinke) repent herselfe of her leue, as
a number of you (marching vnder the same Ensigne) would
doe the like in such a case. In fine, the Duchesse fearefull of
the thwarts of Fortune, that she should worke her disgrace
by some bad conjectures or wounding reports, said. I know
well (my Lord) the good will you beare me, without any
further shewes or confirmations by actions so dangerous,
which I had rather dye then behold, and therefore whatso-
euer you shall perforce, will condemne me as unworthy
of so good deserts: in this respect you shall therefore grant
me one thing, which is, that aboue all you haue a care of
your self, else will perpetuall discontent cut short my date, be-
ing bereaued of the honour of my grane desires. Now
Madame (quoth the Prince) may I boast of my fortune,
not doubting to follow the deuite of a Lady so vertuous, for
your stoute words prolong my life, else ere this had death
rob'd you of your knight. The Duchesse heareto with an ami-
able smile, answered. I must not lose you yet good Prince,
so

so may I lengthen your life, it shal be so; enen. Many solomne
thanked the Prince returned, and by this time had brought
her to her Chamber, where hauing baile remain, departed.

CHAP. XX XIII.

How the Prince *Lewes* and the Duke of *Savoy*, sent their
Heralds and horsemen into all parts, to make knowne to
all Knights their enterprises, and the conditions of their
Combats.



The Prince Lewes forfull of the King his
fathers content, but of the gracious an-
swer of the Duchesse most of all, dispatched
immediatly his Heralds into all the Pro-
uinces of Europe, who executed their
charge with such diligence, as there was
no Court of Emperour, King, or Prince,
but they declared the enterprise of these two young Princes.
So that one of the Princes Heralds, accompanied with the
King of Armes belonging to the Duke of Savoy, came to the
Emperours Court of Allmaigne, which then was furnished
with a great number of Lords and Knights, being there to
solemnize the day of his birth, but especially Palmerin aboue
all the rest, triumphing in the loue of his Mistresse Polinar-
da. The Heralds being entred the great Hall, found the Em-
perour sitting in his chayre of state, with many Princes,
Barons and noble personages about him: who granting
them liberty of speech, the Herald of France began first in
this manner.

Illustrious and most renowned Emperour, the cause why
we thus presume before your Majesty, is by the comman-
dement of the vertuous young Prince Lewes, son to our dear
Lord Agariel King of France, as also of the Duke of Savoy

his Cousin, so good a Knight as may well command: what our message is, so please your highnes to call all your knights in presence, because it chiefly concerneth them, we with duty will deliuer it. The Emperour presently called for all Knights and Gentlemen of his Court, who desirous of the newes, were not long in coming, before whom he said, *Wread* Lord, the Prince Lewes of France my master, comends him to your Majesty with this Letter, may it please your Grace to command it to be read, and you shall soon see the effect of our Embassage. The Emperour caused his Secretary to read it openly, and because it contained what you haue heard already, it shall be needless to waste longer time in talke thereof: but the letter being read, the Herald thus proceeded. The Prince my Master (worthy Emperour) gives the Knights of your Court (as else where) to understand, that he intends to prove by deeds of Armes, how no Lady in the world is comparable in beauty to the Lady he loves, which he will be ready to maintaine in Combat the first of May next, and seven dayes following, in his Tent before the Gates of Paris, there will he verifie it against all challengers that dare aberte the contrary. Afterward he rehearsed all the conditions to be observed in this Combat, and the King of Armes to the Duke of Savoy, made known his Masters challenge likewise as you haue heard. The Emperour maruelling at this message, said. Without doubt the Ladies had need to be saile, and my Cousins your Masters valiant and hardy, else it is doubtfull how such an enterprise will fall out, for the affections of persons are diuers, and their fortunes dangerous, neuertheless I desire the issue may sort to their honours. The Lords and Knights haue heard your Message, and I judge some of them will promise to be there, because they prize the beauty of their Ladies at as high a rate, as your Masters doe esteem their faire Friends: yet let them see what they thinke most expedient, because they are old enough to make you answer, As for

me, you may saile (on my behalfe) the King, my Brother, and my Cousins, to whom I send thanks with all my heart, that they thus acquainted me with their honourable endeavours. All this while the Knights conferred together, with diuers judgements of their pretended Combats: Some of them were either fearefull or too forward: others well advised and provoked with discrete courage. Among whom repute we Noble Palmerin, all penne, his eyes fixed on the ground, and not a word, hauing in his spirit discoursed how bitter the divorce would be off the Eye from his sweet object: in the end concluded the Combat, perswading himselfe, not in Christendome, nor in the other three habitable parts of the Earth, either Empire, Duke, or Lady, was more accomplished with persecutions then his gracious Mistress Polinarda. And in respect of this Embassage, it seemeth to him bitterer, and a dishonour not sufferable, if he should not iustifie the truth, and haue so good occasion: whereupon he desired a thousand deaths, rather then he would deferre so long a Voyage: and so on his knee before the Emperour, he thus began? Gracious Lord, and my most worthy Patron, I intend (with your liking and leave) to depart with all speed possible, to see the Jousts and Combats of France and Savoy: Let it not therefore displease (for the honour of Chivalry) that I leave your noble Court a while, but may commit myselfe to this journey, with your favourable opinion. The Emperour very loth to let Palmerin goe, answered: In good sooth Sir Palmerin, I greatly doubted (so soon as I heard these newes from France) that it would not passe without your presence, which displeaseth me not so much for their folly, as your absence, which is and will be to me greater griefe then you judge, but let me intreat that thy returne may be speedy, and stay no longer then thou hast good occasion. I would gladly know, would you grant it me: what Lady she is, for whom you thus adventure: you need not Palmerin hide it from me.

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

My Lord (quoth he) the Dame for whom I enter the Combat is such, as none may ought compare with so singular, rare, and (above all) vertuous, as neuer would I thinke my selfe worthy to beare Armes, if feare of danger, misfortune, or death it selfe should haue power to pluck me from my duty. And for my stay (the Iowles once ended) within one moneth or sooner, I intend my returne to your Majesty: and let me intreat you not to feare any thing in my journey, because I goe for your Honour, and my Sworne shall ring on the stoutest croast, the ever continuing honours of the Emperour of Allmaine. The Emperour unwilling to saye good him, and loth to hinder knightly Chivalry, said, Without question Palmerin, the Lady is indebted to you, and you becom his speakable Loue, that for her Beauty you belluar your selfe to such great hazard: but as for your intent to my honour, I rather delight to haue it by your presence, then thirst after such applause with your absence. But seeing that you will needs to France, happy fortune go with you, and make you victorious in all your attempts: which I doubt not, but by your valour and the vertues of your Mistress, the French will not beare so much on the seventeenth of May, as perhaps they will on the first. Wherefore that before your depart, you demand and haue all things for your journey, as well for such as go in your company, as for your owne necessary provisions: and some will I appoynt to attend on you, that may prevent any treacherous inconuenience. Palmerin not refusing this bountifull offer, with great obeysance thanked the Emperour: and taking his leaue for that night, returned to his Chamber, determining to depart with all expedition, because the day of the Iowles were at hand. Now was Trineus the Emperours Sonne a young Prince, who had not yet received his order of Knighthood, his hearing of Palmerins departure, was marvellous desirous to beare him company: whereupon he humbles before his Father intreating him not to deny him one request. Demand what then wilt my

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

my Sonne (quoth he) I grant it thee. When I beseech you good Father, saye he, to suffer me for France with noble Palmerin, that I may be acquainted with the courtlye and civility of that Nation, not doubting but some to deserue my Knighthood. And yet if before I receiue my order, I see these high and worthy deeds of Armes, happily may they entice me to follow their vertues: becaus, if now I lose so good an occasion offered, I knowe not when I shall compasse the like commoditie, therefore (good Father) let me not be denyed. The Emperour offended for his rash promise to his Sonne, laboured to change his minde, yet all would not serue, for the Prince prouided to go so courtlye, as none should know him. Wherefore he called Palmerin, who as yet was not departed the Pall, saying. I see Sir Palmerin, you shall not goe alone in your voyage, for my Son Trineus desires to be your companion: for which cause I commit him to you, and desire you to conserue so well of him, as at your returne we may be all merry together. Which Palmerin promised, whereupon the Emperour called for the master of his house, commanding him that all things might be in readinesse against their departure: all which was done with such diligence, as the third day following all things prepared, they took their leaue of the Emperour and the Ladies, who at their departure shed many teares (a common matter with them) wishing the victory and honour to Palmerin. Thus with Trineus and twenty other knights, a great number of Squires and seruants in good equipage, they journeyed towards Paris without any hinderance, by the way, or matter of memory.

Now before we passe any further, you shall understand, that after the Verals of the Prince of France and Duke of Savoy were departed, and that Palmerin had obtained leaue of the Emperour, the Princesse Polinarda aduertised hereof, was greatly displeased with his sudden departure, wherefore calling Vibanillo the Dwarf to her, she said:

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

said: *Urbanillo*, thou must go to thy Master, and tell him this sight to meet me at our appointed place, that I may conferre with him, of a secret matter concerning me.

Which when *Palmerin* heard, the earth being covered with her black mantle, and every one in their dead sleep, he called *Ptolome* and *Urbanillo*, who were all well acquainted with this lone walk, and bring there in presence of their Ladies, the *Princesse* with a great sigh thus began.

Alas my Lord, what minde is this in you, thus to voyage towards France, and to leaue me alone sad and solitary? Alas, not content to hazard so long a journey, but also a dangerous Combat bestie for my Beauty, which is a thing of so slender estimation, as may not *Parragon* with the Ladies of France, bearing *Mareloffe* (as I haue heard) among those of highest perfection. Ah my Lord, moze comfort and content it is for me to haue your company, then to be crowned Queen of any Realme conquered by your worthy vertues and prowess. Therefore (sweet Friend) I intreat you with all my heart, and by the vnfained love you beare me, to leaue such dangerous Enterprises, where death is commonly moze frequent then life.

These words came with such amiable consuration from the *Princesse*, as *Palmerin*, (though loath to be dissuaded) answered. Let me persuade with you so farre good *Madame*, as not to mislike my Enterprises for your gracious Love, for the honour you haue done me, in making me your knight, I prize at no lesse value then my dearest blood, and should I be held from these French exploits, but would were I to be your servant: in that (as you well know) no knight but carries the honour of his Lady in such account, as he prefers that before his owne life. If then *Madame*, in religion of this office, I absent my selfe for a while, I shall accomplish nothing but my duty, whereto your selfe bound me, and I hope to execute with such successe, as you shall beare the praise of Beauty, not onely from the faire Ladies

of

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

of France and *Allmaigne*, but from all *Chriſtendome*, yea, the whole world, may I liue to trouble it.

Do not then (sweet *Mistresse*) mislike, if I absent my selfe, for a cause so reasonable, and continue me still in your fauourable conceit, as he that was borne to doe you service, And albeit I cannot depart without exceeding griefe and anguish, yet perswaded of your rare arguments, I came my selfe with patience to yield to reason, being present with you alwayes, in that I carry your diuine image in my soule, and leaue heart, life, and all, till I come.

These words were sealed with many deuout kisses, and *Ptolome* had like payne in perswading *Bryonella*, yet this contented them in the end, that the honour of their tranell was the renowne of their Beauty: and so with forced content they most longingly departed.

The next morning, the *Princesse* sent *Palmerin* an Arming-coat of greene *Veluet*, embroidered all ouer with great *Orientall* pearles, and very thicke beset with *Starres* of gold, and in the midst of each *Starre* a costly *Emerald*: and he had caused her picture to be most curiously dyalune in the purest *Arabian* gold: her face and hand formed wonderfull more the life, and all her *Liniments* very singularly fashioned, and this her portrait he caused to be set in a saye letter covered ouer with *Crimson Veluet*, which he had provided onely for the purpose, and so set forthward.

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

CHAP. XXX IIII.

How the Prince *Lewes* came to see the Duchesse of *Burgundy*: And what hapned.



SOON as the Veralds and Horsemen of *Lewes* of France and the Duke of Savoy had dispatched their Charge, their Lords gave direction to prepare all things in readinesse so soon as might be: but yet the Princes affection to the Duchesse did so torment him, as he dayly compassed new meanes to conferre with her, that she might know & partake he endured for her sake.

At length it came to passe, that the King and the Duke of Burgundy, and diuers other Princes, rode forth on pleasure together, and returned not againe for two dayes space, which made him thus beginne with the Duchesse, I haue not tell you Madame, for you know it well enough, how continually I languish in remediable affections, till now this opportunity puts me in some hope of comfort, that you performing so solennus promise, will deliuer me out of this extremitie.

Wherefore faire Mistrisse, Since time and occasion hath appointed it, and Fortune (by Nature forward and inconstant) fauours it: Let me intreat you to take the benefit of both, least hereafter we compass not the like agayne.

My Lord (quoth the Duchesse) you must thinke I am more yours then mine own, and make that reckoning of you, as no Lady can the like: how is it possible then for mee (loving as I lone) to flye from that which lone commands me to fulfill? Let it suffice you then, that the regard of mine honor defended, I am ready to do ought may agree with your liking. What hapned afterwards I leaue to your opinion, but by the halfe the whole may be discerned: notwithstanding,

Emperour of *Constantinople*: PART. I.

Standing, vertuous Ladies haue power to resist such motions, though time, occasion, and such amorous sollicitings did offer it them: but such may be accounted more diuine then humane, and to them may worthily be erected a Trophée, in disgrace of the Emperesse Venus. But this little discourse not much dissenting from the matter, is written in reproach of such young dayntie Gallants, that so vainely attend on their ouerfond and bachaile desires: And may likewise be a warning to indiscreet old men, that they chuse their Wanto: He sit for their sote.

But now is come the first of May, the day to begin the Enterprises of the Princes of France, and Savoy: *Lewes* to enterpryse the Duchesse *Loue*, begun with such aduantage, had greater desire now to execute his intent then before. Wherefore this day was his Paullion erected nere the City Gates, being beautifull and very sumptuous: and at the entrance thereof was placed a goodly Monument of black Marble, carued & set forth with columns of white Marble, very thick embossed with gold and pearls. At the side of his Paullion was placed another monument of graine Jasper, adozned with many Bases, Pillars, and antique Imagery of Gold, whercon he intended the Strange Knights that came should place the figures of their Ladies. On the other side was appointed a seemely place for the Judges of the field, who were the Dukes of Orleance and Burgundy: Princes highly esteemed for their Nobility, and in their times had been hardy and aduenturous Knights. Many other Tents and Paullions were that day there set up, as well for Strange Knights that came, as for Noble men and Gentlemen of the Realme. And now comes in the Prince brauely mounted to the field, accompanied with many young Princes, Knights, and Gentlemen: the Veralds and Kings of Armes riding before, Drummes, Pipes, Trumpets and Clarions sounding so gallantly as made the Ayre deliuer a most sweete Echo. Before him in a very sumptuous

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

trous Coach, was carryed the curious counterfeitt of the Duchesse, so superficially set forth, and with such perfection of Art, as though it had been the Duchesse herselfe.

After followed Prince Lewes, in rich and glorious guilt Armour, all ouer-grauen with most artificiall Flowers, and mounted on a courser of Spaine, esteemed one of the best runners of Europe, which made way with byane and lofty voltagés, as did not a little delight the beholders: one of the chiefe Princes of the Court bearing his Helmet, and another his Lance. What need I make further report of the Princes triumph? He comming to the field with such Equipage, as well besetmed the house from whence he descended, and as besetmed a louely Knight in presence of his Lady: who as her fauour had sent him that morning, a costly Gyrole garnished with Rubies, Diamonds, great Emeralds, and other inualluable rich stones, with a sword as good as euer Knight wore, and therewith rode he girded to the field. Before he went, the King his Father thus spake to him.

My Sonne, this day and all the other following, Fortune speake the so well, as thou mayest winne the honour my heart both wish thee. My most need, (answered the Prince) I hope before y^e sennight be finished, to accomplish your desire effectually, so fauour me the that may command me. So leauing the King, he came to the place appointed for the Combat, the Judges placing themselves where they should, and the Prince himselfe in his Tent, where hauing his picture set on the appointed place, he commanded the trumpets to sound, and a Herald to proclaim, that no Knight bearing Armes, should be so hardy as to enter his Tent, except he first granted his Lady to be the most fairest creature in all the world: and if any were so stubborn not to confesse it, by knightly prowess he would force him to doe it.

The Herald hauing done his charge, and the Judges caused the Conditions to be openly read, and the People diuided themselves in couenient places, and the Lords, Ladies, and Gentle

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

Gentlemen betook them to their Tents and Scaffoldes. The first that entred the field against the Prince, was the Counte Durcell of Arragon, his four Squires, conducting before him in a great gorgeous Litter, the Statue of his Spouse, his Daughter to the King of Arragon, the fairest Lady in all Spayne, and so; whose Beauty he took in hand this quarrell. After him came foure other Squires, the foremost leading his Courser, the second bearing his Helmet, the third his shield, and the fourth his Cantlets and Lance: and comming to the monument appointed for strange Ladies, caused the portrait of his Lady to be placed thereon: then comming to the Princes Tent, said. I know not how Lewes, if overcome with glory, presumption of your strength, so overthanking your selfe, you haue made this large entrappe, to Combat with the best approved Knights in the whole world, in judging no fairer Lady, to be this day winning then your owne: so; mine owne part, I am not troubled in conceit as you are, to quarrell for such a fabulous matter, yet dare I tell you that my Lady is much more beautifull then yours, which if you will deny, I am ready by the strength of mine arms to make you confesse it. Lewes taking himselfe grieved with these injurious speeches of the Count, answered. Proud Knight, I am ashamed to heare thy judgement so simple, as to thinke I am come hither for a matter of so light moment, as though I would not iustifie against thee and all other what I haue promised: but let that passe, before we depart he will cause thee know thy folly, by that time thy pate and thy body is thoroughly bumbled, looke to thy selfe, so; I intend to doe it. So mounting on his backe, and prepared as it had been to a warre mostall, encountred each other with such fury, as their Lances flying in shiners up into the ayre, they met together so terribly with their bodies, their shields, their speeres and their beaus, as they were both dismounted to the ground. But earnest desire to vanquish, they being beides, strong

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

and well disposed knights, made them begin quickly the second assault with their Swords, which was so dangerous, and handled with such dexterity, as it was hard to judge who should have the honour of the Combat. But Lewes being holding the representation of his Lady, and considering her so excellent and favourable to him, took heart afresh, and (as it were inspired with new vigour) so laid on the Count Durcell, as in short time he brought him under the mercy of his Sword, when holding it against his throat, he said. Peremptory knight, if now thou confessest not my Lady to exceed thee in beauty, thy unshaken head shall ratify me thy folly. The Count (for all this) would not answer one word, by reason of the debility he felt himselfe in; having lost so much of his blood, as for the griefe he conceived to be thus vanquished: whereat Prince Lewes not content, would have taken his head from his shoulders, but the Judges of the field came to him, saying. My Lord, you ought to forbear, having brought your enemy beyond his owne defence, your victorie being sufficient to content you, forbidding his death. The Prince perswaded, entered his Banquet, and joyfull of his conquest, commanded two Carriers of the field to take the figure of the Princess of Arragon, and place it at the feet of the Duchesse counterseit: which was done immediately, and the Count Durcell brought into his owne Tent, where the Chirurgions took diligent care for the curing of his woundes. Soone after came a knight of Myllaine, who giving such defiance as the other two, was in the end constrained with great shame, to confesse under the conquering Sword of Lewes, the imperfections of his Lady, and her stature placed by the Princess of Arragon. The same day were the great Lords of Italy brought in like subjection, and so the triumph ended till the next day, when the first that came into the field was a brave Gallant of Spaine, a knight of good estimation, and specially reputed, who after a valiant glorious action made

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

(as the nature of the people is that way affected) put his fortunes to the tryall of his Lance: where he sped so ill, as he was unhorsed, and in the following Combat likewise received the soyle. After him seauen other knights of Castile followed as unhorsed, their Ladies pictures all renouncing the Duchesse, who being not a little proud of her knight, and the memorable renowne he witnessed of her beauty, I leave to your considerations, both for her conceit that way, as also for one towards the Prince, who seeing no more ready to enter the quarrell, returned thence to the Pallace, to conferre with his sweet Spitts of his high good fortunes.

CHAP. XXXV.

Of the Combat betweene Prince *Lewes* of *France*, and *Crenus* the Duke of *Gaule*.



Great pleasure did the King conceive, and all the Nobility of the Court, at the gotten victories of Prince Lewes, against so many worthy knights, so that they altogether accounted him most fortunate. And now the third day when he was entered his Tent, an English knight (no lesse brave in featnes than the other) desired the Prince, and betweene them beganne a dangerous conflict, in the midst whereof, the King with many Princes, Barons, and Lords, as also the Queen and the Duchesse of Burgundy, came to their standing, and unhappily beheld the soyle of the English knight, the Duchesse hearing him confesse her beauty, and beheld his Ladies portrait placed under hers. But now the courageous Duke of Gaule named Crenus, came bravely mounted into the field, doing his duty to the King, Queen, and Ladies,

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

who not knowing him, by his Armour judged him some great Lord, in that no knight before caused so good opinion generally, nor came with braver countenance into the field, he being indeede a Prince of wonderfull possessions, and a knight at Armes worthily praised. The Duke (as all the other had done) caused his Ladyes counterfeits to be placed where it ought by his Squires, to the no little admiration of all the beholders, noting what rare and excellent beauty it was adorned withall, the workman having perfected in her exquisite perfections, as it had bene the Lady her selfe naturally living: while the Squires were thus placing it on the monument, the Duke advanced himselfe to Lewes, in this manner. The overmuch selfe conceit Lord Lewes) of mindes but easily acquainted with matters of difficultie, hath often bene, and yet is the cause to plucke great personages more low then they expect: so that men haue some them deceiued of their intents, and rewarded with ridiculous shame and confusion. This speak I to you, having here begun a business, the end whereof will be more hard to you, then as yet the beginning hath bene: for Europe is sufficiently filled with hardy knights to assuage your presumptuous opinion, and Ladies much more sayre and excellent, then the whom you contend for. And this (by the fauour of Fortune, gracious regard of my Lady and Mistresse, and helpe of my good Sword) will I enforce you to confesse, that incomparable Agriola, daughter to the King of England, for vertue, for beauty, and all diuine perfections, exceedeth yours whatsoeuer she be. Before such a leading (quoth the Prince) shall passe the lippes of a Sonne of France, either will I consent to be peace-maker to you in sander, and before sayre Phoebus haue paced one houres journey, I doubt not to make thee repent thy pride and arrogancy. By the soule of King Arthur, said the Duke, looke thou guard thy selfe well, for I haue (with my courtelar, abate the pride of a better man then thy selfe, and ere

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I

was two part, I meane to try if I can doe it againe, therefore resolve thy selfe to thy best defence, for (by my life) I will not labour thee. Without any further speeches they encountered with such violence together, as Prince Lewes was throwne betwixne his horses feete, and he for England lost his stirrups, but recovered himselfe well enough by the mane of his Horse: then he seeing his enemy got by againe: cast himselfe out of the saddle to haue taken his advantage, but Lewes prevented him, and came marching against the Duke with his sword drawn, who stayed him thus. He thanks Prince of France before any worse befall thee, thou wert best to yield thy selfe, and remember that our Combat begins for the excellency of Beauty. By God man of England, answered Lewes, thou canst not perswade me to a thing so farre from my thought, therefore goe too, and he that hath the sayrest friend shall soon be knowne. In this great choller he reached the Duke such a stroke on the head, as made him set one knee to the ground, but recovering himselfe quickly, and both the more angry, they layd on each other so cruelly, as the very hardiest of the beholders feared the successe. Thus fought they for matter of speciall value, the defence of their owne reputations, and honour of their Ladyes, whose love was more precious in their hearts then their owne liues. So long these eager charges continued on both sides, as Prince Lewes having receiued more then twenty wounds on his body, feeling himselfe faint, fell downe before his enemy, saying. O noble heart of France, the true succeder of thy famous predecessors. The victorious Englishman setting his foot upon him, said; Lord Lewes, if now thou declare not my Lady to excell thine in beauty, it costs thee thy life, a matter nothing pleasing to me, in respect of the chivalry and singular prowess I haue found in thee, as also this magnanimous enterprise of thine, which in despite of thy foyle, and death it selfe, shall make thee liue for ever. But Lewes made

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

no answer, either for his weaknesse, or sorrowfull conceit of his misfortune, wherefore the Judges came, who granting the Duke victory, desired him to proceed no further, which he honourably granting, was as joyfull of the conquest, as the Duchesse sad and pensive, thinking Prince Lewes had beene a fine cutright: wherefore she stung alway to her lodging, not carrying for the King or any of the Ladies, who likewise departed the field in marvellous sorrow, seeing their Son so pittifully wounded: but above all, the Duchesse made more lamentation, then she would haue done for the death of her husband, yet fearing what she thought secretly, should by her griefe be openly suspected, comforted her selfe so well as she could: and being by her selfe, with one of her trusty Gentlewomen, she thus began, thus her moanes. Ah trecherous Fortune, enemy to all actions of regard, why hast thou suffered the man that I most fauoured, thus to be banquished: and (which is most to be pittied) without hope of life? Ah deceitfull tromperesse, seeing thou hast offered him so much wrong, doe me the favour to beare him company in death, that liued and dyed so honourably for my loue. Ah death, let it suffice thee that thou hast wounded him, and make not thou expert of thine ineuitable stroke, vntill thou wilt doe as much for me. Ah false and flattering Sonno of Venus, is this the guerdon thou rewardest them withall that serue thee faithfully? Doe ceasing her complaint a while, in great impatience she thus began againe. Alas, neither the one or other are cause hereof, but my most unhappy selfe, when (provoked by my beauty) he took in hand this enterprise, but if it be so (deere friend) that envious fate deale so hard with thee, some mayest thou be reuenged on her that caused it. And with these words she fell betwene the armes of one of her Ladies present, whom she specially trusted, who thus spake to her. Why how now Madame? Will you perswade your selfe no otherwise? believe me there is no remedy but you must

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2

must change your conceit. What will you forget your selfe: it is no time if you remember your selfe well, for if he whom you loue and endure those pained for, should understand hereof, in stead of seeking his health, you will be ten times sorer, if (as you say) he liue not without your well fare. The more requisite is it that you go comfort him with your cherefull presence, then thus to be the argument of both your deaths. Wellas Madame, if my Lord suruiue, as no doubt he shall, what may he presume? trust me matter sufficient (if you gouerne not your selfe better) that you sake to discouer, what most of all becomes you to conceale. Alas (my friend) answered the Duchesse, I know you speake the truth: but how is it possible for me to content my selfe, seeing what estate he is in, onely for my love? But if he dye, small reckoning will I make of my life: for let my honour be blamed or otherwise, let all aduersities and misfortunes go together. Yet will I somewhat be comforted by thee, and I will goe see if my presence will any thing comfort him. To break off this talke, came an Esquire from the Queens, to intreate her come to her Palace: which she did, and went with the Queene to the Princes Lodging, who beholding the Duchesse so pale and full of griefe: and with this conceit his wounds opened and bled afresh, for which cause the Chirurgions, who imagined the occasion to proceed by Name the Prince conceived, that any one should see what wounds he took by the Duke of Gaule, wherefore they forbade any to enter his Chamber, vntill the perill of death were better passed over, which was within short time, when the Duchesse by her often visiting him, comforted his sorowes into many joyfull conceits. But because our history appertaines not onely to his doings, or the lones of the Duchesse, we will returne to the Duke of Gaule, who after he had thus conquered Prince Lewes, followed the conditions of the field, taking the portraitt of his Lady Agriola, and placed it where the Duchesse picture stood, setting

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

setting it among the other conquered Ladies. What day others other Knights came on behalfe of their Ladies, whom the valiant Englishman entertained with such valour, as all his paines turned to the honour of his Mistresse Agriola, who now was seated as paragon of the field.

C H A P. XXXVI.

Of the Combat betwene *Palmerin* and the Duke of *Gaule*, and of the successe thereof.



At the same day that the Prince of France was vanquished by the Duke of Gaule, and their traines, but the Combat was first ended, wherefore they commanded their Squires to prepare their Tent. *Palmerin* understanding that the Duke was conquered, grieved not a little, in that he came no sooner to win the honour of the Prince: yet knowing, if now he could conquer the Duke, more honour should arise to him then by the Prince Lewes, he contented himselfe, passing that night in his Tent with the Prince Trineus, in diuers arguments of the Combat betwene Lewes of France and the Duke: yet was Lewes highly commended of *Palmerin* though he were overcome, because he had so bravely done the two former daies against all the knights that came. All this night could *Palmerin* sleep, thinking on the day ensuing, but rising early in the morning, and commending himselfe to God in his prayers, he put on the Coate of Armes his Lady *Polinarda* gave him before his departure, and took the counterfeits of his Lady in his armes, not thinking any of his Knights or Squires worthy to beare it, and thus accompanied with Trineus and other Allmaigne Lords, entered the Lists with so brave

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

a gesture and countenance, as every man commended him for a good Knight. And having placed the Picture on the accustomed spectment, as it had bene to the lively creature her selfe, he thus began. My perfect image of all beauty, vertue, and excellency, resolve thy selfe this day, to beare the Palme of honour from all Ladies in the world, in that your Knight craves a thousand deaths, before he gives consent to the contrary: and perswades himselfe so assuredly of your present favour, as he trusteth in an whole Army, to keep his religion in your divine service. These wordes were spoken so lowd, as the Duke of Gaule heard him, where with not contented, he answered. What now Knight, remainest thou (long) of a Lady to delight her Beauty? Ill canst thou performe what thou speakest, if then be no better provided. For all that Sir, said *Palmerin*, I hope to make you grant what I say, and that there is not a fatter Lady living, then she whose figure thou here beholdest, either while I shall constrain thee to be true to it, whether thou wilt or no.

What shall we soon see (quoth the Duke:) So departing into their Tents to be armed, and ready to fight, they met so valiantly together, as both of them brake their lances bravely without moving each other, and taking new staves, encountered againe, where the Duke was unhorsed, and *Palmerin* very sore wounded: So betaking them to their good Swords, continued a dangerous and doubtfull Combat, till in the end *Palmerin* overcame the Duke, and holding his Sword ready to cut off his head, said, Knight thou art dead, if thou grant not my Lady to excell thee in beauty. My Sir, (said the Duke) unhappy be the houre that you took in hand this voyage, to deprive me of that which made me the most happy Knight of the world, with what countenance may I present my selfe before her, saying For I have been so adverse to me? Thus filling the ayre with his regrets, the Judges came desiring *Palmerin* to save his life, where to he consented: which wordes were more bitter to the Duke then death

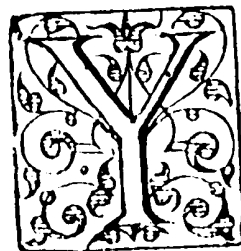
death, who in these complaints was led into his Tent by his Equies. Palmerin not forgetting the honour to do to his Lady, took down the Image of Agriola, and set his Ladies in the room, saying: Now are you in the place you desire, which is your owne by right. His victorie was not a little pleasant to y French-men, but specially to the Prince Lewes, when he heard thereof: who the better to make his joy knowne to Palmerin, sent him two of the best horses in his stable, as glad of the reuenge on the Duke, as that Palmerin remained Conquerour. Palmerin sent hearty thanks to the Prince, as well for the present as his good will, and so continued in his deuotion to his Ladies beauty, as that day he honoured her with the conquest of foure French knights, and the submission of their Ladies portraictures: yet aboue all, Palmerin commended to Trineus, the valour of the Englishman, confirming the Duke for a chosen knight at Arms, and neither French men, Italian, Spanyard, English man, Romaine, nor Greeke, that attempted against Palmerin, in the following dayes: but still he bare alway the victorie, and Polinardies Picture their Ladies obsequence: The last of the eighth dayes, came into the field the Lord of Albert, greatly esteemed for his valour and Chivalry, and he would defend the Beauty of his French Lady: but Palmerin after a long and tedious fight, brought him and his Mistress among the vanquished, and so concluded the French Princes enterprise, to his owne immortall honour. Afterwarde came the King Agriel, with the Princes and Lords of his Court to Palmerins Tent, making him the greatest entertainment could be deuised, whereof Trineus, and the other Allmaigne Lords were highly contented, and after his wounds were healed, caused him and his company to be lodged in his owne Palace, where the Quene and her Ladies would often visite him, and the Prince Lewes likewise, who by many intreaties with Trineus, understood her name for whom Palmerin thus adourned. But when the King understood, that

Trineus

Trineus was the Emperour of Allmaignes Rome, and at this honourable Company came from his fathers Court, their Welcome cannot be sufficiently set downe, nor Palmerins praises effectually rehearsed: whom the Prince Lewes thus entertained. In good sooth Sir Palmerin, the Prince may imagine himselfe happy, that is honoured with your knightly seruice, aboue all, the Noble Emperour of Allmaigne. My Lord (qu. Palmerin) it likes you to speak your pleasure of me, yet did I neuer knowe knights more worthy in fight then your Countrey men, among whom your deserts may not escape vnreposed, no more then the deeds of Scipio can among the Romanes. Many other honourable and familiar speeches passed betwene the Prince and Palmerin, about the Ladies figures, that we brought to the Acus. Polinarda, onely triumphing beyond all the rest, hauing no second but faire Agriola of England, the goddess and Mistress of the Duke of Gaule.

CHAP. XXXVII.

Of the Combate which the Dukes of *Savoy* and *Lorraine* had together, for the beauty of their Ladies: and what was the issue thereof.



Yea haue here before heard, the Enterprise of the Duke of Savoy, for the beauty of his Lady, and how after Prince Lewes his dayes of Combat were finished, he should maintaine nine others in the like quarrell: Therefore the day after Palmerins victorie, he puts himselfe in order as before required, and hauing in the field erected two Pillars of Porphyre, displacing them that belonged to the Prince Lewes, his Tent was there set up all of crimson velvet, being curiously embroidered with Gold and pearle,

and

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oltra,*

and round about within, were Inscriptions of many brave sentences of Lobo, extracted from Hypoziographers and Poets, as well in Greek, as in Latine, in praise of the Excellence of his debated affections. In the morning he went to give the good morrow to the Princess Lucemania, Daughter to the King of France, whom he had chosen for his Spouse and Wife. After many solemn courties passed betwene them, fearing the Queen should finde them together, he took his leave of her, the giving him from her arme a sumptuous Bracelet, garnished with five great Diamonds, and five faire Rubies: which gift much encouraged him to follow his Enterprise. Being come into the field, the Judges appointed were the eldest Sonne of France, and the Count of Armignac: both Princes and valiant Knights at Armes, and standing in the Gate of the Tent unarmed, because he saw none ready to offer him Battell, the Duke of Lorraine at length entred the field, attended on by a brave company of Knights and Squires, who brought the portrait of his Lady, being a figure of great Beauty, and having a Crowne on her head, where over was written in great Letters of Gold, This is Polimida, exceeding in Beauty all Ladies in the world: Which was read by many, who could not satisfie their eyes in beholding so brave a spectacle, and being late on the Pillar appoynted, he came to the Duke of Savoy, saying: Blasphemous Knight, detractor of the Beauty of Ladies, here may thine own eyes witness how thou hast belied Beauty, in presuming to thinke any more faire then is incomparable Creature, to whom thy Lady may not worthily be hand-maid. And if thou wilt not presently confesse what I command thee, I shal thy head from my Weapon, which I meane to knock well for thy great indiscretion. The Duke of Savoy enraged with these words, Armed himselfe presently without any answer, and mounting on Horseback, with a strong Lance in his hand, encountered his enemy so couragiously, as breaking both their

Staves

Emperour of *Constantinople:* PART. I.

Staves bravely in shivers, to their very Canastets, passed on without any further harme. The Duke of Savoy angry that he had not dismounted his enemy, with his sword brave returned furiously upon him, and laid on such strokes as the fire sparkled from his Helmet: yet the Duke of Lorraine, like a good and hardy Knight, defended himselfe most valiantly, and reached the Duke of Savoy many shrewd wounds, so that both of them (being thoroughly nettled) reached each others Armes, in such sort with their swords, and mangled their flesh so unmercifully, as the Judges could not imagine who had the better vantage. The Duke of Savoy wondering to see the Duke of Lorraine hold out so long, began to scorne more like a fiend then a man, saying on fortune, that (in respect of his Ladies beauty) the assault was no better, and being at the very point of despaine, took heart afresh, and redoubling his strokes upon his adversary, at length slew his horse under him, who falling downe, and his Master with him, by reason that he was so wearyed, and galled, and he also, had broken his thigh in the fall, could not recover himselfe, before the Duke of Savoy (being alighted) set foot upon him, & in fury would have parted his head from off his shoulders, but only that the Judges ranne quickly and stayed him. When was the Duke of Lorraine halfe dead carryed into his Tent, and the Duke of Savoy caused Polimidas Picture to be set at Lucemania's feet: a thing very strange in respect of their great difference. Afterwards he was unarmed to have his wounds bound up: which were so dangerous, as gladly he would have bene excused from the Combat with any other Knight for that day, his not shame, and the Law he had made himselfe provoke him to the contrary. But within an houre after, was desired by a Knight of Scicilia, who would Combate on foot, with the battell-Are, in which combat the Duke was very rare enemy, he had lost so much blood before: but yet in these, the

Scici-

The History of *Palmerin D'Oltra*,

Scythian Knight lost the day, his Ladies Picture was taken and conquered, and the Duke of Savoy went to visit him in his Tent.

C H A P. XXXVIII.

How the Duke of Savoy entered the Combat against *Ptolome*, and how he sped.



Palmerin not as yet in perfect health, was advertised how the Duke of Savoy had conquered the Duke of Lorraine, fighting for the Beauty of the Princess Polinarda; the conceit whereof so grieved him, that nothing could move, to see her honour so badly defended whom above all other he esteemed dearest, which made him in great choller, say before the Prince Trineus. By God (my Lord) I have made a slender choice of the Duke of Lorraine for his Uxall, and Madame Polinarda seemed to be scant wife to choose him for her Champion, in respect of the excellent Beauty Nature hath bestowed on her. And yet it could not be imagined, how the Duke of Lorraine should gain the victory without shame, in seeking honour beyond his desert, because he is unworthy of such extraordinary favour, which makes me repute it rather of a faint heart, than any want of just quarrell. Trineus hearing Palmerin so affectionate in his speeches, in a merry laughter, said. In good sooth Sir Palmerin, the Duke of Lorraine was but ill counselled, to enter the Combat for my Sisters beauty without her Licence, in that he once learned, how you could defend it much better then he. Palmerin hearing he had spoken more then he might, because he discoursed his Love too openly, excused the matter thus. If it were not (my Lord) that I doubt to offer wrong to a Lady, on whom dependeth my life,

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

life, and whom I love more deare then my selfe: I would cause the Frenchman well to understand, how Madame Polinarda your Sister, surpasseth in all perfections, either of grace or beauty, all the Ladies of the Countrey: yea, I dare say of the whole World: therefore one may easily conjecture, that the Duke of Lorraine entering the Combat, had his mind fixed on baser occasions. When Trineus smiling to see Palmerin so diligent to shadow his love, said: It is no strange matter (friend Palmerin) to see presuming mindes payd with selfe same Coyne, as the Duke is: and yet I cannot marvel enough, that my Sister Polinarda would not commit this matter to my charge, she having had so good knowledge of your Valour and Discretion. These speeches pleased not Palmerin a little: and did in such sort encourage him, as for the injury done his Lady by the Duke of Savoy, in setting her figure at the feet of Luccmania, had not Trineus perswaded him with faire speeches, all sick and sore as he was, he would have gone to revenge this with no. Notwithstanding, he called Ptolome secretly, saying: Whom knowest (my deare friend) what shame is offered her, to whom I was destinated before my birth, by the presumption of an overbold Knight, and what griefe it is to me, that I cannot at this present revenge the wrong my selfe. I pray thee therefore supply my insufficiency, and enter the Combat with that valiant glorious Duke, of whom thou mayest gaine honour and give me content, in giving ease to my affliction, which are insupportable. I promise you (my Lord) answered Ptolome, before you made the motion I intended it, and I will accomplish it with such good will, as I make no den to overcome the Duke of Savoy. And for my Sister Brionella, will I enter the field, whose beauty is sufficient to entice me with the victory, for surely in my conceit, she farre surpasseth Luccmania. Wherefore my Lord let me request one courteisie, which I am loath you should deny me: that if you shall be able to morrow bat to accom-

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

accompany me with your presence in the field. If the Ayas will suffer me, (quoth Palmerin) I will, in meane while, I will pray, that thy Fortune may fall out to my hart's desire.

Thus Trineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome, were passing, the time, conferring with other Noblemen, of the valour of the Duke of Savoy, against all strange Knights: & how he had spoiled the Duke of Lorraine, had not his horseaine on him, and mainied him: otherwise, he brought the Combat to so good a Iudgement, as he had wonne the honoz of the field. Wherein Palmerin was more offended then before, because himselfe was not able to revenge this misfortune: Wherein he conceived a kinde of Jealousie of the Duke of Lorraine, because he had chosen his Lady Polynarda for his Mistress, and on her behalfe he had entered the Combat: and how he durst place her picture on the Pillar with her name, without he had receibed some commandement from her: Which conceit so grieved him, as his wounds began to be as dangerous as at the first, continually labouring in his thoughts; Now with the lightnesse, then againe with the inconstancy of Women, nevertheless he could not judge, (affecting earnestly the vertues of his Lady) that we would be of such a double liking: and in this doubtfull estate, sayd.

Oh God, I see that Women win lightly, and lose againe more easily. When repenting his words, followes on thus: O heavens, and what shall I say? It is impossible that she (meaning Polynarda) should be so forgetfull, and never will I believe, that a Princess so wise and vertuous would reward me with such Treason, which may not, nay I dare sweare cannot once enter her thoughts. Yet would not all opinions serve to allay this new jealousie, but still it had power to confound reason: and all the night continued he in this variable conceit, till the next morning, when Ptolome (so soon as the sun arose) accompanied with Trineus, went to his Tent, where being armed, all saving his Helmet,

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I

having his Lance and Shield, he came to the Duke, saying. Thou knowest the right the cause of my coming, stand upon thy guard, for I fight for beauty. The Duke suddenly at these words mounted on horseback, and ranne against his enemy with such strength, as Ptolome cast the Duke forth of his Saddle. and suddenly alighted with his sword drawn: but the Duke recovering himselfe, entertained him in sharper sort then he expected. Now began betwixt them a cruell and pitious Combat, as their Armour, Shields and Swords, flew about in pieces, and the blood trickling downe their bodies in many places, so that it was generally reputed, how the fight could not end without the losse of both their lives. Yet in the end, the Duke being of stronger constitution then Ptolome, and greedy of victory over his enemy, ran so violently upon him as he got him on the ground, and he being overmost, offered to take the advantage of his life: but the Judges forbidding it, caused Ptolome to be carried into his Tent, where the Prince Trineus layed, not a little; so for this great misfortune. The Duke likewise so wounded was carried into his Mansion, but first he saw the portrait of Brionella set in the rank of the conquered. The same day did the Duke fight with a Knight of Scotland at the space, who not nimble enough in using that weapon, in the end had the syle, and the other Knights afterwards at severall weapons, so that it was admirable to behold the exploits of Armes the Duke did, in that no Knight as yet medled with him, but departed with shame, and their Ladies pictures placed as vanquished. And now was Palmerins Combat against the Duke of Gaule not talked on: for the Duke of Savoy was accounted the onely Knight in the world, to the no small joy of the Princess Lucemania, who perswaded herselfe now, that her beauty was most excellent. But she was not so pleasant as Palmerin was penive, and enraged out of measure: notwithstanding his weaknesse, and the of-

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

ten intreaties of Trineus, he would needs to the field, saying, God my Lord persuade me not, so I reckon not my life, so I may take vengeance of the dishonour done to my Lady your Mistress: the manifold courtesies of the Emperour your Father, have so bound me to her and you, as exceed my life farre, and therefore I beseech you not to hinder me. Trineus yet overcame him by persuasions, assuring him to have time sufficient for his revenge, whereat greatly displeased, he resigned himselfe to be whole sooner then he was indeed, so the great desire he had to dralle with the Duke. And Prince Lewes angry, to see the Duke hold the field longer then he did, not able to be overcome by any knight, came to Palmerin, saying. I know not my Lord, whether you vnderstand the Duke of Savoyes victories against so many hardy knights, but belike his strength is much better then mine was, or fortune allows him more favour then she did to me. In my conceit, if you enter not the Combat, you doe me wrong and your selfe too: and if he depart hence with victory, then shall I have cause to complaine of you: in that his successe hath made him so haughty and presumptuous, as though no knight is able to answer him in the field: let me intreate you Sir Palmerin to abate his pride, and (as well he deserves) make him know his folly. Palmerin having greater desire to execute this matter, then thus to be intreated, returned the Prince this answer, My Lord, God gives honour and victory to whom he pleaseth, without either regard of the cause or the persons. If according to bounty or nobility of minde he distributed such gifts, then had you been among the better sort, as furnished sufficiently with valour and magnanimity: yet if your enterprise have not softened your desire, account this for certaine, that it is for your good, and for other reasons then are to you known, for such matters are his secrets, and he doth ballance them by his owne wisdom. Notwithstanding, as well to satisfy your request, as ease mine

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I

owne minde, to morrow morning will I enter my Tent, albeit my present estate would have me stay a while: there will I Combat with the Duke, not certaine how fortune meanes to deale with me. What happen what shall, I go with a minde to conquer, and doubt not but the issue will be such, as shall yield you content, and me the victory: so shall your labours and mine be converted into pleasure. With this answer the Prince satisfied, departed, yet was he ignorant of Palmerins intent, which was far otherwise then he imagined: but pleased as he was, he went into the presence Chamber, where many knights were conferring of barbs of Armes past, to whom he opened the fantasy of Palmerin, which caused a generall doubting of the Duke, setting him to some for vanquished, except Palmerins weaknesse were his greater friend.

CHAP. XXXIX.

Of the perillous Combat betweene *Palmerin* and the Duke of *Savoy*, and the issue thereof.



It dayes together had the Duke of Savoy maintained this quarrell, for the beauty of his Lady Lucemania, and no knight as yet could get any advantage of him, untill the seventh day, when Palmerin prepared himselfe to the field, and entered his Tent, accompanied with Prince Lewes of France, Trineus, and many other Princes. The King with all his traine taking their standing to behold the Combat, Palmerin came armed forth of his Tent, saving his Helmet, which was carried before him by two Gentles with his shield and spere, and next to them came two Princes, who bare the portraiture of his

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

his Lady Polinarda, which being set on the Pillar, had clasped on his Helmet, and taking his Space in his hand, marched to the Dukes Tent, and thus summoned him. Knight, thou hast long enough defended the field, and to my great griefe that it hath been so long, my turne is now to come, and it is good reason I should keep it the rest of the time: for the Lady whom I love, is not onely much more beautifull then thine, but beside, excelleth all other whatsoeuer, and if thou wilt not confesse the same, I will not leaue thee with this Space till I haue forced thee to do it. I know not (aid the Duke, what thou canst do, but I am of the minde, that I shall soon qualifie thy over-bold braying.

At these words the Duke taking his Space, deliuered Palmerin so sound a blow on the head, as made him to stagger, but Palmerin requited him well againe for it, and long had they fought together, and hurted each other very pitifully, till at length Palmerin gaue the Duke such a cruell blow betwixt the head and the shoulders, as he fell to the ground cleane bereft of sence: when Palmerin taking off his Helmet, would not offer him any further violence, but setting his sword against his breast, says. Now am I sufficiently reuenged on him, that so ill intreated the figure of the most fairest among Ladies. The Judges of the field, thinking Palmerin would haue slaine the Duke, came running to him with these words. Content you Sir, he is banquished, and hath no power to defend himselfe. Whereupon Palmerin put by his sword againe, and leaving the Duke, went presently to the Pillar where his Ladies posseth stood, which embracing in his armes, he placed high, and Lucemania at her side, saying. I beseech you Madame to pardon your Knight, in that he did no sooner repell the famous injury offered you, and impute it not to feare, or want of courage, but debility of body, which once a little recovered, I came to maintaine your honour, and here commend you for the most beautifull Lady liuing. While Palmerin

Emperour of Constantinople. PART, I

merin thus contemplated his mistresse figure, the Judges commanded the Duke to be carried into his Pallace, where, with soveraigne byrns life was got into him againe, but when he knew himselfe to be banquished, and that in one houre he lost the greatest honour of all his life-time, very conceit of griefe had well-nere slaine him. So let was the sorrow of Madame Lucemania, but she and her Knight were got so much discontented, as Palmerin, Trineus, and Ptolome were sorrowfull: but above all other, Prince Lewes of France, more pleasant then if himselfe had triumphed in victory, thinking he could not sufficiently extoll the renowne of Palmerin, calling him the onely pillar bolome of the proud. What day the Duke encounter with several other Knights, and in his conquests shewed himselfe not onely magnanimous, but mercifull, saving their lives, and honouring his mistresse with the humilitie of theirs. The next day likewise after many brave exploits, being ready to leaue the field because none came to resist him, on a sudden there entered a Knight in black Armour, striped all over with Gold, and bearing in his shield of Armes the Golden Sunne, whose brave order of entrance declared him to be a hardy Knight at Armes, who advancing himselfe to Palmerin, said. My intent of coming hither (Sir Knight) is to let thee understand, that I am the Sermant and beloved of a Lady, who may not be equalled with any other, because I am informed, that thou maintainest thy freind, to excell all Ladies whatsoeuer. I offer to pzooue the contrary, and will make thee confesse it. I neuer spake words more true, answered Palmerin, and here abide to iustifie them: but this place is ordained to no other end, then to make thee and thy like know, what vanities enterpises you take in hand. And one thing is required of thee, that before you begin the Combat, thou set upon this Pillar the counterfeitt of her, whom thou perswadeest thy selfe to excell my Lady in beauty, according to the conditions of this

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

this field published through all Europe. What cannot I do,
answered the Knight of the Sunne, for I have no other pic-
ture of her then is imprinted in my heart, where I have bath-
ed her lively figured person, as she is daily presented to me
by her incomparable beauty, which cannot be taken from
me but on ly by death. And if I lose the soule, (as al-
ways hold opinion) whole world cannot separate me from
her. And therefore are all men unworthy to receive fra-
tion (by their regard) of a thing so precious, which makes me
imagine, none but my selfe worthy to look on her divine
figure. Wherefore therefore to thy hope, and defend
thy selfe. Palmerin desired to know the name of this fayre
Lady, sayd I Sir Knight that thou art in a useless proud
and idle, which makes me rather desire to Combat with
thee then any other to abate this hot humour: albeit this
is contrary to his conditions, who was the principall Au-
thor of this enterprise: which is, that thou shouldst set on
this Pillar her portrait whom thou so esteemest: yet this
exception shall be granted thee, for the desire I have to
know what thou wilt do, as also her name. If thou wil-
lest reveale it: To tell thee her name (answered the Knight
of the Sunne) I will not like with thee, and because in
concealing it, I shall offer her wrong, nature having in her
set downe the only touch of beauty: know therefore that
her name is Polinda, Daughter to the mighty Emperour
of Allunaigne. These words were so welcome to Palme-
rin, and troubled his tongue in such sort, that he know-
not readily what to answer: notwithstanding in most
of his choller, thus spake. By this Knight, thou hast made
a good choice, for against her beauty shall no I contend,
having in it greater estimation & reverence then thou canst
have: but I am ready to prove, that thou deservest not to
be named her Knight, in not so much as her meanest ser-
vant. What shall I more say of the Knight of the Sunne, he
for the part: and what yet shall I say of the great

ter

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I

ter service then mine, yet so it is, that for the love I beare
her, and the affection I have to oblige her by some agreeable
service: I may by good reason name myselfe hers. At these
speeches Palmerin conceived such feaverish, as without at-
tending any farther matter, mounted in great anger on
horseback, and met the Knight of the Sunne a foord by, and
both of them were sent to the ground: whereupon they
drew their Swords, and charged each other with such
force, as their Armour and Shields were broken in pieces,
and the ground soaked with their expence of blood. As per-
mission of breathing was suffered between them, but blood
and death earnestly desired each other part, so that the King,
the Lords and the Judges, reputed this for the strange-
est Combat that ever they saw, nor could they say who was
liked to winne the field, but if he overcame, the other could
not escape, so that the King moved with compassion, caused
them to be secured, and commanded them to enter their
Tents. Which motion liked well the Knight of the Sunne,
so long he persecuted himselfe he could not hold out, where-
fore he mounted on horseback, so well as he could and with-
drew himselfe. Palmerin being wonderfully displeased,
that he could not obtaine the victory of this Knight: Some
after, the King and the Prince Lawes came into his Tent,
and seeing him very sore wounded, would not let him stay
there, but said. Welladay (Sir Palmerin) you have great
need of rest and your wounds I see are very dangerous, you
shall therefore be conveyed to my Palace, where all helps
that may be devised shall be given, assuring you, that pre-
sent honour shall never be taken from you, when you shall
come. And though the said Combat were not known, the
King was not displeased, the more that he perceived the death
of the one or the other, and yet he was of such, which I would
not have seen for any of the great pleasures I have in the
world. And the King, who had a great love to the Knight of the
Sunne, before such honour due to many Ladies and Knights of
name:

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

name: come you therefore with me, and *Lord Trincus* beare
us company. Great thanks received the King of them: &
this honourable courtesse, and *Palmerin* went with him to
the Palace, where the Kings Chirurgions took care for
his wounds, he being lodged in the most stately Chamber
in the Court. Now the Prince *Lewes* began to love
Palmerin so dearly, as he could not be an houre without his
company, desiring his health as his owne welfare: where-
fore all things that he imagined *Palmerin* took pleasure in,
would he performe with his bittermost endeavours, and
would suffer none to hold him talk, but onely of that which
might yield pleasure and delight. notwithstanding, diuers
Knights conferring with him that evening, as concerning
the Knight of the Sunne: *Palmerin* answered them, that
his minde should neuer be thoroughly quiet, whilst such time
as he sought with him againe. The Prince who still en-
deavoured to keep him from saunes, sayd, I believe (my Lord)
that he will not easily be induced to deale with you againe,
for you brought him into such estate, as he will happily
sell hereafter out of your hands: and well I am assured,
that had you continued but a little longer, the victory had
been yours, for the Knight was so weakened, that he did
nothing but defend your blowes. It pleaseth you (my Lord)
to say so, quoth *Palmerin*, but had he felt such valour in me,
as such courage as becoms a vertuous Combatant, hardly
could he escape as he hath done: neuertheless, I hope
(with the fauour of fortune) to meet him once more, and
then we will try who is the strongest. Much other talks
they had, but *Palmerin* intreated the Prince, that all the
joys of the conquered Ladyes might be brought him,
which were about an hundred, of diuers beauties and most
strange fashions, And among them all could he find none
second to *Polinarda*, but (as we haue said already) that of
Agriola the Princesse of England: who (by the report of a
Gentleman present that had seen her) was much more
beautifully

Emperour of *Constantinople*: PART. I.

beautifully then her figure presented. Such speeches they con-
tinued so long of the English Virgin, as *Trincus*, (albeit he
never saw her) became amorous of her, and at that instant
he solemnly vowed himself hers, as thence forthward he swore
neuer to love any but her, so that for her sake he threw him-
self into many perillous fortunes, as in the following dis-
course of the History you shall read more at large. From
whom let us returne to the Prince *Lewes*, who seeing to ma-
ny portraictures of Princesses and Ladies, would daily con-
gratulate *Palmerin* his good fortune, and embracing him, said.
So God help me, my noble companion, I would neuer desire
greater riches in the world, then to resemble you, especially
in chivalry, which in you is surpassing all other, as you
haue ended to your honour, what a number haue sayd in.
Oh how happy may the Lady account her selfe, that hath
such a Knight: and were not the condition too cruell towards
my selfe, I could wish I were a Woman in her place, to
haue so high rule and command over you. At which words all
present began to smile, yet shewing good countenance to *Pal-
merin*, for the action they saw the Prince bare him,
which is yet to this day a common blage and practise among
Courtiers: but *Palmerin* somewhat ashamed of such super-
stitious prayer, answered Trust me my Lord, I account my
happinesse the greater that I haue done service to so high a
personage and so good a Knight as you are, desiring to meete
you in such place hereafter, where you may perceiue the good
will I beare you, not onely for this high entertainment,
which is more then I can deserve, as for the pleasure I haue
to honour so good a Prince, which if the occasion happen, you
shall perceiue the experience.

I haue spoken nothing (quoth the Prince) but what is
more acquainted to others then my selfe, and if I would com-
mend them, then would they be most openly knowne, because
vertue doth apparantly shine in them. Many other speeches
passed betwene them, and longer had continued, but that
many

The Historie of Palmerin D'Olive,

many Lords which came to see the Duke, were now upon departing, and therefore would take their leave of the King, whereupon they were constrained to break off, the Duke going to his Chamber of presence, where he gave thanks to a number that honoured the Count with their presence, and so one after another all departed, the Duke of Savoy bringing one of the King, ashamed (God knows) to be so conquered by Palmerin, and not abiding his Lady Lucemania farewell. But he was did not serve the Duke as before, for her long continued as resolute as before, and she loved him as well conquered, as he had been conqueror, whereof she assured him by many amorous meetings, by which means the Duke stayed the Duke at the Court longer, then himselfe would have allowed, for long Palmerin, in as you have heard, threatened the Duke to come and visit him, which he accomplished the day following, when Palmerin spent many discourses with her, rather of love, then entering into religion, for he perceived by her countenance that she had no will to be a Nun, where he left leave them together, and tell you who the Knight of the Sunne was, that fought the last Combat with Palmerin.

CHAP. XL,

Who the Knight of the Sunne was, and of his strange adventures.



The King of Hungaria, father to the Prince Tarilus, that married the Lady Guine, mother to Palmerin, had in his latter years a son named Netrides, and after he had long lived in rest and prosperity, he dyed, leaving the young Prince Netrides, and in the infancy of his brother Tarilus. Netrides growing in good constitution of

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

of body and behaviour, being well beloved generally, so gracious, gentle, and well governed he was, as the Lord, Knights, Gentlemen, and people of Hungaria, esteemed him more then their King Tarilus, who being Crowned after his Fathers decease, much Netrides as Brother, had requited, till fortune (envious of this Concoise) not willing that the virtues of this young Prince should be there extinguished, changed his love and affection into exceeding hatred, by any occasion hereafter following. One day the King Tarilus walking in his Garden to take the ayre, left his Brother Netrides in the Chamber, accompanied with the Queen, who without imagination of any harme, not that his fatall Starres would sort him any misfortune, sat down in the Kings Chayre, as he talked with the Queen, and continued there so long, till Tarilus came by and found him there sitting, which he took in such ill part, as in a great rage he thus began.

Why made thee so audacious and presumptuous to sit in my seat, against thy duty and my liking? By mine honour thou hadst bene more than thou wast: and if thou hadst bene againe, or may I but heare thereof, thy head shall pay the price of thy folly. Netrides, who of his owne nature was humble and gentle, fell downe on his knee, entreating the King his Brother to pardon him, for what he had done was not with any intent or meaning to displease his Highness: but an over-sight, and that so he would permit it to passe.

The King made him no answer, because he took Netrides reasous for no payment, but conceiving a secret hatred in his minde by the occasion of so bold an insolent, but he increased thereof, and so continued growing in the spirit of revenge, so that he dyed in his Brother's chamber, as he had done, and once spoke to him, nor after he dyed, nor at any time.

When called he to his minde, he saw the love of his Brother, and his Brother's death, and he was so much affected with the knowledge of his Brother's death, as he was so much affected with the place

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

place him, and make *Netrides* King. For which cause he intended to haue him slain, & the execution thereof he committed to one of his Archers, but *God* (who is euer more the protector of the innocent) would not suffer such a damnable deed of *Paradise* to take effect. Which *Tarilius* perceiving, and finding one day his Brother alone, enflamed with this discontented humour, said, *Netrides*, thou hast offended me more then I will now stand to argue on, I therefore banish thee my Court and Kingdome: and look that within thre dayes thou get thee hence, and on thy life not to discover it to any man, or take any one with thee to beare thee company.

The young Prince obedient to his Brother, made answer, that he would accomplish his charge, and so withdrew himselfe into his Chamber, not declaring to any one his cause of heauinesse. When willing one of his Squires to saddle his Horse, departed away as close as he could, forbidding any of his Seruants to follow him: and such expedition he made, as not resting but one night in any Lodging he left his Brothers Kingdome, wandering without any care of himselfe, or which way he went; but went here and there, as Fortune pleased to guide him.

Having not long time Travelled in *Allmaigne*, his Horse fayled him, in that at his departure he was but badly provided: yet could not his Princely minde abate it selfe to *Wag*, so that being without meat and drink, or any place to rest himselfe in, ashamed of himselfe, he sought the means to shrowd himselfe where none might descry him, and so entering a great Forrest, very thick and set with trees, bushes, and bushes, he esteemed that a convenient place for him to rest in, wherefore alighting from his Horse, and turned him to see, laid himselfe downe at the roote of a Tree, and thus began to heareth forth his Complaints. An inconstant *Forster*, and to me most of all inconstant: dost thou ereat me so high, and reseat me now thus low? Well then may I say, that more long thou dost a man in our house, then right

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

right in all his life time: for if heretofore thou dost not me pleasure and delight, that now thou makest me pay for it: (and that with many too rigorous) not leaving any hope to comfort me. Ah reasonless King, cruel, and unmanlike Brother, thou hast with thame banished me, and brought me in to this poore estate wherein I must die: Oh happy if I might, rather then to liue in the vile estate of Beggary.

So saying, he layd him downe among the Weeds, and was surprisled with such extreme febleness, as he fell into his lamentations again, thus. Ah my Lord & Father, too soon wilt thou leave me, would *God* I had then borne thee company, or else at this instant I might come to thee.

Ah men of *Hungaria*, I am well assured (knowing the love you euer bare me) that you will pittie when you heare my afflictions and calamities: alas, I neuer observed this unhappend. And being unable to continue longer speech, he there determined to finish his life. But better Fortune befell him then he expected, by the meanes of an Ancient Knight named *Lombardo*, who being nere, heard all his dolorous complaints. The Knight being rich and of Noble blood had nere that Forrest a strong, delighfull, and sumptuous Castle, and delighsted to walk among the Woods for his recreation, as good hap it was for *Netrides*, that he walked this Evening. He heard these sad and sorrowfull regrets, pittie so touched his heart, as the teares bedewed his cheeks: yet would he not trouble him, while he continued his meanes, but afterwards came and took him by the hand, saying: Arise my Friend and take courage, for you are in the place where you shall finde more good to benefit you, then harme to offend you, wherefore cherish up your spirits, and forget this your heauinesse, which may endanger you beyond recovery. *Netrides* saying this honourable Gentleman, with his beard so white as snow, hearing his courteous offer, and for him now so necessary, with joy, feare, and bashfulness, all coupled together, accepted it, & humbly thanked him,

The History of Palmerin D'Oliua,

him, albeit (quoth he) a contented death is better to me, then a miserable and despised life. The Knight comforted him, answered him thus, that it was not in his power to choose life or death, but the Founder of the Heavens reserved that ruling in his owne hands. With these words he took him by the hand, and conducted him to his Castle, where he was worthily entertained by the Knight himselfe, his Lady, and her Daughter, one of the fairest Virgins in all that Country.

Lombardo having heard all his misfortunes, and hard Adventures, in the Night discoursed all the whole to his Lady: wherefore good Wife (quoth he) entertain him so well as may be, for I assure you he is descended of high degree: and if his manners and vertues be correspondent to his Birth, we will give him our Daughter in Marriage, if he himselfe accept our Offer. The good Lady misliked not her Husbonds opinion, wherefore the next Morning she went to entertaine her Guest, saying: My Lord, your coming hither hath well contented my Lord and Husband, and so please it you to stay here, we will be very glad and faine of your good company, which gentle offer Netrides accepted, thanking God and the Lady for his happy fortune. Thus remained he with this ancient Knight Lombardo, who afterwards never remembred him of his miseries in the former, but intreated him so well, as though he had been his owne Sonne. Netrides seeing the Knights Daughter so faire, and so well conditioned, and she regarding not only the vertues of his minde, but also his comely and well-featured Body, they began amazously to affect each other secretly, but Love invented the means to rebele it openly: for Lombardo well noting the great discretion of this young Gentleman, and knowing him to be descended of blood Royall, resolved to cause him marry his Daughter, demanding the question of Netrides, among many other speeches, if he liked to marry his Daughter. My dear Lord (quoth he) it is

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

the summe of my desire, & greater honor cannot you bestow on me, so please her to conclide the same opinion I am. The marriage was solemnized with all expedition, with the presence of many Gentles, neighbours thereabout, who marvelled the Knight bestowed his Daughter so, in that they esteemed Netrides but a poore Knight errant. It fortuned afterwards that the ancient Knight and his Lady deceased, leaving their Daughter great with Child, to the no little content of Netrides, that after all his sorowes he would become a Father. Three dayes before this Lady fell in Travail, she dreamed that she was shut up in a very darke Chamber, whereout she could by no means get, and therefore called for helps to one of her Gentlewomen. When was she advised to take her Child in her armes, and to stay there still, whereupon she beheld her Infant, and saw that his face somewhat resembled the beames of the Sonne, the brightnes whereof chased away the darknesse, so that she might behold the place as cleare as any other, saying. My Lord, forget this heaviness, and you shall rejoyce by this Infant, for this is he shall reestablish you in the place you have lost, and shall seat you in the Chaire with Honour, so which you were exiled thence, giving you his Crowne, that traiterously chased you from his Kingdome. He comforted with these words, took the Child in his armes, and said. Little soule, I pray God thy Mother speak truth, and that thou mayest be able to execute it. So saying, he espied a furious man, who snatched the Infant forth of his armes, and notwithstanding all his intreaties and supplications carryed it away with him.

This sorow for Netrides made her give a loud shriek, when he calling his Wife, demanded the cause of this her sudden affright: whereupon she rehearsed to him the whole manner of her Dreame, and rejoycing thereat, said: I hope (my Lord) that it will so happen to you as I have dreamed, and therefore comfort your selfe without feare of misfortune: Notwithstanding he remained in many doubtfull varieties of

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

of opinion, till they understood by effects the pretended certainty of this *Dream*. Also was come the time of the Ladies deliberance, which was a goodly *Span-child*, so sayre and well-faboured as one should lightly behold, being named *Frysol*, and she would suffer none to Nurse it but her own selfe, for the certain hope she reposed in him. The child growing in time to such comely stature, as each one took great pleasure in beholding him, whereat the Mother was so glad, that albeit she had afterwards two other *Donnes*, yet she wed the no such speciall love towards them as unto *Frysol*, which procured some hatred betwixt his brethren and him. This young Lord growing to fourtene yeres of Age, was in stature very tall, delighting himselfe in riding great Horses shooting in the Long Bow, casting the Bar, and others other Gentlemanlike exercises, as also to chase in the Forrest, where old *Lombardo* met with his Father. So that on a day after long and weary chasing of the Hart, having sweated very sore, and growne marvellous dry for want of drinke, finding a little Spring by the fote of a Tree, he lay downe and dranke, but afterwards he became so ill and sickly, as he trembled, shivering very sore: So that one of his Squires could hardly lead him againe to the Castle. *Netrides* seeing him so exceeding ill, was marvellous sorry, commanding his Physicians to seeke some present helpe for him, who plyed him with such wholesome potions, as his fever left him, but his face and all his Body were so painted as he had been a Lepper, which made him to be mocked of his other Brethren, and scorned of all the Seruants, except only of his Father & Mother, which was such a griefe to him, as he would have dyed with fretting at them, but his Father rebuked them, and comforted him in this manner.

I bid hope (my Sonne) by the means to be restored againe to the Kingdome of my deceased Father: but now, how long it will be before, God knows, if this strang malady of thine be never holpen. *Frysol* amazed at his Fathers words, de-

And

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

And him earnestly to report the whole circumstance: which *Netrides* at length did, rehearsing how he was Mother to the King of *Hungaria*, the hard entreatance he had bid to, towards him, and lastly, he told him the *Dream* of his Mother. *Frysol* standing a long space on his Fathers words, at length answered. My Lord, you are not ignorant of the Soueraigne power of the Highest, who by his diuine judgement hath sent me this disease, that thus tormenteth me: When so, when pleaseth him, he will take it from me againe, and give me health and strength much more then ever I had before, with means sufficient to give you aid and succour, according to the matter wherein you haue binde. And albeit I feele such extreme anguish, as death may not be likened to it, yet with this hope comfort me in such sort, that me thinks already I am become more healthfull: therefore my Lord dismay of nothing but perswade your selfe there is comfort behind. These words were so pleasing to *Netrides*, as more joy caused the teares to trickle down his cheeks, maruelling at the wonderfull courage of his Sonne, enduring such terrible paines as he did: wherefore what he thought he could not reueale, but withholde himselfe into his Chamber.

CHAP. XLI.

How *Frysol* persecuted with his disease, and the mockery of his brethren determined to go seek strange adventures.



Frysol hauing heard the original of his birth, as also the vision that appeared to his Mother, was thence forthward more peniue then he had been before, and perceiving his Brethren continued their bad disposition, and day by day mocked him more and more, he determined to forsake his Fathers house, and

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

to seek adventures, and remedy for his sickness, if any were to be found. And being one day in the forest more melancholyke then accustomed, he espied a knight armed with Leprosie come by the high way, mounted on a poodle halfray, to whom he said. My friend, I am infected with the same disease thou art, wherefore wilt thou suffer me to have thy company, and I will be ready to do what thou shalt command me. The knight perceiving he might gaine some benefit by Fryfol, was well contented, and so had him mount by behind him.

So was he glad to do what was contrary to his nature, and in this life continued two yeares, travelling many Countreys, bearing continually the wallet, and what profit came he delivered his Master, referring nothing for himselfe but what he gave him, and bearing a minde so noble and vertuous, as he desired rather death, then to enrich himselfe by any villanous or dishonest act. So many Countreys and Townes had they travelled, as at last they came into the Realmes of Hungaria, when Fryfol remembered that he was in his Uncles Land, who led a life so base and ignominious: he was overcome with exceeding heaviness which ill agreed with his dangerous disease, so that his companion desired to know the cause of his sadness: but Fryfol prayed him to content himselfe, saying that death was more agreeable to him, then a life so dangerous and miserable. At which words the knight growing in choller, thrust him beside his horse, and rode away, leaving poor Fryfol there, having no other comfort then to fill the ayre with his teares and complaints, till at length he received succour by a young maide named Leonarda, the Daughter of a rich Countryman that dwelt on a mountaine nere at hand. This maide leading her Fathers Beasts and Castell to pasture, took great delight in gathering herbs and roots, wherewith to make ointments for all wounds and diseases: and this day (by the divine permission) she chanced that

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 1.

that way where she heard the mournfull lamentations of Fryfol, whom when she beheld, overcome with pity and compassion, said. Alas my friend, how came you into this desert and comfortlesse place, being oppressed with such a bad and dangerous sickness. In good sooth I desire (quoth she) by no other meanes then the misfortune and displeasure of my life: Oh how happier were my death at this instant, then to live any longer in this monstrous languishing. Friend, answered the maide, you ought not thus to despaze in sickness, but consider that the Lord and Governour of the heauen and earth, both by these meanes try and pzoove his people, whom he perceives thankfull and patient in their afflictions, of reprobate enemies, he makes them his friends and children, onely by the ranfome of his beloved Sonne paid, if then you will put your whole confidence in him, I am perswaded you shall soon finde remedy.

So causing him to rise, she conducted him to her Fathers house, where for certaine dayes she bathed him with wholesome Herbs, and anointed him with such precious ointments, as in short time his disease forsooke him, and he was as cleane as at the time he drank the Water: for which he humbly thanking the maide, said. God make me able (saye Virgin) to repaite this wonderfull kindness received at your hands, accounting my selfe more indebted to you, then to my parents that gave me first life: and this perswade your selfe, that wheresoever my body be separated from this place, my heart shall remaine ready to do you any service. What is my will and intent (quoth Leonarda) but thank him chiefly that made me able to help you, and in so doing shall I account my labour well bestowed. Fryfol for this unexpected good fortune, was henceforth very dutifull and loving towards Leonardas Father and her Mother, as the readiest servant he had in his house: but the goodman esteemed so well of him, as by no meanes he would suffer him to be so painfull, but with such fare as God

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

sent him, entertained and welcomed him, not suffering him to depart thence in the space of a year and more. Fryfol often accompanying Leonarda to the field, she seeing him so saye and comely in personage, began secretly to affect him, yet would she not acquaint him therewith, fearing more to offend then to be refused. So soon as Fryfol had thus recovered his strength, he determined to stay no longer there, wherefore finding Leonarda at leisure convenient, he sayd. I know very well (*satre Sparben*) how much I am beholding to you, for the speciall grace and good I have received by you, for the speciall grace and good I have received by you, which induceth me to make you this promise, that you shall not command any thing, but I will gladly accomplish it. And because I am desirous to travell after strange adventures, I would request that it might be with your willing consent, promising you to stay no longer hence then the term of thre years, in which time I will not saye to visite you againe: and if my fortune shall out as I am perswaded, I doubt not to recompence what you did for me: What which I alway feared (*Mr Fryfol*) quoth she, is now come to passe: notwithstanding, it is convenient I should lose honour more then mine owne pleasure, I am content you shall goe like your advancement so well begonne: but I pray you cast not your promise in oblivion.

I will not to the death (quoth he) doo any thing that may dislike you, against your will, and since you have so freely granted me liberty, perswade your selfe my word shall be my oed. So taking his leave of his Father and Brother, he travelled towards Almaine, where he heard that Chibaly was more maintained then in any other place, and soode he saure dayes together without any Adventure: till passing through a Forrest heard (as it were) a great noise of people fighting, wherefore making haste that way, he espied an ancient Knight assailed by five Villaines that sought to murder him, whom he resisted so well as he could, albeit he had nothing but his sword to de-

send

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I

send him. The Knight espying Fryfol, called to him for help, when he suddenly finding a young Erce, pluckt up by the roots, came therewith to the Villains, thus saying. Why trayterous varlets, what provoketh you to offer such shame to a Knight: wherewith he took one of them so suddenly on the pate with his Erce, as he never rose, to tell who hurt him. The Knight and he together, so behaved themselves, as thre of these Villains were laid dead before them, which the other thre perceiving, took themselves to flight: whereupon the old Knight seeing himselfe so well delivered, came and embracing Fryfol with these words. How may I say good friend, that my life had perished without your assistance, he thinks your selfe therefore how I may gratifie this gentleness: in meane time, I have a house not far hence, let me intreat you to lodge with me this night, and I will make you the best entertainment the Country will allow.

Wherefore Fryfol agreed, promising to leave him in safety before he departed: for which the old Knight thanked him, and as they went he discoursed to him, how these Villaines assailed him, because he had enioyned them to surrender certaine heritages, which unjustly they obtained from some Dyphans, and for that cause set spies to watch him, that they might set upon him and kill him: which surely they had done (quoth he) without your succour. In the continuance of these speeches, they arrived at his Castle, where many of his Squires marvelled to see him so sore wounded, but especially his Lady and his two Monnes, to whom he related the summe of his adventures, and the great labour and helpe he found by Fryfol, for which caused him to be entertained with exceeding honour. And so long abode Fryfol there with the Knight, till being desired to receive the order of Knighthood, he came to the Knight in this manner. May it please you for to bestow on me horse and armour, I will goe to the Emperours Court of Almaine, he being the most renowned Prince in the world.

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

world. The good knight seeing him so forward in Chivalry, gave him horse, armour, and money for his journey, whereupon he set forward, and the third day after he arrived at the Emperours Court, from whence (a little before) Trineus and Palmerin were departed towards France: which newes made Frysol earnestly desire his knighthood, because he intended with all speed to travel thither likewise, in respect of the honour was there to be wonne. Frysol understanding the Emperour was in the Chappel hearing divine service, went thither, where beholding the Princess Polinarda, he reputed her the onely faire Lady of the world, thinking he could never glat his eyes with regarding her: whereon, service being ended, he fell on his knee before the Emperour in this manner. Because I knowing (invincible Lord) that you are renowned beyond all other Potentates whatsoever, and that you make no small account of Knights adventures: I desire that by your hand I may be numbered among them. The Emperour seeing him so young and yet valiantly given, answered, I would be loth my friend to deny a request so reasonable, but I will first know if you be Gentle borne, or no. By Lord (quoth he) I sweare by the faith I owe to God and your Majesty, that I am noble borne, and of the blood royall by my Fathers side.

Gods brother (said the Emperour) but you should be a knight, and fortune shew you so well in Chivalry, as she have indeed you with comely shape and beauty. Then was the spurre put upon his right side, and the Emperour had him rise a knight, commanding his Daughter Polinarda to give him his sword to him, which she did, saying. Most truly and with happiness (Sir knight) may you employ the order you have received. Pardon me (quoth Frysol) if hereafter any virtue or valour abide in me, it shall be employed onely for you, having thus honoured me with my sword, wherewith I hope to accomplish such deeds of Armes, as shall renowne her name that gave me my weapon:

Emperour of Constantinople. PART, I.

pon: but Polinarda made him no answer, because Palmerin was the onely Image of her thoughts. After Frysol was thus knighted, taking his leave of the Emperour and his Daughter, he departed, making no small taste till he arrived at the Courts of Paris, where he determined for his first deed of Chivalry, to enter the Combat for the beauty of Polinarda. But he could not get thither so soon as he intended, for he was hindered by the way with an unexpected adventure, which was, in a faire forest, where he beheld foure knights carry away a Lady perforce, who seeing him, cryed: Ah good knight, for Gods sake succour me: whereupon Frysol couching his lance, sent one of the knights he along to the ground, and in short time wounded another in such sort, as now he had but two left to resist him, on whom Frysol made tryall, how well he could employ the gift of Polinarda. The knights seeing the hard fortune of their two other fellows, the one having broken his neck in the fall, and the other wounded past hope of recovery, took the wisest way for themselves, passing thence so fast as they could ride, but Frysol would not follow, least they had some other company in ambush that might have intrapped him, wherefore he conducted the Lady to her mothers Castle, where he remained that night, and the next day set forward to Paris, where it arrived at the time he fought with Palmerin, according as he hath bene before rehearsed.

After the Knight of the Sunne, (who henceforth shall passe by the name of Frysol) had left Palmerin, and was departed the field, the night was so obscure as he knew not which way he rode, so that the mayfure of the evening did do great harme to his wounds, as if God had not armed him with the better strength, he was in danger not to escape with life. The very same day was the Duke of Gaule departed from Paris, to goe against the King of England against the King of Scots, and Norway. who was the

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

phelo to the Emperour of Allmaigne, for that they molested him with troublesome warres: and the Duke being benighted, was glad to pitch his Tents in a faire field, through which it fortuned Fryol to passe, contemplating of the danger he felt himselfe in. The Duke of Gaule being aboord forth of his Tent to recreate himselfe, heard this sorrowfull noise, which made him send his men to see who it was, and to bring him with them to the Tent: whether when they had brought him, the Duke pitying his estate, demanded whence he came, and who had wounded him in that sort. When he recounted the whole matter, how he had fought with the knight that overcame the Duke of Savoy, and so long the fight endured, that the darke night and the King caused them to be parted, neither of them as yet conquered, and because he would not returne into the City, sought some village where he might conveniently lodge.

The Duke of Gaule hearing the words of Fryol, esteemed him for a worthy and valiant knight, having so long endured against Palmerin unconquered, wherefore he said. Sir knight, you are very welcome to me: all the aide and succour I can give you, you shall be sure to finde with hearty good will: assuring you, that there is no knight living to whom I wish more still, then him whom you have this day fought withall. So causing him to be unarm'd, bidded him to rest himselfe upon his owne bed, and made his wounds be dressed, abiding there eight dayes for the health of Fryol. In which time the Duke had imparted to him the warres of the King of England, which made him make more hast to be gone, or else he would have kept him company longer. My Lord (quoth Fryol) so please you to accept my company, I hope to behave myselfe so wel, as you shall not be discontented with me. The Duke thanked him, and rejoiced that by his means so good a knight was preferred, and did him all the honours he could bestow, taking him with him into England, where he found the

Country

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I:

Country very much desolated with warres to his no little griefe: but leave we them, and returne to Palmerin.

CHAP. XLII.

Of the great courtesie the King of France used to *Trineus* and to *Palmerin*: And of their returne into *Allmaigne*.



So diligently were Palmerins wounds attended, which he had received by the hand of Fryol, as not long after he recovered his health, whereof the King and the Prince Lewis were highly glad, and much more Trineus, unto whom the King desired to give his Daughter *Lucemania* in marriage: which to compass, he intended a sumptuous Banquet, whereto he would invite those twaine: yet first he would acquaint the Quene therewith, and therefore began the matter with her thus.

I like the name, that our Daughter *Lucemania* is of years sufficient for a Husband, and because I evermore desired her highest preferment, and so that I would know if the Prince Trineus to whom I could wish she were espoused, were any thing in love that way affected, for hardly in my judgement shall we find a greater Love, being heere to the famous Emperour of Allmaigne: for this intent (I say) will I ordaine a Banquet, whereto both he and Noble *Palmerin* shall be invited, and our Daughter to beare them company in the best sort you can devise. The Quene, who more desired, this marriage then the King her Husband, answered. You doubt not (my Lord) that I request her chiefest advantage, wherefore let it be as you have determined, and she shall be present as you have appointed. This matter thus proceeding

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

eding, two dayes after were Trineus and Palmerin called to this Banquet, and to honour them the more, the King caused his *Donne Lewes*, with a brave company of Knights and Gentlemen, to conduct them to the stately Palace, where they were royally received by the King and Queen, so led by into the Chamber appointed for the Banquet.

After they had washed, the King caused Trineus to sit by and Palmerin against him, above whom sat faire *Lucemania* his Daughter, being placed full opposite to the Prince Trineus, the Queen to furnish the Table, sat down by the King. And albeit Nature had bestowed on the Princess most exquisite Beauty, yet her sumptuous Accoutrements made her appeare most amiable: but all could not move the heart of Trineus, to forget her, to whose Shyne he was dedicated. The Banquet ended, and the Tables withdrawn, Trineus dined with the faire young Princess, Courtting her with many honest and decent speeches, which made *Lucemania* suppose he loved her: but the Prince noted it well enough, albeit his affections were bound to English *Agriola*.

In this time the other Ladies were conferring of Palmerins mightily valour, when the Count of Armignac his Son, intreating the Duke of Orleans Daughter to dance, was thus stayed by her speeches to the other Ladies.

Now faire Ladies (quoth she) that Palmerin hath mistreated our Beauties, to revenge our Injury, let us fall upon him, and shut him in some place, where he may never come forth: For if he escape us, the Allmaine Ladies shall loose the honour from the French, which will be to us perpetual disgrace. These words she uttered with such a pleasant countenance, as moved all the other Ladies to smile, whereupon the Duchesse of Burgundy answered. In sooth it is necessary we should do so, and let us not suffer him to get out of our hands so easily, as he did from the Knights that came to the Combat. All the company liked this motion well, but the King said. Ladies, I will not consent

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

sent that Palmerin shall have any wrong, because I have taken him into my Guard. And who shall make recompence (quoth another Lady) for the wrong he hath done to you? You ought to suffer for satisfaction (said the King) and be glad that you had the means to see the best Knight in the World, for mine owne part I promise you, I rest so contented. Palmerin hearing the King so commend him, bashfully thus answered. Alas my Lord, there is no such matter in me as pleaseth your Majesty to report, but what my ability is, it remaineth to do you service: accounting my selfe more then happy, by coming to your Highnesse Court, to have knowledge of a Prince so Noble, and vertuous, and no man living (next my Lord the Emperour) that may command me more then your Highnesse. Among other speeches, the King brake the matter of his Daughters marriage to Palmerin, desiring him to labour in the cause to Trineus, which he promised, but all in vaine: for after they had taken their leave to returne towards Allmaine, though Palmerin was earnest in the matter, in respect of the Beauty and Noblenesse of the Princess, as for the support he might have by matching with the Daughter of France, yet Trineus thus answered. I thank you my Lord, for the good you wish me, as also the honour the King affords me: but another beyond her (whose renown hath conquered me) is Lady and Mistress of my affections. And because you are he from whom I will not hide or conceale my most secret thoughts, know that it is *Agriola*, Daughter to the King of England, to whom though my Father be an enemy, yet by your aid, and mine owne good endeavours, I doe not doubt to compass my true Love: know my Lord (quoth Palmerin) that I wish as well to you, as mine owne heart, and when occasion serves, trill shall make manifest. And seeing you have fixed your love on faire *Agriola* of England, in parting likewise the same so confidently to me: I am perswaded you could never make a better choyse, therefore let nothing change your opinion.

Thus

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

Thus rode they on with many sundry speeches, not a little glad they were returning to the Emperour, but Palmerin, much more then was Trineus, for the great desire he had to see his Lady Polinarda: wherefore with the consent of the Prince, he sent a Squire before to advertize the Emperour of their coming: Before whom he had no sooner done reverence, but he was presently knowne, and demanded in what estate his Sonne Trineus and Palmerin were, where he had left them, and what accidents there happened in France: When the Squire rehearsed the Combats and victories of his Master against the Knights of France, and the Dukes of Gaule and Savoy, and their royall entertainment by the King and his Son, how many portraits of Ladies Palmerin had conquered, with the whole circumstance of every action. Whereof the Emperour, the Emperesse, and all the Lords and Ladies were marvellous glad, yet was not their joy comparable to the Princesse Polinardaes, hearing the Squire reheale the honourable words of her Love: so that her conceit might be discerned by her countenance, and words must she thus demand of the Squire. I pray thee tell me my Friend, how fares my Lord & Brother, with his noble Companion Sir Palmerin? The Squire well advised, because he knew the Love between her and his Master, set his knee to the ground againe, with this answer.

I left the Prince your Brother, accompanied with my Lord Palmerin, well and in good health: but chiefling my Lord, who since you saw him, hath wonne the greatest honour that ever knight did, Afterward he reported the manner of the Combats to her, and what griefe his Master sustained in his Achies, when he could not be revenged on the knight that lost her Countersell, which the Duke of Savoy placed at the seat of Lucemania: and last of all, the perillous Combat between his Master, and the Knight of the Sunne. Which she took such delight to hear, as she made him repeat one thing many times, and could not satisfie herselfe sufficiently

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

ciently with these worthy reports. Which the Squire perceiving, delighted as much to iterate every thing, and said, Believe me Madame, the Love my Master beares to her, whose Beauty he entered the Combat, in my opinion is incredible: For he is more hers then his owne, and I have seen him in such a pensive sort thinking on her, as one could hardly judge whether he were alive or dead: fearing least any other should rob him of his Love: such is the jealousy of his unpotted affection, albeit my Master repukes his Lady unmovable. Polinarda changing countenance oftentimes at the Squires words, answered. The Lady should be very ill counselled, being benoored with the Love of so good a knight as Palmerin, to make refusal of his worthy service: and I promise thee, by the Faith of a Princesse, that if I knew her, for the unwillingness I have to heare him so complain, I would endeavour to cause her like none but him, and therein to thinke her selfe the most happy among Ladies. Wherefore (if thou mayst be so bold) tell thy Master at his returne, and I will be a meane to aide him towards her he Loves: and therewithall, present him my favourable Salutations, in that I evermore desired the fortunate success of his Enterprize: not so much for the liking of his Lady, being beloved of the best, as for the renowned Chivalry that harbours in his heart. These speeches ended, the Squire returned to meet the Prince Trineus and his Master, to whom he reported his talke with Polinarda: which Palmerin rejoycing at, let fall Jealousie, esteeming her now the truest Lady living. The men of Gaunt, for joy of his returne, that so worthily had delivered them from the oppressions of the Enchaunted Knight, went forth in severall companies, accompanying as honour, reares, and office directed them, to meet him, and so conveyed him with signes of joy to the Wallace, where the Emperour so much abased himselfe, as he came downe into the open Court to entertaine him, and glad likewise, to see the safe returne of his Sonne Trineus, saying. My Sonne,

right

The History of Palmerin D'Oliua,

right happy is thy returne: and you Sir Palmerin, perswade your selfe so welcome as heart can devise, assuring you that your successe hath not a little pleased me. And needs must I account that Lady especially bounden unto you, for whose sake you have past so many dangerous Combats, good reason hath she to love you, in respect of your Trauels for her, rendering her so much by your knightly chivalry, so that if she make you not recompence according to your merits, woe, this may she be condemned of Ingratitude. Alas my Lord (quoth he) her Beauty commandeth higher matters than all my Labours. Polinarda being in presence, remembered well her fathers words, and therefore she intended to shun that condemnation, saying to her selfe, He that is inneth honour, ought to weare it. And he that commandeth the soule, may easily over-rule the Passions of the minde: Let my Knight then be rewarded as he hath rightly deserved.

All this while, the Eyes of these two Lovers so well discharged their office, as Palmerin wished that Iuno had granted him so much, as she did sometime to Argus her Shepherd, that he might have more ease in his affliction: for he thought it not enough, onely to behold the Beauty of so rare and excellent perfection. Again, he was not a little sorrowed, because Polinarda (to cover what she would gladly none should discern) cast her looks on the ground, which sometimes she likewise compelled him to do: but her presence whom he esteemed above all other earthly things, would not allow him that consideration. The Emperour at length commanded, that all the Figures of the Ladies which he had wonne in Combat, should be brought before him: but when he saw so many, and of so contrary qualities, he could not but commend my Palmerins victory. When were others judgments given of the beauties of the Portraits, each one of the beholders after their severall opinions. Proleme made description of whom they were, and who did enter combat on their behalves, omitting at no time the honour of Palmerin:

Wherent

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

Wherent they all admired: some of them commending their Complexions, others, their sweet young yeares, and all together the valour and prowess of him that brought the conquest with him, whereupon the Emperour said, In good faith Sir Palmerin, I blesse the time that fortune sent me so good a knight, and thinke not to carry away all the glory of your victory your selfe, for I meane to have part, because you gave your selfe mine. And would the Lady you love were in this Court, or in my Empire, to the end that I might so assist you in your State, as ye might be both mine. My Lord (quoth Palmerin) the victory is wholly yours, being gotten by your Knight, and if the Lady I love were not under your Regiment, then should I complaine of a greater matter then abiding with you, being obedient to your Highnes, as your humble Subject and Servant. With which answer the Emperour seemed highly contented: and Trineus coming to his Sister Polinarda, said:

Trust me faire Sister, you are more indebted to Palmerin, then to any other Knight in the world beleeve, and rather accept of him, then of the Duke of Lorrayne, who maintaining your Beauty, was overcome by the Duke of Savoy, and your picture placed at the Gate of Lucemania, where yet it had remained, but that Palmerin Conquering the Duke, removed the figure of the French Princess in obedience to you. Polinarda not content with the indiscreet enterprise of the Duke of Lorrayne, answered. In sooth good brother the Duke of Lorrayne is none of my Knight, and I repute Palmerin, to have more Bounty and valour than the Duke can have of wit or courage: therefore great marvel that he was not slain. The Emperour hearing Polinarda was offended with the Duke of Lorrayne, answered, you cannot (Daughter) forbid men to execute their owne pleasure, and if the Duke liked to enter the Combat for your Beauty, it was for the honourable good will he bare you, and albeit he could not reach his desire, yet have you no cause to thinke the
woes

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

woyde of him. Polinarda being a Princeſſe of ſo rare a wit and iudgement, as any of her time, woulde multiply no more woys, but continued ſilent: Wherehelſſe, Palmerin remembering the answer he made to Trincus, intreated her to keep all the Portraits of all the Ladies, determining to ſend them to whom they belonged, according to their degrees in Worth and honour. Which ſhe thankfullly accepted, and ſpending this whole day in diuers delights, Palmerin being in the Evening in his Chamber, accompanied with Prologmic, ſent his Dwarf to the Princeſſe, to appoynt the time of their next meeting: and ſhe ſeeing the Dwarf, caught him about the necke, demanding of him what newes he had brought her?

None but good, Madame (answered the Dwarf) my Maſter hath ſent you the Bon-ſoir, and therewithall, his humble duty to your Hig hneſſe: ſo, being your Knight, and liuing onely to do you ſervice: he hath good hope that your vertuous Nature will not forget, how many dangers he hath paſt for your ſake: and now both lone appeale for his deſired reward.

Wherefore (good Madame,) as you are heart ſaſt, vnto your ſelfes hand-ſaſt, give my Maſter liſe, your ſelfe comſort, and make me happy, by carrying of this meſſage: ſo, I ſee by the reverend ſaith I heare you both, that I will not depart without ſome gracious answer.

Polinarda ſmiling to heare Urbanillo ſpeake ſo earneſtly, ſaid. The aſſurance thou gibeſt me of thy truſty affection thou beareſt my Maſter, both not a little content me: and pittie it were ſo good a Knight ſhould labour all this while in vaine: Wherefore perſwade thy Maſter, that to morrow at night I will meet him where he ſhall be wont, and there will I reſolve him to his owne content.

CHAP. XLII.

Emperour of *Conſtantinople*. PART, I.

CHAP. XLIII.

How *Palmerin* went in the Night to the appointed place, to conferre with his Lady *Polinarda*, and the amorous communication they had together.



Urbanillo with cheerefull countenance returned to his Maſter, declaring to him his talke with Polinarda, her ſweet looks, her gracious answers, how choiſely ſhe loved him, and laſtly her promiſe to meet him in the accuſtomed place: yet is not this all, ſo before you depart with her, ſhe hath aſſured me to reſolve you to your owne content. And that is it I want (qu. he) ſo might I once receive my content then ſhould I thinke my troubles rewarded. And doubt you not thereof ſaid the Dwarf, if ſhe be a woman of her word. Then Prologmic being preſent, asked the Dwarf, if he ſaw Bryonella. He in ſooth (qu. he) ſhe was not in the Princeſſes Chamber, nor (to my knowledge) was ſhe acquainted with my coming, yet dare I thinke ſhe will be there with my Lady. The time being come, the Ladies were at the place with devotion, answerable to thoſe ſilent houres, and their Knights not ſaying their appointment, what pleasure on each ſide was conceived, is not to be enquired, ſo all things are nothing in reſpect of their contentments. Polinarda having her friendly Knight before her, ſo ſweet a bluſh eclipsed her Countenance, as would bluſh Nature into a ſtudy to frame the like, and thus ſhe began. Alas my ſweet friend, in what paine, anguiſh, and heavineſſe of heart, hath your abſence brought me: What teares have fallen from mine eyes, and drops of blood from my heart, by renting ſighes and ceaſeleſſe acclamations, remembering our pleasures paſt, and preſent comſort, and the hope of better happie

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

hap to come? What dolorous conceits hath often wounded me, thinking on so many hazards and perils as might hinder me from seeing you againe: and not without a cause belie me, for had you miscarried, never Lady sustained such a losse, in respect of your knightly valour, and the unfayned labo I beate you, wherof (before you depart) I meane assuredly to resolve you, in requitall of your honourable trabels for maintenance of my Beauty. And herof perswade your selfe good knight, that to have you, I refuse all other good fortunes whatsoever: and therefore I care not though it were openly known, how especially I prize you: be true, love, and esteeme you. Palmerin confounded with this long expected comfort, and not able to endure with silence, interrupted her in this manner. By the swith of your sweete servant, sweete Adamar, the perils, mishaps, and dangers I have past since my departure, never deserved the very least of your complaints, nor could my endeavour prove such, as your incomparable perfections merited, the onely remembrance wherof, was sufficient to make me insupportable: wherfore sweete Mistresse, if I have wonne any honour, your labour was the meane, and your beauty gave me the vertue, streaming so plentifully from your chaste eyes, as the water from the fountaine. To little purpose were it now to rehearse, the strange assaults, murthering thoughts, and violent flames, wherein I have burned and continually bene crucified, since the houre it pleased you to let me see France: undoubtedly the very meane of my sufferings was able to destroy me, without the resolute assurance of your divine favour, which triumphing over death, shall make me live continually. So that the desire to let you know how assuredly I am yours, and the continuall wishing to see you againe, gave me victory over your enemies, and brought me safe thow all extremities, to honour you as I doe at this present. It now remaines Adamar, that you regard the truth of my love, the permanence thereof, and the

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART, I.

the instant passions whiche then death to me, yet with this proviso, that I presume not of any action meritorious but your grace, which is able to strengthen me in greatest debility. And we where know I to seek for pittie and support of my cares, if not onely by her who hath the soveraigne power to chase hence the cruell and ever threatening menaces of death. For beare good Lord, quoth she, thus to talk of death, considering I cannot live one houre without you, to enjoy you: so that lost of my life, but only in loving you, to enjoy you: so that what you endure, I suffer, and no passion torments you, but I have a share therein, so devoutly is my spirit comforted with yours. And therefore think not your affections greater then mine, so if you doe, it proceedeth by want of experience of feminine passions, the extremity wherof saire sarmon, seth your sexe.

For which cause to give some rest to our long and ever trabelled desires, I give you here my hand, and therewithall a chaste heart, accepting you onely for my Lord and husband, and to my promise call heaven and earth to witnes. Where is the wit so baint, the tongue so flourishing, or the pen so diligent, as can conceive, report, or set downe in perfect colours, the joys of these Lovers? O how saire Lordings, and you likewise sweete Ladies, that long have trabelled in amorous affections, and in the end received the reward of your passions, by your owne conceits can imagine the content of these twaine: for Palmerin was of this opinion, that Iupiter had not the like pleasure with sayre Alcmena, for whom he caused one night to endure the space of thre dayes, as he had with his gracious Mistresse Polinarda. For now the manifold thanks he gave for beauty, were here remembered, his dangerous trabels in all places recounted, his absence with kinde gratulations welcomed, and his teares, sighs, complaints, and feares resolved, and lastly, his long, unchangeable and most faithfull love, friendly rewarded. Let us not here forget, that Ptolome and

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

Brionella was in the same predicament, for he knowing her to be of the noble and ancient ligne, beside, sole heir to the house of Saxon, might count himselfe highly honoured with such a wife: and therefore the like consanctiō was made betwene them, so that now these knights and Ladies were espoused before God, there wanted nothing but the ceremony of the Church to confirme it. But now comes Vibanillo, and he breaks off this pleasure, because the time was so farre spent, as they must needs depart: which with much ado they did, leaving their Ladies examining their content, the Prince came some after, thus conferring with Brionella. *Alas sayes friend*, it is doubtfull what danger may arise, because you have contracted your selfe to Prolome without the Emperours consent: how will you answer when you are charged with the fault? Brionella who feared nothing but the pteuenting of her love, answered. *In sooth Madame*, you speak with great reason, you now give counsell when the deed is done, and cannot be reboked till it be dispatched: would you have all the good fortune your selfe, and suffer your friend to enjoy no part with you? trust me that is unconscionable dealing, for he that made you to love, framed me to the selfe same mettall.

But I see you make the occasion to me, to learne how to answer your owne deed: let us referre all to him *Madame*, that appoynted your choyse by destiny, and mine by mine owne liking. Many other pleasant speeches passed betwene them, and others times their knights came to visit them, till fortune who will never suffer things long in one estate, sent an occasion to hinder this delight of their love, for there was a messenger come to the Court from the King of Norway, nephew to the Emperour, who being admitted audience, thus delivered his message. *Most my Lord*, the King of Norway my Master, requires your assistance in his great distresse, against the King of England, who with a mighty and puissant Army is entred his

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 1.

his Dominions, where he hath made great wast and slaughter of his people in divers skirmishes and combats passed betwene them, so that he never had like need as at this instant. Trust me (saith the Emperour) I will assist him with right good will, and his misfortune hath not a little grieved me, but I will take order for it immediately, and my power shall be with him so soon as possible may be: with which answer the messenger departed. Now as concerning the cause of these warres, betwene the warres of Norway and England, it was procured by displeasure of succour that the King of Norway gave to the King of Scots his brother, who held warre with England, about the taking of certaine ships: the Emperour likewise his heavy enemy, and so that cause he promised helps so soon to the King his nephew. Which when Trineus understood, that his father declared himselfe displeased with the father of his beloved Agriola, (whose Love no occasion could alter) he was greatly discontented, yet dissembling his conceit, determined rather to ayde the King of England, then his Cousin, and therefore intreated Palmerin to accompany him to his Chamber, where he would acquaint him with some part of the sorrow he conceived, by the succour his father would send to the King of Norway, against her father whose servant he had named himselfe, and therefore (saith he) let me desire you to conceale a request I shall make to you.

You know my Lord, (saith Palmerin,) that I will obeye you then the Emperour your father, command therefore what you please, and be it in my power, it shall be executed. So it is, saith Trineus, that I would have you not accompany the power my father sends by Sea, but do so much for me, that you, Prolome and my selfe (unknown to any) may assist the King of England in his warres, by which meanes I doubt not to compass the thing I most of all desire. And this I dare tell you, that my life is onely dedicated to her service, and so well doe I hope to employ my

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

paine, that she shall haue cause to loue me, and regard the paine I suffer for her sake: but I gaine the fortune to purchase my loue, right soone and sudden shall you heare of my death. You that haue felt the like torments can censure of mine, which I dare not impart to the Emperour my Father, because of the hatred he beares the King of England: aduise me therefore good friend what I shall do.

These speeches were nothing pleasing to Palmerin, seeing he must now againe depart from his Lady: but because he earnestly affected Trineus, and knew how well he might helpe him in his loue, answered. Assure your selfe my Lord, that I will labour diligently for your good, and shall assist you to my uttermost, in that you beare such loue to the Princess. And I am of the opinion: that hauing receiued the order of knighthood, which the Emperour your Father will not denie, it would auaille you much, to tell your Father how you desire (vnmoued) to aid the King of Norway.

For my part, if he demand my aduise, I will like it so well, as because the Army cannot be ready so soone, your honour, Ptolome, and my selfe, will ride before towards the King, and so may we accomplish what we so earnestly desire. This counsell pleased so well Trineus, as he intended on the morrow to request his order of the Emperour: as also how gladly he would assist the King of Norway, and how necessary it was for him to goe before the Army, as Palmerin and he had devised together.

CHAP. XLIIII.

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

CHAP. XLIIII.

How *Trineus* was Knighted, and what hapned to him afterward.



At the morrow this young Prince seeing that to accomplish his intent, it was necessary he should be knighted, he gaue attendance to find the Emperour at leisure, when he might sollicite his Highnes with his sute: and vnderstanding that he was walking in his gallery, he went to him, and on his knee thus began. Dear Lord and Father, so please your Majesty, it is now time I should receiue my order of knighthood, and more necessary now then at any other time, in respect of my earnest desire to aid the King of Norway my cozyn in his wars. The Emperour maruelling whence this humour should proceed, answered. Why, Trineus do you thinke your selfe able to take so weighty a charge in hand: truly such honour is soon receiued, but to maintaine it as it ought to be, and prevent the dangers incident thereto, is more hard then you thinke, and maketh proofe of the most courageous stomach, in that neither paine, feare or danger must hinder, what matter of so great consequence both command. And perswade your selfe, that such as counselled you thereto, know scant themselves their duty in those affaires, wherefore for a time haue patience, and deferre it till better ability: for I will send good store of other Knights in this expedition, who shall well excuse you to the King my nephew.

Trineus not contented with this answer, replied. In truth my Lord, if I were not desirous to fulfill what is required in chivalry, I would not so boldly haue made this demand, there.

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

therefore for such exceptions as you admitteth, let me not I beseech you be deterred at this time : and let this induce you, that such as are bound to governe Kingdomes, if they give themselves onely to pleasure, without passing through the pikes of some dangerous hazard, they are not worthy to be lifted to such Honour. The Emperour hearing the brave minde of his Sonne, and that his words favoured of courage, conceiving well thereof, answered : Since your desire is so earnest to be made Knight, I am well contented, but I would have it done honourably, and before a greater assembly then now is in our Court. Alas my Lord, said Trincus, there is no need of Triumph before Victory : let such pompe remaine I pray you, till I have wonne honour and account for my deeds. The Emperour full of the Princes words, pnten, perswaded himselfe he should prove fortunate, wherefore he granted his request, so that Palmerin might accompany him in his voyage. Of which condition Trincus was not sorry, because in him consisted all his hope of successe : So his Father commanded him to prepare himselfe for his voyage, whereupon Trincus made himselfe a costly Armour, and another for Palmerin, the devises being changed, because they intended to passe unknowne. Now had the Emperour leaved an Army of tenne thousand good souldiers, the conduct whereof was appointed to the Count Tolano, a Knight valiant and hardy, having had like charge in sundry occasions of Warre : therefore so soon as all things were in readinesse, they were imbarcked, and sayled with such benefit of winde and weather, as soon after they took landing in England. Where a while we will leave returning to Polinarda, greatly discontent with her Wothers departure, because of Palmerin, and Brionella no lesse troubled for her friend Ptolome : but the Princesse feeling new afflictions for the absence of her Love, came to her Mother, saying : I know not (Mother) who hath advised you to venture so dangerously, our Cousin having assistance sufficient

ent

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

ent without hazarding your person, let me then intreat you (good Mother) to affect occasions that promise better security. Better occasions Sister (quoth he ?) it is impossible, if it be a thing allowable and vertuous to succour a stranger, how much more then is it to our owne Kinsman, especially, such a one as is our Cousin of Norway; therefore I pray you be of good comfort till my returne. And if it so happen that my Father in my absence intend your Marriage, looke that you consent not till I come home againe : for my not being here will serve you for a sufficient excuse. Which Polinarda promised : and her word so past, stood her in no small stead afterward, as you shall see in the discourse following.

So soon as Trincus was provided of all things fit for his Knighthood, he came to the Emperour in this manner. I beseech you (my Lord) to accomplish your promise, having done my duty as you commanded me. With right good will my Sonne, said the Emperour, see arme your selfe. Then went he, Palmerin, and Ptolome, Armed to the Chappell, Trincus bring in graine Armour, figured all over with hearts of Gold, and in his shield was portrayed a Knight unarmed, holding in his hand a Bow bent, with an Arrow ready to shoot against a great Tree, which he had hung a Scrolle, which had written in it in Letters of Gold, this Poeme : Madame, quand Mourray-je ? Whereby he meant, that the Love that made him enterpris this Voyage, should beare him company till death. Palmerins Armour was all black, declaring his mourning for his absence from his Lady, and in his shield for his Devise, was figured a goodly Eagle, holding a little Bird under his wings : declaring thereby the favour he had received of his Mistress. Soon after came the Emperour to the Chappell, where he knighted his Sonne, put his Spurre on his heele, and gave him his Sword about him : Afterward they went to Dinner, and spent the whole day in many pleasures, for joy of this new Knight. Palmerin and Ptolome to comfort their Ladies before their

depart

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*,

Departure according as they were wont, when the *Princesse Polinarda* thus began. Alas my Lord, what griefe will your departure be to me: with what patience doe you thinke I am able to endure it? perfwade your selfe, the very conceit of your absence will be my death, or at least a cure of such danger as I shall never recover. We well advised therefore how you dealt with me, for the intent of my Brother might be broken, if you would labour in it: but if it may not be, then save my life by your speedy returne. These wordes were belabored with such teares and reking sighes, as *Palmerin* might well perceiue the vehemency of her griefes, and answering her beuinitie with as earnest opprobriation, said: Sweete Lady be perswaded, and temper your sorrow with patience, considering the vnion of our spirits makes a sympathy of Afflictions: If then for my sake you will not pacifie your selfe, yet to shield your owne perill, let me intreate you to be resolute, in that my returne shall be with such expedition as you will command. But if you continue thus in Melancholy, you will too soone betwix what as yet should be concealed, and so may great harme ensue to vs both. Wherefore I desire you to moderate your impatience, and to thinke well of my departure, which is chiefly to sake out a knight, against whom I haue fought in France for your Beauty: as for any other matter you may belieue me.

Whereupon he reported his Combat with the knight of the Sunne, which made the *Princesse* (as well for *Palmerins* promise, as the account he made of Frysol) somewhat better quieted to answer. If it be so my Lord, that your returne will be with such speed, I shall then enforce my selfe to beare the burthen of my Cares with as much patience as I can, and so you shall not your appointed time: but tell me I pray you, what Armes beares the knight of the Sunne, you speak of: which *Palmerin* describing, *Polinarda* remembered him, saying: My Lord, I know now very well what he is. For eight dayes after your departure towards France,

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

France, the Emperour my Father knighted him, commanding me to goe with him, which I could not but obey: wherein the knight glozing, solicited me with assurances not liking me, which I pray you reuenge, being the man whom the matter more concerneth. After many other admirable conferences, the knights humbly took their leave of their Ladies, and in the morning betimes, the Partners called on *Trincus* and his company to haste abroad, because the winde serued well for England, which they performed with all speed, hauing first taken their farewell of the Emperour and the Court. So hoysing saile, they set on to Sea, and in good time came within the hearing of England: where we will for a while, and returne to the Emperours Army, which he sent to the King of Norway his Nephew.

CHAP. XLV.

How the Army of the Emperour of *Allmaigne* arrived in England under the conduct of the Count *Tolano*: and how they were discomfited.

Remembered it hath been already, how the Emperour of *Allmaigne*, promised the messenger of Norway, to send him Master the Marke of some thousand men at Armes, of whom the Count *Tolano* was made Generall, and they arrived in England, without any resistance. The Count understanding by his Avant-coureurs, the Order of the Enemys Army, and where the King of Norway was Encamped, ranged his men in good order, and marched toward their Host, which the King had made in the Duchy of Gaule, and which he had destroyed during the time the Duke was in France, hauing there fortified the Strongest City

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*,

City, and the Women that stood stiffest for their country. Crenus at his returne with Fryfol, as you have heard, understanding the spoyle of his Countrey, assembled his people together, and with the aid of the King of England, came within a dayes journey from his Enemies. The Count Tolano, hearing thereof, appointed his men in severall companies, and the next day he gave such sharp skirmishes to the Gauls, as they were constrained to keepe within their defence. Whereupon the Duke determined to bid them Battell, and to helpe him in his attempt, he caused an Ambush of a thousand Light Horsemen, to place themselves in a Forrest nere adjoining, of which company Fryfol was the Leader: and to provoke the Norwegians to the field, he sent out certaine men at Armes well provided, who scowled here and there, to the end the Allmaignes, who had bene so hot the day before, should be compassed with the secret ambush, which fell out according to Crenus his expectation. For as soon as the Allmaignes saw the Englishmen so scattered, they disadged themselves, and followed them, with the whole Army of the King of Norway, because they were persuaded that they betwixt themselves to fight: but the Gauls not discouraged with their coming, being but foure thousand Horsemen, and tenne thousand footmen, came valiantly against the Allmaignes Chargers, and then began a very fierce Encounter, but the Englishmen wise and politique, fearing misfortune, came on with their regard towards the Forrest where the Ambush lay. When the King of Norway ignorant of their intent, suddenly made after them with the greatest part of his Power, but they had a worse welcome then they expected, for the Englishmen advertised what they should doe, gathered upon the Forrest side, charging their Enemies with such a sharpe Assault, as in lesse space then an houre, two thousand of them were slaine. Fryfol perceiving that the time was come to show himselfe, calling his Squadron together, cryed: Upon them valiantly my Friends,

the

Emperour of *Constantinople*: PART. I.

the spoyle is ours. So they entred pell-mell among the Allmaignes, making such slaughter of them, as was wonderfull to behold: for albeit they thought not of this deceit, they were so over-wearied with balliance, as when they came to the exploit they could doe nothing, but were slaine downeright. Such valour shewed Fryfol, and his fresh supply, forcing them to flight, and they following them, being glad to take the City of Tomar, which was strongly fortified. Which when the King of Norway perceived, he stayed not long after them, because he saw it was not best for him, and therefore fled after them for company at the hard heels, and got the City in good time, or else they had all perished. Thus remained Crenus Master of the field, and following his success, the next day begg'd the City of Tomar with Siege, swearing never to depart from thence, till he saw the Citizens either through the Gates or the Walles. Yet had this courage of his born soon cooled, if Fryfol (like a good Captaine) had not chastised by his men, when Crenus at one Rally of the enemy lost two thousand men, and therefore said. Whye how now my loving Friends and Companions? Will you dye or faint at the home of good Fortune? desire you not to purchase the vertue so highly esteemed? know you not that you deale with people halfe conquered, and altogether discouraged? Courage then my Brethren, courage, and let us not exchange our Reputation with their feare and fainting: you give me double strength good Friends, if but with your good countenance you will make them know what cowardly crabbons they are. Follow me (ye brave Englishmen) and this very day will we give them punishment, as their Treason and Rebellion hath well deserved. These words renewed each others courage marvellously, so that the Duke with a fresh supply beganne againe thus to animate them. You know my good Friends, that although we are but a handful in respect of them, what success we have already had in these our encounters, so that with greater ease may we now con-

con-

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

Conquer, weakening them so mightily as we have done: Let us not dismay then, but witness that the worst man amongst us, is more valiant and hardy in Armes, then the greatest Lord that is in their Company, each man therefore cherishing his hope, and beards our Enemies to their very teeth. The day following our Camrads came forth at the Porterne. Gate, & beheld the Dukes power very good play, and the Norways being very well appointed with Bows and Arrows, gauged the Host so cruelly, as they were glad to take their Campe: Whereupon the Count Tolano in hope of the day, followed upon them with his Allmaigne Courtlances, which Fryfol perceiving, met him in the face with his English Squadron, and giving the spurs to his Horse, ran with his Lance quite through his booz: Whereat the Allmaignes much amazed, when they saw their Generall fall dead from his Horse, determined ballantly to revenge his death, but Fryfol and his men dealt with them so roundly, as the Countess of them were glad and faine to make them way.

Yet had they heard in Fryfol, with such a troupe, as if the Duke had not speedily come with rescue, they had taken him: and then beganne the sharpest bickering: For the Duke of Gaule and Fryfol with their men, so bestirred them, as the Allmaignes cleane discouraged, beganne to disorder themselves, and with the Norways fled to the Citty, so fast as they could, where Fryfol and his men had entred, but that the King of Norway not daring to come into the field, was there with men sufficient to resist his entry. Thus remained the victory of the Duke of Gaule, by the brave policies of Fryfol and his men, he being generally commended of the whole Army: and thus retired the Allmaignes and Norways, to their shame and dishonour. After the Retreat sounded by the King of Norway, he sent to the Duke to demand tunc for foure and twenty houres, to the end they might bury the dead, among whom was the Count Tolano: which being granted him, he caused the Counts body to be embalmed:

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

was by the Counsell of his Lezds and Captaines, was sent home into his Countie. The King and his Company secretly in the night embarked themselves, to joyne with the King of Scots, who expected his coming, and then did the Cittizens send word to the Duke, that by the breake of day they would yield up the keyes of their Gates to him: whereupon Fryfol was Lieutenant Generall for the Duke of Gaule, and entered honourably the Citty of Temar, where the Englishmen refreshed themselves for two or three daies, to recompence their paines with profit and pleasure. The Enemy was no sooner departed under Bayle, but there arose such a terrible Tempest, as the most part of their Shippes perished in the Sea, and the other were so scattered, as they had lost the sight of one another: yet was some small number remaining with the King, as well of Allmaignes, as of his owne Countrey men: So getting safe to shore in his Kingdome, he determined a revenge for his great overthrow, but he could not compass his intent, as you shall read hereafter.

CHAP. XLVI.

How after the Prince *Trineus*, *Palmerin*, and *Ptolome*, were arrived in *England* they went to the Court, and what torments the Prince endured for his Love to the faire Lady *Agriola*.



Prineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome, being landed within foure dayes journey of the Kings Campe, which was prohibited against the King of Scots, were advertised that the King feared but the coming of the Duke of Trier, and then he went to bid the enemy Battell, for that he had boldly presumed upon part of his Realme. The Orders of the Host where they Lanted, being

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

ing they were strangers, would suffer them passe no farther, till they knew their Names, whither they went, and what they came for: Palmerin answering on the behalfe of them all, said:

Good friends, we are Grecian Knights and travel strange Countreys to seeke adventures: and because we heard that your King menaceth warre against his ancient and malevolent enemy, the King of Scots, we came to offer our selves and our service to him, so please his Majesty to accept it. This answer so well contented the Officers, as by their meanes they were conducted to the Court, where they were honourably entertained, and two dayes together were there feasted with the King: In which time Trincus understood, that the Queen and her fayre Daughter, were above twenty miles thence: Whereupon, the next morning they took their Journey thither, and by dinner time they came where then the Queen lay. But it fell out so happily for Trincus, as before they came to the place where the Court abode, they met the Queen and her traine, who daily went to a chappell, not a quarter of a mile from the City, to heare diuine service, as she kept it for a continuall exercise, and with her was the faire Agriola her Daughter. The Queen & all her Ladies allighted from off their Horses, they entered the Chappell, the Prince well regarding the Combesse of his heart, who belike making her prayers more busie then her Mother, came slowly with her waiting Ladies, to walk vnder a company of greene Trees nere adjoining. Trincus seeing her a Creature, so rare and excellent, made doubt in a matter of assurance, least he should be surprized as Acteon was, when he found Diana bathing among the *Almpps*. He being thus carried away with a marvellous concept of her Beauty, saluted not the Princesse as she passed before him, nor heard Palmerin, who reproved him for omitting his civillitie: but wading further and further into this Amorous surry, spake so lowd, as he was easily heard in this manner:

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

O heauens, will you suffer the persecutions of a Lady so diuinely accomplished, to be the cause of my undescribed death? when may the time come for me, to let her understand my desire to do her service? or how might she know the loyall affection I beare her? One of the Ladies of honor attending on the Princesse, reputing his words vnwise and over-bold, answered. Why Sir Knight, where learned you so little courtship, as when she saileth in the Westerne world passeth before you, you make no gentle gesture or salutation? I doubt not what is counted honesty and vertue among men of quality, with you is esteemed harsh and vnwill, which makes me repute you more mete for the Ditcher, then to beare the honourable office and Armes of a Knight, as you are. Trincus as it were awaked out of a trance, said. Ah sweet Lady pardon me, for by my faith, I can neither tell what you said, nor well where I am my self: for even as you ended, I felt such a passion strike me to the very heart, as death will soon arrest me without remedy. The Lady who knew not his meaning, checked him againe, thus.

Where is it not better then for you to be in the field, then here in this foolish and vndiscreet posturess? It is true Lady, (quoth the Prince) that at this time I haue shewed my selfe vnmanly, and a slender Courtier, yet is not the blame altogether to be thowen on me, ignorant who the Lady was which you speake of: for we are strange Knights, and are some farre from this Countrey, with intent to ayde and succour the King in his warres, with our bittermost endeouours. Notwithstanding, because we haue with us no more regard vnto our duty to your Majesty, may it please you to entreat her on our behalfe, to pardon this offence: for satisfaction whereof, we will go serue the King her Father in battell. Where we doubt not so well to behaue our selves, as will deserve our pardon, if so be she will not at this instant so fauour vs. And I gladly would, faire Lady, that such service should be done by her commandement, for our

D

Strength

strength and vertue by her affections augmented, will attribute the honour to her that so graciously assisted us, wherefore so please you to make knowne our good intent towards her, we shall for such kinde remaine indebted to you. The Lady took pleasure in hearing Trineus, especially perceiving the zeale of him and his companions to imploy their valour on the Kings behalfe, which caused her immediately doe this message to the Princesse, who at that instant (as a thing fall to her) was wounded with love: whereupon she sent them answer by her Governesse, that she entertained them as her Knights, and as her servants desired them to go aide the King her Father, yet would she not consent to pardon them, till the remoune of their exploits might owe them to deserve it. Trineus took this answer for better advantage then the Princesse thought on, accounting himselfe happy by such a good beginning. And therefore said to the Lady, I thinke my selfe (saye Lady) one of the most favoured by fortune, having the means to obey your Spiesse in her command, and hope to execute her charge in such sort, as I shall deserve the grace she doth now deny me, yet with all humbly on our behalfe, I intreate you, to receiue thanks for her Princely kinde.

The Lady returning to Agriola, accomplished what Trineus desired her, whereupon she turned herselfe, and gave them a countenance of fauour, which was answered by Trineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome, with very great reuerence, and the Princesse, (showing herselfe not too stately towards the Knights) with her hand and gesture gave a signe of her content, which was not a little welcome to Trineus. When the Queen comming forth of the Chappell, with Agriola and her traine, mounted on horseback, taking their way to the Court againe: but when Trineus had lost the sight of them, wonderfull braylons began to assault him, so that he said to Palmerin, Ah, my good friend, how happy may that man account himselfe, whose fortune honours him with the bea-

tie of Agriola? Ah Palmerin, I sale my selfe so exceedingly torment, as I doubt my death will be inevitable. What tell me the truth and dissemble not, how thinke you of my Spiesse? Is she not a Lady more then diuing? In good faith my Lord, said Palmerin, what the Knight in France told us, was fables, in that she excelseth report beyond all opinion: notwithstanding, it was necessary for you to nourish hope, having thus spoken to her, and bewayed your afflictions, not doubting but this good beginning of your enterprisse shall cause the end to fall out to your content.

So rode on these three Knights, pleasing their humours with their severall judgements of their Ladies, yet Palmerin had seen such matter in English Agriola, as, but his plighted promise to Polinarda, was of force sufficient to change his fancy. The next day they arrived at the King of Englands campe, where, because they would not be knowne, they pitched their Tents beyond all the other: and soon after came the Duke of Tintriell, bringing with him a number of hardy men at Armes, so that in short time the Kings strength was such, as they exceeded their enemies in number. Whereupon the King assembled his Councell, and concluded, that the next day they would go seek out the King of Scors, who in two encounters had the upper hand, which made him so peremptory, as he perswaded himselfe utterly to confound the King of England: who rayling his power, followed so diligently, as the third day after he encamped within halfe a mile of his enemy, that had besieged the Towne of Corfania, and had brought it ready to yield, but that the King prevented it by the strength he brought.

CHAP. XLVII.

Of the cruell battell betweene the King of *England*, and the King of *Scots*,



When the King of Scots understood the coming of the King of England, and that in all haste he would bid him battle, he would no longer tulle himselfe in besieging *Corfania*, but retired a little for his better advantage, conferring with his Captains about their present affairs concluding to offer the enemy no skirmishes, because thereby they would know their intent: notwithstanding he gave order to prepare for battell, because he knew the King of England came for no other purpose.

The Englishmen not suffering the Scots to have any leisure to fortifie themselves, were by the King the next morning commanded in array, and all wings and squadrons appointed: The Duke of *Tintriell* was made leader of the vanguard, wherein likewise were *Trincus*, *Palmerin*, and *Ptolome*: and to the Duke *Bzother* was committed the charge of the reargard: and being all ready to march on, the King himselfe began this oration. I thinke my friends. That no one of you, but sufficiently is acquainted in what respect we continue this warre, namely, to defend the honour and reputation of our Realme, and to save the liues of you, your wives and children: and your goods, which the enemy would violently spoyl and take from you, intending to thysse perpetuall bondage and slavery on your necks. Will you not then defend your liberties: Will you not maintaine your ancient renowne, which is to be Lordes and commanders of the Scots? assure your selves, that

that how strong soener the enemy be, I hope with the ayd of God, your vnbattered courages, and the right of our cause, to make a noble and victorious conquest. For I know that our enemy hath not one man in his Army, endued with such an entire heart and magnanimous courage, as you are, nor that valenth his title of honour with his life, as you doe: and therefore if we march on ballantly, continuing resolute and confident together, every man labouring for his place, Countrey, friend, and fellow, and God for all, your forwardnesse will make them fearfull, and your very countenances enough to conquer. Every man then becherfull, with a desire to banquet.

And here I vow to you on the word of a King, that if fortune stand so well with us, as to winne the day, never shall the Scots hereafter lift up themselves against us. Thus did the King of England animate his men, and so marched on in good array to the sight of their Enemies, who by this time had empaied themselves in order of Battell: their Vanguard conducted by the Marquesse of *Monthel*, the King of Scots himselfe in the maine Battell, and the Rearward led by the King of the Isle of *Magdalen*: and as the King of England had encouraged his souldiers, so beganne the King of Scots to hearten his men in this manner. The time is now come (loyall Subjects: and deere friends) that the pride of the English must be abated by the valour and prowesse of the Scots, so that if you set before your eyes the occasion which calleth us to the field, there is no one of you but will blame his prodecesse, for staying so long time to recover, what by true patrimony belonged unto them, & by the Kings of England, (most Tyrannous usurpers) against all right, violently taken from our Ancestors. Will you not then recover your losse, and re-enter on those possessions, from which your Ancestors (against all right & reason) were expelled: Duly both challenge it at your hands, being the good not onely for your selves, but for your children and successors. Would you then,

lose so good opportunity, to re-establish things so lost? Are your hearts more timorous then your enemies? are your minds made of worse mettall then theirs? No, no, well am I assured that the least among you, is of higher vertue and account then the best in their company. If it hath been their custome, (as they themselves haue) to triumph ouer vs, let vs learne them to confesse with patience, that they haue no such right of custome to vanquish, as in these skirmishes already we haue sufficiently made knowne, with what fortune and unconquerable spirits you entertained your enemy. Will you may no more now (my good friends) then you haue done, let each mans sword make his entrance amidst his foes, and fauour one anothers life, so shall sweet successe returne you with victorie. The King hauing ended, they discerned the English power eager to encounter, and so the Armies meeting, began a dreadful and dangerous battell.

There might you heare the Drummes thunder, the Trumpets sound, the Clarions ring, the Whistles warble, Lances shivered, knights dismounted, footmen scattered, heads defended, armes and bodies wounded, some crying, other dying, a matter more then lamentable to behold, and so long continued this cruell and bloody conflict, as the most part of the Vanguard were slaine, some wounded, some taken prisoners. Which when the King of Scots perceiued, being a Prince so hardy and valiant as might be, commanded the main battell to giue the Charge, in the midst whereof he was in person: whereupon the fight beganne againe much more fierce then before, so that ye might haue heard the Whistles blowe, the Armour clatter, and on euery side beheld good and venturous knights giue by their blowes. At this furious onset, Palmerin seeing the Scots to retire for advantage, cryed to the King of England. Why hold you my Lord when you forget your selfe? why doe you not follow on with your main battell, seeing the enemy playes upon advantage? shortly let vs open them, so the day will

will be ours. The King seeing that Palmerins counsell was very expedient, commanded his men to march on valiantly, which they did with such courage, as not one of them but was gloriously killed. Palmerin seeing least Trineus would be ouer venturous, because the young Prince was maruellous forward, desired him not to runne so farre into danger, but keepe by him, to the end the one might succour the other, if necessity required. With these words he ranne upon the Scots like an angry Lyon, and no man durst withstand him, they saw him make such slaughter: the King of England following him at an inch, beluering true testimony of his invincible heart. On the other side, Trineus met with the Kings Brother of the Isle of Magdalen, piercing his Lance quite through his body, so that he fell dead among his owne shouldiers: and Ptolome all this while was not idle, but whereere he came, he layd his enemy at his feet, so that the Scots wondered at the behaviour of these three knights. When the King of the Isle of Magdalen understood the death of his Brother, incensed with unquenchable anger, ran fiercely among the English, till he came where Trineus, Palmerin and Ptolome were, one of his knights shewing the King the man that slew his Brother, whereupon he making towards Trineus, lifted by his sword, and thought to haue slaine him, but Palmerin stepped betwene them, said. Come Captaine, to me, and so the King and he encountred together so terribly, as Palmerin was wounded in two of these places, for which he made such recompence to the King, as fastening his sword on his Helmet, cleft his head in twaine: that done, he fell dead to the ground. The fight hereof enflamed the Scots with such rage, as like mad men they ranne cutting and killing among the English, as well to reuenge the King of the Isle of Magdalens death, as to defend their own King, whose danger they feared. In this hot skirmish, the Kings of England and Scots, met together, who charged each other

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

with their forcible Croaks, as the King of England was bruised and sore wounded: but Trineus being at hand, seeing his deere friend Father in such perill, buckled with the King of Scots so valiantly, as he gave him many a cruell wound, and but that his men made haste to convey him through the throng, he had been slaine by Trineus, so was the King of England mounted againe, and reneged his foyle on his Enemy with marvellous Malour. There triumphed the three Grecian Knights, with inexplicable honour, the Englishmen making such hauock among the Scots, as utterly dispayring, then fled: one part to a Forrest nere at hand, and the other part towards the Sea, to their ships, the King getting into one of them to save his life, by the help and meanes of one of his knights, that lent him a good Hennet of Spaine, to escape away withall. And so sailed thence the King with greater shame, than did the Emperour Antonius from Octavius Caesar, leaving his men fiercely pursued by the English, who terrified them in such sort, as many of the poore Scots chose rather to runne into the Sea, and drowne themselves, then to fall into the hands of their conquering enemy.

CHAP. XLVIII.

Of the retreat of the King of *Englands* army, and the honour he did to the three strange Knights.



After the King of England was Master of the field, he caused the retreat to be sounded, and his men called together, commanding likewise that search should be made through the field, to succour such as were sore wounded, and to bury the dead, lest they should be infected, whereupon

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

upon the Englishmen took the spoyle of their enemy, chiefely their bag and baggage which they had left behinde them. In the meane while the King withdrew himself into his Tent, where remembering the great service of the three strange Knights, he commanded his Nephew Cerides to seek them immediately, who found them in a Scottish tent, binding up their wounds: and being not a little glad of his good fortune, he came to Palmerin, saying. Gentlemen the King my Uncle earnestly desireth you to come to him, because he will neither enter the towne nor barme himselfe, till he heare some tidings of you. Seeing it pleased him, said Palmerin, to command, we humbly obey, wheresoever you pay you Sir to returne his Majesty our dutifull thanks, and diligent attendance.

After Cerides was departed, they resolved among themselves (at the earnest request of Trineus) that Palmerin should be the chiefeest among them, and him they would honour as their Lord, because the Prince seemed to be knowne if such account should be made of him: so went they presently to the Kings Tent, where they were no sooner entered, but the King (albeit he was sore wounded) arose from his Chaire, and embraced them lovingly one after another, not suffering them to kneele before him, but honourably thus spake to them. Worthie Gentlemen, how welcome you are I cannot expresse. For I account my selfe so highly beholding to you, as the Realme of England had sustained this day great foyle, but by your fortunate valour: thinke then worthy Lords, wherein England may recompence you, and on my word it shall not be denied: in meane while I pray you let me have your Company, because I will see your hurts carefully attended. The Knights with great reverence accepted the Kings noble offer, and were conducted into a sayre Tent next the Kings, where the Chirurgions with great diligence dressed their wounds, and afterward they came and supped with the King. And because the King

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

King intended on the morrow to go refresh himselfe at the Towne of Corfania, which before had been cruelly besieged by the Scots, to give God thanks for the happy victorie, a famous Sermon was made before him, by the Archbishop of Canterbury, to whom likewise he gave order for entring of such as had been slaine of account, and in that place for mony of his good fortune, he caused a goodly Monastery to be builded, and dispatched a post presently to aduertise the Queen, and the Noble Lords of his good successe.

Now was his Majesty very desirous to know the those strange Knights, that had so valiantly assisted him, especially the man that saved his life: whereupon, the next morning he went to see them, demanding how they fared: for (quod he) we will now set forward to Corfania, where we will make you better entertainment then we can doe here in the field. When mounted they all on horseback, and rode to Corfania, where the King remained, till he and his knights were better recovered. And where the King made the Duke of Tintri-el his high Marshall of England, committing to his charge all thousand men, commanding him to chase all the Scots forth of his Kingdome, wheresoever he could find them, and to seize to his Highnesse use, the Townes and Castles, which they before had in use: which the Duke executed with such expedition, as he left not a Scot in any Village or Hamlet, placing faithful Officers for the King in every Jurisdiction.

During the labours of the Duke, the King every day visited those three Knights, and finding Palmerin at a time convenient, he requested to know of whence he was, and the names of his Companions. Let me intreat you (quod he) not to hide your selves from me, because I will not be in quiet till I know, that I may remunerate your deserts according to your persons. Palmerin, who now feared to be discovered, could not readily well devise what answer to make, yet at length in great humility, thus said. Wee would desire your Majesty, that it might so stand with your good liking, as this time

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

time to excuse the knowledge of our present affaires, as all that we are: yet thus farre will I resolve your Highnesse that we are all Gentlemen of Greece, nourished in the court of the King of Macedon, who in seeking strange adventures, have travelled many Provinces, and now at length came into your Kingdome, well armed at this time with knights Errant, and governed (as we well perceive) by a King so gracious, as no King where we yet have come doth the like. For this cause my Lord, as also understanding that the King of Scots menaced warre against you, came we into your country, to doe you service in all obedience, as the very simplest among your Soldiers. Trust me (said the King) I have well noted your service, and a man might be deceived in expecting better assistance. For which I rest yours, in ought I may, while I live: but if you should name your selves, then should I know to whom I were indebted, as also that my Subjects might honour you accordingly. What (quoth Palmerin) will neither profit nor prejudice your Majesty, let suffice then I beseech you, the unfained good will and service we owe to your Highnesse. The King, seeing he could not get what he would, changed his talke, saying: Was it you Sir, that on the day of Battell was armed all in black? For my Lord, said Palmerin, and this Knight (pointing to Trineus) is my Brother; who saved me from danger against the King of Scots. My deere Friends (quoth the King) this made me so importunate: And may it like you to stay in my Court, I will regard you according to your speciall deservings, as the onely Knights of the World, in favour, yielding thanks to Heaven, for the good I have received by your meanes.

Humbly did the three Knights regravitate the King, promising for a while to sojourn with him.

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

CHAP. XLIII.

How the Queene of *England* was advertised of the victory
against the King of *Scots*, and of the overthrow of his
whole Army.



When after the King of *England*, had sent
tydings to the Queen of his good fortune,
and the honour he intended to the three
Knights of *Greece*: the Messenger was
so speedy, as the second day following he
came where the Queen kept her Court,
& presented her the letters from the King
her Husband, reciting the whole manner of the battell, with
the rare exploits of the three *Grecian* Knights, and how one
of them preserved the Kings life, omitting nothing that was
marvellous to be reported, and how the King intended to come
with the three Knights in great Royalty to *London*, and
therefore she should provide equall entertainment. The
Queen highly contented with these News, demanded of
the Messenger if he knew the three Knights, that gave assistance
to the King. So indeed *Madame*, answered the mes-
senger, neither yet did I see them, but at the time I was dis-
patched with my message, *Agriola* finding in her selfe the
persistence of a little god that made *Luce*, suddenly suspected
that these Strange Knights were they which she saw at the
Chappell, and therefore said, I pray thee tell me my friend,
what Armes beare the Knights? One of them *Madame*,
(quoth he) who seems the very best Knight in the world, is
in green Armour, & that is he that saved the King your Ma-
thers life, when the King of *Scots* had nere slain him, but
he remounted my Lord, giving his enemy such a dangerous
wound

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

wound with his Lance, as it was greatly doubted he had
kild him, he lost so much blood, and this was one of the princi-
pall occasions of our victory. This Knights Companion in
black Armour, behaved himselfe with wonderfull Chivalry:
so as a Lyon makes havoc in a Herd of Cattell, so did he
cut, slash, and mangle the Scots, as the very hardest durst
not abide before him. The third in black Armour, sparkled
all over with white Roses, a Knight of no lesse courage then
his companions, and one that fought for *England*, with incre-
dible prowesse. Let me see, said *Agriola* to the Queen, if
these be not the Knights that pass by this City, when we
went to the Chappell to performe our exercise: and there,
withall she rehearsed what speech her Gouvernasse had with
them, and what she commanded them. In sooth Daughter
(quoth the Queen) your Gouvernasse and you may well be
blamed, for the slender account you made of them: I pray you
therefore when they returne, let your former fault be suffi-
ciently recompenced, What shall I not saile to do said *Agriola*.
So the Queen honourably rewarded the Messenger, sen-
ding him back with this answer, that the Kings charge
should be effectually executed. The King advertised of the
Queens reply, set forward with the Knights of *Greece*,
and his Traine to the Court, and by the way, remembering
the power sent by the Emperour of *Allmaigne* to the King
of *Norway*, he said to *Palmerin*, I cannot sufficiently mar-
vell, gentle Knight, why the Emperour should declare him-
selfe mine enemy, and gave assistance to the King of *Nor-
way*, against me, considering I never did any thing might
deserve his displeasure: But I swear by the faith of a King,
that I will revenge my wrong, and let him assure himselfe,
that while I have one foot of ground or a dozen of my Sol-
diers to help me, I will never have peace with him: to
molest me within mine owne dominions: by God, my
friends, I cannot forget it. These words greatly displeas-
ed *Trincus*, but especially *Palmerin*, who answered. In my
opinion

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*,

opinion my Lord, the Emperour did but reason, and as duty bound him, in respect he could not honestly refuse to ayd the King of Norway his Cousin, and hereof I can assure you, in that I have sometimes bene in his Court, that he is one of the wisest and best governed Princes that ever I could heare of. Wherefore (be it spoken under correction) your Majesty should forget this light offence, and consider if the like had bene done to you, you would have no lesse.

When the King heard him so support the Emperours cause, he presently judged him to be of his Court, and therefore said. Are you he Sir, that wonne such honoz and renown in France, at the Combat maintained by the Prince Lewes, for the Love of his Lady? If you be so, I pray you doe not deny it, for I shall henceforth thinke my Court most happy, to harbour the most Excellent, among all Knights: and I promise you I am so jealous of mine owne conceit, as you can hardly perswade me otherwise, such Experience have I made of your Bounty and vertue. Palmerin blushing at these his words, and doubting least he should now be certainly knowne, answered. We most humbly have intreated your Majesty heretofore, and so we do now again, that you would not enquire of whence we are, sufficeth your Highness, that we are his humble Servants, in any thing that shall like him to command us. The King this hearing, repented himselfe that he had bene so importunate, for he feared lest his speeches should make them forsake his company, wherefore by this time being come nere unto his Pallace, he said. What I have said Gentlemen, I hope shall not offend you: in my excuse admit my earnest desire to know you. By and by overtooke them the Duke of Tintriell, who went to receive the Crowne, (as you have heard) what the Scots surpris'd, and he advertis'd the King, that the Queen and her Ladies were ridden to a Castle about foure miles from London to solace themselves: whereupon the King resolved to goe thither: whereof the Prince Trineus was not sorry, such was

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

was his desire to see his faire friend, whose Love still cross'd him with so many Passions, as he seem'd a man of another world, and did not his wounds seeme somewhat to colour his disease, hardly could he have found out any shift to conceale it so closely, wherefore he began with Palmerin thus: You know my chosen friend, that the good hope of my Love made me leave my Fathers Court, and to prevent my meaning considerd onely in you: Now in respect of my forcible Captivity, being deprived of strength, sence, or any meane to discover my Love to her, who onely can help me: I intreat you by the inviolable league of our amity, that when you shall chance to speak with the Condesse of my life, my paines and angulshes may serve for my salutations, and imparting to her the extremity of my sorowes, she may well perceive in what estate I am, and what need I have now of her gracious pity. These words were deliver'd with such store of sighes and teares, as Palmerin was amaz'd thereat, albeit he knew how heavy the burthen was, and how it excedeth patience in suffering, comparing his absence from his Mistress Polinarda, to be as insupportable, as the presence of sayre Agriola, (not daring to speak to her) was to Trineus; whereupon he answered. My Lord repose your trust in this matter on me, which I doubt not but to handle in such sort, as you shall have no cause to be Mal-content, or the Princesse any reason to be ungratefull. But what thinke you if my Dwarf did carry this message: in my opinion (thoughe the whole world) you could not finde a more fit fellow, such is his subtilty and present invention, as he will prove the onely Ring to your love. Alas said the Prince, I care not who were employ'd herein, so I were sure of comfort. Then was the Dwarf called, to whom Palmerin in this sort began. It is well knowne to the Urbanillo, with what good will I would doe any service I could to my Lord Trineus, as well for the incomparable kindness I have received of my Lady his Sister, as for the affinity I hope shall

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*,

Shall one day be betwixen us by his means. So often have I made experience of my loyall service and fidelity, in my chiefest and very nearest affaires, as well may I impart to thee, the secrets of my Noble Companion, perswading my selfe of thy surety and secrecy. It now remaines that thou pleasure the Prince Trineus, in breaking his due to the Princesse Agriola, as thou didst for me to my Distresse Polinarda: but above all things have regard, that thou betwixt not of whence, or what we are, yet must thou assure her, that the Prince is one of the greatest Lords in all Europe. My Lord (quoth the Dwarf) I was never yet disobedient to you in all my time, and very loth were I now to begin: but because I am such a wretched fellow, you make me your Broker in these perilous Love-matters,

Notwithstanding, I will doe it though I dye for it, esteeming my life well bestowed to pleasure such Princes.

There can no inconvenience arise hereby to thee (quoth Palmerin) but profit every way: be not enemy then to thine owne good. What will I never (said the Dwarf) and well might the Lady be judged unprovoked of reason, and very far from understanding, if she make refusal of the Princes honourable offer: the King himselfe (if he know it) would imagine his dayes blessed: the issue of this enterprise cannot but be to good. The Dwarf was pleased so well Trineus, as he took him in his armes, saying: I commend my selfe and my happinesse to thee. Let me alone (quoth Urbanillo) if I bying you not hearts to cole this hot fever, then let me never be counted for a tall man: So went he about it as you shall understand hereafter.

CHAP. XLVIII.

Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

CHAP. L.

How the King of England went to the Castle to the Queen and her Ladies, and of the honourable entertainment made to the three Strange Knights.



When being brought to the Audience, that the King was not farre off, the King sent a very honourable traine to meete him, and with them his Sonne the young Prince Fredericke, ten yeares old, but beautifull and of such perfection, as promised great hope in time to come. He having made reverence to his Father, and the other Princes, demanded for the Strange Knights, and saluting them with such kindnesse as was due to a Child, he rode betwixt Trineus and Palmerin, giving them hearty thanks for their friendly succour to his Father, without which, said he, as the Queen my Mother told me, he had dyed, and we all beene distressed. By this time they were come to the Castle, all the way so thicke pressed with people, as there was no room to stirre among them, overis one crying happy be the Knights that saved our nation. So entering the Castle, in the uttermost Court they mette the Queen and her Ladies, among whom laye Agriola the most beautifull Venus among the other Barres, together with the Prince of Allemaigne who is kept in the house, as an offender with his guilt before a Judge, so that not regarding what young Fredericke, or the other Lords courted, he said to him, he was ready to fall before his eyes with overmuch gazing: But Palmerin suddenly twitching him softly, said. His my Lord, what means you to forget your selfe thus? Is you not he that is exyled yours, and will you not triumph in your happy sight, but sitte as one utterly discouraged? For shame let passe this pusillanimity,

and

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

and with cheerfull countenance gave her the good morrow. The Prince did so, but with such timorous conceits, as having saluted the Mother, he durst not speak to the daughter, who imagining the best, and that bashfull reverence did so withhold him, she came to him in this manner. Are not you he? the knight in the graine Armour, that not long since promised one of my Ladies to aid my father in his warres? I am sayre Princesse, quoth he, and what I have done, was at your commandment, the vertue whereof gave me such strength, as some of the Scots have felt to their cost: but had I bene priviledged of such favour, I am perswaded I could never have returned alive.

It now remains, sweet Lady, that according to the request then made your Ladyship, it would please you to remit his offence, who deserved the sharpest punishment can be devised, for not honoring that Princesse, which carries the Palme from all Ladies living. In truth, my Lord, sayd the Princesse, not onely is your fault to be forgiven, if it can be named a fault, but also ought I to recompence you to my uttermost power, seeing by your meanes my father is in safety, and the Realme of England delivered from the tyrannous servitude of the Scots: wherefore you may assure your selfe, that if I can stand you in any stead towards the King my father, you shall command me to my uttermost. The Prince returned her a thousand thanks, and said. Believe me, Madam, the very least title of your good will, is recompance to me more then sufficient, and would provoke such affection in me towards your service, as you could not demand the thing. but I should be thoutfull willingnesse performe it, as I doubt not but better occasions shall make manifest unto you. Then entered they the great Hall, where such a sumptuous banquet was provided, as will ask more time to repose, then leysure will admit. Likewise here to set downe the wonderfull passions of the amorous Prince Trincus, in regard of a Lady so ex-

ceeding

Emperour of Constantinople. PART I.

ceeding superlatious, surpasseth my capacity: but he that is seated is opposite to so sayre a creature, and loves so earnestly as Trincus, yet durst not speak lest he should be espyed, may judge of that which I cannot utter. But seeing the liberty of speech was denied, the sport they pulled betwene them with sweet conveiances, and still must the countenance the stranger knight, till fearing to be taken tardy, she closely conferred with the Princesse Eufemia, Daughter to the Duke of Norgalles, saying: What thinke you Cousin of these strangers: are they not the seemlyest personages that ever you saw, both in favour, countenance, good grace and hardiness? I am of the opinion, that although they reposit themselves but as simple knights errant, they be doubtlesse great Lords, descended of noble and princely parentage: as one may easily gather by their civill and courteous behaviour, which is evermore the kinde of true Nobility.

These words caused Eufemia to mark well Trincus, as her Cousin Agriola did, which he perceiving, and judging that they talked of him, his alterations were so sensible as they might easily be discerned: for the more they eyed him, the greater was his torment, till the Noble being withholde, he had some ease in opening his minde to Palmerin, whose comfortable words were as good to him as restorative. Agriola on the other side escaped not free, for her case was no greater when she arose, then when she sat downe, and that must be little, having so balmy a vish before her to fill her stomach.

The next morning, the King and the Ladies mounted on horseback, setting towards London, and God knowes the Prince was not farre behind them, lining onely by the regard of her, with whose rare beauty he could never satiate his eyes. And as they rode through a Forrest, the King seeing the trees so greene and delightfull, and because the heat of the day hindered their traucell, he caused his Pavillions, and Tents to be there presently pitched, and

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

intended to dine there under the coole trees. Dinner being ended, he would needs goe course the Ware, waiting the afternoon in that pastime, and on the next day, rode to chase a Hart which was taken in the foyles, and therewith, all a huge wilde Hye, the mightiest that ever was sene, having wounded him in so many places, as the Dogs and Bloodhounds might easily tracke him. Afterward they rode a fallow hare, when the huntsmen made the hounds ring so hzabely with winding their Hynes, and the Greyhounds pursued the course so speedily: as Pelemedes chaffe was not comparable to this, till in the end the Ware was taken. These pleasures finished, the King with his company returned to his Tent, shewing to the Duene and her Ladies the fruits of their pastime, saying. I promise you Madame, I thinke these Grecian Knightes excell in every thing: soz as in chivalry, so this day have they shewed themselves excellent woodmen, as none in our trayne may compare with them. By this time the Tables were covered for supper, all which time was spent in discourse of theyz sports till the good night given on all sides, the these knightes withdrew themselves into their Tent. All these pleasures made not Urbanillo forgetfull of his Masters charge, wherefore practising how to accomplish it effectually, he found meenes to come acquainted with the Ladies attending on the Princeesse, and in respect he attended on the knightes of Greece, he was licenced the oftner in to theyz company. The next morning, the King and the knightes walking into the Woods, the Dwarf watching time to deliver his message, made so many wikes and returns before the Princeesse Daillion, as at last she opened him, and calling him to her, said: I pray the, my friend, by the faith thou bearest the Dwarf, tell me the truth of a matter I shall aske of the: Madame (quoth the Dwarf by on his knee) command what you please, for there is nothing (my Masters promise excepted) but I will truly tell you.

which

Emperour of Constantinople. PART I.

which of the three, said the Princeesse, is the Dwarf: the Dwarf (quoth the Dwarf) hath not his second in all person, he it is that was in the black armour, but, tell thy father bid so many words, as farre exceedeth the fabulous reports of the Lancelot du Lake. In sooth (quoth she) so have I heard before thy day referred to the Dwarf, I do thinke him worthy for a most hardy knight: but tell me, whence he is: what are his temptings: and why do they make it so daunt to be knowne: Herein Madame, saye he, I cannot with my duty answer you, for I am constrained by a former promise, not to reveale the least matter that may be hurtfull to them. Nevertheless, in regard of the curiouse which toll they beare you, and that I would not have you entreated with such an abject creature as I am, I shall gladly tell you some thing to your content, so you will be content to take your princely word, that what I reveale shall not be discovered by you. Forswore the same that he would, and looke what thou sayest, by my hand. Shall I now turne to the other harme. When knowe I the Princeesse, (quoth he) that the greene knight is of the most noble and illustrious house in Europe, having a King as his proper life, for whom he hath left his Country, with his friends, to come and do her service. The black knight, as I have already told you, is my Dwarf, and further then this I may not tell you. What am I the more my desire, quoth she, by this answer: either thou shouldst have said nothing, or else thou shouldst have said, so much I can not be quieted, till thou tell me what Lady it is, that the greene knight loves so dearly: let me not make so many intreaties, for I promise to thee againe, by the faith of a Princeesse, that never shall any creature knowe it by my means. Thou urge me so farre, quoth the Dwarf, and have made me such great promises, as I am constrained (beyond the charge given by my Dwarf) to acquaint you with the truth, in

33

respect

respect, the fault will be greater in you to make refusal, then in yielding. Resolue your selfe therefore good *Padame*, that the haine argue bright, so rich in Armes, but more in minde, is the Prince *Trineus*, kinne to the Emperour of *Allemaigne*, who is in love, and in deplac of liberty, by deuotion to your excellent beauty: as against both duty and reason, hath deceiued his Father, feigning to come ayde his kinsman the King of *Norway*, where contrariwise, he hath shewd himselfe his mostall Enemy. And to no other end hath he thus offended both Father and Cousin, then to make knowne his long and laborous desires, to make you Lady and Mistresse of him and his: and such is his feare to be refused, as he endures more torment, then the martyred body of poore *Prometheus*. Is not then the cause sweet Lady, that a Prince so tall, soe, and a Knight so gentle, shall be so great good service to your Father and Countrey, yet the most loyall loue be vnto you, shall buttime, ly, unfortunate, and cruell death. Thinke with your selfe, is it not the highest among all honours, to be wife to such a Lord, and Emperour (in time) of renowned *Allemaigne*? Is it not perpetuall repute, to be Lady and commaunders of the principall part of Europe? Let not him beare record that a body so meane, and Countenance so milde and gracious, can entertaine tyrants or cruelty: yet *Padame* such cruelty, as if you receive him not into your fauourable conceit, you shall prepare the death of the truest Knight in love that euer liued. The blacke Knight is the renowned *Palmerin D'Oliua*, the wonder of the world for valour, conquering in France the Duke of *Savoy*. In maintenance of his Ladies beauty, sayd without compare: conforming his shield and Armes, equall to his mourning thoughts, for his absence from her that triumphs in his Love. The third Knight is adorned with white. Moses, is called *Ptolome*, loved by a Lady well worthy of him. It now remaineth sayd *Princesse*, that you make the Prince *Trineus* equall with

with the rest in felicity, for you haue the golden head of his love, which with honor you may entertaine into your chaste thoughts. Thus haue I acquainted you with such a secret, as no creature but your selfe could haue knowne; and the danger to fall into your misconceit, that I haue such a blab: leading all you haue heard to your own construction. *Agriola*, wisely farre enough, perceiued the danger, but now utterly denyon of longer liberty, being by means of *Urbanillo*, was surprized with such a strange alteration, as a long time she was vnto silence, not able to utter the secret conceits of her minde, yet at length (to shew her sudden change from the Dwarf) she sayd. As my friend, thou acquaintest mee with matter altogether incredible, is it possible that *Trineus* kinne to the Emperour of *Allemaigne*, should venture into this Court, considering the mostall enmitie betwixt our Fathers? Trust me my friend I cannot credit thee. He renounces mine owne soule sayd the Dwarf, if it be not as I told you: then judge *Padame*, what acceptance should be made of his seruise, when Love to you over both nature: May it not be feared lone surpassing all other, either registered in antiquities, or present memoires? If it should be, quoth she, as thou sayest, it is beyond my power to requite condigne recompence, yet in respect of thy secrecy, I dare assure thee, mine owne opinion of him hath so much wrought me, as in honorable modesty he may command, and I am not so well nurtured to disagree. But if eithers by my words thou hast gathered, or by any change of Countenance perceiued, the sudden yielding of a flexible Nature: Interpret it in this good sort, that Princes affections make each other melt, as frames of one mettall, which I charge thee conceale from him, as thou regardest my word and his safety. Pardon me *Padame*, (quoth the Dwarf) it standeth not with my allegiance to obey you herein, what a villain might I be accounted, and unworthy the name of a faithfull servant, if

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

I should hide these happy things from him, to ease those torments that shew howe threaten his death? Then *Prudence*, did my *Prudence* but thinke I would so abuse him, well deserued I should come in pieces. Well, quoth she, if thou standest so content, tell him, but no other I charge thee on this point, I will certifie him, that I would not say my *Prudence* should be knowne. Feare you not, good *Prudence*, sayd the *Dwarf*, they are already so well advised, as none but your selfe can any way endanger them. It sufficeth that the *Prince* vnderstand your pleasure which I will impute to him when the thing is returned: so kissing her hand he departed, leaving her so highly contented, in assurance of the loyal loue of *Tryneus*, as he neuer determined any other *Husband*, yet should he not disclose her minde, no not to *Eufemia*, her secret companion, thinking her selfe too much betrayed, because the *Dwarf* knew it. Some after the *Queen* sent for her, to walke in the coole shadowe of the *Ardes*, where not long they stayed before the King returned, who reported what pastime they had all that morning. The knights having saluted the *Queen* and her ladies, *Tryneus* saluting the *Princess* *Agriola*, was so transported as he sent know where he was. The *Princess* likewise fixed with a steadfast eye on him, as wounded both him and her selfe together, her complexion so aptly deciphering her affection, as the *Prince* perceiving it, sayd to himselfe. Ah love, hast thou brought so happily for me, as my Lady knows my secret affections? Shall I be so fortunate, as she will take repose on my passions? I should hope passionate was so, for she often charge of her *Diuine* countenance, tells me there is some mercy in working. The King and *Queen* departing into the *Chapell*, *Tryneus* and *Palmerin* did the like into the *Chapell*, the *Prince* calling *Urbanillo* thus demanded if he had any good news for him. If you will graunt me one thing (sayd the *Dwarf*) I will tell you such things, as cannot

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART I.

cannot but content you. Demand what thou wilt (quoth *Tryneus*) and by the faith of a *Prince*, thou shalt not be denied. When began the whole discourse he had with the *Princess*, and what *Demetrius* had for the recovery of his health. Iudge you in what rare humour the *Prince* now felt himselfe, without question he imagined himselfe in some beautiful *Paradise*, then after was induced by *Epicurus* himselfe, and embracing the *Dwarf*, he said. My good friend, what wilt thou that I give thee? tell what thou demandest thou hast my whole life so much at thy command, as thou mayest liberally spare out thine own recompence, but seeing the beginning is so good, no doubt, much better remaineth behind. Well by my Lord (quoth the *Dwarf*) you know, I was borne to do you service, command what you please, and I will accomplish it. When said thus (sayd the *Prince*) returne to my *Princess* againe, and kissing her hand, present her from me this *Gem*, desiring her to wear it for my sake: with remembrance to pittie his painfull miseries, whose life and death is only in her hand. *Urbanillo* taking the King, *Tryneus* and *Palmerin*, went to sport with the King and the *Princess*, at the entrance regarding *Tryneus*, perceived well by his countenance that he vnderstood her message, so that his blood was now risen cheerefully in his face, which before was sunke downe with much long sighing. So that he imagined himselfe more happy, in being so beloued, then in love, and knew not well how to dissemble his joy. Ah woe *Tryneus*, the paine thou hast endured, in attending the wither howes to speake with her, farre surmounteth the torments of *Leander*, awaiting when *Phoebe* would goe bathe himselfe with *Theris*, and the *marriage* goddesses, that he might afterward swim to his affianced *Heroe*: and had not she giuen thee a better signe by her eye to adventure, I would have reckoned thee more unfortunate, then the *betroued* spouse to the prisoner of *Abydos*. Now had *Tryneus* happily taken the *Princess* by the hand, when unhappy

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

As one came to aduertise the King, that the Part he had chos-
 en the day before, was now again gotten within the forles;
 that it pleased him to hunt in the morning, he thought
 doubt (kill him with little labour. These newes were so well
 come to the King, that because he would the next morning
 more easily goe to his pastime, he withdrew himself say-
 ing that the Duke and Agriola likewise departing to their
 Pavillion. So that Trineus encounter was thus preuent-
 ed, and he with Palmerin returned to their Tent, yet tra-
 velling still on y^e Dwarfs diligence, that he should perfect all
 things to his hearts desire, and to perswade him the more,
 Palmerin thus began. I have this hope my Lord, seeing
 already so many good signes, that you cannot any way be de-
 ceived in your Love: and this I would advise you, fortune
 being so favourable, and assisting you to the very uttermost,
 you should not henceforth chuse your selfe so feminine, but
 in hardy manner reveale unto y^e Princeesse, when you shall
 find her at convenient leisure, both how you Love her, and
 what favourable grace you expect at her hands. I must con-
 fesse, that Letters and Messages are able to doe much: but
 the person being present, and knowing how to request, and
 how to be answered, is many a thousand times:
 and in briefe, no Messenger can be like himselfe. I speake
 not this as though my Dwarfs were unfaithfull, but to this
 end that he might receive no occasion of displeasure. In
 how many dangers have Gentlemen bene plunged, onely
 by the bad construction of their Servants message: the rea-
 son is so true that it cannot number them: therefore if you find
 opportunity, attend no other later then your self, this coun-
 sell well liked the Prince Trineus, wherefore he determined
 to speake to her himselfe, so soon as time and leisure would
 permit him, and in this resolution they went to their rest:
 but the remembrance of Polinarda, would not suffer Palme-
 rin to sleepe: comparing his joy in her presence, with his tor-
 menting Passions now in her absence, breathed forth many
 sighes

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

sighes, and shed many teares, till at length he began to slum-
 ber, wherein he thought he discerned this sight. Being in
 company with the King, he saw south of a dark Cane a
 handsome young man, who with open throat set upon him, and as-
 sailed him in such manner, as with his sword and with he
 rent his Armour, and put him in very great danger of his
 life, so that he strove in such sort in his sleep: as Trineus be-
 ing in bed with him, awaked him, demanding why he strug-
 gled so earnestly. Palmerin thus awaked, demanded to wit-
 stand all his while, and afterwarde recounted to Trineus the
 whole effect of his Dream, and said. It will not be much a-
 misse my Lord, that to morrow we ride Armed in the Kings
 company, for such Illusions, albeit they commonly fall out
 untrue, yet can they foretell us good to follow. I like your coun-
 sell well (answered Trineus) and Proleme got armed as well
 as we. In the morning they arose, and armed themselves,
 all save their Helmes and Banners, which their Squires
 carried, and in this sort came to the Kings good morrow
 when they were much to see them so prepared, and doubting
 they had received some occasion of offence, demanded what
 moved them so to be Armed. You know my Lord (quoth
 Palmerin) that a Knight ought evermore to be ready for all
 Adventures: and not knowing what inconvenience or danger
 may happen, before such time as we shall returne againe, we
 have Armed our selves to prevent the worst: which thing not
 discontented with this answer, mounted on Horsebacke, and
 coming to the Chase, had excellent game and more. Hunt,
 Boar, and wild Buffell, wherein he took such exceeding plea-
 sure, as he determined to stay there some 20 dayes longer.
 But in the place where he supped himselfe, and from thence
 all hazard, suddenly he was solicited with the change of so-
 one, for the Duke and her daughter Agriola were in mar-
 vellous danger, as you shall see in the discourse following.

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

CHAP. LI.

How the Queene of *England*, and *Agriola* her daughter were in danger to be ravished by the Giant *Franarco*, and of the succour they had, by *Trincus*, *Palmerin*, and *Ptolome*.



He being returning from the chase with his Company, little minding any untoward adventure, and conferring with *Palmerin*, till they drew nere unto their Tents: at length they heard a great tumult, and beheld a Squire walking towards them, so fast as his horse could gallop. *Palmerin* doubting some unhappie chance, and remembering his dreame, said to the King: neuer credit me my Lord, if this Squire come not to you about some speciall affaires, as well may he gathered by his speedy pace. At these wordes the Gentleman came to the King, reporting how the Giant *Franarco*, Lord of the castle of *Carbones*, since his departure came to the tents, & from thence had violently taken the Queene and her daughter *Agriola*, notwithstanding the resistance of many knights, who striving to defend her, lost their liues. The King with these wordes, stricken in wonderfull griefe, said.

Oh Gentlemen, this villanous Traytor hath notoriouly wronged us: how is it possible to recover them againe, he saies they be apprehended: *Trincus* and *Palmerin*, moued at these hard wordes, asked the Squire which way he went with the Queene and her Daughter: In truth my Lord (quoth he) I cannot tell you which way he took, we all were so troubled and misused by his Traitors: except they went along the Forrest, and so are gone to the next hillage. When *Palmerin* clasping on his Helmet, and snatching his Lance from his Dwarfes, galloped nimble after the Giant, not speaking a word

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

word to *Trincus*, who accompanied with *Ptolome*, rode apace after him, and as they passed by *¶* *Dummes Went*, they saw the Ladies and the Gentlewomen heauily lamenting, especially *Eufemia*, the chiefe companion to the Princesses. *Agriola*. Others knights besides armed themselves to pursue the Giant, but *Trincus* not a little enraged, followed the tracke of the horse, demanding of all he met if they saw the Villaine that had stolne away the Ladies. As concerning this Giant *Franarco*, you must note that he was *¶* cruellest tyrant, and most notable fellow in all the Realme, hauing a dayes Journey from the Forrest where the King hunted, a Castle so well fortified, and furnished with ammunition and all things necessary, as in *England* was not the like which was left to him by the death of his father who forcibly took it from a Lord his Neighbour, and others other places especially the *Ile Magdalen*. Where succeeded he the Royall dignity, after the death of the elder brother who (as you haue heard before) was slaine in the Battell by *Palmerin*, and he understanding the death of the King of the *Ile Magdalen*, was so highly displeased, that although he had alwayes before borne duty and allegiance to the King, he now solemnly swore to revenge his Brothers death, being so feared of the whole Countrey, that none durst enterprise to deale with him. So to revenge the slaughter of his eldest Brother, with others other of his kindred and friends, likewise slaine in the Battell, he strengthened himselfe with thirty hardy knights, intending to displease the King so much as he could. And hearing that he was coming to *London*, to feast the knights that were the cause of his great victory, but chiefly him that slew his brother, came with his company this way, in hope to find them all vnprepared. And coming that wayning, the King was gone on Hunting, he found those he desired to meete withall, for *¶* hatred he bare them thinking himselfe sufficiently revenged, if he could carry away with him the Queene and her Daughter: which he accomplished

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

to his owne death, causing them mount vp behind two of his knights. The Gentlemen that were left to keep the Queens company, was very much offended to see such villany offered this Ladys and Princess, detesting her so well as they could, but all mailed not against the Giant and his party, because they were well armed, and they with the Queen were unprovided, so that a number of them were slain, and some wounded, and more had bene, but that he feared the issue of the day, which made him in haste ride from thence with his spoile, sending them somewhat before, and luttling behind himselfe to fight with any that should come to rescue them. Trincus hauing gotten the sight of them, came pasing to the Giant, saying, Stay traytor and thiefe, for thou mayst not so carry her away, that is worthy of the greatest King in the world. With these words they ranne fiercely together, Trincus giuing the Giant a sore wound on the shoulder, but the prince receiued such a mighty stroke from the giants hand, as he fel from his horse with his head vpperward. Palmerin being not far off, and doubting least the Prince had bin slain, came in a great rage to Franco, saying: O monstrous enemy to mankind, what maketh thee so saucie to lay violent hands on Ladies of such account? With my sword villaine, I shall make thee thereby to pay for thy folly. So couching their lances they met together, the Giant saying, Palmerin giue him a shoulde wound on his body, and their horses roughly shouldeing one another, as their Masters were both thrown to the ground. Franco (being heauy and halfe-dead) had such a fall, as easily he could not recover himselfe. But Palmerin nimbly getting vp againe, gaue the Giant such a wound on his right legge, as the flesh hung downe pittifully to behold. The Giant being not able to stand any longer on that legge, let his knee to the ground, being glad to see the strokes of Palmerin, who teacheth him such a sound blow on the forehead, with the hilt of his sword, as the Giant fel along on his back, when Palmerin soon setting his

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 1.

foote on his breast, with his sword blinded his head from his shoulders. During this fight, Trincus and Ptolome made after the Queen and her Daughter, whom the Giants knights dyed cruelly before them.

Now was it matter well worthy memory, to see the brave behaviour of these two knights, but chiefly of Trincus before his sweete Princess, whose presence endued him with such exceeding courage, as he thought himselfe able to conquer the whole world, and therefore sufficient for them all, were they as many more in number. But strength doth not alwayes equall courage, and Louers thinke more then they are able to doe, as to Trincus till it had now fallen out, but that a company of the Kings knights pursued, whereupon began a hot encounter betwene them, and Trincus comming to the knight that had Agriola behind him, set him some before his horse, with his necke broken in his fall, so that the Princess getting forth of the throng, and seeing her beloued so valiant in power, betwene joy and griefe, she said: Ah happy knight, the myrrour of such as follow Armes, I desire thy high fortune may prove, as thou and thy good company may haue victorie over these Traytors. Now may I be well assured of the Love thou bearest me: for which (if we may safely escape this hard hunt) persuade thy selfe not to passe unrecompented. Trincus hearing the words of Agriola, was inflamed with such a spirit of conquering desire, as breaking in among the thickest, his strokes gaue witness he sought for a wife. But the Giants knights were used of such proofe, as the fresh supply that came were all more slayne, and doubtlesse the rest had bene their company, but that the King and Palmerin, with fifty knights more, came to assist them: for Palmerin hauing slayne the Giant, mounted on his horse, because it was one of the goodliest that euer he saw, and espying the King comming with his trayne, set on with him, and found Trincus in great danger, because so many of his men were slayne, but this fresh assistance brought by the King.

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Olive*,

king, was the means that all the Giants Knights were slaughtered, and they kneeling downe thanking God for their victory. The king alighting, came and embraced *Queen*, saying: How happy may we thinke our selves *Padam*, having so well provided this treacherous *William*? For never did I thinke to see you againe, but that God and these knights so highly befriended us. The *Queen* and her Daughter were as yet so dismayed, in remembrance of theyr former danger, as beholding so many ye staine before them, and joyfull before being so fortunately delivered, as betwixt these extremes, they knew not what to say, but desired speedily to set forward thence, which they presently did, the king commanding his Nephew *Cerides*, to see *Franarco* and his men buried to ashes, and honourably sepulchred to be provided for the other: When the *Queen* heard that *Franarco* was dead: Tell me my Lord (quoth she) who hath done such a gracious act to kill that monstrous villain? *Queen* he *Padam*, said the king, that was the cause of my victory in battell, the knight here in black Armour, to whom I am so far indebted, as I cannot imagine any recompence sufficient for him: and this can I not speake without great merriment, seeing such rare valour performed with so little danger on his behalfe. Long may the good knight live and prosper, said the *Queen*, that hath so deserved us, and may they all thence be most happy in all their affaires, for their knightly service to the Realmes of England. While these speeches endured, *Trincus* being sore wounded, was brought between two squires, and set upon his horse, but the king, the *Queen*, and chiefe squire *Agriola* was glad, when they heard there was no such danger but he might well escape. Wherefore mounting all on horse-back, they rode to see the Giants body, which made *Agriola* repute *Palmerin* for no lesse then his *Deare* commended him. When the king commanded to burye the body, and one of his knights should bring away his Helmet and Shield, which should be tokens

Emperour of Constantinople: PART I.

tokens sufficient for him, to recover the Castle of *Garbones* which he seized on, and all other things belonging to the *Giants*, he sent the Count of *Bonneroy* with five hundred men to confiscate and returne to his Priestesses use.

The Count well knowing such matters would not easily be accomplished, if they in the Castle should make resistance, therefore politely he sent the *Giants* Target and Helmet before, as sent from *Franarco*, who was with the king, and they should open the Gates because they were coming thither, for witness whereof they showed the *Giants* Signet of Armes. The guard too credulous, and thincking it impossible for any man to conquer the *Giants*, opened the gates, whereupon the Count presently entered with his power, putting all to the sword, not sparing any, not so much as the *Giants* younger brother, who escaping alive from the battell, was the cause why *Franarco* dealt thus villainously. Thus did the Count take the Castle into the kings obedience: remaining Captain thereof under the kings authority, the like he did in many other places, where the people advertised of the *Giants* rebellion, and that the Castle of *Garbones* was taken: there was now more rest to the kings commandment: whereof the Count was not a little glad, returning as soon as he could with the glad tidings of his success to the Court, certifying the king how all things happened.

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

CHAP. LII.

Of the conference *Palmerin* had with the Princesse *Agricola*, after hee had slayne the Giant *FRANCOIS*.



In this time the King was come to his Pavilion, where hee caused his Chyrurgions diligently to attend the three knights, for the curing of their wounds; who found that the Prince of Allemagne was worst of all hurt, yet the King understanding he was in no danger of life, was the better pacified, because he loved him dearly, and intended to honour him so much as lay in his power, promising not to depart thence till hee recovered his health: and because he would prevent like mischances, hee caused diligent Watch to be kept every night, as though hee had been in field encamped with the Enemy.

During the Princes sicknesse, hee was oftentimes visited by the Queene and faire *Agricola*, not vnthankfull of the courtesie receiued by him and his companions, and for which they requited him with manifold thanks. Trineus esteeming himselfe worthily recompenced, seeing that heauenly spectacle, whose presence healed a greater wound then any he had receiued in fight, desiring the continuance of the outward hurts, for comfort of his inward oppressions. And while the Queene thus conferred with Trineus, *Palmerin* came to the Princesse *Agricola*, seeing the time so lawfull and commodious, that he might thoroughly acquaint her with matter long enough before premeditated, but because she was desirous to talke with him, shee first began in manner following. I know not Sir Knight, how the King my father will satisfie the great service you haue done him, in so many hazards to his Realme and himselfe: but for mine owne part, I thinke my

Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

my selfe so bounden, that after life, which he gaue me by generation, my devoted soule shall remaine to honour you. And if these occasions passed doe giue me iust cause to thinke my selfe happye, what lesse account may I make of that vertuous Prince Trineus your Companion, who came into this Countrey onely for my loue, as I am perswaded: yet doubtful to be lightly carried away with report, I should accept it for more sound assurance, so please you to speake the truth herein. Madame (quoth *Palmerin*) if I haue done any service to the King or you, it is rewarded with much more then sufficient, seeing it pleaseth you to make such account thereof, and I promise you, you haue two knights wholly at command for the Loue of the third, who is so confidently tolued your friend and servant, as no man in the world can be more, and this is he that lyeth wounded in his bed, & Princely Son and heire of the Emperour of Allemagne, in which report my Dwarf hath not deceiued you. And giue my word this credite (Madame) that since the time hee first heard of your excellent beauty, being then in France, hee neuer had other determination, but to spend his life in your gracious service, and making refusal of many sayre Ladies, especially of *Lucimania*, Daughter to the most christian King of France, set downe this princely and commendable resolution, neuer to espouse any other but you, so it may stand with your liking to accept him for your husband: thinke then aduisedly sweet Madame, of the incomparable happinesse ordained for you, and stand not in your owne light to lose so good fortune. In truth my Lord, quoth the Princesse, I were well worthy to be reputed among the number of most hard hearted and ingratifull Ladies, if I should not loue & prize Trineus, were it but for the danger hee remaines in for me, and the vnfieigned Loue which you say he beares me. And thus farre I presume my Lord on your credit, that if it were otherwise, you would not disguise the matter to me in this manner, much lesse deceiue such a Lady as I am, which

(notwithstanding) would be to you but a slender conquest. Therefore you may assure him on my behalfe, that the love I beare him is more then he thinks, and very far exceedeth his judgement, as the promise hereof (in time) shall deliuer true testimony. *Spadane*, quoth *Palmerin*, his onely desire in this world you haue faithfully vnderstood, in you then it consisteth to preuent the contrary, by mercifull regard of his afflictions, and your presence will appease the anger of the Emperour your father, in that so nobly he would enterprise (though against his will) to ayde the King your Father onely for your Loue. And this will be the meane that the concluded pleasure of the Fathers, shall conclude in the happy conjunction of their Children. *My Lord*, quoth the Princessse, I will doe what shall please my Father and Mother to commaund me, and no otherwise, considering the danger I may fall into by yielding my honour to any prejudiciall occasion. *Palmerin* who had no other feare but to be knowne what himselfe was, thus answered: I am perswaded *Spadane*, that your judgement is so perfect, that to attaine a place of such dignitie, and a husband so copall as the Prince *Trineus*, you will not stand on frivolous tearmes, nor be carried away with any light or feminine feares, seeing that (setting apart these doubts) you shall worthily accomplish the thing which shall make you the most renowned Lady vnder the Occident. I pray you Sir *Palmerin*, quoth she, refferre this talke to some other time, for the answer of such a high and weighty matter, becometh to be expogitated with laynes, for oftentimes we see, that such actions suddenly and slightly performed, causeth more repentance afterward then is expected. Yet thus farre I venture, and so faithfully perswade him, that hee is the onely Prince in the world I would accept for my husband, if they were so agreed, to whom God, nature and duty hath bound me: and to let him vnderstand my willing desire towards him, I will speake to him my selfe, as soone as the Quene is departed,

parted. Not long after, the Quene returned to the King leaving her Daughter with two of her Ladies to comfort the Prince, whereupon *Palmerin* taking her by the hand, brought her to the Bed-side where *Trineus* lay, to whom she made very curious reuerence, and trembling with modest bashfulness, said. How fare yee gentle Knight? trust me your hard fortune doth greatly displease me, and if I could beare part therein, believe mee I would gladly endure the paine: For it is good reason that the cause of the harme, should haue a portion of the torment, gratifying you with a said no thanks, for your good assistance without any desert. *Trineus* was so ravished with her presence, and hearing her speake so friendly, in whom consisted the safety of his life, as he could not viter the joy he conceived: which the Princessse well noted and *Palmerin* likewise, who answered her in this manner. It cannot be *Spadane*, but my Lord *Trineus* will soon amend, having the sodaine medicine so nere him, that is onely able to helpe him: and with these wordes he left them both together, to acquaint each other with their secret afflictions: When the Prince giuing a grievous sigh, said. Faire *Spadane*, to accomplish what you commaunded the first day I saw you, I did my deuoyze to execute the effect of the charge, albeit not so sufficiently as I could wish: yet since that time I neuer enjoyed one minute of rest, all this instant, when my eyes delighted with your sweet presence, gave hope to my heart of further comfort. For this onely cause (saye Distresse) haue I forsaken my Parents and Countrey, regarding nothing more then this present happinesse, whereby my wounds are cured, my spirit contented, and my heart from all dangers sufficiently recovered, so that no griefe can now molest mee, when your gracious labour thoroughly consoondeth all. And now might I imagine my misfortune beyond all other, were not this fearful doubt left to crosse it, that scanning disdaine should be hid in such rare perfections, as oftentimes it cometh so

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

to passe: therefore I beseech you Madam, may it stand with your liking to resolve all doubts by your direct opinion, and herein shal I account my selfe more honoured, then were I Monarch of the whole world. Love having then so wounded the Princesse, as for a while she was given to silence, at length withdrew the passion, and caused her returne this answer. Alas my Lord, I was (ere this) so certaine of your affection towards me, in respect of the dangerous travailes endured for my sake, as you need not seeke any other power, then what mine owne heart was fully resolved on: and so I continue still, expecting the day to make vs both fortunate, which I would haue you as yet dissimble, lest crooked mishap any way prevent vs. As she was proceeding in her discourse, the Queene entred the Tent againe, by which occasion Trineus could not say what he intended; wherefore taking her secretly by the hand, wzing her fingers with such a trembling passion, as all the night following he lay meditating on his Goddesse Agriola, and the comfortable answer she gaue unto him. If the young Prince were in such toynents, his Lady beares him company, thinking on the speeches past betwene her and Palmerin, and this evening the Dwarf (not compassing before to speake with Agriola) presented her with the Emeraule from the Prince, which she kindly receiving, in recompence thereof sent him a faire Diamond, rewarding the Dwarf liberally for his paines, who amongst the rest of his talke, highly commended the vertues of the Prince, which increased her love so confidently, as she cured him of the Princesse leue, that Death could not change her settled affection. Trineus fully resolving herein, gaue such cheerefull Physicke to his heart, and the Chyrurgions such diligence to his wounds, as within seven or eight dayes hee was able to beare armour: whereupon the King departed thence towards London, where the strange Knights were entertained with marvellous honour, the Lords, Knights, Kurgesser, Officers and other

Emperour of Constantinople. PART, I.

other Citizens, welcomming them with great pompe and roialtie, saying. Welcome are the Knights that deliuered the Queene and her Daughter, from the cruell Giant Farnarco, with diuers other salutations, whereat Palmerin and his friends were greatly abashed. Passing on to the Pallace all the way they were still presented with rare shewes and deuises, and the Knights lodgings were appointed in very stately Chambers in the Court, causing open Court to be kept for eight dayes space, for the honour of these Knights, and entertainment of all friendly commers, in all which time there wanted no sports and delights, as such times and occasions doe necessarily require. Now came all the Prince, Lords, and renowned Knights in England to the Court, except the Duke of Gaule, who excused himselfe by the warre in his owne Province, which yet was not the chiefeest cause of his absence: but the shame hee reputed to himselfe for his foyle in France, when he entred the Combat for the beauty of the saye Princesse Agriola.

These Knights thus worthily intreated, they were at no time denied entrance into the King and Queenes chambers; by which meanes Trineus might when himselfe pleased, conferre with the Princesse, till this instant among all other, the Prince thus began to his Lady and Mistresse. You may easily presume I wot Madam, what secret combats I continually endure for your loue, and no helpe is expected but the only hope of your sauiour, which as you haue promised to my especial friend Sir Palmerin, I doubt not but you will perseuer in that gracious opinion, and what promise he hath made of my seruice to you, thinke not but I obserue with religious care and deuotion, though not sufficient to equall all your desires, yet because ingratitude shall not insult against me. So many thanks (quoth the Princesse) I returne you my Lord, as good opinions can be imagined betwene vs both, and accounting you for my friend, which is a higher degree, I here discharge you of my seruice, and (more honour

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oltra*,

guarded from blame) I shall iudge my selfe so happy to yeld you any content, which I will fulfill, notwithstanding any danger towards me. But I pray you tell me my Lord, what is the intent of your love in this action? Madam, (quoth the Prince) Say Palmerin, who is now come to beare vs company, shall credibly informe you, so please you to rest contented therewith. Palmerin thus entred, and imagined their talke was not about affaires of Merchandise, wherefore he said to the Princesse: God speed you Madam, pardon me, I should call you Lady, and Wife to the Prince of Allemaigne, for I doubt not but you haue chosen him for your husband in heart. Agriola blushing and smiling hereat, made no answer: Wherefore Palmerin went forward in this manner. In sooth Madam, if you haue done so, I would counsell you to accomplish it presently, and provide to goe with vs to Allemaigne, where the Emperour will entertaine you with such gracious labour, as you will not lose if you beare the minde of a Princesse: beside, you shall be the meanes of everlasting Peace betwene the King your father and his Majesty. To which wordes, Agriola thus discretly answered.

I promise you my Lord, there is no Prince this day liuing, whom I would more gladly accept for my husband, then the Prince Trineus: notwithstanding, for me to depart without the knowledge of the King or Quene my Parents, is an Act (in mine opinion) farre dissenting from duty and honest report. Wherefore my Lord, louing mine honour as you say you doe, I pray you let our behauiours be with better wisdome, least we fall both into dangers not recoverable. Palmerin perceiuing Agriola contrary to the most necessary occasion, vied such arguments, and played so well the Doctor, that the poore Princesse had no power to resist: considering the great Loue she did beare the Prince Trineus, which made her yeld more easily to his persuasions, so that they agreed to accomplish their determination, and

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 12.

and depart with them towards the Realme of Allemaigne. Trineus ioyes now excedded measure, and Palmerin (for his sake) was no lesse contented, in respect he should the sooner see his saye Spittelle Polinarda, whose remembrance giues him life, as the Ayze doth the Camelion.

But fortune beholding each thing prosper as liked their fancies, would now begin to play her Pageant, crossing them with the unhappiest Stratageme that euer could haue befallen to such Noble Princes, as in the sequell shall be largely discoursed. They little expecting such variable chance, are earnestly following their serious Enterprise, which was secretly to conuey Agriola with them into Allemaigne, for which purpose they made provision both of Shipping, and skilfull Pilots to conduct them, transporting all their necessities aboard, at what time this Adventure following happened in the Court of England.

CHAP. LIII.

How in the time of this pleasant and great Assembly, there came a Damosell to London, who desired the King to doe her Iustice against a Knight of his owne Court.



During the time this Royall company continued at London, minding nothing else but Pleasures, Pastimes, and Courtly recreations, there came a Damosell so faire as might be, accompanied with two great ancient Knights, and a lusty Champion bravely Armed, with sixe comely Squires attending on him. The Damosell entering the Pallace, came before the King, and vpon her knee began in this manner. Great Lord, having long time heard your good Justice towards your Subjects, without any favour or exception of persons: I am the more bold, albeit hee that hath injured me, is pretendedly reputed

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

reputed for a man of good quality, and holdeth place of authority in your Court) humbly to craue of your Highnesse one request, against the most false and disloyall knight that euer was: whom when I doe but once remember, more weighty and grieuous oppressions fall vpon my soule, then this wretched body of mine is able to endure. Damofell (said the King) I shall right gladly relieue your heavinesse, if it be in my power to do: it: therefore tell me the cause of your offence: and what he is that hath so wronged you. Know you my good Lord (quoth she) that I loued a knight so dearly, as contrary to the liking of my Parents and friends, and too much forgetfull of mine owne selfe. I took him to my Husband, and in a good opinion of him, thinking he loued me so faithfully, as his fained shewes and counterfeited behaviour gaue demonstration, but the Traytor had no other meaning then falsly to beguile and deceiue me: For after I had made him Lord of me and mine, and brought him to a Castle of mine, so strong and faire as any in your Highnesse Dominions: the Traytor expelled me thence violently, pretending that we were so nere allyed, as he might no longer account me for his Wife. Since which time, notwithstanding all the humble intreaties I haue often made: hee will neither restore me my goods and possessions againe, nor yet accept me as his espoused Wife. Wherefore I beseech you my Lord, as becomes a good and vertuous Prince, for the honour of Nobility, and regard of Womanhood, you will be pleased to take pitty on a poore distressed Lady, and that in such a rightfull demand, you would doe me Justice, which I had sooner demanded, but could not by the occasions of your troublesome Warres. Lady, said the King, as yet you haue not named the man that hath offered you this surpassing injury. My Lord (quoth she) this is the man in your Presence, named Myleres, a vile Traytor, and publike Adulterer. And if so be hee dare affirme that I haue spoken any vntruth, I haue here brought a knight with me, who by combat shall make

him

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

him confesse his falshood and Treason, so please your Majesty to saue my Request. Myleres (quoth the King) how answer you this accusation and offence, wherewith this Lady chargeth you? Myleres being suddenly giv'n into this danger, knew not well what to say: yet at length (with humble reverence) hee thus began. My soveraigne Lord, if credit may be giuen to the first countenance of accusations, without hearing how the party accused can iustifie himselfe, I doubt not but your Majesty will presently condemn me: but when the matter is once well debated and decided, they which seemed at the first vnreproucable, are found malicious and slanderous persons, and the accused, innocent and free from blame, as here your Highnesse shall most plainly behold.

The matter whereof this Lady detecteth me, is forged, and villanously invented: For to mee belonged the Castle the quarrells for, descended from my Predecessors, to whom I am the true lawfull, and legitimate Inheritor. True it is, that this dissembling woman, by sweet speeches, Feminine guiles, and secret deceits, oftentimes practised to winne me for her Husband: but knowing her behaviour such as becomed not a Woman of modesty and vertue, I would not heare her, much lesse consent to match with her. And this is the onely cause of her complaint, in hope that you (being above all other Princes, most benigne and honourable) will constrain me to wed her, in respect of your absolute authority, as the dutifull obedience wherein I am bound. When the knight which came with the Lady, had heard Myleres blame her in this sort, he stepped befoze the King, with these words.

It is great folly (my Lord) in Myleres, to deny a matter so apparantly and well known, although if it were put to the iudgement of honest persons, his common good report might cause him to be belieued: But the poore Lady desireth that her right and title may be cleared by Combat, wherein let him confound her if hee can, or else receiue reward for his notorious offence. On her behalfe therefore, my Lord, I say

say

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

say and well maintaine, that Myseres is a most disloyall Traytour, and his owne mouth shall confesse it, or else this Day will I take his head from his body. Myseres, feeling himselfe somewhat touched, grew into great choller, and albeit the shame hee did the Lady, delivered him culpable, and made him doubt the issue of the Combate, yet as it were in a marvellous rage he answered the Knight, that hee falsly belied him, and was ready to make tryall thereof in single Combate, if it pleased the Kings Majesty to appoint it. And I doubt not (quoth hee) to make thee pay for thy rashness, and force thee confesse thy want of discretion, in giving credite to the trothlesse complaints of this deceitfull Woman. When was it ordained, that this difference should bee decided by Arms: Whereupon the Ladies Knight spake thus to the King. Seeing it hath pleased your Majesty to grant the field to Myseres, and me, may it please you (as it is the custome) to command that he deliver hostages: to the end that if hee bee vanquished, the Castle may be delivered into your hands, for to be surrendered in Justice where it appertaines. Good reason, said the King, and therefore Myseres, you must before you enter the field, accomplish what this Knight in equitie hath demanded.

Then Myseres called one of his Brethren, whom hee requested to stand as his hostage: and doubt not before the Sunne be sette, but I will discharge my selfe and my pledge. With which wordes he departed the Hall, to arme himselfe: But because the Day was so farre spent, the matter was deferred untill the next morning. The King and his Lords, seeing the Ladies Knight in such resolute assurance, marvelled of whence and what he was, for none there knew him but Palmerin, who neither could guesse assuredly who he was, but by the golden Sunne in the Azure shield, which made him remember that at the Joustes in France, the perillous Combate without victorie on either side, was fought betwene him and this Knight, Palmerin being glad to see the

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

the man he long looked for, and purposing now to be fully revenged on him: secretly went forth of the Hall, commanding one of his Squires, to convey his Horse and Armour the next morning out of the Citty, because if hee vanquished Myseres, at his returne he intended to fight with him, or if Myseres had the better, yet hee should not depart thence againe with life.

Now you must understand, that this young Knight which came with the Lady, was the Knight of the Sunne, named Fryssoll, who ever since the Combate performed betwene Palmerin and him, remaineth with the Duke of Gaul, and was of him highly honoured for his worthy Chivalrie. Of whom when this distressed Lady heard, shee made her complaint of the wrong Myseres had done her, and Fryssoll pitying her case, promised to ayd her in the recovery of her right: and so came with her to the King of England's Court, to the great griefe of the Duke of Gaul, who made Fryssoll promise him to returne againe after the Combate: but Fryssoll was much more desirous thereof then the Duke, in respect of his faire Sister, because he was most specially beloved of her.

This Palmerin following his enterprize, feared to be prevented, because the field was appointed by the King, in the same place where he intended to meete with Fryssoll, and beside, Palmerin and the Duke of Norgalles, were ordained as Judges of the field, which hee would not willingly have taken upon him, doubting by that means to be hindered of his other pretended determination. Now the time being come that the Knights should to the Combate, the King and the Ladies came to the scaffolds, and the two Judges were placed in their Tent, accompanied with many Princes and honorable Personages.

After that the Heraults had commanded the Champions to doe their best devoyze, then they clasped their helmes, and fetching their Carriere, met with such puissance, as Myseres brake his Lance on Fryssols shield, not moving

The History of *Palmerin D'Oltra*,

ning him in his Saddle : But Fryfoll driving his Lance quite through Myleres body, caused the false Traytor to fall downe dead to the earth. When hee alighting, and opening Myleres Helmet, and seeing no life in him, came to the Judges, saying : You may now perceive my Lords, whether he that offered this Lady such villany, hath received his due desert, or no : So that now (I say) if there remaine yet any thing else to doe for recovering of her right, I am heere ready to maintaine her cause. Palmerin, who was not very well pleased with this victory, answered : Knight, you have done enough at this time, pray that other affaires may prove as prosperous to you hereafter, and in anger went forth of the field, commanding the body of Myleres to be brought thence, which was afterward interred with great honour.

Fryfoll having thus vanquished Myleres, the Lady for whom he entered the Combate, fell on her knees before the King, desiring him to surrender the Castle which Myleres unjustly detained from her. In sooth Lady (quoth the King) it is reason you should have Justice, and your owne delivered you : But know you his name that defended your quarrell ?

My Lord (quoth she) in concealing his Name, I should offer him great wrong, concealing the Bounty and prowesse of the man, which hath not bene sparingly shewed heretofore, in presence of the Duke of Gaule, against the King of Norway, whose army was discomfited by the worthy valour and pollicie of this knight, who calleth himselfe by the name of Fryfoll, the Duke of Gaule, bringing him forth of France at his last Voyage, and ever since hath so dearly loved him, as he were his owne naturall Brother. I promise you, Lady (said the King) you made no ill choyse of your knight : For I have heretofore heard of his Actions, and am not a little glad that now I know him, wishing he were one of my Court, because a King accompanied with such persons, must needs imagine his Countrey happy. And in respect he is so brave a Champion, it is impossible but that he should bee
a wise

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

a wise and vertuous Knight : Wherefore I pray you cause him come hither to mee : which she presently did. And having saluted his Majesty with honourable reverence, the King embraced him with these wordes. Worthy Sir, you are most heartily welcome : I could wish you were one of my Knights, in respect that my Court should be the more honoured, and I might requite your paines, better then I can on a sudden.

High and mighty Prince (quod Fryfoll) in assisting this distressed Lady, I have done but my duty : but if I could any way doe your Highnesse service, I know no Prince living, for whom I would more gladly employ my selfe. And at this present time, urgent affaires excuse me from staying here any longer : Nevertheless, I intreat you my good Lord (if it may stand with your favourable liking to repute me among the number of your Souldiers and Servants. If it must needs be so (said the King) you shall doe what pleaseth you, yet will I reckon you amongst those to whom I owe continuall Love and affection. And although the death of Myleres doth somewhat grieve me, because I made some estimation of him : yet for your sake I will deliver the Lady her Castle, which you have conquered with such mighty Chivalrie. Fryfoll humbly thanked his Majesty, and departed with the Lady, which way they came : But Palmerin very much offended at his departure, and earnestly desiring to be revenged on him, commanded the Dwarfes to marke well which way they went.

The Dwarfes diligently fulfilling his Masters charge, returned, and told him which way they took : Whereupon, he being desirous to follow, without giving any knowledge thereof to his Companions, left Trineus to conferre with his faire Mistresse Agriola, and departed the Court so secretly, as neither the Prince nor Ptolome suspected anything. And so accompanied with the Dwarfes Urbanillo, hee came to the place where his Squire stayed with his Armour, where

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

where when he was Armed, he mounted on Horsebacke, thus speaking to his men. Returne you to the Citty, and then expect my coming: As for this Vibanillo, thou shalt say to the Prince Trineus, that he must pardon me, though I did not acquaint him with the urgent occasion of my departure: which I was more enforced to doe then he thinks on: Nevertheless, pray him take no paines to enquire after me, because I doubt not to returne very shortly, although not so soon as he would: yet pray him to bid so little speech thereof as may be. The like mayest thou say to Proleme, and to them both commend me most heartily: With this strict charge to you both, that upon the paines of your liues, neither of you doe follow me, nor bid any other to make search after me.

So taking his Lance, hee galloped that way which the Hounds shewed him they were gone, and then he with the Squire returned to the Citty, making very lamentable lamentation, because they thought their Master would returne no more, in that he would not be knowne whether he went, yet would they not betray nothing that his Master had forbidden them. Trineus and Proleme were marvellous sorrowfull, especially the Prince, who without the Hounds assurance of his Masters short returne, had followed to seeke him: yet not thoroughly contented with Vibanillos persuasions, the Prince himselfe came to comfort him saying: You must thinke (good Sir) that your noble friend is gone about some strange Adventure. For you know he neuer encountered any thing, but it returned him to honour. If hereunto for so the Honour of his Lady, he sheweth himselfe without his peers in Chimairis, thinke you he will not regard his reputation, and prementure his Actions before he runne too farre in danger? Content your selfe I pray you, for if he returne he not the sooner, I will cause such pursuit to be made, as he shall be found againe. The Princess Agriola likewise intreated him not to be disguised at the absence of

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

of Palmerin, for with the help of God and his friends, quoth he, his returne will cause as much joy, as his departure doth griefe. All this could hardly content Trineus, for he dreamed in his sleep, that the Knight which slue Myseres, was he against whom Palmerin entered the Combat in France, at what time they could not overcome each other. And remembering what ill will Palmerin bare him, vehemently suspected that for this cause he followed him, which imagination somewhat comforted him, and he repeated the Knight vniuersally if he medled any more with Palmerin.

CHAP. LII.

How after the death of *Myseres*, *Palmerin* followed *Frysol*, whom he had slaine, but that a Damsell intreated his life.



At that day Palmerin travelled, and most part of the next, yet could hee hear no tydings of the Lady & Frysol, which made him ride in great melancholy till at length meeting with a Damsell, mounted on a goodly Palfrey very richly harnessed, of whom he demanded if she met not a Knight Armed, who bare a shield of Azure a Golden Sonne, and with him a Lady attended on by many Squires. Truly Sir, quoth the Damsell, if you will grant me two requests that I shall name, I will bring you to him you seeke for, before the third houre of the day. Palmerin who was wonderfull desirous to find out his enemy, granted to any thing she should desire: on condition (quoth he) that you shew me the Knight. Follow me then said the Damsell, for I will

accomplish that I haue promised. So rode they together, and among other speeches, Palmerin asked her if she knew the Knight, and what his name was? The Damosell answered, that she knew not the Knight, but she was very well acquainted with the Lady in his company, and this night (quoth she) they minde to lodge at a Castle of mine Aunts. In the Evening they arrived within the sight of the Castle, where they alighted from their Horses, and entered a little thicket, for feare of being seene, and the Damosell hauing a flagon of Wine, and a Basket of red Ware in a Paund at her Saddle bow, Palmerin and she refreshed themselves therewithall: but all that night could not Palmerin settle himselfe to sleep, watching the Castle Gate, leaſt in the time of his sleeping his enemy should escape him. The next morning, so soone as the break of day appeared, Fryſol came forth of the Castle with his Company, wherefore Palmerin not a little glad, said to the Damosell. Now (Lady) is your promise performed, for this is the Knight, I seek: if therefore you will any thing with me, I must intreat you to follow me, for I would be very loath that he should escape me.

With which words he mounted on horseback, galloping after Fryſol so fast as the Horse could away, and overtaking him, said. Stay a while Sir Knight, thinke you to passe away in such sort? haue you forgot your words at Parris, to the Knight that guarded the Duke of Savoyes Tent: now is the time I hope to contraine your presumption, when thou shalt well perceyue, that thou neither deservest to be Seruant to the Princeſſe Polinarda, nor art worthy to talke of her honourable name. Fryſol thus saying knew by Palmerins words, that it was he against whom he sought the Combat in France, whereupon he answered.

Cruely Sir Knight, I haue not as yet forgotten what I then said, nor is the beauty of Polinarda, or my loue to her

so little, that my desire to her seruice should not be now remembered, nor will I forbeare to confesse it still, for feare of thee or any other whatsoever. And if thou hast sought me forth in this quarrell, thou hast found me so ready to defend it: as I will more willingly chuse to dye, then deny any part of my duty to that gracious Princeſſe.

Palmerin being so angry, as he would not multiply any more words, but encountered his enemy so valiantly, as they brake their Launces, and yet could not vnboso each other, then drawing their Swords, they laid so cruelly vpon their bodies, as their Shields being broken, their Helmes battered, their Armour defaced, and their flesh so grievously mangled, as neither of them both could iudge who was likeliest to winne the victory. At length Fryſols Horse falling under him, fell to the ground, and he so weakened with his great losse of blood, as he could not recover himselfe, before Palmerin came to him, thinking to haue parted his head from his shoulders with his Sword, which when the Lady saw, for whom Fryſol hadaine Myseres, she fell into most pittifull acclamations, not sparing her lovely tresses of haire, but with very great impatience renting them violently, made the ayre to echo her lamentable complaints. Which the Damosell seeing that guided Palmerin, and moued with compassion of her exceeding griefes: fell on her knees before Palmerin, intreating him to giue over the fight. But he, saining that he heard her not, because Fryſol with rough strugling had got on foot againe: charged him with such violent strokes, as Fryſol (being of intinctible courage) requited him with as worthy challenge.

Again the Damosell came on her knees to him, intreating him to giue over the fight, saying. You know my Lord, that before you came hither, you promised me two requests and this I make one of them, that you continue no longer Combat against this Knight, and in so doing I shall ac-

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

quite you of part of the promise which you made me, *Palmerin* chafing like a furious Lion, answered. I pray you *Damosell* ask some other thing, for in this matter, of soze you must pardon me. In sooth said the *Damosell*, if you deny me my demand, I will complaine at the King of Englands Court, and there will I declare you perjured, for all it becomes such a knight as you are, to make promise to a Lady and not observe it. In troth Lady, said *Palmerin*, you doe me great wrong, in withholding me from revenge on him, whom above all men in the World, I hate most deadly. Unhappy was the heure wherein I met you: and so mounting by en horseback, he galloped away in very great anger. When the other *sextosell* Lady saw that *Palmerin* was gone, and had left her knight, with great joy she embraced the *Damosell* that had procured it, thanking her for yielding the life of a most noble knight, for which cause she remained bound to her during life.

What I have done, (quoth the *Damosell*) is for the Love of you and this knight, swearing to you by the faith of a Gentlewoman, that I have another thing to aske of the knight which is gone, that concerneth me very narrowly. Notwithstanding, your teares moved me with such compassion, that I stand in danger to lose what I shall never recover, yet in respect the cause was so honest and virtuous, as I do not repent what I have done: but because he remaineth indebted to me for another request, I must needs leave you and follow him, so mounting upon her *Palfray*, she rode after *Palmerin* with all the haste she possibly could make. And in her journey she will leave her, returning to *Fryfol*, whose wounds being very dangerous, the Lady bound them up so well as she could, till they came at their next Lodging, where by good fortune was a Lady so well skilful in Chirurgery, as in short time she cured his wounds whole and sound. *Fryfol* so well

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

well recovered, departed thence with the Lady, because the third day following they should be at the Castle, whither already was come *Hermes*, one of the King of Englands knights, being sent by his Lord the King to deliver the Lady her right: which *Hermes* did according to his charge, entertained the Lady honourably, delivered her the keys of the Castle, and commanded all the Subjects to reverence the Lady, which they refused not to do: but were glad of her coming, for for hereof, were very solemn feasts prepared, and the Lady recounted to *Hermes*, Commissioner to the King, how *Fryfol* fought the Combat by the way, against the knight of the blacke Armour, whereby *Hermes* presently knew, that it was the strange knight, who had left the Court, unknowne to his Companions, or any of his friends, whereof he was not a little glad, because he judged that these newes would be welcome to the King. Wherefore so soone as he had accomplished his charge, and seated the Lady quietly in her Castle, he departed, intending to follow *Palmerin* till he found him, travelling the way was assigned him by the Lady.

Fryfol stayed there with the Lady till he had perfectly recovered his health, and then without any other recompence for his paines, but onely a Horse, because his owne was slain, and a new Armour, his owne being spoiled, he returned to the Duke of Gaule, who rejoiced greatly to have his company. But when the Duke understood how discourteously he had bene used by the blacke knight, who was so highly favoured in the English Court, he devised by all the meanes possible to be revenged on him: so that being in a Castle on the frontiers of the Duchie, yet within the King of Englands Dominion, he understood the blacke knight should passe that way, because he could not else returne to the Court. Now perswading himselfe for revenge, he pitched his Tents in a faire

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

Spent here a *Wylge*, and there placed twelve knights, the most hardy and ballant men in all his Dukedome, who should maintaine this order: that no knight should passe over the *Wylge*, unless he entred Combat with these twelve knights one after another, and such as were vanquished, should submit themselves to the Dukes mercy, either for their deliberance, or to remaine his prisoners, and the horse of the party soyled, should belong to the conqueror, but if they were dismounted, the passenger should goe on his journey, and take their horses with him. This adventure thus established, many good knights were overcome, because it was a very hard matter to vanquish twelve knights, and escape: But the Duke took no little pleasure herein, who detained Frysol more by constraint then other wise, for his anger so vehemently encreased against Palmerin, as no delight or pleasure could expiate his rebuyting desires.

C H A P. LIII.

How *Palmerin* went with the *Damofell* to accomplish the promise he made her, and what befell him.



Palmerin (as you haue heard) departed from the *Damofell* in a rage, because he could not execute what he intended, wherefore he devised to deale some other way, and to single forth Frysol in such convenient place, as one of them should dye before they departed. And as he was imagining some other way to overtake Frysol, the *Damofell* had now againe reconciled his company, saying. I pray you Sir knight, conceiue no ill opinion of me, for hindring you from killing your enemy, whom you haue left in

very

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

very great sorow, considering what bounty and courage is in him, and which your selfe perhaps will be sorry for. Wherefore I pray you forget this displeasure, and determine to fulfill what I haue promised, which if you will doe, you must go with me.

Believe me *Damofell*, said *Palmerin*, you shewed but small courtesie, so often hindring me from the thing which aboue all other in this world most tormenteth me. What unhappy body are you? but more unhappy the houre I met with you: but seeing it is reason I should keep my promise, lead the way, and I will not faile to follow you.

So rode they on, and for foure dayes space he would not speak one word to her, and saime he would haue left her company, but that he could not with honour forsake her. The next day, as they rode by a *Miners* dore, *Palmerin* espied a knight standing with a bow and arrow in his hand, which he let fly at his horse and killed him. *Palmerin* impatient by remembrance of Frysol, and angry that the knight had thus killed his horse, made towards him so fast as he could, but the knight was suddenly got on the further side of the Lake, and *Palmerin* by to the middle in water before he was wear of it, and now he could neither see the knight that thus killed his horse, nor the *Damofell* that came in his company.

Palmerin being in great perplexity, when he saw nothing but water round about him, and seeing he was upon a *Wylge*, beheld a marvellous ship streame running under it, and at the end thereof a goodly Castle. Walking along the *Wylge* toward the Castle, amazed at this contrary adventure, he espied a knight on the battlements of the Castle, who said, stay a while Sir knight, one shall come presently and open the Gate,

Palmerin knew not what to say, but determined to defend himselfe if any came to assault him, so the Castles Gate being opened, he entred with his sword drawn, yet was there no man that displeased him, but every one made

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

him humble reverence, with very good words and gentle countenance, declaring by their behaviour that he was more then welcome thither. Thus walking on to the inner Court, there came towards him a Lady, accompanied with many Damoises, and Knights, also shewing chearfull gestures, and the Lady taking Palmerin by the hand, said.

O gentle Knight, right welcome are you to this place, and Heaven be praised for the good it doth me, to see you here, that is able to accomplish the thing, which no other as yet could be able to finish: enter heartily in good assurance, for you will we make all the honour that we are able. Palmerin beholding the Lady, was brought into a marvellous goodly Chamber, where certain Squires helped to a barmie him, bringing him a gorgeous Mantle to wrappe about him. This done, he was conducted into a large Hall, where the table was covered, the Lady entertaining him so nobly, as in the King of Englands Court he could not be better. The feast ended, and the Tables withdrawn, the Lady began to discourse with Palmerin, saying. Long time (my Lord) have we desired your coming, as the man in whom our only helpe consisteth: for by your valour we are perswaded to be delivered from the misery wherein I and mine have too long time bene detained.

I beseech you Madam (quoth Palmerin) to tell me your affaires, as also what the Knight meant to kill my Horse, and why you entertaine me with so great kindnesse. If you will promise me said the Lady, to accomplish a needfull occasion, and which I think is destined to you: I will resolve you: otherwise I shall but lose my labour. If it be a matter reasonable (quoth Palmerin) & that a Knight may compasse, spare not to tell me, for I will doe my endeavour therein. O mercies gentle Knight, said the Lady, the circumstance of the occasion followeth in this sort. This Castle my Lord, sometime belonged to my noble Father, a Knight so hardy

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

and ballant as any in these parts, in whose younger yeares Love so over ruled him, as he affected a Lady of no lesse quality and condition then himselfe, by whom he had a Daughter: at whose birth his Lady and wife deceased. My Father being yet in the flower of his youth, matched the second time with a Lady of a very honourable and ancient descent, by whom he had me the first Child. My Sister at fourtene yeares of age, my Father oftentimes would have richly married her to her great advancement, whereto she being unwilling, by my Fathers consent she remained with her Mother: there Sister, whose skill was very great in all Sciences, by whose counsell my Sister caused a goodly Pallace to be edificed, and a strong Tower in an Isle on the other side of this Castle, where afterward they made their continual abiding.

During this time my good Father loved me dearly, so as he matched me with a wealthy and noble Knight, excelling in all perfections, but chiefly in chivalry, by whom I had a Daughter a yere after our espousal: but the more my griefe, my good Husband and Father both dyed, within short space after my Childs birth. Now my Daughter being come to the yeares of Marriage, her beauty made her desired of many noble Lords, but because I still reputed her too young, I denied all her suitors, which afterward turned to my very great detriment. For my Sisters Aunt had a Sonne, the most misshapen, deformed, and worst conditioned Knight, as all the Countrey could shew such another, yet became he so amorous of my faire Daughter, as he requested his Mother to demand her of me for his Wife: but when I heard thereof, you may well perstrade your selfe that never Woman I liked any thing more, and yet to this time do as much as I then did: So that I made her answer, how that I would rather desire my Daughters death, then so to dishonour her, because he was altogether unworthy of such speciall fortune. Notwithstanding this sharp repulse, he continued his amorous desires to my Daughter, so that he ear-

nestly

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

nessly perswaded his Mother to permit him to take her away from me perforce: to which late the indiscreet Mother consented, either moued with pittie, or overcome by the importunate solliciting of her, so that one day (vnder a colour of a friend meeting me to be merry) he robbed me of my daughter. This wicked traitor had not long before that time intended this treachery, compacting the matter secretly with vllaines and thames, by whose assistance he carryed away my Daughter, shutting her vp in a strong Tower, whereof I told you. And because he feared that I would gather some strength to reskew her, considering how well I was beloved of my neighbours, he presented me by a strange Enchantment, environing the Castle and the Tower with such a marvellous Water, as no Knight should enter upon them without their consent.

Now that themselves might come forth and return againe at their pleasure, they deuised a little Boat, which is guarded by two fierce Lyons, and a puissant Knight that had charge of them, so that none comes to them but whom they list. Since this unhappy time I did neuer see my Daughter, whom this damnable villaine (which most of all grieues me) immediately violated and rauished at his pleasure, swearing now neuer to take her as his Wife, but to use her as his Concubine: and besides all this, the false Traytor in despite of me, and to reuenge the words I gaue him, doth monstrous abuse her, and most (vniuently) whippeth her dayly with Roddes, which my Sister hath often intreated to be spared, but he by no meanes will be perswaded. Thus seeing my selfe out of all hope to recover her againe, haue neuer since continued in earnest Inuocation to Heauen, that some notable vengeance might punish this Villaine: and such fauour haue I found in my deuout Implications, as first of all, his owne Mother was chastized with a cruell disease called Saint Anthonies Agge in one of her Legs, which so grievously torments her, as no remedy can be found to as-

uage

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

swage the verasion. Her Sonne vnderstanding hereof, would haue slaine my Sister, accusing her to procure his Mothers infirmity by her Learned knowledge. Whereupon my Sister fearing her life, and watching time convenient for her purpose, made an escape from the Villain thither to me, being sorry that her Aunt should thus Injustly deale with me, and promised to worke the means that I should recover my Daughter. These good wordes had a little pleasing me, I would needs know how I should come by my Daughter againe, whose misfortunes had been so pishome to me, where- to he thus answered.

It is so good Sister, that I cannot now reuerse the forcible Enchantments I haue already made for your Daughter, (though gladly I would) if it lay in my power, wherefore you must attend the coming of a Knight, who exceedeth all other in Valour, Vertue, and Worth: so he shall passe the Water, till the Knight enter the Tower, and deliver my Sister your Daughter againe into your custody. As concerning the Knight: good Sister, that shall so valiantly passe the Water without feare, and fully accomplish my former Enchantment: For him will I leave with you an excellent good Sword, a very sumptuous Armour, with diuers other gifts to bestow on him, because my selfe shall not liue to see him, which came to passe, for very shortly after my Sister dyed. Now know you Sir Knight, what is prescribed for you, therefore take some pittie on me a poore desolate distressed Mother, and boldly Adventure your selfe in this Honourable cause, as bounden percunto by Vertue and no full occasion.

Believe me Madame (said Palmerin) your discourse hath bene strange, and good reason moueth you to request vengeance, because your wrongs are the greatest that euer I heard of, which may in some sort perswade you, that the Offender cannot long escape, without shame answerable to his curst Willany, for Heauen will not suffer it, by assistance whereof

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliva*,

whereof I hope to revenge your Daughters Rape, And trust me deare Lady, I am sorry I came not in your Sickness life time, because she could haue resolued me in a doubtful matter: Yet neuerthelesse, I will doe so much for you, as if she were living. But I much marvel what is become of the Knight that slew my Horse, and the Damosell that conducted me hither. As for the Damosell (quoth the Lady) she shall come anon to attend upon you: but the Knight was onely a matter of Enchantment, deuised by my Sister, to discover the man that should finish this aduventure. And the Damosell whereof you speak hath brought hither many Knights to this Lake: but when their Horses were slaine, none of them durst be so hardy as to enter the Water, but onely you being predestinated to this aduventure.

In this and such like talke they spent the day till Supper time, and afterwards was Palmerin conducted to his Chamber, and being layd in bed he could take no rest: first, for grieve that he had not slaine Frysol, and then againe, by the strange tale the Lady told him: wherefore rising the sooner in the next Morning he went to the Lady to heare diuine seruice in her Chappell, where he desired God that he might preuaile against these Conjurations, and vanquish the Knight that had so much abased his Sister.

Returning from the Chappell, the Lady among other talke thus said: I see Sir Knight that your Armour is broken and much defaced, that one may iudge you haue not kept it close in your Armoury, wherefore I thinke you met not with your friend, when you were enforced to so dangerous repall: But as I vnderstand by the Damosell that was your guide hither, you returned him sound payment for his paines. To supply your want, I will bestow an Armour on you, which my Sister long since provided for you, and with carefull regard kept close in her Chest: therefore let me intreat you not refuse it, in respect it was not provided but for special purpose: being needfull for the present occasion you must
now

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

now Enterprise. Palmerin would not refuse her curious offer, wherefore opening the Chest, there lay the Armour, covered with white Tassata, whereon was written in Letters of Gold this Inscription: These Armes were made for the good Knight Palmerin d'Oliva, Sonne to the most royall King that at this Day liueth in all Greece. What word presently greatly delighted Palmerin, because herein his desire was somewhat satisfied, which was to know the estate of his Father: wherefore in midst of this pleasing humour he said, to his Lady, I perceiue saye Madame, that your Sister knew more of my Destiny then any other: For seeing she could so truly describe my name, I need make no great doubt of her further Iudgement. So taking away the silk, beheld there a more sumptuous Armour, then that which halting Vulcan made for Achilles, at the earnest intreaty of Beaufull Thetis, being most curiously chased over with flowers of Gold, and the Shields of Steele, all engrauen with rare Devices, such as well might become the greatest Prince in the World. Palmerin presently put off his owne Armour, and inbedded himselfe with the Ladies gift, which so well agreed with him in every point, as the like could hardly be framed for his body.

When he was thus Armed, he desired the Lady to shew him the way, that might conduct him to the place where he should discharge his promise, so that he would delay no further time in a matter of such weight. The Lady commanded thre of her Squires to conduct him, who led him along a narrow Path-way, which brought him to the Enchanted Water, so deep and dangerous, and there they shewed him the Boate to passe over in, which was fastened with a great Chayne to a Tree, whereupon Palmerin sought the meane to haue it: But so soon as he laid hand on the Chayne, to pluck it towards him, there rushed presently forth of the Enchanted Water two mighty Lyons, who violently assaulted Palmerin in such forcible manner, as they got him down
an

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

on the ground under them, yet he recovered himselfe quickly, and valiantly encountred those hydeous Monsters, who had such a diuelliſh Charme on them, as that no Sword could any way hurt or wound them. Palmerin perceiving that all his valour was in vaine, called to heauen for help, in this great necessity, and commending his ability to the Highest Protection, and his heart to the gracious regard of his Sister: He gave one of the Lyons such a cruell stroke betwix the Eyes, as he tumbled headlong into the Water, and was afterwards seen no more, and soon after him he sent his other fellow for company: But had not his Armour bene of extraordinary Vertue, doubtlesse this should have bene his last Adventure.

Not a little joyfull of this happy Victory, he entred the Boate, and with one of the Dares he beganne to Row, but now was he surpris'd with a wonderfull danger, for the Water arose in huge Willows, beating and tossing the Boate so fearfully, as he had very much to doe to save the bottome from turning upside downe. In this perplexity, which he could not devise how to mitigate, a matter of greater misfortune yet befell him, for suddenly a marvellous great, huge, and ongly Monster started out of the Water, which laboured by all the means he could to overthrow the Boate. So that now was he constrained to forgoe his Dare, and with his weapon to resist this Monster, which terrified him so cruelly on the one side, and the Waters so dangerously on the other, as he was not in the like hazard, when he fought with the Serpent on the Mountaine Artifaria.

To comfort him in this contagious extremity, hee imploied his Diuine assistance, whose onely providence must now defend him, else had the raging and distemper'd Water, or the rabenous Monster that gaped for his life deuoured him. But he that in greatest perils, was ever of unvanquished spirit, made such hard shift to row

with

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

with his Sword, as in despite of the Monster, and the hurling waves of the Water, he landed on the other side: when immediately all the confusion ceased, so that neither Monster, Monster, Boat, or any thing else might then be discerned. I leave you to imagine, whether Palmerin were glad or no, that he had so happily escaped this danger: for joy whereat he fell upon his knees, and with beuened hands and eyes to Heauen, gaue thanks vnto the Highest, for his deliverance. His prayer being ended, he went to the Castle, where he heard a most grievous and dolefull complaint of a Lady, saying.

Unhappy be the houre of my Parturition; Alas, is it possible that in all the whole World, any Lady can compare with my miseries? Palmerin attentively marking these speeches, knew well it was the Impriſoned Lady: wherefore moued with compassion, he called with a loud voice for one to come open the Gate, and so long he called, that at last the Knight heard him, who looking south at a Window of the Fosteresse, said: In an euill houre (saith) comest thou hither, and I much marvel what foolish presumption hath guided thee to this place, seeing thou canst no way escape my hands: but in my custodie it remains, either to spare thee, or put thee to a most cruell Death, although my Enchantment hath hitherto suffered thy passage: Thou art marvellous hardy (quoth Palmerin) there at the Window, but if thy courage be such, as to deale with me hand to hand, I shall make thee vnderstand, that thy lofty words cannot shield thee from my Sword: For I will pull downe that Romaine, and reward thy inexorable Tyranny, to that good Lady I heard complaine, whom like a Villaine thou seekest from her Mother. Come downe I pray thee (if thou be not afraid) and thou shalt see what entertainment I giue to such as thou art.

Are you Sir (saith the Knight) such a coxcomb and reformer of Mises? Darest thou but tarry till I come downe.

37

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

I shall teach thee the way to be better advised. So Arming himself presently, he mounted on Horseback, and came forth at the Castle Gate: Whereupon Palmerin thus spake to him. There is ever great odds, Sir Knight, you to be on Horseback, and I on foot, you shall shew small Knighthood in offering me such wrong: I pay thee (of courtesie to alight) otherwise I will bestow such a currying on your Palfrey, as your Merchant afterwards shall take but small paines with him. The Knight of the Castle made as though he heard him not, and ran fiercely with his Launce against Palmerin, who escaped his Enemy, with his Sword gave his Horse such a stroke on the legges, as he fell by him, that the Horse being cut in twaine, he fell to the ground, having one of his Knights legges so fast under him, as he was not able to recover himselfe. Palmerin willing to helpe him up againe, gave him halfe a dozen such raps about the Gate, as he lay quiet enough, without any moving.

Whereupon he unclasped his Helmet, when the Knight having some aire, began to grapple with him, and drawing his Pocket-dagger, gave Palmerin a cruell wound therewith in the right Thigh, in recompence whereof, at one stroke he took his head from off his Shoulders. The Squires and Servants that belonged to the Castle, who came forth to see the issue of the Fight, ran apace back to the Castle again, so that the Gates for their owne safety: But Palmerin (albeit he was hurt) prevented them, laying about him so roughly on every side, as he swore, that if they would not bring him to the Imprisoned Lady, they should all presently dye the death. Many of them with feare, tumbled headlong into the Ditch, others on their knees asked for mercy, promising to do what ever he commanded them: Whereupon he said to him that had the Keyes. Arise quickly Villaine, and conduct me to the Prison, or I shall pay thee for thy lazynesse. The woe full almost frighted out of his wits, brought him directly to the Tower where the Lady was, whom they found naked from

Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

from the middle upwards, and so grievously beaten, as all her Body was goze blood, which the Knight had done that morning, so a Dream he had the night before, how her Mother would send a Knight that should take her thence prisoner, and murder him, in which opinion he came to the Lady, saying. I perceive that thy Mother and Friends labour to get thee from me, and practise my destruction by all the best means they may: but now for their sakes thou shalt verily abhor their dealing. And with these words the Villaine so cruelly whipped her, as she was ready to give up the Ghost, and so left her in hope she would have dyed. Palmerin finding the Lady in this lamentable plight, said.

Arise good Lady and leave your sorrowfull exclamations, for the Villaine that thus misused you, hath had such absolute on for his deserts, as he hath left his head in signe of his penance: and if you will depart with me towards your Mother, I will shew you the Traitor where he lies now quiet enough. Ah my Lord, (quoth the Lady) is the Traitorous Scoto dead, that so monstrously wronged me? He is Lady, said Palmerin, you need feare him no more. When Heaven be praised (quoth she) for this happy day, and among all Knights be you the most renowned, for ever, with which words she arose, and wrapping a furred Mantle about her, without any other garments on her body, she went with Palmerin, and passing by the place where Scoto lay layne, lifting her eyes, and hands to Heaven, she said. O my God, how is thy name to be praised, so justly punishing the treachery and disloyalty of this Villaine: Ah Traytour, how worthily hast thou received this death, which is not rigorous, as thy meritts deserve any hath done to me.

Where you must note, that so soon as the Knight was dead, all the enchantments about the Castle were presently finished, the great Lake being consumed after Palmerins passage, so that the Ladies Mother adventi-

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

sed thereof, came to meete Palmerin: embracing her Daughter with such exceeding joy, as they could not speak to each other their teares so hindered them, at length the Mother kneeled befoze Palmerin with these wordes. Ah wo: by knight, how happy you haue this day made me: all my former griefes (by your meanes) being now converted into singular contentation. As she would haue procecded in her gratulations, she perceiued the blood to trickle downe Palmerins Armour: which she sorrowing to behold, said. Oe think Sir knight, you are very sore wounded, I beseech you grant me so much honour, as to repose your selfe a while within my Castle, where I doubt not to vse such diligent care, as you shall be whole and sound in very short time. Palmerin not minding to refuse her offer, returned with the Lady, and being vnharmed, was brought to his Chamber, where the Lady dressed his wounds, and he was so well entertained as heart could desire.

Then went the Ladies Squires and Seruants to Sclotos Castle, from whence bringing all things that were of any value, they burned the Traitors house, and putting his head on the point of a Lance, they placed it on the top of the Tower for a perpetuall memory. The next day came people from all the parts of the Island, to see the knight that ended the enchantments, and among other, the Damsell that conducted him thither was one, who on her knee thus spake to him. Now am I satisfied Sir knight, and you discharged of the promise you made me, which was only for the deliverance of this Lady, whom you haue valiantly conquered from the Tyrant that tormented her. I beseech him, who encourage hath regard of the poore afflicted, that his pleasure may be to send you like, or a better aduenture, where by you may accomplish all your hartie enterprises. So will he I doubt not, said Palmerin, and that was one from which you distressed me: but I shall neuer be merry till I see him againe, though then at your late escape he escaped my handes so well, And so time speed the

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

the matter so happily, quoth the Damsell, as Peace and Friendship may be vnitied betwixt us, so: if either of you miscarry, it were great pittie, considering the great valour wherewith you are both nobly furnished. Let come what wil said Palmerin, neuer shall other agreement be betwixt vs. With these wordes the Damsell held her peace, so: the percelued by this answer, that he was not halfe pleased with the other knight.

CHAP. LVI.

How *Palmerin* travelling through a great Forrest, espied a Dwarfie enter into a Cave, whom hee followed, and found there a Knight, with whom he had much conference.



So long continued Palmerin in the Castle with the Lady, till his wounds being healed, and he able to beare Armour, he said to the Lady, Dame, by the help of God and your diligent endeavour, I finde my selfe in good constitution of body, wherefore with your favourable licence, I mean to morrow to depart hence, because occasions of greater importance do command me: yet this assurance will I leaue with you, that in any place where I shall come hereafter, your wonderfull courtesie hath gained such power, ouer me, as at all times I remaine to see you any pleasure.

The Lady right glad of Palmerins noble offer, and her Daughter thankfull for her benefit receiued, returned him many thankfull gratulations: but seeing they could not longer

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

ger detain him, for his speeches were such as he would needs be gone, she said:

Gentle Knight, seeing it likes you no longer to sojourn here, but that you think it expedient to depart, I would gladly present you with a simple gift, not as recompence of your painful travels, but onely that hereafter you might remember from whence it came.

When she took the out of a Coffer two rich and precious Rings, and presenting him one of them, she said: You shall give this Ring to her whom above all other you most esteeme, the Ring containing this speciall vertue, that the longer she weares it, the more she shall love you, and daily shall her love so vehemently increase, as all aduersities and troubles she shall beare with patience, that by meanes of your love may any way endanger her.

This other Ring is of a contrary vertue, which you must give to the Lady your true friend beloved, and to him may you safely say, that any occasion whatsoever, cannot pluck it from his Ladies finger: for this is the nature thereof, that the Lady which weareth it, shall not be dispaire, and neither intreaties, gifts, or whatsoever besides, cannot compell her, to do any thing contrary to her liking. If it come to passe that she were beloved of any other, then him she now affecteth, she shall be able by vertue of this Ring, to quench all such libidinous desire in her solicitor, and cause him never afterward to moleste her with any dishonest request.

As for these Stones of so rare and excellent quality, you must note that they were precisely chosen for you by my Sister, and placed as you see them, by her speciall knowledge in the Magickall Sciences, that in time to come they shall do such service, as no Jewels (of what value so ever they were) might be able to do the like.

Well then,

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

Besides these, the gods him directed other Jewells to carry to his Lady, for which he humbly thanked her, and taking his leave of her and her Daughter, who shed many teares for his departure, he mounted upon Horses backe, and travelling thorow a great Forrest, he espied a Dwarfie, whom he judging for to be his Merchant *Urbanillo*, because he was of his stature, and very much resembled him, he called aloud. Heare a thou tall fellow, how comest thou in this place, so unfrequented and inhabited?

The Dwarfie being in a great feare, ranne so fast as he could into a great Cane betwixt two Bushes, which made *Palmerin* alight and follow him, and very farre went he into the Cane not seeing any body, till at length he came into a little Room, as it had bene cut out of a Quarry, which had light into it by a little chinke cut thorow a Rocke: and there he found a young Knight laid upon a bedde, at whose feet lay the Dwarfie, all quaking and trembling with his late feare, whom *Palmerin* now saw that he was not *Urbanillo*, wherefore he saluted the Knight, saying:

I must intreate you Sir Knight to pardon me, because I entred so boldly, neither knocking first, or calling for any of your servants: Albeit I desired to speak with this little man, but nothing could induce him to carry my coming, for he fled from me as I had bene a Devil. Whereupon perswading my selfe, to finde some other body here more courteous, I followed him at the hard heels, with no other intent, but onely to know how I might possibly get knowledge of this desolate Forrest, wherein by misadventure I have lost my way, for I would not willingly stay so faire, least I should be forced to remaine here as an holy Hermite, considering my profession is cleane contrary.

As present such chance, I think it was Gods will I should followe

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

Follow your Seruant, let me therefore intreate you, to know what you are, and wherefore you live here so solitary, Channing as it seemeth the company of men & protesting to you, that if I may in ought assist you, whereby to draw you from this obscure life. I will with all my heart accomplish it, though it were a matter that should concerne my life.

The Knight rayling vppon himselfe, and sighing so bitterly as life and soule would haue parted in sunder, answered. Alas noble Knight, seeke not to vnderstand, the depth of my sorrow, in respect the remedy is all together impossible: yet in that your demand proceedeth from such a Gentle Spirit, as pittie the miseries of despised creatures, I will acquaint you with some part of mine estate.

Know then gentle Knight, that I am the most sorrowne Varnan, whose vnfortunat life excorbeth all mens whatsoeuer, for this world affordeth me nothing but mischance, disgrace, contempt, and all tormenting griefes, as for delight and pleasure, they are loathsome to me, my Moneths, Weeks, Dayes, Houres and Minutes, being continually accompanied with all extreme passions. My greatest ease consisteth in dolorous Lamentations, remembrance of passed misfortunes, sad Regrets, and insupportable Melancholy.

In briefe, I am onely he, whose companions are, a troubled spirit, though he confounded with frustrate hope, having utterly lost the light of those gladsome Sunnes, whereof the one shined in my face, the other in my heart, that now nothing is left for me but a life despitied, yet welcome to me that am so vndermined.

These wordes were uttered with so many sighes, such floods of teares, and halting his softly with such impatience, as would haue melted the heart of Adamant, which moued Palmerin by gentle perswasions, to request

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

request of him the cause of his disquiet: and so long he continued his importunate intreaties, that the Knight at length thus answered. Gentle Sir, so well contenteth me the sorowes which I suffer, that in hope of any remedy, I would not betray them: but seeing fortune hath thus conducted you hither, in respect of your gracious and affable nature, as also that you shall repute me vnderseate and misgouerned, I will satisfie you in the cause of my sadnesse.

True it is, Sir Knight, that I haue hitherto, and euer shall haue a Lady, Daughter to a Knight my neighbour, she being (in my judgement) one of the fairest Ladies in the whole World. And now perceiving by her behaviour that she loved me as well, or rather more, which indeed she did not: for her I accomplished all that a Knight could for his Lady, aduenturing mine honour, and my life in all dangers for her sake, yet, nothing might be refused for the Distresse of my thoughts. Perceiving my selfe to be so equally loued, and my passions to grow beyond my ability, finding occasion to acquaint her with the secrets of my heart, I desired her to pittie my apprehensions, which if she refused to do, she would lose her Lover, and his life withall. For I was so solemnely bound to her service, as she could not command any thing so hard and dangerous, but by her favourable regard would be most easie to me.

These wordes could draw no pittie from her, but displeased and in great anger she answered. What I might not be reckoned among those Knights, who deserved the Love of a Lady of her calling, and therefore I should not be so hardy, as to presume to her, or come in her presence. Goodnight she, as if it had beene that gave thee thy fault, wherein thou takest such pleasure, and neuer wilt thou turne againe to me.

With these wordes she was flung from me to a distance.

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliva*,

both, where I was wont alwayes to stand and talk, with her, beguiling the time in no lesse contentation then these happy Soules in the Elygian fields, such was the care Beauty, good grace, and Angular courttesie of my (sometime) beloved Lady Valerica. I cannot deny, but that a Lady bestowed the fault on me, but in any such respect as my Lady imagined, God knows is most untrue, nor could death compell me so much to abuse my chosen Mistress.

Seeing my Lady then so rigorous, and her answer so severe, yet assured of mine owne innocency and loyalty: I was surpris'd with such surpassing heaviness, as every heart expected when my feeble spirit would forsake his long dispir'd habitation. My Lady being thus resolute in her owne opinion, and disdaining all meanes I shewed to persuade her, despairing likewise of any after hope: I determined with my selfe, to abandon all company, as unworthy of their society, and then betooke my selfe to this brutish kinde of life, where I might without any impeach, breath forth my continuall complaints.

In this resolution I came to this place without the knowledge of my Lord or any other, this Dwarf onely excepted, who evermore hath bene my most true and faithful servant, and fetcheth my necessaries at a village nere adjoining, and by his honest persuasions: hath many times withheld me from committing violence on my selfe. Thus have you heard in briefe the cause of my sorrow, the depth whereof cannot be considered or valued, but by such as have in like manner tried and suffered, the disdain and ingratitude of inconstant Ladies.

Palmerin having heard the fortunes of this Knight, repeated to him the graces and labours of his Lady Poly-narda, what honour she did him in her Fathers Court, and how he was in danger to receive the like reward, as the Knight did of his Valerica: and fearing in dede that

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

that his mishap would sort to that issue, he fell downe at the feet of this pious refused Lover. The Knight perceiving, that the repetition of his misfortune was cause of this alteration, breathing forth a vehement sigh, he said:

Alas wretched Catiffe that I am, hath any distress made me so unhappy, that enduring an extremity worse then death, I cannot dye, and yet he that did but beare my misery hath lost his life: I will not live any longer to prejudice any other man, but will now make way to the end of mine owne troubles. So then he drew forth Palmerins sword, and offered so to thrust it into his body: but Palmerin received to his former estate, started suddenly up, and catching him fast in his Armes, said.

How now my Friend? Will you be so inconsiderate, that for such a little temporall paine which your body endureth, for to condemn your soule to everlasting perdition.

And though your Passions touch you so severely, as that you will not afford any pittie to your selfe: let me now intreat you to forbear this bad humour. For not without great reason have I sustained this sudden motion, remembering the unspeakable comfort I received by one, who by false suggestions, or slanderous reports (which woundeth more deepe then the fatal weapon) may in like sort be changed into such conceit, as her Judgement may exceede a Hell of torments.

Nor can I not denie (your Lady having with such open shame refused you) but you have great occasion to grieve thereat, yet not to stretch the extremity so farre as to dispaire, or worke injury to your calling to memory both light the opinion of a Woman is, how suddenly she will alter, and how prompt she is to Jealousie, especially when she loveth effectually. And if heretofore she loved you frequently, it is impossible but she should feel some part of your anguish, and
more

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

more violently (I thinke then your selfe can.) Trust then in him that hath all hearts at command, repose your selfe confidently on his good Providence, for he will not leave you from State of your honourable intent, standing with Justice, and perfect Integrity.

As Palmerin continued these comfortable persuasions the Dwarfie covered the Table, and then set before them such a small proportion of Pittance, as he had provided, and when they had well refreshed themselves, Palmerin tooke leave of the Knight, promising him (if he could by any good means) to give some ease to his oppressions. Varnan returned him many thanks, commanding his Dwarfie to conduct him into the High-way, being not a little sorry to leave his company, who then had so well abused and comforted him. Palmerin being come into his ready way, sent backe the Dwarfie, and rode on till he was got out of the Forrest, intending to finde out the Castle where Valerica remained, because he would somewhat sollicite the cause of the poore solitary Varnan. So riding along in this determination, he espied a knight and two Squires before him, the Knight thus speaking to one of his Squires. I know not whether it be time as yet to enter the Garden: but if Madame Valerica be as yet come thither? Goe see if she be there, and make thy returne quickly to me again. Palmerin hearing the name of Valerica, knew well that it was she for whom the solitary Knight lived in such penury: wherefore being moved with pity at his miserie, he said to himselfe: See here the false treachery of a wretched Menace, so honourably to forsake the man that loveth her so dearly, and now to persecute the killing of his life. What say you? But I shall see how she goes, and if she belongs to the persecuting of a poor Knight, and coming to the Knight, he shall see. All these things he thought, that he would see all the House of Knights in England. Note by my Friends, thou shalt see it, pay

for

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

for the disloyalty. With these words, he lent him such a sound stroke on the head, as he cleft it therewith to the very sixth.

The two Squires seeing their Masteraine, beganne to haffe away: but Palmerin caught him that was sent to the Garden, to whom he said. Come on Syrtha, if thou louest thy life, bring me where the Lady is: If thou dost not, thou shalt never follow thy trade any longer. The Squire by no means durst do otherwise: So he brought him to the Market, where Valerica was wont to receive in her Louer, and knocking with his finger, as his Master was accustomed: Valerica opening the doore, and thinking it had bene her friend, cast her armes about Palmerins neck, who brought her in his armes south of the Garden, commanding the Squire presently to follow him. Valerica much abashed hereat, said. How now sweet Friend? whether will you carry me? Know you not, if my father heard hereof, that neither of us durst approach before him.

With Madame (said Palmerin) these are but words, there is no remedy, but you must go with mee. So that neither with teares nor Requests would he be intreated, but presently mounted on Horsebacke, causing the Squire to helpe the Lady by before him, because he would be sure she should not make an escape from him, and riding away towards the Forrest, because the darke Night drew on, he left the roade way, seeking some place where they might conveniently repose themselves that Night. At length he found out a little Whicket, where they alighted and returning south his way to pasture, took of his Helmet, and came to the Lady, desiring her to be contented with such hard Lodging for that night: For when she beheld that it was not her friend, wishing her hands she thus exclaim'd. Alas, unhappy wretch that I am: How treacherous am I thus deceiv'd? What can I please be comparable to mine, having lost my deere friend, and enjoying it to my pleasure that hath cruelly

murdered

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

murdered him: Ah hard fortune, why art thou so inconstant, to exchange my former pleasures into this grievous stratageme.

Palmerin hearing her so impatient, sayde: You must thinke Lady, that what hath happened, is by Divine permit. I know, who hath thus appointed this contrariety, to punish your loosenesse, and your exceeding disloyalty towards him, who loves you dearer then his owne soule: and so your love leades a most anker life, in the very desolate and uncomfortable place of this *Wolue*. And seeing he hath thus long endured such hardnesse for your sake, it is good reason that you should in some sorte participate with his misery. I care not therefore, for I have spoken nothing of him, but what I have seen: and that by great chaunce have I thus brought you away from your fathers house, meaning by Gods good favour (this humour forgotten) to cause you match with him, whose true love above all other hath deserved you. Ah misery incomparable, said the Lady, I see now it is in vaine to shunne what the Deities have appointed, how falls my fortune from ill to worse? Must I now goe with that coward Varnan, whom hitherto I have continually despised: I had rather die a most shamefull death.

I know not Lady what you thinke, said Palmerin, but in my opinion, Varnan is much better then you esteem him, and a better knight then he, that could defend his state with no wiser policie: worthily may you call him coward, and love the other that lues to do you service. So long they stood on these termes, untill a knight passed by them, to whom *Valerica* cried. O: the gentle knight for Gods sake pity me, and deliver me from this traytor, who falsely hath beguiled me, and violently brought me hither against my will. What art thou said the knight that thus dishonorest this Lady? I shall teach thee better knowledge of thine order before we part, Palmerin quickly byholing of his horse, & clasping on his helmet, said to the knight. What art thou that wouldst take

hys

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

Dev from me, whom I conquered even now by my sword: follow thy way, for I shall see to it what discipline I die to cooles, that will meddle with matters above their capacity. Darest thou so obstinately stand in thy treachery? said the knight: Mark what will be the end of thy presumption.

CHAP. LVII.

How *Palmerin* having thus brought away *Valerica*, conducted her to the Cave, to her beloved *Varnan*, and there confirmed the agreement of their Love.



Before we passe any further, you shall understand that the knight thus contending with Palmerin, was *Hermes*, one whom the King sent after the Lady with *Fryfol*, to make deliverance of the *Cable*, as you have heard before: he being Palmerins friend, yet neither knowing other. For *Hermes* took such regard of the Ladies complaint, as he marked not Palmerin belowe he put on his helmet. Palmerin seeing that *Hermes* would needs try his fortune, encountred him with such a rough stroke, as downe he fell to the ground, *Hermes* thinking his head was shivered in a hundred pieces: So Palmerin called *Hermes* squire, commanding him to help by the Lady, or else he would send him after his master. The squire alighted and help by the Lady, rewarding her with an infinite number of carres, because his master had sped so ill by her means.

Trust me Lady, (quoth Palmerin) though you thinke my labour but ill bestowed, yet such is my regard of the solitary Varnan, as to smite that hell of torments which he suffers,

3

The History of Palmerin D'Oliua,

I must needs hold better opinion of my paines. With these and many such like speeches he beguiled the time, till they came nere to Varnans Cave, who to take the Ayre, was there walking vnder the Trees: but when he saw Palmerin returned, and a Lady with him, yea, perceiuing well that it was faire Valerica, they were no sooner alighted, but he caught her in his armes, saying: Is it possible sweet for'ane, that after so long mishap, & when all hope was utterly gone, thou canst afford me this gracious labour? Ah happy eyes, that haue poured forth such showers of teares, what felicity may compare with yours, contemplating now the rare beauty of you. Oh! What may it be, that after so many insupportable torments, the meane whereof should returne such pleasure, comfort, and solace? Depart then teares, pack hence lamentations, griefe, torments, and all melancholy conceits, get you else where, and in most Barbarous countryes of the world make your abiding, for the commands you hence, in whom consists my special contentment. Oh for'unate knight, how may I recompence this inexpressible kinde of service, mounting all other that euer was heard of? Impossible is it for me to requite this fauour, though all my Possessions, life, body and spirit, were bound to your service. But Heaven will supply my want, and continue you in as great happinesse, as your noble Bounty hath brought me comfort.

Forbear these speeches (said Palmerin) albeit I had done a thousand times as much, yet should I but accomplish what one Chyristian owes to another. I pray you therefore let us go into your Cave, least we be espied, and so prevented. Beside, I am so ouer watched, as I cannot stand on my feet, though the very want of sleep. Valerica seeing her selfe in such an vncomforth place, and in his custody the most detested, her angry stomack would not suffer her to speak one word: but when she had a while rested her selfe, on a seate of fragrant Herbes, and flowers, which Varnan diligently prepared. Palmerin said: Behold my deare Valerica, so in what

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

what place, in what solitary, ankers, and sharp kinde of life: your Varnan liues by your commandment, now saving time and fortune is so unbearable, let not your rigour and disdain exceed their mutability. Consider a little, what griefes he hath endured in this comfortles place, which verily haue bin so great, as all the pleasures in the world, cannot recompence the very least of them. I beseech you then, if heretofore you haue bene him hard liking, let it now be forgotten, and if vnadvisedly he hath any way offended you, let his long toyments and surpassing loyalty serue now for satisfaction, and take him to your husband, as the most perfect and faithful Lober in England. You likewise Sir Varnan, without remembrance of your passed miseries, or her too rigorous refusals heretofore, take her as your Lady and wife, and in all honour unite your self to her by present speeches: for seeing I haue brought her hither, it will remaine a continuall reproch to me, if you would not accept her as your spouse and wife. My my Lord (quod Varnan) with right good will shall I accomplish your command, so it may stand with my Ladies liking, for herein consists the whole sum of my desires. Ah miserable beyond all other (said Valerica to Palmerin) must I by a bailut be subjected to so vile an extremity, and constrained to take him for my Husband whom I cannot affect, he being the most false and cowardly knight that euer I knew? What I against my Fathers will, and by my Traitors procurement, that hath so much abused me, as no vertuous knight would so haue wronged a Lady, be thus compelled to my marriage? Heaven cannot like heretofore, and rather will I die, then to do the thing shall returne me such reproch. When Varnan she so pitifully as though she had bene quite distraught of her senses: which Varnan beholding, beganne thus to complaine. Ah gentle knight, what griefe is it to hate her in these toyments, whom I love much better then mine owne life: and for whom I rather desire to die, then not to enjoy her in this her owne liking. I cannot liue seeing her in these afflictions

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

ous, and therfore conuey her againe to her fathers house, and no sooner that she be departed hence, but life will forsake this foolishne Carthage, then shall my death assure her how faithfully I loue her. Palmerin seeing the obstinacy of Valerica, said. In faith Lady, I thinke in all the world is not a more cruel and disloyall woman then you are, perswade your selfe, that if I take the paine to carry you againe to your fathers Castle, I shall doe your errand there in such cost, as all your life time repentance will hardly excuse you. And to speake the truth, Varnan doth much more then you deserue, if you well remember your selfe, and so you are so stubborn, I shall giue you the desert (offering to draw his sword) that such ingratitude and treacherous women most fully merit. Valerica said when she saw him in such choller, and doubting he would discover her incontinent love past, threw her selfe at his feet, desiring him to appease his anger, and she would obey what ere he commanded.

For (quoth she) seeing my fortune hath brought me into his company, who for his vnfeigned love to me, hath so long suffered wonderfull calamities: well might I be esteemed of brutish nature, if I did not acknowledge it, therefore I will be his wife, and giue him my faith here in your presence. Palmerin well pleased with this answer, took her by the hand, and taking Varnan by the other, espoused them there by solemn promises, and afterward laid him downe to rest himselfe a while. Then Varnan taking Valerica in his armes, with sweet kisses and amorous speeches, expelled all former heavinesse, esteeming himselfe the happiest knight in the whole world, having now at length obtained the labour of his mistresse, giuing her to understand, how acceptable the gift of pittie was, coming from so rare a creature to her languishing beloved. Palmerin seeing them so well agreed, would now depart and leaue them to their fortune: but by earnest opportunity of these lovers, he stayed there longer then he intended. Now was the love betweene these

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

lovers, farre greater then their hatred had bene, so that after they had stayed there sixe or seuen dayes in the Castle, with such entertainment as the Emperour could make them, they departed to one of Varnans Castles, and there obtained peace with the said Parents of Valerica, continuing long time together in comfort of their love, and ending their lines in loyalty together.

CHAP. LVIII.

How Palmerin, after he departed from Varnan and Valerica, met with two Ladies in chase, one of them giuing him a Falcon. And what happened to him against the Duke of Gaule his twelve knights, out of whose hands he delivered *Hermes*.



When Palmerin saw Varnan and Valerica so well contented, after many offers of their service, and kinde aduises delivered on all sides, he left them in their Vault, and set forward on his journey, lodging that night in an ancient knights Castle, where he understood, how the brother of the same knight, besieged Valericas

Father in his Castle: wherefore he turned another course, and leaving the broad way that guided to London, he met two Ladies accompanied with three squires, who had cast with a Falcon and a Sparrow to eye, the sight whereof so highly contented him, as he would needs tarry to see the end thereof, which made one of the Ladies thus speake to him. I see you might you haue no hast on your Journey, because you stay to behold our pastime, therefore if you will go with us to a water here by, you shall there see a brace fight indeed, such was the game is there so plentiful, & my falcon so good as she will neuer

The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

never false. Palmerin who above all pastimes loved Hauking, rode with the Ladies to the Sparthes by their Castle, where they had such excellent sport at Heron, Duck & Palarbins the day beguiling them, Palmerin was forced to stay with them that night. When they were come to the Castle, Palmerin manned the Ladies Faulcon so well, as though all his life time he had practised to be a Faulconer. The Lady seeing him so brave a Gentleman, so courteous, affable, and comely in behabour, and that he sendeth her Hauke so gently, was immediately surprised with his Love, so that she desired to know of whence he was, whom she could so gladly afford to chuse for her Beloved, and having long earnestly beheld him, she said, Say Knight, that I might entertain you as your estate becometh, I pray you tell me your name, and whither you travele. Lady (qu. Palmerin) I am a milder stranger, who by fortune on the Sea was brought to this Country, and because the King had warre against the Emperour of Allaigne, I remained a while here as a Soldier, attending a prosperous wind, to transport me home againe into my Native Country. The Lady hearing this, and judging him to be one of the famous Knights, that came to the Court, loved him more earnestly then she did before, providing such surpassing delights and delicacies for him, as she wished that night had bene a yeare in length. The Tables laid out, and many pleasant speeches past between Palmerin and the Ladies Daughter, she conducted him to his Chamber, wishing (if her Honour might so much it) that Palmerin never might have any other Bedfellow. But leaving him to his good rest, she departed to her chamber, where sweet sleepe of sleep infused her that night. In the Morning, Palmerin called for his Horse to be gone: the Lady very sorrowfull so soon to forgoe his company, but seeing she had no means to hold him, she said. Seeing your departure say may not be denied, I would present you with the Faulcon, which yesterday did so specially content you, which if you please

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

please to accept for my sake, I shall not be unmindefull of the honour you have done me, chiding, that you vouchsafe to stay here this night, being as welcom hither as the king himself.

Seeing it is your pleasure Madame (said Palmerin) to bestow your Faulcon on me, I accept it as the only thing you could give me, and by the faith of a Knight I promise you that I will keep it for your sake, and never part therewith, if by force or villany it be not taken from me. The Lady so joyfull hereof as might be devised, caused the Faulcon to be brought to him.

Here must you note, that this is the selfe same Lady, which sent the Faulcon to Varnan, and loved him so nearly as after the overthrow he had forsooke the Country, she gave her selfe altogether to this recreation. Her father perceiving she was affected, suffered her to take her pleasure, sending her the best Hawks that could be gotten. But it came so to passe, that two Faulcons so friendly given, and in the like sort taken, proved very prosperous to both the Knights, causing them to curse the hour, that ever they accepted the Ladies liberallty, came neare the Castle, as into her Hauke, as you have already heard by solitary Varnan, and hereafter shall perceive in Palmerins fortunes, he being departed from the Lady, rode two dayes together without any adventure, till at length he came to the Tent, where the Duke of Gauls Knights guarded the passage, which scant pleased Palmerin, because he imagined if he fought with them, he should be defeated in his intent, and not see Trincus so soon as he would, whom he left at the Court expecting his coming, wherefore he would have turned another way, but one of the Knights called to him. Returne toward returne, thou shalt not escape without tryall of thy manhood, for we must make proofe whether there be any in thee.

Palmerin not knowing where to set his Hauke, and very loth to lose her, was not desirous to fight, but seeing that with honour he could not refuse it, answered. It is small

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Olera*,

courteſie Sir knight to challenge the man that hath no will to your ſport: but if there be no remedy, your will be fulfilled, albeit I hope you will firſt repent. I ſee thou canſt pteate well, quoth the knight, and believe thou wert wiſe if thou couldeſt ſo eſcape: but ſeeing thou art ſo long beſide thou art ready, I le bying thee to ſuch a place where harkes ſhall not hinder thee, and in one yeare thou ſhalt ſpare the wearing of ſhoes and ſpurres in ſuch a comfortable place, as the ſunne no day light ſhall offend thine eyes.

I hope I have learned, ſaid Palmerin, to keepe my ſelfe from ſuch places: but I would faine know the gentle Chamber Page, that is ſo ſkilfull whiffing with his pantoſes, as he can teach knights errant how to wear them. The knight being angry, called forth the reſt of his companions, among whom he eſpyed Hermes priſoner, his Helmet lying by him, and his armes pinnioned: therefore to revenge his wrong, he called his Squire, ſaying; I pray thee my friend looke to my thanks a while, ſo I am come to defend thy Maſters honour, and calling to the Dukes knight, ſaying. Come Sir let us diſpatch quickly, ſo I have earneſt buſineſſe in another place: the knight laughing at him, answered. Why how now Capitaine: thinke you to paſſe hence ſo eaſily? there are ſufficient to ſtay your hasty Journey, eleven moze muſt talke with you, the beſt of them able to abate your pride, ſo your horſe lacks a ſtable, and we will provide him one. So couching their Lances, they met together with ſuch force, as the Dukes knight was throlone from his horſe, his ſhoulder being broken with the weight of his fall: Palmerin arreſting the knights horſe for his owne, gave him to Hermes Squire in keeping, ſaying. Becauſe the knight is not willing to get on horſeback againe, hold this for me, and he may lye at eaſe to ſee the fortune of his fellows. Then came another knight from the Tent, whom Palmerin welcomed in ſo friendly manner, as he lay not able to ſtirre hand nor foot; with this one Lance he unhorsed

Emperour of *Conſtantinople*. PART. I.

9

ſed ſoure moze, and broke it ſo ballantly on the ſecond knight, as while he lived he meant to haue no moze. With a freſh Lance he diſmounted all the reſt, none of them being willing to deale with him any further: wherefore Palmerin came to Hermes, ſaying. What doe you Sir knight? Why take you not the beſt horſe among all the dozen? What ſhall I Sir, ſeeing you command me, albeit not long ſince you ſerued me as theſe knights are: yet God be thanked that by your meanes I am deliuered from impriſonment, wherein theſe knights intended to keep me, becauſe I unhorsed ſoure of them, and at the firſt encounter my horſe was killed, which was the cauſe of my ſorle and taking.

The knights (quoth Palmerin) haue now leſure to reſt them, ſo they were troubled beſore with watching for paſſengers: I doubt not now but we may quietly paſſe the bridge, ſo I ſee none of them offer to hinder us. Hermes mounting on horſeback, commanded his Squire to take a freſh one for himſelfe, and ſo they rode on together rejoycing at this good fortune. They had not ridden the ſpace of a mile, but Hermes demanded Palmerins name, which when he knew, in great rejoycing he ſayd: Ah worthy knight, now is my tranell ended in ſearch of you: truſt me I would reſuſe the beſt citie in England, in reſpect of the great friendſhip I haue found at your hands, as alſo for the comfort your preſence will bying to our dread Lord, and your noble companions, who long time haue expected your deſired returne. As they rode on in theſe ſpeeches, they came to a ſaynt fountain, where Palmerin would alight to reſreſh himſelfe, and to kinde up ſuch ſmall wounds, as he had taken in ſcuffling againſt the knights of Gaule.

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

CHAP. LXI.

How *Fryfol* was delivered out of *Palmerins* hand, by the meanes of *Colmelio* his Squire.



The same day that *Palmerin* fought with the knights of *Gaul*, the Duke himselfe was gone on hunting, by meanes whereof, he lost the sight of the pastime. which afterward he repented, because he had with him y^e most part of his knights, so that no one was left in the Castle but *Fryfol*, that might be counted of any valour, who beholding so many knights sleged by one, marvelled not a little what he might be, and after long consideration of his haughty exploits, he said to himselfe, I cannot thinke this knight to be the man against whom I combated sometime in France, yet know I no man living but he, that could perforce such rare chivalry.

Now, because *Palmerin* changed his Armour, he verily imagined that it was not he, yet was he desirous to know, but doubtfull to follow him by reason of his former experience: againe, if you should suffer him to passe without some tryall, he judged it would returne to his great dishonour, wherefore he resolved to adventure his fortune.

And in this determination he came to the Dukes sister, who loved him intirely, as you heard before: the beginning with him in this manner. I cannot sufficiently marvell Sir *Fryfol*. how you have suffered in your owne view, my Brothers knights to be so shamefully confounded by one passenger: I desire you sweete friend, if ever you make lance for a Ladies love, that for my sake you will deale with that proud knight, and make him know that

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

that you can abate his courage, were his head framed of the hardest hammered brasse. If you fulfill my request, you shall doe an acceptable deed to my Brother, and to me such service, as I shall hereafter requite to your owne content. *Spadame* (quoth *Fryfol*) I did intend to fight with him, but seeing it pleaseth you so graciously to command mee, no danger can withhold me, because the world can witnesse, what great a baile so honourable a Ladies favour is, to the knight that liues to renounce her name. So departing from his Lady he presently armed himselfe, and mounting on a lusty Courser, followed the way that *Palmerin* was gone: the twelve knights not a little glad thereof, well hoping that he would revenge their dishonour. *Fryfol* continued his travell so long, till at length he came to the fountaine where *Palmerin* refreshed himselfe, who had no sooner espied him, but surprised with great joy, said to *Hermes*; I am sure this knight comes hither to seek me, wherefore I intreat you by the reuerend love you beare to your best Beloved, not any way to hinder that fight betwixt us, till the end deliver victory to one side or other: for he thinking to revenge the reproach of his fellow, hath followed me to perforce what they were not able. Then *Palmerin* suddenly clasping on his Helmet, mounted on horseback, and taking advantage of the plaine field, because it was most convenient for the combat, which *Fryfol* perceiving scornfully said; I thinke Sir knight, you are some kinde of Prophet, because you deuine so well the cause of my coming: unhappy was it for you to prebaille in such sort against the Duke of *Gauls* knights, which you must now pay for with too late repentance. If I did them any harme, said *Palmerin*, it was their owne seeking, and by your arrogant speeches it may be presumed, you are one of the same company: but the love of the Dukes sister, cannot shield you from your desert recompence. At these words, *Fryfol* well perceyved that this was the knight he so much doubted: Heberthe-

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

less his courage was so good, as remembering the promise he made to his Lady, gave spurs to his horse, and they encountered with such brave chivalry, as the shivers of their Lances flew up into the ayre, and then they assaulted each other so roughly with their Swords, as well they might be esteemed right valiant Champions. No mercy was intended on either side, for Fryfol was determined to dye or conquer, and Palmerin held the same resolution, so that the ground was coloured with their blood, their Armour and Shields battered in pieces, and no hope left on either side of life. But as alwayes some mischance or other follows a noble minde, so fell it out with Fryfol, for in their close buckling together, Palmerin had got sure hold on his shield, which Fryfol striving forcibly to recover, the buckles brake in sunder, and with the sudden breach thereof he fell bolue backward, when Palmerin leaping from his horse, sayd.

And let me never hereafter be called Palmerin, if now I doe not revenge my selfe sufficiently. Which wordes when Fryfols Squire heard, he came hastily and fell at his feet, saying. Noble Knight, I beseech you for the honour you beare to Armes, to pause a while, and tell me if you be Palmerin D'Oliua, for if you be, I am your brother, who haue suffered great paine and trauell to finde you out. Palmerin presently knelt Colmelio, the sonne of Gerrard his foster father, whose sight was so joyfull to him, as casting away his Sword, he ran and embraced him about the neck, saying: My deare Friend Colmelio, the most welcome man in the world to me. How happy may I account my selfe (quoth Colmelio) to finde you when all hope was past: having travelled so many Countreys, and all in vaine: if then you love me as you make protestation, let me intreate one fauour at your hand, that you forget your anger towards my Master Fryfol, and giue over your sight, for long time hath I serued him as my Lord, and well hath he deserved much better service then mine. Colmelio, sayd Pal-

merin

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

merin, the thing thou demandest is marvellous great, neuertheless such is my comfort hauing met with thee, as I grant thy request, and happily hath hee now escaped with life, considering what occasions haue past vs heretofore. So taking Colmelio by the hand, he sayd to Fryfol, Sir Knight, at your Squires intreaty, I suffer you quietly to depart, and meet me againe at any time you think good: but you shall go look another Squire, say Colmelio at this time what go with me. Fryfol being wounded in many places, and very faint with losse of his blood, might easily be induced to this agreement of peace: But coming to Colmelio, he said: Wilt thou forsake thy Master, and go with his enemy: Trust me Sir (quoth Colmelio) you must needs pardon me, if in this matter I chance to offend you: for to seek him I forsook my fathers house, and haue continued a very laboursome search. If thou wilt needs goe (said Fryfol) and that my intreaties may not diswaide thee, I pray for the successe of thy desire, and the advancement to honour, and while I live I will make account of thee as my friend and brother.

So returning as he came, he beganne in this manner to exclaime against Fortune. Ah cruell and inconstant Lady: sufficed it not thee to dishonour me before mine enemy, but thou must now robbe me of my Squire I loved so dearly: but so hast thou dealt with them of highest Calling, for infinit Kings and Potentates haue then deceived and (before their chiefe enemies) dishonoured: such hath bene thy treachery now to me at this instant, that I may justly complain of thee while I live. As he continued these complaints, he met others armed Knights that came to assist him, and the Duke himselfe in company among them: who demanded of Fryfol, whether his enemy were alive, or sent away vanquished: Vanquished (said Fryfol) thinke you so good a Knight may be so easily vanquished? When he discoursed his whole successe: which the Duke hearing, exclaymed, on his Wandering, that he was not in presence when Palmerin passed:

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

passed: wherefore he would needs follow him, but only that Fryfol intreated him to the contrary, because the night approached so nere, as it was impossible for him to overtake Palmerin. The Duke in a marvellous rage, for that his enterprise fell out no better, returned with Fryfol, and an houre within night they came to his Castle, where he called for his best Chyrurgions, charging them to giue diligent attendance on Fryfol. When the Dukes Sister heard the misfortune of her friend, she came hastily to him in his Chamber, and after many sweet liknes, said: I beseech you my Lord for get my folly, for I was the cause of your mischance.

Madame (said Fryfol) where no offence is committed, what needs any remission? If my fortune haue been ill, it is not for me to complaine on you, for your Request tended to myne owne honour: but I must be content with my hap, though it hath sorted to so bad effect, and this doth yet comfort me, that I receiued my soyle by the onely knight in the world. And if the Heavens please to lengthen my dayes, I shall be desirous to do him service, for there is no man liuing to whom I could better assign it. Now need I not mislike, (hauing tryed him so often) if he be worthy the loue of his Polynarda, for he (beyond all others) doth best deserve it.

Why how now? (quoth the Lady) are you so vnwise, to honour him so much, that hath so injured you? and which is most childish, to desire his service? Goe then and seek him whom thou so louest, for by mine honour, I more despise thee now then any man in the world, thou making such reputation of him, whom thou oughtest to pursue with mortal hatred. Fryfol smiling thereat, said: Madame I must needs say so, seeing no ill words can amend mischance: So without any answer, she flung forth of his Chamber. The next day, the Duke called all his knights, commanding them to re-fraine the passage no lower at the Bridge, intending to goe to the Court, so soone as Fryfol had recovered his health.

CHAP. LX.

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

CHAP. LX.

How *Palmerin, Hermes, and Colmelio*, returned to *London*, and the good Entertainment the King of *England* made them,



After that Fryfol was returned from the Combat, Palmerin after many and many embracing of Colmelio, went with him to the fountain, where he left Hermes, all three together, making no small joy, Colmelio for his happy finding of Palmerin, and he for the loue of his supposed Brother, and Hermes, for

the comfort he should bring the King his Master, being able now to acquaint his Highnesse with Palmerins name, which he was loath that any in the English Court should know, wherefore he said: Now can you not (my Lord) haue after hide your name, though you haue bene daintie of it all this while. It is true Sir (quoth Palmerin) albeit I little thought to be discovered so soone: but seeing it is come to passe, my hope is in the Highest, who will defend me in all mine attempts. Now tell me Colmelio, what newes in Greece? Truly my Lord (quoth he) the discourse will be long and tedious: therefore if you please to mount on Horses backe, it will serue well to shorten the thought of our Journey. So as they rode towards London, he beganne to discourse, in how many places he had made search and sought him in Greece, and how at length he heard of him: at Macedon, by report of his conquest of the Serpent, at the mountain Artiferia, which was the meanes that had restored the King of Macedon to his former health. And afterwards, how

The History of *Palmerin D'Oltra*,

how he left Greece travelling into Allmaigne, and from thence into England, at what time the Emperours power was diminished: and hearing great fame of Fryfol his late Master, he spent some time in his service, not doubting but by his meanes to find the man he looked for. Palmerin was somewhat moved, hearing Colmelio so commend Fryfol, wherefore he demanded of him, if he knew any thing of that Knights lineage. So my Lord (quoth he) but I can assure you, that he is one of the most gentlest Knights in the World, and he concealeth his Parentage very secretly, which makes me judge he is descended of royall birth. After Colmelio had ended his discourse, he repeated to him some part of his fortunes, in the end perswading him that he would remunerate his paines in seeking him, and in time manifest the love he bore him. By this time they were come to the City of London, Hermes riding before to the Pallace, where he advertised the King, how Palmerin was returned to the City, which newes so highly contented the King, as oftentimes he embraced Hermes, for bringing the man he long desired to see: but Trineus and Ptolome exceeded him in joy, and presently both mounted on Horse back, to go make with their friend, when so many Embracings, Courtships, and kinde Gratulations had passed betwene them, as is usual at the meeting of long absent Lovers: Ah my good Lord and friend (quoth Trineus) how long hath hard fortune kept you from me? and why did you depart, not bouchising a Farewell: What earnest occasion might cause such an unkinde departure? Trust me, I perswade my selfe in respect of the long continuance of our Amity, that death could not procure such a severe Enterprize. By your Lord (quoth Palmerin) it seemeth you have some cause to complaine of me: but when you understand how matters have happened, you will not condemne me altogether. For at the time of my departure, I thought verily to returne the next day following: but such impotunate affayres continually fell out, as that I

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. II.

could not returne untill this very instant. Ptolome sayd as much as Trineus did, notwithstanding, this fortunate meeting forbode all further accusations, and they became as good friends as they ever were. So rode they to the pallace, where the King attending their coming, perceived at length they were entered the Hall, when Palmerin falling on his knee, kissed his highnesse hand, who very honourably embracing him, sayd: Where hath my noble friend bene so long? What cruel fortune hath caused your so long absence? you departed from us in black Armour, I pray you tell us where did you conquer these sumptuous Armes: by the love you beare to chivalry and to me: satisfy me in my demand. Palmerin seeing the King conjured him so straightly, repeated the truth of all his adventures, how he had that Armour of the Lady whose Daughter he belibered, and left his owne there broken in pieces.

The King embracing him againe, said: I cannot be perswaded, but all especiall adventures, high good fortunes, and chiefest honours in the world, are onely reserved for you, and among all the rest, most marvellous is this of the Castle in the enchanted Lake, which many Knights having heretofore attempted, but returned with the losse of their horses, Armour, and with great dishonour. Whyles Welcome are you for these happy goings, as also for your gentle courtship to Fryfol, who is a Knight of most honourable reputation. But in regard of your wearisome travels, it is very requisite that you now should goe to rest your selfe: therefore let some body help to disarm you, and betake your selfe (on Gods Name) to your Chamber, Palmerin repented the Kings Counsell most expedient, and therefore did accordingly as he commanded him: So having reposed himselfe a while, he came to see how the Quene and her Daughter fared, who would not suffer him to depart thence, before he had likewise acquainted her with all his fortunes: especially the whole circumstance of all his Travels at the Castle of the Lake. But

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

That night being come, and every one betaking themselves to rest, *Palmerin* demanded of the *Prince* how he followed his desires, and what he had concluded as concerning his Love. *His* deare Friend, said *Trineus*, why ask you me that question? do you not think that having so lost you, I likewise was disappointed of any mean to help me: know then, that at this instant I am in the midst of all misfortunes, so that hardly it hapned, that I am now farther from *Agriola* then ever I was, and I shall tell you how.

Not many dayes since, as I was familiarly debasing with my Lady, the Duke of Gauls daughter chanced to heare such amorous speeches as passed between the *Princesse* and me: whereby she gathered, that *Agriola* made some estimation of us, whereupon she laboured to cause my Distresse in short time mislike what I had so long travelled to perswade her with, as thus.

What ill befelmed a *Princesse* of her account, of so gracious descent, and daughter to such a mighty King, to confesse with Strangers, or bouchsafe a listening to any thing they sayd: for they were none such as she reputed them, but after they had brought a Ladies honour into danger, they then were satisfied, as they used it for a custome among their companions. And so well could she, seen the *Princesse* humour, and these subtling and spitefull distractions, which seemed unto her as sweet and friendly persuasions, that in stead of the little love I lately conquered, I find nothing but frowns and disdain, that she will scant afford me a look. Which discontent she hath well heard of me, as being so hindered onely through your absence. When I determined with *Ptolome*, to leave the Court and follow you in travell: but the King by no means would permit me, sending many of his owne Knights, because I should not go: yet was I resolved, that had not you come, no displeasure whatsoever should have held me here: but to

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

to And you I intended, or lose my life. This falleth out very hard (quoth *Palmerin*) for by these means we shall stay here. God knoweth how long: besides, *Hermes* knoweth my name, which makes me doubt least we shall be revealed: the Emperour likewise may be offended at our long tarrance. In regard of all this, good *Prince*, I thinke it best, that we send your Squire and *Urbanillo* my Dwarf, to advertise his Majesty of our affaires, and how by reason of the tempest, we were cast quite out of course so farre, as we could not by any any meanes assist his Army, not doubting but to see his highness in very short time.

In the meane while, we may practise means to win the *Princesse* favour againe, and so in good time depart hence. With the honourable prize that we came for. *Trineus* was newly rebited with these speeches, wherefore he desired, that sometimes in the Evening he would dispatch their Servants towards *Allmaigne*. Which *Palmerin* failed not to do. In respect of a dream he had the night before, for he imagined that he saw his Lady *Polynarda* in marvellous heavinesse, and that she sayd to him. Alas my Lord, what shall become of me? For I am narrowly sought to be separated from you. This fearfull vision so discouraged him, as he sent thence his Dwarf, to shew her what trouble he had with his dream, and how constant he remained in his love to her.

The History of *Palmerin D'Oltra*,

CHAP. LXI.

How *Palmerin* promised the *Princesse Agriola*, to convey her out of *England*, with his friends, which he performed to the special content of the *Prince Trincus*.



Early on the next morning, *Palmerin* arose, and wrote a letter to his *Lady Polinarda* wherein he secretly put a ring, which she gave him when he departed from her, straightly commanding *Urbanillo* that he should diligently attend on the *Princesse* till he came, which should be with all the speed he could possibly.

Proleme likewise wrote to his *Lady Brionella*, and these letters dispatched, the messengers immediately set forward on their journey. From this time *Colmelio* was *Palmerin's* squire, which pleased him very well, because he knew that *Palmerin* was nobly borne, so that by his means in time he should rise to preferment.

This day the King would ride abroad a Hunting, which gave *Palmerin* occasion to see the *Falcon* fly, being reputed by the King and all his train, to be the best that ever flew. In this time of recreation, *Hermes* reported to the King, that the knight so long absent was named *Palmerin*, and the same knight that wonne so much honour in France: which so well contented the King, as he more and more desired his company: summoning all his Barons and Lords to his Court, where he made such feasts, triumphs, and other sports, so the honour of the noble *Palmerin* and his

com

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

companions as the like had not bin of long time before.

At night, when the *Spashers*, *Summers* and *Spashers* were in presence, that *Palmerin* espied convenient time to talk with the *Princesse*, he took her aside to a Window, and thus began. *Madame*, before I begin what I have to acquaint you withall, I must give you this ring, as I was commanded by the *Lady* of the *Castle* in the *Lake*: the singular vertues thereof are such, as I intreat you to keep it continually on your finger: which *Agriola* receiving, with a courteous reverence, faithfully promised to performe his request: then *Palmerin*, with earnest affection on his friends behalf, thus continued his discourse. I cannot but marvel, faire *Princesse*, you being a *Lady* of so speciall quality, renowned among the most vertuous creatures in the world, for your rare integrity and profound judgement, that you will be governed by the unadvised persuasions of other: which I would not believe, had not the *Prince Trincus* certainly assured me, how since my departure, in stead of favourable countenance, and the intreatance becoming so great a Lord, he can have nothing but frowne, disdain, and cold regard, which is a easie for him to endure, as a thousand deaths one after another.

Assure your selfe so farre beguiled, as your counsellors dissuade you from your chiefeest good, desirous to withhold you from the height of honour, whereof you cannot sayle being matched in Marriage with the most vertuous and worthy *Prince Trincus*. Make you no small account, that he being one of the most Noble States on the earth, hath left his Parents, his friends, and Country, hath past so many solitary, strange, and uncouth Regions, hath adventured the injury of the Seas, beaten with so many bitter blasts, and raging billowes, very minute in danger of shipwrack, and all for your Love? Thinke you that he being Sonne to the Emperour of *Allmaigne*, attending every day the rule and government of his Empire, that he came hither to you in hope of your rich dowry? For trust me, *Madame*, and I thinke your

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

your own conscience both to resolve you, that neerer home he could haue found other, endued with larger possessions than this Realme affords you. Not hearing the same of your manifold vertues, rare life, choyse beauty, and all other good gifts, he was willing without any regard of his owne estate, to thrust himselfe in danger, yea, to forget himselfe for your love, which hitherto he hath with religious service intreated, and except you entertaine him with more gracious fauour, he is in danger of life. Which if it should happen by your occasion, for euer you shall be noted of monstrous ingratitude, and Christendome should sustaine a losse unrecoverable. What farre such a thought ought to be from you, I leave to your owne construction.

If hitherto you haue knowne me, a Knight ready to support the causes of Ladies far beneath your bright, think you I haue not greater reason to honour you? yea not to moue you with any request, but what may euer way aduance your credit. And though my Lord Trincus were not of the blood imperiall, yet might his gentle heart, vnsieged love, and surpassing humanity, cause you to make choyse of him, aboue all other whatsoeuer they be. But seeing it so falls out, that you will not regard good counsell, following rather the persuasion of meane capacities, whose judgements may not reach to so high occasions, continue in your obstinacy, and mark the end of such vnadvised censures.

I see that our company is vnkome to you, therefore (sooner then you imagine) we will remove that occasion. I know well enough, that you intend to match with the Duke of Gaule, who is but your fathers Subject: so refusing the honour of an Emperour, you shall tarry in England and be a Duchesse. Think you, that if my Lord matched not with you, the greatest Princeesse in Europe, would not triumph in his love? Yes certainly Madame, when you may at leisure sit downe and account your losse, which you sustained by flatterers and parasites. Think what will be the danger after our

departe

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

departure, the Emperour his Father, not minding to purchase the losse of his late Army, will send such a puissant strength into England, as the King your father, nor the Duke your husband that must be, will scant escape the whole ruine of this country. The means to prevent this mishap, and assure your continuall tranquillity, is in entertaining the counsell I haue given you: where otherwise your selfe conceit, makes way to manifold misfortunes & dangers. Thus concluding his speeches, in great heavinesse he turned from her, whereat the Princeesse now inwardly grieved, for the King which he had given her was of such vertue, that after she had put it on her finger, she was wonderfully affected toward Trincus, as she could not think on any other: wherefore in this sudden change, and trembling with the doubtful conceit of her owne spirit, she called Palmerin to her, thus answering. Alas my Lord, and only comfort in these heavy passions, what seare hath these hard and rigorous speeches brought me into? It is very true that following the counsell of young Ladies like my selfe, haue bene perswaded to cast off the Prince Louis, accounting him but a simple Knight errant: but now being assured of his nobility, loyalty, and great gentleness, and that he would not request (as I hope) any thing contrary to vertue and honour, I beleue what you haue said, and submit my selfe to your discretion, as willing to obey any thing you shall command me. Yet this I must request that aboue all things mine honour may be defended, for rather would I suffer mine owne losse for euer, then this famous Realme of my Father should be any way endangered.

Believe me Lady (quoth Palmerin) if thus you continue, you may well venture to gaine this genera benefit, for henceforth there will none be so hardy, as to molest your Father with warre, hauing matched his Daughter with the great Emperours Sonne of Allmaigne. To confirme this promise, you shall giue me this sweet hand which I kisse, as

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

the hand of the soveraigne Lady and Emperesse of high Al-
maigne, that you will not shrink hereafter from this honora-
ble determination; but for your owne regard, you must con-
ceale this contract from your most trusty friends, and dispose
in such sort of your selfe: for I hope to compasse the meanes
and opportunity, that you shall leave England, and go to the
noble regions of your most worthy Lord and Husband.

What I have promised (sayd Agriola) I will performe,
and with what speed you shall think convenient: albeit I re-
pose such trust in you, that having bin so fortunate hitherto
in your Enterprises, you will be most careful in accom-
plishing these dangerous intentions.

Thus before they departed, the marriage of Trineus and
Agriola was concluded, and because they would not as then
be suspected, they crept into the Dance, next the young Prince,
shewing very amiable and pleasant gestures: which Trineus
(in his often turning) diligently noted: imagining that Pal-
merin had not so long conferred with his Lady, but some as-
sured resolution was determined, yet he dissembled his in-
ward joyes so cunningly as he could. Each eye was fixed on
these two brave Knights, the Ladies and Gentlewomen
perswading themselves, that they never beheld more noble
personages: describing like estimation for their speciall Chi-
valry, as also for their Bounty and Courteous Civility,

Thus passed the Feast in all kinde of pleasures, and these
two knights withdrawing themselves into their Chamber,
Palmerin discoursed to Trineus his talke with Agriola, and
how he had with such cunning pursued the matter, that in the
end he had obtained what he demanded, reporting the sequell
of the gentle conclusion he made with the Princess.

Whose joyfull newes gave the Prince into such a quanda-
ry, as he could not expresse his secret content, wherefore
Palmerin awaking him out of his musing, sayd: As I am a
true knight, I never thought that a man of your state could
be of so slender courage. What countenance would you be

(in

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

in a matter of so great, when such dainty tydings make you so
effeminate: Who of good chere man: Agriola is your owne,
and none but Trineus must be her only Lord and Husband.
I must confesse my Lord, (sayd Trineus) that my behavi-
our, but little becommes my calling: but that cause thereof is,
that I know no defect in my selfe that may be esteemed too:
the least fault of my Lady. Whose, these newes brought
me such speciall contentment, as I am no longer mine own,
but in her only I live, and she holds the ballance of my
danger or felicity, in that I was bound to be her servant.
But now I desire you my Lord, seeing the occasion offer-
eth it selfe, we hinder it not by any negligence: for if now
we loose the favour of the time, we never (I feare) shall re-
cover the like, therefore let us so soon as we can, provide
all things ready for our departure. Deferre that to me, quoth
Palmerin, be you as ready as I shall make provision. The
next day he went to the Master of a Ship, to know when
time would serve for their secret departure, who answer-
ed him, that the time was then very convenient, the
winds serving prosperously, and the Sea calme and navi-
gable, and he would furnish him with all necessaries for
his passage. Quoth Palmerin, see that your men and all
things be in readiness, that we may launch away upon this
an hour warning. So departed the Master about his
business, and Palmerin to the Prince Trineus, whom he in-
formed with these glad tydings, now nothing remaining
but to know the Princesss pleasure, she being as yet
ready to depart as the most forward. But (quoth Palmerin)
how shall we safely get you forth of the Court? I shall,
sayd the Princess, this night I will my selfe take, and for
my greater quiet, cause my Ladies to accompany me to my
chamber, and so secretly will I escape disguised to the backe gate
of the Palace, which is not farre from my lodging, where-
to I may passe unseen of any, and from thence go with
you safely to the Haven. This practise was faithfully con-

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oltra*,

clad betwixt them and Agriola with her selfe closely to her Chamber, where at night she began her counterfeited sickness, commanding her Ladies to leaue her alone, because she would see if she could scape a little. Her Ladies little thinking of her secret deceit, went to their owne lodgings very peniſe and ſorrowfull, which Agriola perceiving, covered her selfe with her night mantle, and came to the place where the knights stayed her coming, Palmerin taking her vnder his arme, conueyed her in that manner to the Princes Chamber, where they altogether layd downe the order for their embarking, Trineus exolling his happy fortune, ſeing his Lady ſo ready to accompliſh his deſire. They arming themſelves, and taking with them the Princesse costly Jewels, whereof ſhe had plentifully ſtored her ſelfe, they came to the Haven, where they found the ſhip and mariners ready, and getting all aboard, the winde ſeruing for their abayle, they ſet ſayle, and beſore day they got ſarre enough from London.

CHAP. LXII.

How the King of *England* and the Queene were advertiſed, how their daughter *Agriola* was conueyed away, and of their ſorrow for her departure.



How the Duke of *Gaules* Daughter, who continually was beſellew to the Princesse, abſenting her ſelfe very long from her, ſeeking to diſquiet her Lady, being ſick as ſhe ſuppoſed: but coming at length to ſee how ſhe ſared, finding the Bedde empty, and *Agriola* gone, ſhe preſently made a great outcrye, whereat the other Ladies came, and altogether amazed

Emperour of *Conſtantinople*: PART. I.

amazed at this ſudden adventure, went to the Audenes Chamber, where they repoſted how the Princesse was gone, but being, as when, they knew not. The Audenes at theſe trybings ſuddenly aroſe, and coming to her daughters Chamber found it too true, which made her fall into ſuch pittifull acclamations, ſarre ſurpaſſing thoſe of *Maguelona*, when ſhe loſt her friend *Peter of Province* in the wood.

In theſe lamentings ſhe returned to the King, whoſe heavineſſe excused judgement, for the loſſe of his daughter, and then came diuers Lords and Gentlemen, who declared that the ſtrange knights were likewiſe departed. Which raiſed ſuch a rumour throught all the Ciſte, that they had ſollen away the Princesse. The King vnderſtanding the generall ſorrow for his daughters abſence, ſaid. In ſooth my friends, if theſe knights haue done ſuch ſervice for me, they haue ſufficiently recompenced themſelves, in doing me the greateſt diſhonour they could deuife: yet will I not condemne them ſo much as my Daughter, for that I am perſwaded ſhe procured this miſchance. But now I well perceiue what credit a man may repoſe in his enemy: for *Palmerin* neuermore ſerued the Emperour of *Allemaigne*, then hardly could hee be true to mee. Yet is it in vaine for me to blame him, as his companions, if they take the advantage of their owne intents. But now there is no remedy, my daughter is in the company of moſt choſen knights: if ſhe haue done well, or ill, hereafter her deſerts will answer her miſdemeanour. Thus the King would not ſuffer any purſute after them, though the Audene and her Ladies earneſtly intreated him: he answering that no ſuch more ſhould be made, for a Child ſo vngatefull and diſobedient, but hauing committed an action ſo vile and enormous, ſhe ſhould no more account of her as her child. And well may we (quoth he) ſo reſuſe her, in that ſhe would leaue her Parents, and depart with ſtrangers: happie might

might we haue accompanied our selues, if we had lost her in her Infancie. The Duke seeing her Lord so impatient, appeased his displeasure so well as he could, because she would not wrong him too much. Within few dayes after the Duke of Gaule arrived at the Court, who most of all grieved at these vndappy tydings, wherefoze he perswaded the King to proclaim open warre against the Emperour of Allemaigne, assuring him, that the knight which most commonly accompanied Palmerin, was Trineus the Emperours sonne. When the King heard the Dukes speeches, forgetting his anger, he rejoiced, esteeming himselfe happy, and his Daughter wise, in matching her selfe with such a Husband: and if she had made her choise among all the Princes of the world, she could not haue choosed out one comparable in honour. In haste answered the Duke, that for a Daughter so lost, he would not take the death of his louers and Subjects: but being one of Fortunes changes, he could not withstand it, and thus the King wisely and patiently indured his griefe.

CHAP. LXIII.

How *Vibanillo* and the Prince *Trineus* Esquire, arrived at the Emperours Court, and what great joy their coming procured.



Mr. *Mozle* in this place taketh occasion to speake, how the King of France daily expected newes from Palmerin, as concerning his intent of Marriage, betwixt his Daughter and the Prince Trineus: but seeing he heard no tydings at all, he determined to send his Ambassadors to the Emperour, electing for chiefe in this

embassage the Count of Armignac, to whom he gave full power and authority to conclude the Marriage betwixt Trineus and his Daughter Lucimania, as also of the Princess Polinarda with his Sonne and heire. The King dispatching all things for his Ambassage, sent many Barons and Knights of name to accompany the Count, to countenance the matter with more regalitie and magnificence, and in this manner they came to Gaunt, where the Emperour being advertised of their arrivall, made no great account thereof, such was his griefe for his Sonnes absence and Palmerins, of whom he could not heare any tydings, as also for the losse his Army sustained in England. But while the messenger from the Ambassadors of France layed with the Emperour, *Vibanillo* and the Princes Squire entred the Hall, whose presence highly contented the Emperour, as embracing them very lovingly, he demanded for Palmerin and his Sonne Trineus, when they delivered their Letters, and the Emperour perswaded thereby of their speedy returne, was greatly contented, saying to the Ambassadors messenger. My friend, seeing I haue heard such long looked for tydings of my Sonne, you may returne to the Count your Master, desiring him to come when he thinks convenient, and he shall be heartily welcome to me: with this answer the messenger departed. When the Emperour taking *Vibanillo* by the hand, said: Tell me now I pray thee, how fares thy Master? Where is he? Is my Son with him? My gracious Lord quoth the Dwarf, where your noble Sonne abideth, there is my Master, both of them in good disposition, and highly honoured. And thereof I can assure your Majesty, that you haue a Son, who good reason ought to be numbered among the best Knights living, for such honourable experience hath hee made of his worthinesse, that perpetual memory will record his deeds of Chivalrie: what else remaineth you shall know at their coming, which will be so soone as they can possibly. A neuer person.

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliva*,

sed my selfe, said the Emperour, that in the company of so good a knight as Palmerin, my soune could not but purchase credit and honour: Wherefore seeing they haue such prosperitie of health, I care the lesse for their stay, but welcome are they whensoever they come.

By this time Polynarda heard of the Dwarfses arrivall, which greatly pleasing her, she said to Brionella; I pray thee sweet friend goe speedily and seeke the Dwarfes, that we may know what is become of our Lorde and my brother Trineus. Brionella, who longed to heare of her loue Sir Ptolome, whom well she knew to be one of the company, with all speed accomplished the Princesse commandement, and found the ioyfull messenger with the Emperour, who took great delight in the Dwarfses reports: but his paine, by perceiving with what cheerefull countenance she came to bring Urbanillo to her Lady the Princesse, had him goe with her, hoping by his meanes his Daughters extreme sadnesse would be comforted. Brionella being forth of the Emperours presence, embraced him many times to know his tydings, when the Dwarfes not ignorant of the Ladies passions, delivered Ptolomes letter to cheere her: but when the Princesse saw Urbanillo coming, with the teares in her eyes she ranne apace to meet him, and casting her armes about his necke, embraced him very often, saying: Tell me Urbanillo, tell me, how fares my Brother and thy Master Palmerin? Adams, quoth the Dwarfes, so well as your owne heart can wish, and will ere long be here with you. When delivered he the Letter from Trineus, which certified her of his soone returne, and that he would bring with him the thing she most esteemed. But she knew, long she expected other matters, and that her Brothers medicine was not sufficient for her cure, he gave her his Masters letter, when she hastily breaking open the seale, found the thing which her loyall friend had sent her, and after she had welcomed it with many devout kisses, she put it on her finger

Emperour of Constantinople: PART I.

finger, with these words. I charge thee keepe this token safely, in witness of the Knights gentleness that sent it, whom my heart hath made speciall choyse of above all other. When reading the Letter, and discreetly considering (not without great effuse of teares) the sweet words, humble supplications, entreaties, and extreme passions, that her friend continually suffered for her loue, delivered many bitter sighes, she said: Ah my true and loyall friend, I beleue well, and take in good part your cause of absence, being assured, that if possibly you could returne sooner, nothing should stay you from the place, where the onely remedy of your dolorous griefes abideth. But seeing for my loue you may not forsake my Brother, I pray you for your continual safety, and speedy redemption to your longing desires, that mine eyes overwatched with tedious expectation, and my heart nere tryed with bootlesse wishings, may by your presence be joyously comforted. Afterward Urbanillo by his report to her the noble actions of his Lord and Master, the due of Trineus to the Princesse Agriola, describing her beauty and rare perfections, whereupon Polynarda thus answered:

Beleeue me Urbanillo, if the Princesse be so faire as thou sayest she is, her great vertues and firme loyalty like life comparable, enny and false report shal not impeach her, to be reckoned amongst the most happy Ladies of the world, and her desires will be as honourably effected, as with virtuous thoughts she first began them. Who like (I doubt not) will happen to thy Master, for fortune hath ever more so specially favoured him, as now it were against reason she should alter her countenance. So departed the Dwarfes from the Princesse, returning to the Emperour, who by no meanes could get any other tydings of his son then what you have heard, which made him doubt the Dwarfes iugled with him. The next day the Emperour sent his chiefest Lorde and Barons, to conduct the French Ambassadors to Court, which was

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

was sumptuously hang'd with Tapistry, especially the great Hall, which was adorn'd with costly cloth of gold and rich Purple, as it had borne the Palace of Solomon. The Ambassadors entertain'd with marvellous Royalty, and having deliver'd the summe of their Ambassage, the Emperour answered, that hee would confesse thereon with his Councell in me any while they might returne to their lodgings. After they were departed the Hall, the Emperour demand'd of the Princes, Electors, and the rest of his Nobilitie, if these marriages of his Sonne and daughter, with the heyze and Princesse of France, might not be granted, as well for the utility and honour of the Empire, as for the generall benefit of Christendome, commanding them to speake their judgements without feare. The Lords also, gather'd answered, that the matter was so good and the alliance so honourable, as it was no way to be disliked. I will then (quoth he) talke with the Emperesse, that she may understand her Daughters opinion, and then my Lords of France shall be answered. So leaving them he went unto the Emperesse Chamber, to whom he reported his agreement with his Councell, which pleased her likewise marvellous well: but when she had a little considered on the matter, she answered, that but little could be sayd before Trineus return'd home againe. You reason well, quoth the Emperour, but in meane time I pray you sound your Daughters judgement, that we may returne our brother of France some certaine answer. Which she promised to doe, and so departing from her Lord, she went to her Daughters chamber, where having commanded her Ladies afile, she thus began. Fairie daughter, it is the Emperours pleasure and mine, that you marry with the eldest Sonne and heyze of France, and your Brother Trineus with his Sister, for he is one of the most renowned Kings in Europe, and his Son reckn'd among the best Knights of the world: for which good match you may thanke the heavens, that so great a Prince offers his Sonne

The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliua,

Sonne to be your Husband. Advise your selfe of your answer, for by your opinion must the Ambassadors be dispatched hence, who came to the Court for nothing else but to conclude these honorable marriages. Polinarda hearing the words of her mother, was surpris'd with such sudden heaviness, as she could not tell what to answer: but fearing the Emperesse should perceive that her Love was already determined, with a sad countenance, thus reply'd.

Madam, you know what promise I made my brother, the day when he departed from the Court, in the presence of you, and all the Nobilitie, that I would not marry before his returne: and me thinks I were greatly to be blamed, and well worthy grievous reprehension, if I should so falsifie my word, which I cannot doe, without impeaching of mine Honour,

And herein shall I follow the laudable vertue of the Emperour my Father, who evermore esteem'd his promise above all earthly possessions. Beside, I can assure you that my brother will never marry with the Princesse Lucemania: for her Loves are many degrees beyond her, and (may I speak it without offence) one of the most beautifull Ladies that ever Nature framed. Thus Madam, my Father and you have excuses sufficient and available, wherewith to answer the King of France. It may be (quoth the Emperesse) that your brother loves else: where: but I can tell ye, that neither he nor you shall doe any thing, contrary to the Emperours commandement. Polinarda, saying her Mother perisht in her opinion, bit in her sorrowes with many secret sighes: yet knew she so well how to dissimble her passions, as the Emperesse could not discern her private meaning. So returned she to the Emperour, adverting him of her Daughters answer: whereat he was so offended, as in great anger he came himselfe to his daughter, saying: Why, how now daughter? Are you so bold to disobey my commandement? Dare you repagne against my will? All is to no end that you have doubled with your Mother: for (will you or no) it shall be

The History of *Palmerin D'Olera*,

be as I have appointed. I know right well your Lord and Father, (quoth he) that I ought no way to deny your good pleasure: But yet rather will I dye a thousand deaths, then consent to marry with the Son of France, considering what promise I have made unto my dear Brother: and if I should but once so farre dishonour my selfe, as not to regard what I have promised, I should thinke my selfe unworthy hereafter to be called your Daughter. Thus stood she resolute in her answer, and therewith shed such abundance of teares, as the Emperour was constrained to tell the Ambassadors, that the marriages could not be concluded till the returne of Trineus, notwithstanding he granted all the articles of their Embassage. The Princesse qualifying her griefe so well as she could, sent for the Dwarf, and taking him by the hand, sayd. Alas my friend, I am now in the greatest perplexity in the world, nevertheless, one thing comforts me: that thou beholdest the true love and loyalty I beare thy master, which never shall be broken, what ever become of me. And would to God he were now here, then would I speak it openly without feare of any, that I am his, and he mine. Madame (quoth the Dwarf) if you continue faithfull to my Master, perswade your selfe of his assurance, for he building on your constancy, takes such continuall pleasure in remembering you, that it is the only meane that preserves his life: and you may be bold to credit me, that if your Brothers love be not withhold him, he would have bin here long ere this, but he will come soone enough (I hope) to end this doubt.

As for me, I am of the opinion that heaven will not suffer so good a Knight to dye, but first will permit him to see his mistress. Wherequoth the Princesse, sooner let all the knights in the world end their dayes, and the eldest Sonne of France likewise, though he love me to dearly, so might I be rid of these importunate Ambassadors. The Emperour seeing he could get no other answer of his Daughter, concluded

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. I.

with the French Ambassadors, that so soon as his Son was returned, he should be advertised, and so for that time they might depart: but the Emperesse and he first bestowed on them many rich presents, and so in short time they arrived againe in France, where great joy was made in hope of these Marriages, albeit they little thought the Prince Trineus would tarry so long. Above all other, the French Prince was most joyfull, hearing the Countie of Aragnac report the wonderfull beauty of Polinarda: but the good Lady was of another minde, for she had rather be, take her selfe to a Cloyster, then to break her faith to Palmerin, whom she loved so constantly. Thus leaveth we her conferring with Viranillo, returning to Palmerin, and the Prince Trineus.

CHAP. LXIIII.

How *Palmerin* being thus on the Sea, caused *Trineus* there to marry the Princesse *Agriola*.



His noble company being thus on the Sea, having Winde at will, sayled with such expedition, as in foure dayes they had gotten farre enough from England, and the Prince seeing the Princesse Agriola very pensive and sad, comforting her with many sweete welcomes and kisses, and taking her by the hand, thus spake.

O Sovereigne Creatour, how shall I render sufficient thanks and praye to thee, in granting me the onely thing I desire? O sweete Madame, and my onely deare Agriola, how much is your servant indebted to you? With any Knight more cause to honour and extoll his Lady then I:

Believe

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

Believe me faire Princeesse, such are the rare effects of your gracious nature, and so full of my happy fortune, as neither friend or father shall fetch you againe from me. If my life might endure the length of ten mens, and every day I should accomplish wonders in your good service, yet could I not remunerate the least part of your princely deserts. But if your love be such to me, as I am right well assured it is, let me intreat you to forbear this beaunting, and banish from your thoughts your melancholy humors: for seeing you so sad and pensive, I suffer a torment worse then death it selfe. For let me perceive (how little soever it be) that my presence may be to your liking, and our present conference somewhat more pleasing: I live to the Heavens with content of happinesse, and value my fortune above the reach of humane capacity. In stead of tears, let us use quiet tearmes, and for these dumps, pleasant imaginations: persuade your selfe Madame, you are now in his custody that honours you for your virtues, reuerenceth you for your diuine perfection, extolles you for incomparable merites, and liueth for you, with his very bestmost endeavours. Think not Madame, though you have left your Parents, the fault is not pardonable: for the new alliance wherein you haue combined your selfe, shall one day glad you with your speciall content: that what you doe imagine now a dangerous offence, will be imputed an act of prudent and princely discretion. When shall you finde it true, what Palmerin hath spoken, and his promises of preferment, and Imperiall dignitie, shall be both rightly and sufficiently performed. Let these persuasions, if not my intreaties, excell these passions, and procure better comfort. Madame (saith Palmerin) though you haue left your native Countrey, consider the occasion, the love of a mighty Prince, and the heavenly appointment, that your noble vertues should be coupled together, hath brought you from England, to sit on the Imperiall seat in Allemaigne.

How carefull we haue bene of your honour, your selfe can

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

can witness, no motion being offered to partee your kingdom. But you are contented before the only Immortalit knoweth you will forsake: therefore to prevent all troubling dangers, the small Ceremony shall be here celebrated, and the Royalty thereof fully solemnized, when we shall come into Allemaigne. But Hymen claims his due, you may think it needless and tedious, who knowe well he will imbrace her sacred Dore, as if it were his Mother, and best of friends, as if it were his Father, and any way further, what Heaven will further: but the gods know, it cannot be recalled, howebeit your choice was but only by death, and your death, I knowe to be begun, but should continue, therefore (to please you) let it be performed. The gods both agreed, they were married quitting their chaste love, with a sympathy of blessed desires, but this time of delight and pleasure had small continuance, for fortune coming to prosperitie, accompanied with her eldest sonne Dischaunce converted their loves into loathsome loves, & paines insupportable, as you shall see hereafter.

When Madame thus ending her story on the stream, suddenly the sea began to swell, the winds changed roughly, the waves were troubled, and such a dangerous tempest beat upon the ship, as the pilot, steerer, and partners knew not what to doe, and thus began together they were in this perplexity, sometime looking this way, sometime backward, that no hope of life was expected, but every one prepared themselves for death, the implacable messenger of God, for they could see no other remedy. Agriola not accustomed to these dangers, was maximally discomfited: but Trineus perswaded her with many examples, in that such stragglers were swallowed on the sea, albeit, she to end the fears she had before her eyes, would often times have cast herselfe into the raging waters. At length the tempest stopt, they recovered an Island, where with the helpe of their Dore they climbed climbing the misther under the foot of an high mountain: and although the place seemed small, yet there they betook

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

angry stomacke like a Lyon enraged, caught him by the throat and the throat, saying: *Thou villainous Dogge, thinkest thou I take any delight in thy company? Who darest then trample these lay hands on me? And so roughly did the struggle with Olimac, as if his men had not assisted him, he had strangled him: notwithstanding he took all patiently, persuading himself, that by gentle speeches, smooth flatterings and large promises, he should in time win her to his pleasure. So came he forth of the Cabin, with his throat and face beautifully painted with Agriolae nallies, washing away the blood, which made comely circles about his phylagony: he called be the Captaine and chiefe of his company, willing them to share the booty among them, and he would have nothing but the Princess for his part, for he was so intrigued with the beauty of his prisoner, as he had no delight but onely in her holding her. In this manner then he bestowed his prisoners, Trineus he gave to one of his Coyens, and Ptolome to a knight that serued the Soldane of Babilon, the squares and the pells he gave among the common soldiers. But when the Prince saw he must needs leave his Lady, and each man would carry his prisoner whether him pleased: his griefe for his wife, and sorrow for his friends, I leave to your judgement, as not able to be expressed. Yet some hope of comfort he reposed in Palmerin, that by his meanes (being escaped their hands) he should get againe Agriola, else was there no way left to helpe him. Ptolome who dearly loved the Prince, before they departed thus began. *Ally how now me? I know where is your wanted prudence and discretion? Where is that constant magnanimity, which in so many seasons heretofore you shew? What is it left, or have you forgot it? What meane yet will ye be subject to passions, as a weak effeminate person? You that are sprung from the most ancient noble and generous race of Chyristians, esteemed for a most courageous and valiant knight, will you be overcome into these sad and desolate opinions? What then would a Tarke, Moore or barbarous Myrmidon doe in like afflictions?**

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

afflictions: When hee that hath assurance of his God, and knowes that all persecutions, sometimes & mishaps, are proofes of his fidelity, and the meanes to attaine eternall quiet, he wees these without ill behauiours, as though he had lost all meanes of hope and comfort. If the body be afflicted, let the spirit be animated, and armed with patience against all infirmities of the flesh. Leave these soft countenances for women, and if you will not perswade your selfe, that these troubles happen for the increasing of our joy, it may be the meane that God will forsake vs. When neither feare or dispayre I pay you, for he that suffered vs to fall into those Moores hands, both can and will deliver vs againe. As for your Lady Agriola, doubt not of her unconquerable loyalty, for she hath in her custody a Jewell of such vertue, as no one can dishonour her against her owne liking. Comfort your selfe then in the power of the highest, and repose your selfe on the constancy of your Lady, with this certaine perswasion, that this eville and aduersity hath fallen upon vs, for our greater good and advancement hereafter. When came Olimac, and interrupted their talk, commanding nine or ten of his people, to convey Trineus into another Galley, and Ptolome into that where his Master was, that so they might depart to recover the rest of their Galley, which were scattered from them by reason of the tempest. And so they departed one from another, the Galley wherein Trineus was describing a goodly Ship of Chyristians, wherof they being glad, set saile with the wind towards the Chyristians, who rode away so fast as they could, and had escaped, but that they met full with certaine Pyrates of Natolia, who joining with the Galleys, in the end boarded her, and parted the spoyle among them: the wind suddenly began to change, for that they were constrained to flee for succour to an Island in the Kingdome of Icaria, which they reached in good time, glad to shield themselves from danger. As these Pyrates thus come to water, went all on shore to refresh themselves: but they had no sooner set foot on land, such enchantments were there dispersed through

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

the whole Isle, as they presently knew not one another. But to acquaint you with the manner of these Enchantments, you must note, that the Isle where they landed was called *Maldada*, which name was given it by the Lady thereof, which was called likewise *Maldada*, the most subtil Magician of her time: so that we may say of her, as the Poets feigned of the ancient *Circes*. And albeit she was issued of Christian Parents, yet having such familiarity with the *Diauell* and his maligne Spirits, she would not acquaint herself with any goodnesse towards Christians, but daily practised their harme and destruction. And for this intent, she had of a long time before Enchanted this Island with such Charmes, that what Shipping soever arrived there, could never depart thence againe, much lesse such as once entred within the Island. They being thus stayed, *Maldada* would come herself, and chose such as she liked, the rest she transformed into Harts, *Elloines*, Dogs, Beares, and all manner of Beasts. Such likewise as she took with her into her Fortresse, when they had abused them to content her owne pleasure, she would cast them forth, transforming them as she did the other: In briefe, she was worse then a *Diuell*, this Island was a very disguised Hell. This wicked woman knowing that more vnsfortunate people were landed at the Haven, called her Seruants, and came to see them: but she made no great account of them, wherefore she commanded her trustiest Seruants to take away all the Riches forth of the Ship, conuerting it by her Enchantment, that it seemed like a bottomelesse gulfe. Afterwards at her pleasure, she transformed them that came into it: Among whom *Trineus* was changed into the shape of a very faire Dog: not that hee was so, for that is a thing against nature, and which God no way will permit that man shall take any Beutifull shape, or a brute Beast to assume any humane forme. For the magicall dispositions thus hold these Art, that the Enchanted esteeme themselves Beasts, and on that sort this disguised *Maistiffe*: Notwithstanding, these distressed Captiues had

natur

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART.I.

naturall reason and humane power, but the benefit of speech was taken from them. And thus was *Trineus* transformed, which he seemed not to mislike, for not remembering himselfe he forgot all his heauy passions, maruelling onely at his sudden mutation. And here will we leaue him in his strange deformity, to report what befell to the *Princesse Agriola*, after that dolorous separation betwene her Lord and her.

FINIS.

Thus Gentlemen have we left the Prince *Trineus* transformed into the shape of a Dog in the Isle of *Maldada*, by the Enchantresse: The English *Princesse Agriola*, in the custody of the Turkish Pirate *Olimael*: *Ptolome* and *Colmeio* carried into *Aethiopia*; and *Palmerin* ranging in the Island with his Hawke for his delight. Right strange will bee the meeting of all these Friends againe, after the hazards of many perillous Fortunes. For *Agriola* thus separated from the Prince her Husband, is married to the great Emperour of *Turkie*: How wonderfully the Ring which *Palmerin* gave her, preserves her Chastitie, will be worth the hearing. How *Palmerin* counterfeiting himselfe dumbe, doth many rare exploits in the Isle of *Calpha*, will be as acceptable. How *Palmerin* gaines his *Polinarda*, *Trineus* his chaste Wife *Agriola*, *Ptolome* his *Brionella*, and all Honours meeting together in the Emperours Court of *Allemagne*, will be so strange as the like was never heard: and all this is performed in the second part of this History.

A. Mundy.

Honos alit Artes.

Palmerin D'oliva.
THE SECOND PART:
OF THE HONOURABLE
HISTORIE OF PALMERIN
D'OLIVA.

Continuing his rare fortunes, Knightly
deeds of Chivalry, happy success in love,
and how he was crowned Emperour of
Constantinople.

*Herein is likewise concluded the variable troubles
of the Prince Trineus and faire Agriola the
Kings daughter of England: with their
fortunate Marriage.*

Translated by *A. M.* one of the Messengers of
her Majesties Chamber.

Patere aut abstinere.



LONDON.

Printed for B. ALSOP and T. FAVVET, dwelling in
Grub-street, neere the lower Pumpe.

1637.



TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE AND HIS VERY
GOOD LORD EDWARD
DE VERE, EARLE OXFORD,
Viscount, Bulbecke, Lord Sandford of Badlesmere, and Lord
high Chamberlaine of
England.

*A. M. Wishes the full issue of his
noble desires.*



Debt is debt, my good Lord, as the Proverb avoucheth, & debt must needs bee paid, as reason requirith: the one not arguing so much liberality in speech, as the other doth vertue in accomplishing. When I presented your honour the first part of this History, I promised to hasten the other to the selfe same Patrone: whereto I have beene vehemently induced, by the gracious and affable receite of the former: and therefore (kissing your hand) I offer the conclusion of worthy *Palmerin*. Nor hath it beene so tedious and troublesome to mee in the translation,

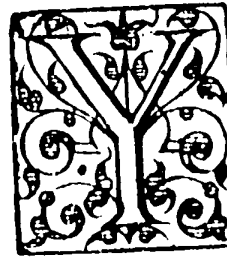
The Epistle Dedicatorie

as I hope you will conceive delight thereby in the reading: howsoever it proove, I neede not despaire, having a judge so honourable, who measureth good will farre beyond ability.

*With Honours in all
humilitie. A.M.*



TO THE FRIENDLY READERS



How long, yet at length Palmerin is finished, and having endured so many bitter brants in search of adventures: after all, now remaineth either to be commended or condemned by your censur. Condemne him you cannot with reason, considering all his actions have beene so honourable: as too malicious were the man would deale so hardly with him that hath given no occasiō of offence. Commend him then you must, in respect of his manifold vertues, thrust all together in the face of Fortune, onely for your delight and recreation.

As concerning his Sonnes Palmendos & Primalcon, the one is kept under his Mothers wing the Queene of Tharsus, and the other sparring in the Court at Constantinople: not daring to set foote in the stirrop after Knightly exercises, till they beare how their father speeds. If he have that favour his deeds deserved then on goes their Armour, and in the chiefest places of Christendome will they shew themselves, with repetition to the world of wonderfull adventures.

But while they expect good newes or bad, Paladine

To the Reader.

*Sent to the King of Mylanor of England, is passing to you:
what he and the noble Prince Mantelco of Millaine doe,
in knightly affaires of most noble Chivalry, the Historie
shall deliver: which is already on the presse in good
forwardnesse. From my house at Cripple-gate this ninth
of March.*

Your to his vetermost
Anthony Munday.



THE SECOND PART OF THE AN- TIENT AND HONORA-

ble History of Palmerin D'Oliua.

*Continuing his rare Fortunes, Knightly deedes of
Chivalry, happy successe in Love, and how he was crow-
ned Emperour of Constantinople. Herein
is likewise concluded the variable tron-
bles of Tryneus, and faire Agriola
of England, with their for-
tunate Marriage. &c.*

CHAP. I.

How Olimaell presented the Princeesse Agriola-
to the great Turke, who immediately became a-
mourous of her: and what rewardes and prefer-
ment the Pyrate received for his gift,



*Yet I am sure you cannot choose but
call to your memory in the last Tract,
how the Pyrate Olimaell stibed his
prisoners, reserving for himselfe none
but the King of Englands Daughter
hoping in time to purchase her liking.
And being alone with her in the fairest
Cabin in the Galley, he devised by all
the best meanes he could to comfort her: But yet all
his*

The History Of Palmerin D'Oliua

his labours were lost, and bestowed in vaine, for she would not receiue any kinde of seruance, desiring every houre to dye, having so lost her Lord Trineus. He seeing that faire speeches, offers, gifts, and other enticements proper to perswasion, could not compass what he desired, he grew into Choller, intending to gaine his pleasure perforce, so that after many threatnings, with rough violence he would needs ravish her. Agriola seeing that her feeble strength could not long withstand this cruelled Turk, albeit she strake and rested so well as she could: therefore with devout prayer she called on God, desiring him to take pity on her, and not to suffer that villainous Kossian to dishonour her.

Her prayer being ended, Olimael beganne in such sort to tremble, as he staggered backwards foure or fife times, and so exceedingly was he surpris'd with feare: as he was constrained to leave her, and withdrew himselfe into another place. The Princess, though she were amazed at this sudden change, and nothing with what terrible Captain departed: yet was she greatly comforted by her happy deliverance, imputting the whole weake thereof to Almighty providence, and the vertue of the King that Palmerin gave her: wherefore with a thankfull heart, and elevated eyes to Heaven, she said: O celestiall Father, how great and infinite is thy Goodnesse: how happy is the Creature whom thou regardest with the eye of pity? assuredly I now perceiue, that such as in extremitie have recourse to thee, shall no way perish. When taking the vertuous King, and kissing it many times, said:

Unvaluable, Jewell, given me by the best Knight in the world, how carefull will I keepe thee? how true is that saying: that great persons, give great presents; Hence forth shalt thou be kept (for the love of him that gave thee, and for thy singular Vertue) in the place where I usually keepe things of greatest price. So taking a little Chaine of Gold, which served her as a Bracelet, she fastened this

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2

woorthy Jewell thereto, and put it about her Neck, so that the sumptuous Stone lay glistering betwene her Thicke white Breasts, a prospect so rare and delicate, and of no lesse power to draw the beholders eyes then the Adamant, the Amber, or the Pearls can by their Vertue: Besides so wonderfully repleats with sweet regard, as I dare affirme that the most cruel Tyrant in Turkie, would stand amazed at those two dainty Mountaints, more moisten and humbled then the Aged Hermites of Thebaida. Olimael yet quaking at this suddaine alteration, durst present me no more so offer her villaineie but by rich gifts and presents sought to perswade her: All which availed not, for as he got but little profit by his violence, so wonne he much lesse by his treacherous offerings. So dayled they eight dayes together, Olimael not able to compass Agriolas love, nor hearing any tyding of the Jewells that were lost, neither of his Cousin who had Trineus captiv: which grieved him as nothing could doe more, in that he was so imprisoned, as well he could not present himselfe before his Lord, to whom he had promised to bring some of Christian Prisoners, and now in his booke he looke so lost his time, as either the Tempest of shipwacks, had spoiled him of his owne company. In this doubtful opinion, he debated with himselfe, that the great Turke did earnestly affect sayre Ladies: so by the meane of his beautifull Prisoner, he imagined to be entertained with good countenance, and his loss would be past over with forgetfulness: Wherefore he commanded their Pilot to make toward the Coast of Ottobant, where as then the great Emperour of Turkie sojourned, and thence they came in short time after. Not withstanding, as a Serbant well instructed, not daring to abuse the familiarity of his Lord, he sent one of his Knights to crave his leave, and to report, that by casuall mischance he had lost his men and Gallies: but if his Majesty pleased to forget his misfortune, and receiue him into his accustomed fa-

bour

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

bon: he would bring him one of the fairest Ladies in Chyl-
 stendone, and descended of most Royall Parentage. The
 Emperour being lascivious, and more addicted to unchast
 desires then any in his Dominion, hearing this Speeche,
 was surpris'd with the onely report of her Beauty. as im-
 mediately he became passionate for her Love: sending the
 Prince to say that he could not bring a more desired pre-
 sent, and therefore remitted all his offences, promising him
 greater favour then ever he had. And because no contrary
 occasion might hinder his coming (quoth the Emperour)
 thou shalt carry him this Letter, sealed with mine own sig-
 net, that he may no way doubt of his assurance. The
 knight taking the Letter, and kissing the Emperours feet,
 according to the custome, returned to his Master, deliver-
 ing him the answer he had receiv'd. Olimael for all these
 of, caus'd Agriola to clothe herselfe in her most sumptuous
 Garments, and so with all his men set forth towards
 the Court. Now although the Princess was all blubber-
 red with teares, and halfe dead, to see her selfe in the power
 of these strangers, profess'd and known Enemies to her
 Faith and religion: yet could not the rare perfections of her
 Beauty be shadowed, but the glimse thereof set every eye
 to wonder. And as she looked about her, to see if any of her
 company were landed with her. She espied Prolome, whom
 they minded secretly to convey from her: but she beholding
 him so sadde and sorrowfull, stept towards him, saying: Ah
 my deere friend Prolome; what wonderful chance hath
 fortune throwne upon us: but well may I content my
 selfe, for this is a just scourge for mine offence, and unwilli-
 full obedience to the King my Father. Ah my Lord and leg-
 all Husband Trincus, never shall I see thee againe, for God
 both know whether these villains have sent thee. Ah noble
 Palmerin, who was wont heretofore to comfort me, too
 much hast thou failed us, all thy former promises are now
 altered: for in stead of Imperiall sovereignty, pleasure and
 hono;

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

hono, I am requited with poverty, griefe, shame, & mockery
 Ah Death, sweete death, so long desired death: why com-
 mest thou not to end all these miseries? But God will not
 permit this, because by my torments and afflictions, I may
 see the weighty burthen of my offence, and large bounty
 of his mercies.

Prolome seeing her in this mournfull deviation, said. It
 is no time now (Princess) thus to disquiet and offende your
 selfe: but rather (as wise and well governed) to beare these
 adversities, even with as great content as your former pro-
 sperities, taking in good part whatsoever shall happen, for I
 am in good hope, and my minde perswades me, that we shall
 be delivered by noble Palmerin, who I am well assured en-
 reth greater griefe in his liberty, having lost us, then we can
 doe in this our imprisonment. Olimael exceedingly angry to
 see Agriola wepe, violently puld Prolome from her, char-
 ging his men, not to suffer him once to come within her sight
 which he suffered patiently, because he saw it was in vaine to
 fight against the power. When they came to the Palace,
 and admitted to the Emperours presence, Olimael kneeling
 before him, and kissing his feet, presented Agriola to
 his Majesty: who seeing her of such a rare and wonderfull
 Beauty, said to Olimael.

This present (my friend) is of such surpassing value, as
 thou couldst never honor me with the like: Good reason is
 it therefore, that a gift so precious, should be rewarded with
 like recompence, and so perswade thy selfe I will, that thou
 shalt say the Emperour is boundfull. As for the Lady thou
 hast given me, I perceibe is so faire and gracious, as I intend
 never to have any other Wife: and that I may espouse her
 with the greater magnificence, I will stay till the hallow'd
 day of my Coronation, when all my Princes, Barons, and
 Knights, will be here assembled, and then in their presence
 shall our nuptials be solemnized. Now had the Emperour
 a woman captiv'd named Hyppolita, who was a Marchants
 Daughter.

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

Daughter of Sicily, and better skill in all Languages then any Lady in the Court, so which he made special account of her, repaying great confidence in her, and acquainting her with his chiefest secrets: wherefore he sent for her before Agriola, and said: Hyppolita, I give you this Lady in keeping, commanding you to intreate her as our owne person, and that all meanes may be practised to cause her to forsake this sad Melancholly. In conference you may shew of what Honour and happynesse she shall receive by falling into our hands, and what incomparable Fortune it is to her whom we shall please to accept for our selfe. All which Hyppolita (with great humillity) promised to accomplish, and so conducted her into a most Princely Chamber, the floor covered all over with cloth of Tissue, and hung about with most sumptuous Tapistrey and cloth of Gold, as hardly might the richnesse thereof be valued. Where Hyppolita caused the Princessse to sitte downe in a Chayre of estate, which was purposely provided for her, demanding of her Name, and of what countrey she was.

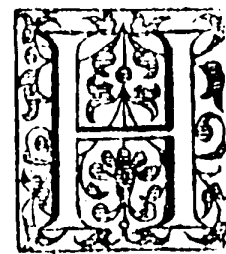
The Princessse answered, that she was of England, but further of her estate she would not bewray. Hyppolita speaking perfectly the English tongue, took great delight daily to commune with her, and because Agriola should the better like of her conversation, she told her that she was likewise a Christian, but that by constraint she followed the Law of Mahomet, and his Alchoran. In further speeches she acquainted her with the estate of the Sultanes, in the Court of the great Emperour of Asia: which communication serued well to weare away the time, albeit the Princessse took small pleasure therein, Olimael in consideration of his Noble present, was created high Admirall of the Mediterranean Sea, and furnished with greater Roze of Foxes and Gallies, then he had before.

C H A P.

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2

CHAP. II.

How the great Turke summoned all the Kings and Princes his subiects, because he minded to hold open Court: and how he married with the Princessse Agriola his Prisoner.



Hyppolyte being daily conversant with the Princessse Agriola became the having good knowledge in her Language, at length the Emperour himselfe came to her Chamber, and to the end he might the better behold the Princessse, he satte him downe in a Chayre opposite to her, and there he satte a long time, not able to content his Eyes with looking on her, and beholding her excellent Beautie: so that he could not, because she understood not the Turkish language. Wherefore he commanded Hyppolita to requir her name, and what her Parents were: which to satisfie his desire, she did: Agriola thus answering her. In vaine I beseeke you to know of me, the thing which death cannot force me to bewray: Let it suffice you that I am a Gentlewoman, the most vnfortunate that euer liued: with which words she wept very grievously. The Emperour moued with pittie, departed to his Chamber, so surprised and inflamed with her Love, as he could take no rest one minute of the Night: considering with himselfe, that seeing she esteemed so little of the richnesse she saw in his Pallace, and refused the offers made her by Hyppolita, that doubtlesse she was extract of some Noble Linage.

The next morning he called his sone Secretaries, commanding them to write to all the Princes of his Empire, that they should not faile to honour the day of his coronation with their presence, and to bring with them their Duchies and Daughters, and that they should doe on paine of

of

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

of his displeasure : all which was performed with present expedition. In the meane time, he caused divers sumptuous ornaments to be prepared, with all manner of precious Jewels could be devised, and these he daily sent to Agriola : but all these presents, promises, and manifold entertainments, could no way move her, not so much as to grant him a gracious countenance. He likewise sent for the best Ladies to his Court, that they should keep the Princess company : but she would be conversant with none but Hippolita, of whom she had so pretty learned the Arabian tongue, as many times she would indifferently answer the Emperour. But when he beheld her continually perishing, and that by no means she would be comforted : he doubted lest his presence did offend her, and therefore he forbore so often to visit her. For so dearly he loved her as for the halfe of his Empire, he would give her no occasion of discontent, hoping in time (which is the Lord and conquerour of all things) to alter that humour, and purchase her love, which he desired with earnest affection. But now at this day, where may we find a Lady so virtuous and well governed, being captive as Agriola was, & could not be won by such a mighty Emperour, considering her youth and beauty, the wonderfull riches incessantly offered her. Yet the highest Lord so protected her, that she might shew all the Turke his honours and persuasions, she might looke to Trincus, whose perfect image was engraven in her heart. And not fearing torment or death, she boldly answered the Emperour, that he troubled in vain. For she might not love him, in that she was married to another, whose noble spirit was then in her, and none but him she would love while she lived : yet might he no great account of her words, considering what frailty commonly is in woman. The day being come of this great preparation, and all the Princes present to understand the several qualities : he being placed in his imperiall seat, said. What he

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

intended to take to wife, one of the most beautifull Ladies in the world, and for that cause he sent for them, to understand how they liked thereof. Their answer, was that they liked well thereof, and would gladly honour her as well becommed them. When he sent for Agriola, and before them all, said unto her : that it was his pleasure to accept her for his wife, and therefore she should prepare herselfe on the morrow to be married. The Princess abashed at these speeches, fell downe before him in a dead trance, whereupon, by the Dukes and Ladies present, she was conveyed into her Chamber, where being againe revived, she began most pittifull and dolorous lamentations : so that all the company had left her, that she was alone with Hippolita, falling downe on her knees at her beds feete, she thus beganne.

O my God and benigne Father, pittie the poore distressed creature, and forget the offences I have here tofore committed : for what is a sinner, unless you in mercy suffer her to come before thee? Will thou then vouchsafe (O wonderful workman of the whole world) one eye of pittie upon thy humble forsaken servant? and if thou wilt not so fall into subjection, to the hated enemy of thy holy world, arming me so strongly in this temptation, that I no way may my Lord and Husband Trincus, but rather grant this desolate spirit, may leave this body and the world together. O my honourable Lord Trincus, where art thou now? that thou art not here to defend the Name and wrong this Tyrant offers thee? what, art thou dead? or hast thou forgotten me? No, no, so well am I assured of thy fidelity, as no torment can divert thee from me. For if I knew directly that thou art not living, the least would be my feare to follow thee : for then the greatest pleasure this Wagon could doe me, were to make me happy only by death. But for the matter is uncertaine, and that I live in hope once more to see thee : I will patiently endure all afflictions

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive.*

afflictions whatsoever, for so sweet a reward as is thy love. These speeches of the Princess so grieved Hyppolita, as one could hardly imagine who was most passionate, yet at length she thus spake to Agriola, I beseech you good Lady to leave these grievous lamentations, and regard the high estate, honor and dignity, that you shall have in marrying my Lord. Never persecute me (quoth the Princess) to be unjustly till'd with: for such preferments, if they be not gotten justly and by vertue, they ought not to be coveted, but to be by man's covetous desire. Thus spent they the whole night, and in the morning came the Queen and her noble court to the Court, to bid the fornamull Lady goe to rest in her Chamber, attending her in twenty beautiful gorgeous bestures, after their Country manner, far better than the valye of Helena, after her death at Troy. Within the foure dayes she was brought into the great hall, and from thence conducted to the Temple, where they were expected by the Mosti. He recount here the royal solemnity in the Temple, the Majesty and unspeakable dignity at the Pallace, the excellent Cœdies, rare triumphes, Orques, Banquets, Banquets, and such like court pleasures, would be a matter too prolixious: for they are not to our purpose. Yet it then sufficeth, that after they were magnificently recreated at Dinner and Supper, the dancing began, and God knows how the Turkes, Moores, Arabes, and Maides, sette forth themselves in their dabbies and troyes before their Ladies, much like the Satires and boyes of France, giving new variations of the *Plimphen* of Diana. But all these wordes, toys, and lollies, could not change the Princess countenance, for she continuing in her penitence, these sports were more to her than the pleasures of earth: above all fearing the loss of her chastity, which was a keene wound to be recovered. The next morning, by the Queens order she was carried to a large temple, to be by her and there, as the Prince

Aneas

Emperour of *Constantinople.* PART. 2.

Aneas when he came to Durdane Dido of Carthage, and there was the unfortunate Wybe committed to her rest. Some after came the haile Wybe-groom, calling for Eochas, that he might behold the Goddess he honoured, and as he was preparing himselfe to Bed, he was troubled with such feares, passions, and apoplexies, as now he seemed more like a Ghost than a man. Wherefore he was constrained to forsake the Chamber, when the extremity of the fit somewhat abating, and his former love passions freshly assailing him, coming to the Wybe againe, heavily he uttered these speeches.

O Agriola, Lady and sole Mistress of my heart, I thinke thou art some Goddess or (at least) exceeding all humanity, so strange is this adventure, as never any man (I thinke) ere suffered the like. Alas, cannot thy anger be appeased, nor be persuaded to love him, who for thy sake endures most grievous torments? I pray thee be not the cause of my death: or if thou needs wilt, suffer me first to enjoy the fruits of my desire. Now my Lord answered Agriola, that with my will you never shall enjoy it, and if perforce you seeke to dishonour me, assure your selfe I am resolved, rather to suffer endless miseries, then to violate my faith to my lawfull Husband, for such is my trust in God, that he will not forget such as call on him. But in respect thou hast not been cruell to me, nor hast exercised me with any tyrannie, I shall suffer thee to lye upon the Bed by me, as my Brother might doe, and sometime (though it be more then modesty) embrace thee in mine armes: but if further thou presumest, thou shalt not be permitted, but shalt loose that favour, thy selfe, and me together. Spadam. quoth he, in granting me that curtelle, you save my life, for I have many Concubines to qualifie those passions, and never will I attempt your dishonour while I live, if I but offer the motion, refuse me for ever. I shall therefore account of you as my Sister, and death shall not make me doe contrary

The History of Palmerin D'Oliua.

ric to your appointment. The yong Princesse glad of his solemn promise, gave him a kisse or two, and suffered him to embrace her: but other kindnesse could he never obtain, contenting himselfe with this, because he loved her so dearly. At some daies end, the feasts being ended, the Princesse took their leave of the great Sultane, who with many rich presents sent them home into their Countreies. Thus remaind Agriola with the Great Turke, and the knight to whom Oimiel had given Ptolome and Colmelio, sayled with his Prisoners into Ethiopia: and thenceforward used them not as slaves, but as Gentlemen of good qualitie, especially Ptolome, whom he reputed a hardy knight, and a man bozne to great enterprises.

CHAP. III.

How Palmerin after his Recreation, returned to the Sea side, and seeing the Ship and his company gone, made great lamentation, and what after followed.



Before in this History you have heard, how Palmerin walking on shore with his Faulcon on his fist, desired to see the pleasantnesse of the Ile, and finding so many delights to withhold him, returned not toward the Ship till it was neare night: but when he came thither againe, and could not see the Ship nor any one to question withall, he was greatly amazed, running here and there, yet all to no purpose. Sometime he imagined that Trineus had betrayed him, because he had acquainted him with his love towards his Sister: and then againe resolved himselfe on the contrary. All about he looked for his companions, not knowing what to think: whether they were carried away by Pirates, or taken Prisoners by

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

by the Inhabitants of the Island. In the end, having compassed in his minde all imaginations he could, and seeing that by his regard of pleasure he had lost his friends; he entred into many sorrowfull lamentations, farre exceeding Cadmus when he lost his Soldiers by the horrible Serpent, cursing and exclaiming on himselfe, as he had bene guilty of the death of his Father. Alas (quoth he) why did I not remember these wretched mistoftunes by poore Varnan? Whose sorrowes was likewise procured by a Hawke, in an haplesse houre was this wicked Bird given me: Ah treacherous and deceiving Trumpet, I think thou art some incorporate fiend sent from Hell to insure the most constant Lovers: and therefore gentle Owle, or rather enchanted Diuell, thou shalt never hereafter displease any other, so taking her by the necke ye pulled her in peeces, and said.

Oh sweet Lady Polynarda, how contrary is fortune: and how unhappy our desires prevented? Well am I assured, if Trineus come to the Court without me, it will endanger your life, and the onely thing that shalldo me from death, is comfortable hope to see you once againe. Therefore Divine Spirituelle, I call for your succour, that by your gracious assistance, I may endure these vehement afflictions. Oh gentle Princesse Agriola, how have I deceived you? But in requitall of your loving, no rest nor ease shall possesse my soule, till I have brought Trineus and you to as great joy, as by my means you have receiued discomfort. In these complaints he layd him downe under a Tree, and so wasted the time till morning came, when seeing no creature to speake withall, nor any meanes for him to pass the Sea: he determined to travaile through the Island till he might meet some body to conferre with. Thus having no defence, but his sword under his arme, he walked along, and at length he met a Moore with four Spaniels, and a Harlin on his fist: whom he humbly saluting, demanded

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

manded the name of the Countrey, and if there were any thing neere for his passage. The Moore perceiving by his language that he was a Christian, in great anger answered. Art thou come to fight to take thine owne misfortune? By Mahomet I shall welcome thee hither with a vengeance. So laying hand on his Scimitare, Palmerin perceiving by his gesture (though he understood not his talke) that he wished him no good: wherefore drawing his sword, he gave the Moore such a stroke on the head as he cleaved it to his very teeth, and said. By God villaine, thou shalt not take me prisoner, or carry me into the Sea to seek my ransom, and for my all offencious vailets be served, as I resemble thee in conditions. Thus leaving the Moore dead, he took another way, least if he should be followed, he might fall into danger: but seeing he was unarmed, and could not speake the Arabian tongue, he imagined that at length he must needs be taken. Whereupon he returned backe to the Moore, and taking his garments, left his own there, and thence forwarde determined to counterfeit himselfe dumbe: by which subtiltie he thought to escape unknowne, and prevent his imprisonment, till he found meanes to returne towards Almaine againe. The day dealing on apace, and darke night approaching, he came to a faire fountaine of the cleereſt water (in his opinion) that ever he saw, where he laying him downe to rest, consumed the night so quietly as he could. On the morrow he began to remember his miseries, his dangers past, and such as were imminent, the conceit whereof made him very melancholly: so after he had eaten a little bread, which he found in the Moores Budget, according to the manner of Diogenes, he layd him downe againe and slept.

CHAP. IV.

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

CHAP. III.

How *Palmerin* counterfeiting himselfe dumbe in the Isle of *Calpha*, was found by certaine *Turkes* as he lay a sleepe by the Fountaine: and how he was received into the Service of *Alchidiana* Daughter to the Soldan of *Babylon*.



Now that you may the more easily understand, in that which followeth, the full intent of our discourse, you must call to memory, how *Gamezio*, who was Raine before Constantinople by the Prince *Fiorendos*, as you have heard in the first part of this History: was Son to the Soldan of *Babylon* named *Mylos*, & Brother to *Maulicus*, who at his death was a very young Prince. *Mylos* understanding by his Subjects, & *Gamezio* the hope of his declining age, was gone by the summons of *Atropos* to the habitation of his Gods, could not afterward enjoy any health of body, or quiet in mind, and therefore ere a yeere was fully expired, he went to seek his Soune among his equals in the fields of *Elysium*. Before he took his journey wherein no creature returneth againe, he charged his succeeding Soune *Maulicus*, to revenge his brothers death: being perswaded, that himselfe should not be discharged of his unfortunate recompence in the other world, if he failed to accomplish his latest commandment. *Maulicus*, not to hinder his departure promised he would, yet could he not fulfill it, being troubled in his own Kingdome, more then 20 yeeres after.

The History of Palmerin D'Olive.

But after he had reduced the rebellious Provinces into obedience, he married with the King of Armenias Daughter, by whom he had the Princess Alchidiana, one of the most beautiful and gracious Ladies in her time: who being come to age of experience, was beloved of her father, as he would never suffer her out of his sight, so that he made deniall to all such as requested her in marriage. Alchidiana, when she understood her own singularity, desired the company of the most beautifull Ladies in Asia, because she held this opinion, that when the fairest were present, beauty would then be most splendant. For this cause she sent to Prince Guilharan, sonne to Polidia her Mothers sister, that he would bring his sister Ardemia to the Court, who was counted the Paragon though all the Monarchy of Babylon.

She being come to the Citie of Calpha from whence the name of the Island was derived, her Cousen Alchidiana devised all the meanes she could to entertaine her, and among other Courtly recreations, they daily used dancing and hunting. It came to passe, that these Princesses and Gallants of the Soldans Court, now rising to their pleasure, the knights delighting, the Ladies in beholding the brave voltages of their horses, and their swiftnesse in course like the wings of Pegasus: after choyce of many places for game, they came by the fountain where Palmerin lay asleep so soundly, as he neither heard their horses nor halloving. Which when one of the Moors perceived, intending to make all the other laugh, he alighted from his horse, and coming to him that meant no body harm, said. Wee supiter this sleepe fellow is drunke, but I will awake him, that he may judge the prize of our course: with which words he gave Palmerin such a blow on the eare, as made him turne his head on the other side. Palmerin suddainly starting up, and seeing him stand so, minding that thus had drunken him, he drew his sword, and therewith sealed him a quittance for his life, whereat the

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

the other ambushed, came to revenge their companions death: but Palmerin casting his spaulle about his arme, layd about him to kill, as he sent six more after their fellow, and any one that came nere him, he layd at his foot, eyther maimed or slaine outright. Alchidiana marvelling at this stratagem, as also to heare the outrageous noise of the Moores came riding towards them, demanding what he was, that made such havocke in her presence? The knights gave place to the Prince, so that she came being nere to Palmerin, who enraged like a salvage Moor in the wood, made a bloody massacre among the Moores, & when she beheld his brave and comely featured body and hardie courage, she perswaded her selfe that he was descended of high and noble birth, and if she sought not meanes to cease this turmole, it would proceed to a greater danger: therefore (moved with pittie) she commanded her people on paine of their lives, to hold themselves quiet, while she demanded the cause of this tumult.

Palmerin glad that the Princess so succoured him, imagined by her exceeding beauty, and sumptuous ornaments, that she was their soveraigne; wherefore calling himselfe at her feet, offered her his sword: which curtesie not a little contenting her, she said: I know not my friend, whether thou be knight or squire, but whatsoever thou art, seeing (of thine owne good will) thou hast thus yielded to me, I will defend thee against all other. Therefore tel me what he was, that against my will did first assault thee: Palmerin with reverent obedience, made signes of his thankfulness, and with such good countenance dissembled to be dumbe, as one would have judged he had never spoken. This poor man (saith Alchidiana) the Gods offered great wrong in depriving him of speech: for this I will say (hadst thou utterance) thou wert one of the bravest accomplished men in this world, both in stout complexion, curtesie and hardinesse. Notwithstanding thou must needs be high in their grace, being able to encounter with so many:

The History of Palmerin D'Oliua.

and defend thy selfe so worthily as thou hast done. Then was she certified by an ancient knight, that one of the Squires of her Chamber smote him as he lay asleepe, which he reuenged in such sort as she had seen. Thus ma (quoth she) the dumbe man did as well becomed him, wherefore in respect of his civility, and that he can so well correct the other bolonnesse of soles: I will entertain him as one of our Court, forbidding any to trouble him, as they tender my labour and their owne liues. So commanding buriall for the dead, & provision for the wounded, she went to her Pabillion, which was not farre off, willing Palmerin (by signes) to go with her, delivering him his sword again, and saying he should be her servant. Humble graces did Palmerin requite her withall, and in signe of his obedience offered to kisse her feet, but she would not permit him, and taking him up by the hand, said: Looke that hereafter thou go not from me, whereto by signes he consented, knowing that by her meanes he should be safely protected. While these ceremonies on either side endured, the Princesse Ardemia & the other Ladies entered the Pabillion: but Palmerin earnestly beholding Ardemia, was amazed at her wonderfull beautie, imagining that she much resembled his Lady Polynarda, so that breathing forth a vehement sigh, he could hardly withhold himselfe from speaking. The Tables being covered for their banquet, very choice delicacies were serued in on great plates of Gold, garnished with very precious and costly stones, which caused Palmerin to maruaile not a little, who the Princesse seeing so sad, said: How now my friend? dost thou not think thy selfe safe in my presence? Behold me on my word, if any one displease thee, he shall presently die the death. So causing him to sit by her at the table, intreated him so well, as he had been one of the chiefest Barons in her fathers Court. The Tables withdrawne, the Hunters had started the Hare: which was so narrowly pursued

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

pursued by the Hounds, as to save her selfe, she run into the Princesse Pabillion, but the Greyhound was so speedy of pace, as he caught her in the presence of Alchidiana, who with her owne hands took her from the Dog, and gave her in keeping to one of her Pages. By this time it grew towards night, wherefore each one mounting on their Horses, set forward to the Citie: the two Princessees having no other talk all the way, but of the singular behaviour of the dumbe knight. They riding fast and easily, because Palmerin travailed by them on foot. Ardemia beholding his goodly armour, demanded of him, if he were a knight, which he by signes made known unto her. Whereof Alchidiana very joyfull, said, that she would present him to the Soldan her father, and for this cause, the more she beheld him, the greater pleasure she conceived in him. Being now come to the Gates of Calpha, there stood many knights ready with lighted torches to conduct the Ladies and their train to the Wallace, which was so rare and sumptuously edified, as Palmerin was amazed to see such royaltie.

All the way Alchidiana had the dumbe knight by her side, giving him her hand to alight from her Hourse, which he did with exceeding reverence, and nothing discontented with his office: but many knights and Princes there present, murmured thereat, thinking him not worthy to come so nere her, nor might he be so suffered, but that the Princesse somewhat enamoured of him, would suffer none to contrary her pleasure: and leaned on his arm all the while she went up the Staires of the Wallace, to give the good even to the Soldan, who stayed his daughters returne in the great Hall. Still leaned she on Palmerin, till she came to her father, who sat in a magnificent Chaire of state, having the resemblance of the firmament over his head, (after the Turkish manner) so garnished with Rubies & Diamonds, which with the lights of the torches shined most

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

most glorious; whereat Palmerin wounded, conducting the Princess with so brave gesture, as many reputed him some noble personage, and others (civically) thought the worst of him.

The Soldane, who loved his Daughter as you have heard before arose from his Chayre to welcom her home, demanding what sport she had on Hunting, and if she had brought any Hunt on home with her? Certes my Lord, (quoth she) we have better fortune then you think on: but before I declare the manner thereof to you, will it please you to give me what I have found this day? The Soldan, not able to deny his Daughter any thing, liberally granted her request. A thousand thanks, good Father (quoth she): this Dumb Knight hath your Grace given me, who (in his own defence) hath this day slain certaine of your Knights, and hereof you may assure your selfe, that he is one of the most hardiest Gentlemen that ever came into these parts. Wishing it is your request Daughter (quoth he) I could be well contented to grant it, but how shall I answer the friends of the murdered, to whom I have already promised, that for his offence he shall be delivered to the Lyons? So which of these grants ought best to be kept; yours being my Daughter, wherein Nature ruleth, or theirs being my Subjects, which the Law commandeth? I may not be Judge herein, said the Princess: Notwithstanding, me thinks (under your Highnes correction) that you have bin but hardly counselled, to give a sentence so cruel, having not yet heard nor seen the party. And albeit he were guilty of blame, as he is not, but before his condemnation, he ought to be heard how he could cleare himselfe, but if he must dye, I having assured him life, and taken him into my defence, the disgrace is so great to me, as mine Honour must remaine for ever condemned. And you my Lord and Father, whose Authority may discharge me of this reproch, if you refuse now to assist me, the grief

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

hereof will be my death. These words she spake with such affection, and so heavily weeping, as would have moved a Stone heart to pity her: wherefore Maucius touched with naturall remorse, said. You shall perceive Daughter what I have devised, to the end my word may not be impeached: He shall be put into the Lyons Den, and suddenly taken out againe, by this means I shall keepe my promise to his accusers, and satisfie your earnest desire. And the better to content you herein, his enemies shall be perswaded, that he escaped the Lyons with life, and then will I give him safety throu all my dominions. The Princess fearing the bloud thirstie desire of the Lyons, could not so content her selfe, which Palmerin perceiving, that the Father and Daughter thus contended for him: fell downe on his knees before the Soldane, making signes that he should accomplish his promise, for he feared not the danger of his life. Maucius marvailling hereat, perswaded his Daughter that bring so hardy, he might escape: desiring her to rest contented, for things should be handled in such sort, as the Knight should no way be endangered. These words somewhat contented the Princess, who caused Palmerin to be conducted to his Chamber, charging him that was appointed to attend on him, to see that he were very honourably used, and in the morning to bring him againe before her Father. The Soldane and his Knights spent all that evening in diverse judgments on the Dumb Knight, each one being glad of the Soldanes sentence: but Alchidiana was so pensive (considering the dangerous hazard he should passe) as she flung to her Chamber refusing all succourance, and spending the time in dolorous complaints, desiring rather her owne death, then the Dumb Knight should be any way harmed.

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

CHAP. V.

How *Palmerin* was put into the Denne
among the Lyons and Leopards, and
having killed three of them, es-
caped valiantly.



Palmerin being brought to his Cham-
ber, which was one of the most sumptu-
ous in all the Pallace, according as
the Princeesse had appointed: he made
signe to the Gentleman that attended
on him to withdraw himselfe, for he
was accustomed to be alone in his
Chamber, which he immediately did,

being loth to offend him.

Palmerin being alone by himselfe, gave thanks to the
God of heauen, who in midst of his misfortunes, cau-
sed such a gracious Lady to saue him so kindly, as de-
ferued his life when he was in danger, and by whose
meanes he conceived good hope to escape his Enemies
hands, and returne safely towards Almaine. His mis-
adventures ended, he betooke himselfe to rest, and in the
mornning, Linus the Gentleman that had him in charge,
came and presented him before the Soldane, who com-
manded him to be caried presently to the Lyons. Alchidi-
ana understanding that the dumbe knight was with her
father, sent him a rich Mantle of Scarlet, desiring him to
weare it for her sake: which he putting about him went
frankly with his keeper to the Lyons Den, where the doore
being opened, he boldly entred, desiring God to assist him
in this perill. Palmerin being in the Den, because none
of the Lyons should get forth to hurt any other, how euer

God

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

The Lyons coming about him; smelling on his clothes
would not touch him: but (as it were knowing the bloud
royall) lay downe at his feet and licked him, and afterward
went to their places againe. But there were among them
three Leopards, that furiously came and assailed him. The
firstmost wherof he parced with his sword, that he was
able to doe no more harme. The other two, although they
had tozned his Mantle, and put him in very great danger,
as they that looked in at the windowes and crevices per-
ceiued: yet to their no little admiration, in the end he slew
them both, and so went forth of the Den againe, to whom
Linus came, and lovingly taking him by the hand, brought
him to the Soldane, to whom he discoursed his fight with
the Leopards, and how gentle the Lyons had bene to
him.

The Soldane greatly astonished herent, made more
estimation of him then he did before, and because the Lyons
refused to touch him, reputed him of Royall parentage.
Whereupon he sent for his Daughter, praying her to in-
treat him not as a knight, but as a Noble and vertuous
Prince, considering his behaviour so well deserved. The
Princeesse entertained him very graciously, and hearing the
successe of his happy fortune, spake thus in the hearing of
them all. Because every one shall know, Sir knight, how
much I honour your good gifts, I will cause my father so
well to love you, as he shall repent himselfe a thousand
times of the danger he put you to: and so very lovingly
embracing him, desired pardon on her chaine behalfe, because
she suffered him to be thrust to the Lyons. Palmerin in signe
of attonement, and that he was nothing displeased, kissed
her hand, and sitting down in a Chaire by her, beheld Arde-
mia, who resembled his Countesse so equall in beauty, and
could not hold his eye from her, so that he conceived such
pleasure in his regard, as he judged it sufficient enogh to
maintaine life. But she that was ignorant of the cause, pre-
sumed

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

lived that he loved her, wherefoze thencefozward, she began so merrily to affect him, as she enjoyed no rest but in his presence. Thus were these two Ladies Alchidiana, and Ardemia touched with one disease, and that so sharply to the quicke, that the least torment they endured (seeing he could neither speake nor understand the language) was twice to them then death. And so it fell out, that each of them thinking her selfe best beloved, concealed her thoughts from the other, and would in no case be reputed amorous, least so her desires should be discovered. Alchidiana for arguments of her love, gave him Horses, Squires, Servants and Pages, so that the greatest Prince in the Court was not better furnished then he: and in this fortune such was his minde, that for all the honoz and favour the Soldan and his Daughter bare him, he did not outreach himselfe in behaviour, but was so courteous and benigne, that each one loved and desired to be familiar with him. And if any enterprises of Joules or Journeys were in hand, Palmerin was the foremost in the field, and carried the prize away from all whatsoeuer, which incited Mauleus to love him in such sort, that he entertained him into such speciall credit, as he would never resolve on any matter of importance, without his shew of good liking. And albeit the Princes of the Court shewed him good countenance, yet Envie (that never can rest in ambitious hearts) caused them in the end to raise slander against him: which Palmerin perceived, but being unable to remedie, awaited convenient time for his departure, notwithstanding the earnest affection Alchidiana bare him. He knew likewise so well to disguise his matters, that so often as the Princesse would hold him in talke, he still feigned not to understand her: which made her jealous towards Ardemia her Cousin, who by Alchidianaes injuries, and Palmerins refusall of her love, lost her life, as you shall read in the Chapters following.

CHAP. VII.

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

CHAP. VI.

How Prince *Maurice* sent his Ambassadors to the *Soldan*, to desire safe-Conduct for his coming to the Court: to try if he could finde any Knight there, able to deliver him of an extreame trouble, that he endured by Enchantment.



During the time that Palmerin was thus esteemed and beloved, in the Court of the great Monarch of Assyria, upon a Sunday after dinner, as the Soldane was in the great Hall conferring with his Daughter, and many other great Princes and Lords present: there entered a Moorish Knight armed, except his Helmet and Gauntlets, which were carried after him by two Squires, and making his solemn reuerence, humbled himselfe at Mauleus feet, saying: Most high and redoubted Monarch, my Soberaigne Lord Maurice, Prince of Palmeria, kisseth your highnesse hand, sending to require your gracious safe-Conduct, that himselfe may come to your Court, to trie among all your Knights, if there be any one so valiant and valiant, as can deliver him from a torment he endures, the most cruell and strange that ever was heard of, and happened to him in this sort.

The King of Palmeria, great Governour of the Moores, and father to my Lord, being unable (though extreame age) to wield the government of his Realme, gave the administration thereof, and made his Lieutenant Generall my Lord Maurice, a Knight so hardie and puissant as any of his time, and so renowned for his bountie, sagacitie, and

b2abc

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua.*

by the linements of blood: as there is none of the Kings of Iudea, Egypt, Ethiopia, and the neighbouring Counties round about, but gladly desire his Alliance and Friendship.

So that many have sent their Embassadors unto him, presenting their Daughters and Kingdoms to him, the greater part whereof he hath hitherto refused, excusing himself by his Fathers age, and his own youth. But as often times it happeneth, fortune enemy to all good endeavors, not suffering him to remaine in quiet, permitted that the Quene of Tharus, the fayrest in all the Orientall parts, a yong and itchy Widow, as is very well knowne: after she had sent him many presents of incomparable value, intreated him to come and see her, shewdowing in this message, the great desire she had to marry with him. The Prince being benigne and courteous, would not deny her, but in short time after journeyed to her. The Quene entertaining him with great loyalty, and seeing in him farre more gracious and beautifull gifts, then before she heard reported: was so surprized with Love, as instead of looking to be wooed, herselfe was constrained to demand; knowing so well to declare her desirous and affectionate passions, as the Prince moved with amorous pittie, granted what she requested, without any further condition or promise, she persuading on herselfe, in respect of her great and favourable entertainments, that he would not leave her for any other. But here in was she deceived, for the yong Prince having layd with her ten or twelve dayes, desired leave to depart, saying: that he had received Letters from his Father, which commanded his speedy returne home againe, promising her, (if so his Father consented) to take her in Marriage, and that with such expedition as might be. The Quene somewhat contented with this answer, thinking he would performe what he promised, let him depart. He being come home into his owne Country, forgot his Love to his new

Friend,

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

Friend, and by his Fathers commandement, married with a yong Princess, Daughter to the King Lycomedes. The Quene hearing this newes, was almost dead with very conceit of griefe, and conceived such hatred against my Lord Maurice, as she determined to be revenged on him, whatsoever came after. And the better to compass her intent, she sent to search out one of her Knights, a learned Magician, promising him, if he would helpe her, to be revenged on him that so deceived her, she would make him one of the chiefest of her Realme. The Magician who evermore was desirous to please her, promised her to worke such a debill, that Maurice should endure such cruell torments, as her selfe should be constrained to pity him. And to accomplish this practise, he only desired the King her Fathers Crowne, which was one of the richest in the whole World: which Crowne he Conjured in such sort, as the Diuell himselfe could not imagine the like, and coming therewith to the Quene, said:

Shadam, you must send this Crowne to the Prince of Palmeria, desiring him for your sake he will weare it on his head, in the chiefest affaires of his estate, which he immediately will accomplish: but this I dare assure you, that hereby he shall suffer so many vexations, as he would endure a thousand deaths if he could possible, to be delivered from this torment, which he shall never be, till the most loving Lover in the world take it from his head. The Quen so joyfull hereof as could be, sent the Crowne to the Prince, who received it thankfully, and beholding it so sumptuous, suddenly put it upon his head: But presently flew out of his head such a flame of fire, as it had bene the blaze that cometh from a discharged Cannon. When called he for ayde and succour, making the greatest lamentations that ever were heard: but all was to no end, for no Knight or Lady there could doe him any good: and so all the whole day he remained in this cruell Martyrdom, burning alive, yet

C

not

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

not perishing, resembling the Salamander in the extreme fire. When his Subjects saw they could procure him no ease, they sent two of the greatest Lords of the Realme to the Quene, who humbly intreated her to pley the Prince: and to recompence the fault he had committed, he should take her to his Wife, and endow her with those honours, his possessions belonging to him. The Quene entertained them very nobly, and after she had understood their Request, she answered:

My Lords, the Marriage betwixt your Prince and me is intollerable, and no way can he now contract himselfe againe: For I rememb'ring his disloyaltie, and the torments he suffers by my means, it were impossible that we should lovingly lide together, therefore in this matter you shall excuse me. And let him know, that seeing he was so presumptuous, contrary to his faith and promise, to refuse me for his Wife, I now so much disdaine and contemn him, as my heart by no means can be induced to love him. And no other remedie there is for his torments, but that he seek through Asia, Europe, and Africa, a Labor so perfect, wh: by his Loyaltie may ease the paine he suffers, for his treachery and treason. With this short answer depart my Country: for your Master is so unworthy of labour, as for his sake I hate his people.

The Embassadors marvailling at this fatal destiny, returned to their Lord, to whom they reported the Quenes answer, and what remained to ease his affliction, which more and more increased his griefe: wherefore seeing what he was enjoyned to doe, the next day he left the Court, intending not to stay a day in any place, till he should finde a Knight so vertuous and loyall. Thus hath he travailed Ethiopia, India, Tartaria, and the greater part of your Dominions, but as yet he hath found none to remedy his misfortune: but if any other disloyall Knight in tryall touch the Crown, his vexations are far more greater then before. For
this

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

this cause most mighty Lord, having heard the great fame of ballant Knights in your Court, especially of a stranger Knight being dumbe, who came hither but of very late time: he desires your Majesty, his assurance granted, to suffer him to trie his fortune here, if in your presence he may finde any helpe, or else to seek further in other Princes Courts. These are the principall points of my charge, may it please your Highness to consider of my answer, how I shall returne and certifie my Master, that you may likewise see an Adventure most marvellous.

CHAP. VII.

How Prince *Maurice* came to the Court of the *Soldane* of *Babylon*, where he was delivered of his *Burning Crowne* that tormented him, by the Loyaltie of *Palmerin*.



Aulicus, wond'ring at this strange discourse, thus answered the Moore. You may (my friend) returne to your Master when you please, and say from us, that he shall be welcome to our Court, with as safe assurance as our own person: as well for his valour and bounty which I have heard greatly esteemed, as for that we are desirous, to see so strange an Adventure ended in our presence. And we cannot sufficiently marvaile, how he could be so forgetfull of himselfe, that after his faith plighted, he could extinguish her remembrance that loved him so unfeignedly: but herein we may behold the soberaignty of confident lovers. See then and certifie him of our pleasure, and that we pray our Gods his conuning may be in such an hour, as he may depart to his content: yet am I greatly afraid that he shall not finde any Knight in our Court, but that either
forsaie

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

forsook and sailed towards his Lable. The Moore kissing the Soldans hand, and humbly taking his leave, returned to his Lord, leaving the Soldane and his knights admiring this rare accident, so that he exposed every one to adbe, his fortune at this Crowne, to give the greater assurance to their Ladies of their loyall fidelitie: but many of them were herein deceived, for instead of praise and glory, they received shame and reproch, as you shall see hereafter.

The Prince advertised of the Soldans answer, in hope of good successe, set forward on his journey, and the next day following he came to Calpha, where Maucius caused him to be honourably lodged in the Citie, because that day he would not come to the Pallace. On the morrow after that, Letha wife to the Soldane, her Daughter Alchidiana, the faire Ardemia, with many other Ladies, and Princes, were come into the Hall; to see the tryall of this nobellie: Prince Maurice understanding how the Soldane with all his Courtly assistants sayd his coming, went to the Pallace, accompanied with an hundred knights, all clad in Black mourning, in signe of their continuall sorrow for their Princes misfortune. There was he very royally entertained, the Soldane causing him to sit by him, in a sumptuous Chaire of Estate, of purpose provided, and after many welcomes and kinde gratulations, the Soldane demanded how he felt himselfe, and whether he sustained any ease of his torment. Ah my Lord, quoth the Prince, I cannot expresse to your Majesty the pain which I feele, being a thousand times worse to me then death, & every houre enforcing me to despaire, but I must endure it with what patience I can, till incomparable loyaltie discharge me of this burden. With these words he lamented exceedingly, so that each one was moved to pittie him, for such a burning flame continued in the Crowne, and such furious heat proceeded from his mouth, as set the Hall in mercurious hotnesse, yet he considered nothing at all, but in every part was

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

was so small as any other man. Beloved Cosen, said the Soldane, for my selfe, I will not enterprize to meddle with your Crowne, for I doe not imagine my selfe so favoured of love, as I can finish that wherein so many have failed, nor would I willingly seeke mine owne dishonour, being farre unable to profit you: as for my knights, let them make proofe of their loyaltie and spare not, and see which of them can win the honour of this Adventure. Whereupon Guiliharan, Brother to faire Ardemia first entred, and coming to the Enchanted Prince, sayd. Trust me my Lord, since I began my profession in Love, I never committed any perjurie to my Lady, therefore will I try to end this Enchantment.

Then earnestly beholding Alchidiana, for whose love onely he came to the Court, he approached the Enchanted Prince, and puld so hard as he could at the Crown, but he crying aloud, sayd. For Gods sake Sir Knight, quicke no longer, for if by disloyalty I could be cured, I see you are able to give me remedy. Alas, in all my life I never felt like paine, by any knight that tryed his fortune, great need have you to doe severe penance, if you will bee favoured by love any more, towards whom you have so heynously offended, for my infirmittie may not be holpen, but by loyaltie, firmnes, faithfull pursuit, constant perseverance, and such other honoured vertues esteemed in love, whereof you have not the least particular. Thus repayed this new Lover, more ashamed then a Virgin to be seene lightly disposed, and so set downe among the other knights, whose fortune proved as effectually as the first, to their owne disgrace, and great torment of the languishing Prince. The Kings and ancient Princes, seeing the young knights could doe no good, put themselves in order, each one conceiving so well of himselfe, as if their fortune served to end the Adventure, their yeares should carry the honour, and they be renowned for ever by their Ladies: but their

vaire conceit and desire to accomplish an impossibilitie, much abused them, so that they shamefully remained frustrate in their intents, and the paines of the enchanted Prince greatly augmented, who thus spake to them. Truly my Lords, it is the custome of your ancient and audacious opinions, to extoll your loves and valour: but for any thing I see, your old yeres have much lesse merited amorous mercy, then the indiscreet and unconstant dealing of these young Princes. When seeing that no other offered to probe his vertue, delibering many wretched sighes, he said: Unhappy wretch that I am, how much more had it beene to my ease and benefit, if the Queene of Tharsus (whom I so heynously offended) would have contented her selfe in her reuenge, and caule me to be peace-meale toyn in sunder, then thus have delibered me into this insupportable vexation, the end whereof will neuer be accomplished, seeing that in this honourable Court of my Lord the Soldan, I find no one can giue me comfort.

Palmerin hearing the lamentation of this amorous Party, fell into a profound imagination, and after he had long regarded Ardemia, who so liuely resembled his Mistress Polynarda, said within himselfe: Ah sweet Adam, and my only Mistress, touchsafe at this instant to assist me, for by your succour I shall now make prowe of my faithfull and inuiolable Loyaltie: which neuer inought offended you, if not at Durace in affecting Laurana, whom I simply thought to be the Lady, who was so often promised in my visions. But seeing my thoughts neuer sorted to effect, as also that I was deceived in your name: that ought not to be imputed to me for any trespass, and therefore diuine Goodesse be favourable to me. When surprised with suddaine fog, he began againe earnestly to behold the Princesse Ardemia: who imagining her selfe onely beloved of him, cast forth a bitter sigh, and turning to Alchidiana sayd: Ah Adam and my deere Cousin, what great fault hath this

cruell

cruell Queene committed, appointing her Page in such sort, as loyall and faithfull Ladies may not be suffered herein, for deliberance of this young and beautifull Prince doubtlesse he should sooner receiue helpe by them then by Knights, for much more loyally doe they love then men, and are in their affections firme and constant. Alchidiana, who felt her selfe touched with this intricate furie, whereof the faire Ardemia complained: vncainly conjectured, whereto her sighes and faulting speeches tended, which rayled private conceit, and such a vehement attaint of jealousy, as she would not answer a word, but feigning to smell some discontented saboz, turned her face the contrary way.

Palmerin looking round about him, and seeing none would medole with the adventure: fell on his knee before the Soldane, craving leave of Agaes to try his fortune, which he granted, and in a laughter said: Goe thy wayes Dumb Knight, and in such an houre maist thou touch the Crowne, that all the honour may fall to thy share. When Palmerin having his eye fixed on her, who in beauty no paragon his onely Mistress, exalting his minde with an intire sigh, secretly said.

Ah mirror of excellency, although my body be farre distant from you: yet am I in spirit day and night in your presence, being so confidently assured of your love, that it is not inferiour to mine, which being thought makes me thinke you present before me. Wherfore chiefe Mistress and Governesse of my life, you shall now receiue the honour, that by the vertue of your faithfull servant you ought to haue: for I hold my selfe towards you, innocent and pure, as needs must answerable success, repay so good deserting. When liuing hand on the burning Crowne, which he took from his head so easily, as though no Enchantment at all had held it: and then ceased the vehement beate in Maurice, and from his mouth came obferous and sweet labours, as every one present delighted to seele them. The

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua.*

Prince so joyful as could be for his deliberance; as may well be conjectured, prostrated himselfe at Palmerins feet, and with unspeakable joy, thus said: Most Noble and fortunate Knight, how much am I bound and indebted to thee? Right happie was the houre of thy Birth, but much more happie my journey to see thee: let my word suffice, I so farre deliver my selfe yours, as my selfe, my Subjects, my possessions, or whatsoever els is mine, I freely offer to your disposition. Palmerin, who ever bare the mind of a valiant Knight, was displeased that so great a Prince should honoꝛ him with such reverence, wherefoꝛe with great humilitie he tooke him up in his armes, causing him to sit down where befoꝛe he did: But the Soldane and all his Lords greatly amazed, not so much at his curtesie, as his gracious Fortune, did him all the honour could be devised: but he bath full of this overgreat kindnesse, kneeled downe befoꝛe Maulicus, shewing by signes that himselfe was altogether unworthy of such honoꝛ, but his Majestie, to whom that rich Crowne worthily appertained: which he presenting the Soldan, kneeled downe to kisse his feet, but Maulicus would not suffer him, and taking him by the hand, said: Sir Knight, we heartily thank you for the great pleasure you have done us, promising you by the faith of a Prince, that this Crown shall be kept in our Treasury, to witnes that we had in our Court, the most loyall and honoꝛable among all Knights. In recompence whereof, we give you this Citie, with all th'appurtenances therto belonging, and to morow we will put you in possession thereof. Oh that it pleased the immortall powers, and their great Prophet Mahomet, to deliver you speech whereof you are destitute: For I sweare by their high immortall Name, we would make you the greatest in all our Kingdomes. Palmerin with humble gesture returned his thankfulness, signifying that he would have neither Citie nor Castles, but that it sufficed him to be one of his Knights: Notwithstanding the Prince by imfortunate

Emperour of *Constantinople.* PART. 2.

fortunate means gave him rich gifts, and for his sake stayed there more then two moneths.

CHAP. VIII.

How the Princesse *Ardemia*, enduring extreame Passions and torments in Love, made offer of her affections to *Palmerin*, which he refused: wherewith the Princesse (through extreame conceit of griefe and despaire) suddainly dyed.



Alas may be conjectured, the great pleasure of the two faire Ladies *Alchidiana* and *Ardemia*, beholding the only man whom they both loved as their lives, aspiring to obtaine the honour of the Enchanted Crowne. For each of them severally perswaded herselfe, that he had thus adventured in honour of her Love. And as they returned from the great Hall to their private Chambers, *Alchidiana* came and tooke *Palmerin* by the hand, and walking onwards with him, thus spake:

Oh gentle Knight, how are you to be regarded above all other? I know not why the Gods should deigne you of speech, except that in all things, this only excepted, you should be perfectly resembled to them. Oh how happy is she that might but adventure to make you her Servant? Doubtlesse, if in her appeare so singular perfections, as apparently shew themselves in you: Well might it be reputed a rare conjunction, when the Celestiall dispositions governing their humane affections, hath united you in so amiable alliance.

The Gentleman that attended on the Princesse, greatly murmured at this private Familiaritie: but she was so immo-

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

immoderate in her affections, as Virginall modestie was now forgotten, and careless of regard, openly shewed her desires. Thus were these two Ladies now, much more amorous of the Dumb Knight then before: So that they were not well, but eyther in his company, or thinking on him. Alchidiana remaining jealous of her Cosen, feared not to love her as she was wont, but devised all the means she could, that she might be sent to her Fathers Court againe: yet she that little made account thereof, sought opportunity to bestow her Love to Palmerin, and by chance seeing Alchidiana in the Gallery, conferring with two of her Ladies, she entred alone into her Cosen's Chamber, where sitting downe on the Bed, she compared many imaginations, how she might discover to the Dumb Knight, the secret fire that was kindled in her Breast. So long she stayed there, till Palmerin came, because about that time he continually visited the Princesse Alchidiana. Ardenia so glad hereof as could be possible, suddenly started up, and saluting him with more then common Reverence, taking him by the hand, and causing him to sit downe by her upon the Bed. When enflamed with wonderfull passions, surpassing Pasiphæas desire to the brutish Bull, when she met him in the Wood made up Dedalus, she beheld him with such a piercing Countenance, as the least glimpse whereof, was able to confound the reason of the most constant person, as the aspect of the Sunne in the signe Leo, both the eyes of the beholders, and of force to warm the coldest complexion, although it were an Eunuch himselfe in her presence. When deliberung thre or foure bitter sighes, fetcht from the very bottome of her heart, as cruell as the striking pangs of death: she tooke a rich Diamond from her finger, and put it on Palmerins, with these words:

O sweet friend, and onely comfort of my Soule, let me intreat you to weare this as an argument of my love, thereby to know, how well I esteeme of you, assuring
you,

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

you, that I am so deboted yours: as if you should see to grant me the fado, and hono, as to goe with me to the Court of my Father, I never will have any other Husband but you, and there shall such account be made of you, as well becomes a Knight so noble and vertuous.

As divine defence of my life, and more worthy to be beloved then Love himselfe, misseeme not of my speeches so adventurously uttered by a yong unmarried Lady: for the fervent love I beare you is such, as I am constrained (for getting the decent regard of a bashfull Virgin, who naturally is shamefast) to esteeme of you honestly, and as is comenable to mine estate. When seeing the Gods, the place, the occasion, and the time permits me to bestow, that which I dare not otherwise manifest: Have then, faire Knight, some pity on me, and let me enjoy assurance of that grace, for which I live in ceaselesse toyments. With which words she embraced him, and sealed so many sweet kisses on his hand, as apparantly deciphered her earnest affection.

Palmerin amazed at this strange accident, because she was a Pagan, and contrary to him in faith, therefore made no answer, but following the example of chaste Ioseph, who refused Zephirah Wife to Potiphar great Proboste to the King of Egypt; started from her suddenly, and being moved with displeasure, departed the Chamber, thinking in himselfe, that such occasions more overrule the hearts of men, then all other matters that might be devised, and only the practices of Hellish Pluto. When calling to his Lady for assistance, said to himselfe. O sweet Mistress, succour now your servant, for I rather desire a thousand deaths, then to violate the chaste honour of my Love, or to give that favour to this Lady which is onely yours. Alchidiana, by chance seeing Palmerin when he entred her chamber, and perceiving him to depart againe: imagined presently the truth of the cause: wherefore entring the Guardrobe, which was adjoining to her Chamber, she closely stood and heard

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

heard all that had passed, and at his coming forth stayed him in this manner.

Not without great cause (good Knight) didst thou take the fatall Crowne from the head of Maurice, for in thee is more shame and continencie, then is in the disloyall Ardemias unchast desires and Willany: but in an unfit time did she rip open her unmaiden-like affections, for I will publish her shame to every one, and cause her to be lesse esteemed then a knowne offender.

Palmerin fearing that in her Choler she would doe no lesse then she said, fell on his knee before her, intreating her by signes to forbear, or otherwise it would be his death.

She seeing him so faire and gracious, and thus to humble himselfe at her feet, qualified her displeasure, promising to keepe it in secret. So Palmerin withdrew himselfe to his Chamber, leaving the two Ladies now together: but Ardemia grieved at the Dumb Knightes refusall, would not reveale her minde to Alchidiana (who so soone as Palmerin was out of hearing) thus began. Why? Shamelesse Ardemia, thinkest thou thy Beauty of such value, that thou might, to whom my Father and I have done so great honours, would leaue us, and depart with thee? Trust me thou art farre from thine account: For if thou vauntest to doe him such honour in thy Fathers Court, as his Nobility deserueth, it consisteth in my power to exile him more in one houre, then thou canst doe in a thousand yeares, mightest thou liue so long. I did neuer thinke that such audacious and incontinent tempting a man could ever enter thy heart: but if such be thy disposition, thou oughtest rather to containe thy selfe within thy Fathers Court, where thou mayst have leasure to follow thy base affection, with some Whores or Purses attending on thy Father, then to offer such a motion here in my Chamber. Hence, hence, forth of my presence: For I will not keepe companie with such an incontinent Whore. What regard hadst thou of thy great

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

great Linage, or the place from whence thou art descended? Hea, what comfort will it be to me, when I shall heare that a Lady issued of the Blood royall, should be more shamelesse and impudent then a Strumpet, a villaine, or an highway Begger? Hang other such like hard speeches used Alchidiana, all which grieved her not so much, as to be despised of him, whom she reputed as passionate for her love, as she was for his.

These high words of the Princess, caused the Ladies attending on Ardemia to enter the Chamber, which made her then breake off, because she would not have every one know the matter: and they seeing their Mistress so sad and discomfited, brought her to her owne Chamber, where on her Bed she sorrowed so impatiently, as each one feared she would injure her selfe, and saue she would, but that their presence hindered her, therefore she deferred it till better opportunitie. And because she had spent the most part of her younger yeeres, in reading the woorkes of Poets, as well Greekes as Arabians, she remembred the mournfull Tragedie of Biblis: which caused her to frame a Dittie, that she had translated from the Greeke Poetrie of Sappho, into her vulgar speech, and turning towards her Ladies and Gentlewomen, she began in this manner.



The lamentable Dittie of *Ardemia*, dying for Love.

Mise not (*sauie Virgins*) at Ardemia,
Although her end be hard and dolorous:
For Death is pleasant as mine Elders say,
To any Ladie sometime amorous.

For

The History of Palmerin D'Olive.

*For as the Swan in cold Meander glide,
By mournfull notes foretelles her speedy death;
So my complaint doth bid me to provide,
For sweetest Love makes hast to stop my breath.*

*The Ill that endlesse and uncessantly
Torments my heart, it faire and choicest beauty:
And this unhappy awkward Destiny,
Falls to my Lot through spotlesse loyalty.*

*For fond conceit that over-rul'd by wit,
More wretched then faire Biblis maketh me:
And he I love more stony hard is knit,
Then Canus who could ken no curtesie.*

*Yet Biblis oftentimes could ease her heart,
By sweet devising with her lovely friend:
But he I honour, wrecks not of my smart,
Nor will vouchsafe one gracious look to lend.*

*And as her sorrowes chiefly did arise,
Because the secrets of her Love were knowne:
So I reveal'd, each one will me despise,
Which death can stint, ere it too farre be blowne.*

*Unhappie wretch, that could not this foresee,
And be more charie of so choise a thing:
But all too late I with the remedie,
Therefore my folly doth due guerdon bring.*

*If Love that is esteem'd a Power Divine,
Unto his Servant give so sharpe reward:
What merit may vile hatred then resigne,
Unto his Vassals that his Lawes regard?*

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

*Oft have I heard mine ancient Elders say,
That such as love not, are unworthy life:
Yet doth my love imagine my decay,
And throwes my hope into whole worlds of strife.*

*And yet the paines I wish for my mischance,
May not be valued with my present woe:
For to compare them is meere dalliance,
And neither sense or reason should I show.*

*Life is to me lothsome and burdenous,
All pleasure seemes to me tormenting Hell:
Ah poore, refused, and abused thus,
Must thou needs die for loving all too well?*

*O sacred Venus, Patronesse of Love,
In this distresse wilt thou not pitie me?
And thy faire Sonne that thus his shaft did prove,
Will he forsake me in this jeopardie?*

*If you forsake me in this just request,
And will not favour what you did procure:
Give leave to him that bringeth all to rest,
And he will ease the torments I endure.*

*You fatall Sisters that have spun my thred,
And now think good it should be cut in twaine:
Fulfill the taske as you are destined,
And let my heart abide no longer paine.*

*Come sweetest Death, expected too too long,
End all the Ils unhappy Love begun:
If thou delay, I challenge thee of wrong,
Hast then good Death, that Love and Life were done.*

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

Her Complaint thus finished, she commanded her Ladies to depart the Chamber, and being alone by herselfe, she againe began to consider, the rigorous refusal of Palmerin, the conceit whereof grieved her so extreamely, as also the reproachfull words of her Cousen: that making a conscience of her sorowes, and raging with extremities of this despight, by like the voyces of her heart in sunder, and the Arteries of her body, as the blood issued forth at many places abundantly, and therewithall in short time she was strangled.

The next Morning, her chiefeſt Ladie that attended on her, and loved her exceedingly, came to the Beddes side, to see how she fared: but finding her dead, and so besmeared with her owne blood, gave such a lowd shriek, as Alchidiana and her Damozels affrighted with the noise, ran in all haste into the Chamber. The Princeſſe knowing the cause of this mischance, was marvellous sorrowfull, assuring her selfe that those words she spake in her anger, occasioned this bloudie stratagem. And the rumoz of this mishap was so soone spread thzough the Pallace, as all the Ladies, Damozells, Knights, Squires, and others, came to behold the hard fortune of Ardemia. What Lamentation was made on all sides, is not to be expzeſſed, especially the Ladies attendant on Ardemia, and her Brother Guilharran, who bzought her with him thither: but her Governesse not able to endure the burthen of her heavinesse, without feare or dread of any, thus openly complained. Ah sweet Princeſſe Ardemia, the flower of Beauty, how dareſt thou bought this pzecious gift: for I know assuredly, that for this cause onely thy death happened: Unhappy was the houre when thou didſt leaue thy Fathers Court, to accompany the Princeſſe Alchidiana. After her moanes, and the funerall Pompe accomplished, the Soldane erected her a most beautifull Tombe, with a sumptuous Cozonet on the Top thereof, being upheld by two inestimable Pillers of engraven

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

engraben and gilted Alabaster, the like whereof were never ſene, ſince the first King of Grece. Yet was he ignorant in the cause of her death, and Palmerin not imagining whence this inconvenience did arise, was so sorrowfull for the death of the Princeſſe: as day and night he mourned for her, and at length remembering her words to him, and doubting his unkindnesse to be the cause of her death, said within himselfe.

Alas faire Princeſſe, must I (at the first motion) by the the to despair? Had I dissembled a little, or temporized the matter, thou hadſt not fallen into this extremity, but my onely wilfull indiscretion, is cause of thy loss. O female ſex, how are you subject to casuall passions? Yet need I not wonder at this present mishap, for from the beginning of the world, Women have bene so humane and voluntary to effect their desires, were they good or evil: but especially in the action of Love, as neither feare, honor, shame, torments, no nor death could divert them from their indiscreet fantasies. Whereof bears record, Hypermnestra, Myrrha, Dejanira, Scylla, Phedra, Thisbie, Oenone, Phyllis, Salmacis, Hero, and Dido, whose deaths were procured onely by lavish Love. O divine Wisdome, that hast suffered me to fall into this lucklesse accident, protect me from any farther disadvantage, seeing thou hast taken her hence, who gave some ease to mine affections, in that so libely she resembled my sweet Mistresse, whom I desire to serve with continuall loyalty, I now perswade my selfe, that this love was not accompanied with vertue, and that for my good it hath happened so: forget me not then, but so enable me, as in such bad occasions, I swarve not from my duty. And such is my confidence in thy promises, as no temptation shall pzovail against me: but this captivity once discharged, I hope to direct my course pleasing to thy sight, and to performe such gracious service, as thy name shall be exalted and glorified for ever. So long continued

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

stayed he in this silent contemplation, as *Alchidiana* perceived him, which greatly displeased her: but fearing any way to offend *Palmerin*, she durst not say what she thought, living in hope, that her Cousin being dead, she should now compass the effect of her desires. *Ardemia* entered in her honourable Chamber, Guilharan her brother with his train, and the Ladies that attended on his Sister, returned into Armenia, where great sorrow was made for the death of the Princess: and the remembrance of her beauty, blazed the report of her death through every Region.

CHAP. IX.

How *Amarano* of *Nigrea*, Eldest Sonne to the King of *Phrygia*, understanding the death of the faire Princess *Ardemia*, who was newly promised him in marriage, made many grievous lamentations for her losse. And how *Alchidiana* discovered her amorous affection to *Palmerin*.



So farre was spread the report of the strange death of the Princess *Ardemia*, as at length it came to the hearing of *Amarano*, eldest Son to the King of *Phrygia*, the most valiant and renowned knight of that Country: as well for his great prowess and deeds of armes, which he before that time accomplished in Asia, as for his affable nature, vertue and carriere. This young Prince, being in the King his Fathers Court, and hearing the faire *Ardemia* daughter to the King of Armenia commended above all other Ladies of the East: at the very sound of this blazing Goddess, and setting the names downe for true, from

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

from affecting speech, he became so amorous of her, as he had no content but in thinking on her. Hereupon, he sent her Ambassadors to her Father, to request her in marriage, whereto right willingly he consented, and now at the instant, when he intended to go visite her, news came to the Court of her admirable death, which for a while was concealed from him, because each one feared the conceit thereof would cause his death. For they knowing the love he bare her to be so vehement, as he understanding her strange kind of death, they thought it impossible, but it would arise to very scandalous incontinence, yet in the end he heard thereof: but to set downe here the griefe heares, and complaint of this young Prince, is more then I am able, let it therefore suffice you, that his sorowes were such, as every where his death was likewise expected. It was likewise told him, how through the envy of *Alchidiana*, she dyed, and that (for certainty) she was one of the chiefest causes thereof: which moved him then into such an alteration, as he stonoz by the great Prophet *Mahomet*, to revenge her injury, so that the Soldans should for ever remember the danger in suffering so great a Treason. In conclusion, he intended to take with him, two hundred chosen knights, all clad in mourning for the griefe of their Master, and some of his brethren, knights of great hardihood, and so well they journeyed, as they came within twenty miles of the Soldans Court. But that we may not too farre swarve from our intent, *Alchidiana*, joyfull (as you have heard for the departure of *Guilharan* and his company: from thenceforward sought all the means she could, to conferre with *Palmerin* alone at her pleasure. And laboring thus in her tormenting passions, as it is common to all Lovers, such account she made of her Beauty and riches, as she imagined that *Palmerin* would not disdain her: but rather would repute himselfe happy, to have that at his pleasure, whereto so many Kings and great Lords had

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

had been deneged. And in this opinion, the next time that Palmerin came to her Chamber, she began with him in this manner.

Now Sir Knight, what thinke you of the death of Ardemia, who falsely would have seduced you to goe with her hence? Did she not commit great treason against me if she had prebailed? But right well is she rewarded, and as I desired. Thinke then no more of her presumptuous follie, or the ridiculous conceit of her vaine Love, which she had made her pretence, to cause you to forsake my Fathers Court: where you have receiued so many speciall honours, chiefly of his Daughter, who loves you dearly, and intends to make you Lord of all her Possessions. Beloeue me Sir Knight, if hitherto I deferred to acquaint you herewith, it was in respect I doubted her: But now she being gone, esteeme henceforth of me as your stone, and to begin this our Alliance, I honour you with all that is mine, and my selfe to be disposed at your pleasure. For my heart, which is onely subject to you, applies it selfe to your liking, and can with nothing but what you will command.

How long have I desired this happy day? How often have I contemned and despised my selfe, in not daring to breake the scale of my affections, which now I have aduentured to your knowledge: As so that which now troubleth me, is onely the want of your speech, which the Gods have deprived you of, being envious of your manifold perfections. Alas my Lord, why did they not endue thee with that benefit? What in declaring my desires, thy answers might returne reciprocal pleasures?

Some in their love delight themselves with embracing, kissing, and such ceremoniall behaviour: as so; me, amorous, private, and familiar conference, I repute a chiefe content. What hath Love one Quatt in his Quiber more pleasing them all these, being the onely argument of each others resolution: in respect whereof I commit my Honour into your

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

your protection, prizing, esteeming, and chusing you above all men in the world beside. Palmerin exceedingly abashed at this answer, and having recourse to his onely comforter, lifting his eyes to Heaven, thus privately Invoked. O God, deliuer me from this enemy, and suffer me not to fall in consent to this temptation: for I thinke her a Diuell incarnate, and sent to deceive me. Impossible is it that a Gentleman, by nature modest and bashfull, should harbour such unchaste imaginations: The conceit hereof so vexed and offended him, that the Princesse feared he would have dyed: not with conceit that like hap might come to Alchidiana, as did to Ardemia, but because he should so wickedly sin against his owne soule, and falsifie his Love to his sweetest Mistresse. Yet knowing that this sadness would not satisfie the Princesse, he feigned to sweene, his colour changing in such sort, as one would have judged him past recovery. Alchidiana was so grieved hereat, as she could not imagine what to say: but seeing that Palmerin seemed now not to understand her, and before had by signes still rebealed his meaning, said: By our great God, it may well be said, that this man is a huge lampe of flesh, which the diuell hath enchanted to torment me withall, or else some other shadow and resemblance: For he refuseth what all men desire, yea, and often despaire, because they cannot attaine it. But fearing lest her end would imitate her Consens, or that the Dumb Knight should dye in her presence, she durst presume no further, but threw her selfe bolene upon a Waller, not able to speake, her stomacke was so enraged. Which Palmerin soon perceiving arose out of his feigned Trance, and giving a great sigh, departed the Chamber, and went to his owne. The Princesse seeing him gone, began to weepe and lament very grievously, and in midst of her melancholy, fell into these speeches. O God, how can you suffer one so contrary to nature, as is this Dumb Knight, to live among men? Can you behold that he whom

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

I delibered from death, brought into the grace of my Father, and to whom I have done more honour then had he bene mine owne brother: will not regard me? But against reason, disdaineth, refuseth, maketh no reckoning of my toyls, and setteth at nought my earnest intreaties? Ah undiscrēt and carelesse Girl, thy folly at this time too much overruled thee, that knowing thine owne estate and high lineage, wouldest submit thy selfe to lobe one unknowne to thee, and of whom thou canst have no answer, more then of a senselesse stocke or stone. If I can now learne to hate him, it will be some comfort to me: but the more he insulteth me, the more am I devoted to his lobe. When again she contrayned her selfe in this sort. Yet seeing it is so, ingrateful wretch as thou art, I will cause thee (ere it be long) to repent thy villany. In this anger she continued all the day, not coming forth of her Chamber, intending thenceforward utterly to despise him: but the first time she saw him again, she reputed him so lovely, faire, and gracious, that (to dye) she could not wish him any harme, but loved him much better then before. Yet to recover her owne inconstancie, she sent him no more presents, nor did him such honour as she was accustomed, which Palmerin well perceived, but he could dissemble it in such sort, as the Princesse hardly might decipher him. For he lived in hope of the Soldans promise, which he had made to his deceased Father, to send his Brethren to Constantinople, in whose company he might trauaile thither, and so escape the Turkes and Moorish Invels.

CHAP. X.

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

CHAP. X.

How *Amarano* Prince of *Nigrea*, came to the *Soldans* Court, to accuse *Alchidiana*, as causer of the death of the faire *Princesse Ardemia* her Cousen.



During the time that the Princesse *Alchidiana* dissembled not to lobe *Palmerin*, the Prince *Amarano* of *Nigrea*, came within a dayes Journey of the Isle of *Calpha*, where he remained to rest himselfe a little. In the meane time he sent an Ambassadour to *Maulicus*, craving assurance for his coming to his Court, to accuse one that was nere about him. The Ambassadour being arrived, and his message understood, the Soldane answered, that he should have what securitie he would demand: so to the Prince *Amarano* (quoth he) nor the meanest of his people, shall anything be misdone, nor to him or them that shall defend the cause of the accused. And greatly amazed was the Soldane at these tydings, considering the distance betwene *Calpha* and *Phrygia*: wherefore he supposed that some body had injured the Prince since his arrivall. Notwithstanding (quoth he to the Ambassadors) that your Lord may stand in no doubt of treason, you shall have our loving Letters to him: and let presently be proclaimed through the City, by sound of Trumpet, the safe conduct of the Prince and his traine. The Ambassadors returned with their Letters to the Prince, who joyfull of these newes came to the Citie: but before he would approach the Court, he went to the Tombe of the Princesse *Ardemia*, and if he made such lamentations, when he but heard of her death, what judgment may

he set downe of his moanes, being now at the Sepulcher of his best beloved. Ah inconstant Fortune, quoth he, why wouldst thou not permit me to see her liuing? Ah Ardemia, accomplished with admirable beautie, great was her sinne, who envying thy perfections, procured thy cruell death: yet this is my comfort, that I shall finde time enough to revenge thy undeserbed mishap, and he that dare gaine say me (with her the Authoꝝ of thy tragedie) shall receive such conbigne punishment, as shall remaine for ever in memory.

These complaints delibered with exceeding sorrow, his Brother perswaded him, that such behaviour becommed not so great a Prince: therefore he should referre those offices to effeminate persons, who make a God of their silent passions. as for him, he should thinke on nothing, but his mostall manner of revenge. Amarano ashamed of his owne folly, mounted on Horsebacke, and came to the Palace, where he and his Brother entred armed, and the Prince being a man of a goodly personage, had so stearne and fierce a countenance, as he was generally reputed a hardie Knight, and his Brother very little inferiour to him. He being come into the presence of Maulicus, saluted him with great reverence, but not kissing his hand as others were accustomed, because he was not his Subject, neither came for peace, but matter of Warre and death: after long pause, in that the remembrance of his griefe somewhat impeached him, he began to the Soldane in this manner.

Right Lord, and redoubted Monarch of Asia, being assured of the equall justice, which you afford to all persons without exception: I doubt not but you will punish the partie abiding in the Court, be his or her calling never so great, who by disloyall treason hath too much dishonored me. For which cause, reposing my hope in your noble vertue, I have left my Countrey, and adventured into your

presence, to accuse your Daughter Alchidiana, whom (so please you to call before this assembly, I will charge: that she by false and spitefull hatred, as a most cruell and disloyall Lady, traitorously murdered her Cousen the Princesse Ardemia. And because this Villaine hath hitherto bene concealed very secret, in respect it could not easily be verified: I am here ready to prove in open field, against any of your Knights that dare maintaine her cause, how the treason before rehearsed, was committed by her, in revenge whereof, she ought to be rewarded with sharpe and shamefull death.

The Soldane marveling at this accusation, sayd. By the reverence of all our Gods, Prince Amarano, I cannot be perswaded, that it could at any time enter my Daughters thought, to perpetrate an offence so abominable: but because reason commandeth that I doe justice, I will send for her, promising you, that if she be found culpable in your accusation, she shall have such punishment, as your self's shall rest contented therewith. When he commanded three Kings to goe fetch the Princesse, who being come, sat down by her Father, her accuser not daigning to salute her or once to move from the place where he sat. This day had Maulicus, for the better defence of his person, caused five hundred armed Knights to attend on him, the greater part whereof, (seeing the pride of the Prince of Nigrea) would furiously have ranne upon him, saying, that hee should repent his folly: but the Soldane offended thereat, caused a Herald presently to proclaim, that in paine of death, no one should harasse or offend the Prince, nor any in his company, and whosoever did otherwise, should presently dye for breaking his commandement, thus framing his speeches to the Prince, said. Amarano, now wait thou behold my Daughter before thee: disburden the griefe of thy minde to her, and justice shall be done thee to thine owne desire. Imagine, quoth the Prince, that such as

know you *Spadame Alchidiana*, will not a little mar-
vile, seeing you accomplished with such gracious beauty,
that you should so farre forget your selfe, as to commit trea-
son. But because a matter so unlikely, demandeth as
hard a proofe, I will averre with mine owne person in
Combat, against any one that dare suppozt your quarrell:
that you are guilty in the accusation already alleadged,
and principall cause of the death of the Armenian Prin-
cesse your Cousen. To revenge which infamous wrong, I
have taken my Country, travailling night and day, and
have presented my accusation before your Father, with this
condition: that if your might shall be vanquished, you
are to be punished as a cause so weighty requirerth. If it be
my fortune to be s^upled, and your Champion victoz, I shall
yeld my selfe as conquered, and demand no better recom-
pence, for it cannot grieve me to remaine with her bodie,
whose very remembrance keepeth me alive: this said, he
went and sat downe ag^{ain}st me.

The Soldane, who was a man of great wisdome, and
well considering the matter, seeing the accuser persist so
confidently in his words, knew not what to answer. Yet
as a vertuous Prince, he spake to his Daughter in this
manner. *Alchidiana*, you have heard the speeches of the
Prince, advise your selfe well of your answer: for which
of you both shall be found attainted in the crime, be it Lese
Majestatis, or other kinde of treason, shall be punished ac-
cording as the cause requirerth.

CHAP. XI.

How *Palmerin* seeing that none of the *Soldans* Knights
would adventure for *Alchidiana* against *Amarano*,
enterprised himselfe in her cause in Combate. And
how the Queene of *Tharsus* lent him a sumptuous
Helmet.



Alchidiana having heard the accusation of
Amarano, and that he had spoken so
slandrously of her in the presence of the
Soldane: incensed with marvailous an-
ger and disdaine, returned him this an-
swer. *Amarano*, the most rash and un-
discreet knight that ever I saw, I
wonder how thy folly could make thee so audacious, to
come to accuse me of Treason (against all truth) before
my Father and his Nobilitie. But thy speeches well no-
ted and considered, shew nothing but carelesse youth, ar-
rogance, and too vaine glorious conceit: chiefly in this,
that thou armed Cap-a-pe, and accompanied with so ma-
ny well appointed knights, comest in this sort to mo-
lest a poore Maiden, who never to thee or thine commit-
ted any offence, but all serviceable honour, especially to her,
on whose behalfe thou offerest the Combat. As for the va-
lour thou reputeest in thy selfe, that mouth which this slan-
der both encourage thee withall, colouring thy hardinesse
and resolution of heart: thou oughtest rather oppose against
a knight able to answer thee, then a silly Virgin, who
hath no weapon but her Honour wherewith to defend her
selfe. I confesse I am a Lady, but not trayterous or false,
as thou abouchest, yet of so noble courage, as were I of
thy Sex, thou never shouldst depart this Hall, before I
had that conspiring head from thy shoulders, to witnesse thy

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

thy faithfull and malevolent spirit. Notwithstanding, as I am, so please my Lord and Father, with a little cudgell I shall let thee know, that thou dost in thy speeches, and against thine own conscience chargest me, with the murder of my Cousin. Examine thy thoughts, what likely reason might induce me to such an offence? If she was faire, thanks to our Gods, mine owne talent is so good, as I need not envie her beauty. If she made account of her rich dowrie, I being sole heire to the Signories of the Soldane, might subge my selfe faire beyond her, being desired in marriage by many Kings and Princes, whereof I am well assured she never had the like. I know not then what cause should any way induce me to request her death: but what need I make such protestations to thee? Seeing that by some one of my Fathers Knights thy pride will be abated, and I rebenged of the injurie thou hast done me, Amarano not answering her a word, spake to the Soldane in this sort.

It is not decent my Lord, that a Prince or Knight of quality, should stay on the words of a Woman so little considerate, who more by anger than vertue, thinks to reprove and annihilate a true accusation. Wherefore, according to the agreement before determined, call for y^e Knight, that dare undertake the quarrell of your daughter, to whom I will manifest in plain Combat, that what I have said is truth: and if he be vanquished, your Daughter Alchidiana and he shall bee burned together, as the greatnesse of the offence well deserbeth: contrariwise, if Fortune bring me successe, I will request no other justice, then what shall please you to appoint for me. Mauliens seeing that well he could not deny the Prince, though to his griefe, pronounced the sentence, that his Daughter that day should present a Knight, to sustaine her cause, according to his conditions alleaged. This hard prescription, made never a Knight willing to adventure the Combate, so much they

feared

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

feared Amarano, for the great report they heard of his prowess, but stood all silent, as though themselves were condemned to death. Alchidiana seeing the courage fall of so many Knights, whom she esteemed for men of great account, knew not to whom she should have recourse, and therefore overcome with exceeding sorrow, but that her Ladies assisted her, had twice or thrice swooned before her Father.

Palmerin beholding her, and knowing that his refusal, was greater cause of Ardemiaes death, then the injurious words of Alchidiana: pitying her estate, and having bestowed his eyes the love she bare him, the great honour was done him for her sake, and the pusillanimity of the Soldans Knights, was somabed, as forgetting all danger, and his disabled dumbnesse, which hitherto he had so cunningly observed: as though he had been borne in that Country, he thus began in the Arabian tongue.

Alcwardly Castles, unworthy henceforth the name of Knights, how can your hearts endure, that a proud and presumptuous Prince shall come into your presence, falsely to accuse your Lady and Spouse, and not one of you daring to defend her right? By the Celestiall powers, well may you be accounted heartlesse men, and in suffering this long, to be deprived of all noble Titles, and to be sold in the Market as slaves and Villaines: thinke you the Prince Amarano is come hither for any other intent, then to make tryall of his great hardinesse? Can you be destitute of reason, and so easily abused, as to think that the Princess Alchidiana whom Nature hath so worthily enriched with beauty, and with whom no other may make comparison, could be provoked to murder Ardemia, for this onely occasion, because she was faire? And you Lord Amarano, for a matter so slender, have you enterprized to blame a Lady so vertuous, as is the Princess Alchidiana? I accept the Combat on her behalfe, adouching, that shamefully and without reason you have accused her, behold me ready likewise,

wise,

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

wise, to maintaine in open field, that falsly and malici-
ously thou liest in thy throat: in witness whereof, there
is my Page, and I beseech your highnesse assign us pre-
sently Judges, that may discern the issue of our Combat.
I take thy offer, quoth the Prince, and before the Sun set
will give thee the payment that belong to such an audacious
companion.

Who can now imagine the joy of Maucius and his
Daughter, seeing him whom they refused dumbe by na-
ture, thus to recover his speech? Surely they were all so
amazed, that they thought Mahomet had come from the
Clouds to performe this miracle. The Soldane thus sur-
prised with unspeakable comfort, forgetting the Majestie
of his person, caught Palmerin in his armes, saying: Ah
good Knight, how may this be? Dreame I? Or doth but
my fancie delude me with your speech? O Mahomet, for e-
ver be thou praised for this great grace. By the highest
God, I am more joyfull of this good fortune, then had I gai-
ned the fairest Island in the Mediterranean Sea. Now
will I dismay no longer of my Daughters fortune, seeing
that you take her quarrell in hand, and for her sake will re-
bate with Amarano: with all my heart I grant you the
field, and thinke that my Daughter will not deny it.
But tell me noble Friend, how have you so happily re-
covered your speech? Palmerin abashed that he had so for-
gotten himselfe, knew not what excuse to make, never-
theless, seeing now there was no remedie, and that the
stone throwne could not be recalled: imagined some likely
similitude of his suddaine speech, saying. I promise you
my Lord, that the certtine of your Daughters innocency,
and the great griefe I conceived, seeing your knights so
cowardly and faint in courage, moved me into such chal-
ler, as the Caratie which of long time hath hindered my
speech, dissolved it selfe, and hath given my tongue libertie
to reheale, what I was enforced to bewray before by
signes,

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

signes. And this is not a thing altogether strange: for
I have heretofore read in Histories, that a knight called
Egle Samien, dumb from his birth: when one of his com-
panions would usurpe the honour of a victory, which justly
appertained to him: was so enraged and incensed with dis-
pleasure, as that very passion, with the helpe of the Gods,
restored his speech. And thus hath it happened to me, for
which I honour their names with immortall thanks, not
so much for my speaking, as that I may now declare my
earnest affection to doe you service, and saire Alchidiana
your daughter, to whom I am so greatly indebted, for the
manifest honours she hath done me without desert, as I
shall never be able to make recompence. My noble friend
(quoth the Soldan) this liberal offer for the defence of my
Daughters honour, contents me in such sort, as both she and
I remaine to requite your paines. Amarano amazed at
the bountie disposition of Palmerin, but especially, at the great
honour Maucius did him, knew not well what to thinke:
and did not the feare of reproach over-rule him, I thinke he
would have deferred the Combate till another yeare. But
withstanding to cover his new opinion, he bestowed him
of a prettily subtilty, and said: I beseech your Majestie to
tell me, of whence this Dumbe Knight is, to whom our
Gods (by miracle) hath restored such babling language? It
is necessary that I know what he is, and whence hee is
descended, because the fight being enterprised for two such
Princes, as sometimes was the saire Ardemia, and your
Daughter present: if he be not the Sonne of a King as I
am, he may not be permitted the field with me. Amara-
no (answered the Soldan) I know not what he is, for till
this time he hath continued dumbe in our Court, to him
therefore you shall frame your demand: for this opinion
I hold of him, that he will answer you nothing but truth.
But if you goe about so craftily to excuse your selfe, each
one may judge that in you, which but ill becomes the minde
of

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

of a Nobleman, that is, to be double in your speech. And (which is more) he being a Knight as good as your selfe, you may not refuse him, because you demanded the Combat against any Knight in my Court, and in your challenge made no exception. Werthwode your selfe then (quoth the Prince) that if ye be not the Sonne of a King, he shall not enter the field against me: therefore if he be none such, he hath not to meddle with armes in this cause, and so the fight on his behalfe is finished. If thou make such doubt, (saith the Soldane) of him, aske him the question thy selfe: I hope he is able to resolve thee, in these subtill cabils and sophistical questions.

During this contention, there entred the Hall a faire yong Damosell, bearing betweene her hands a goodly Helmet, the richest and most beautifull that ever was seene, and falling on her knees befoze the Soldane, with such gracious salutation as good with her dutie: she demanded which was Amarano of Nigrea, who of envie had accused his Daughter, and which likewise was the Dumb Knight, who enterprised her defence. Maucius without any other inquisition, shewed them both to her: whereupon the Damosell arose, and coming to the Prince, thus began.

Amarano of Nigrea, the Queen of Tharsus, my Lady and Mistress, being certain that this day thou wouldst be in this place, sent me hither to advise thee, that the Dumb Knight is of higher Linage then thou art: and such a one he is, as the greatest Lord or Prince may not compare with him in Bountie. And if thou wilt know the certainty of his descent, more then any other as yet doth: she adviseth thee (for thy profit) to depart from the Combate whereto thou hast challenged him, in defence of thy false accusation against Alchidiana. And further she also doth admonish thee, that if thou dost not as she commandeth, the Knight late dumb, surpassing all other in knightly Chivalry, shall overcome thee, and thou shalt not be able to stand against him. Damosell

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

mosell (quoth the Prince,) you may answer your Mistress: that oberlate she sent me her counsell, and I am not accustomed to give credit to such deceivers: Besides, I will not lose mine Honour, at the simple words of a Woman I know not. And it doth not a little content me, that this Knight is such a one as he should be: wherefoze being so sure of his Bountie, I am the more desirous to Combat with him, to make experience of his renowne: yet this I will maintaine, that what I have spoken is true, and thereon we will presently enter the field, so please the Soldane to give consent. Maucius seeing that the day was too farre spent, adjourn'd it till the day following: wherefoze the Prince withdrew himselfe to his Lodging, reposing great confidence in his owne strength, and after his departure, the Soldane taking Palmerin by the hand, sayd. I know not my Love, how I may acknowledge the honour you doo my Daughter, whom I esteeme as mine owne selfe: But if the Gods affoord me life, I will devise some such recompence, as I hope shall returne your owne content. When the Damosell sent from the Queen of Tharsus, approaching to Palmerin, presented him the Helmet, saying. Noble and vertuous Knight, the Queen saluteth you with this token of her good Will, in remembrance of your speciall Loyalty, whereby you delivered the Prince Maurice: for which she so much remaineth yours, as you shall command her any service hencefozward, albeit she could have wished him longer to ment, that proved so unfaithfull to her. She likewise desireth you to weare this Helmet in fight with Amarano, for it will greatly abate you, and more then any other: For such is her hope, that after you have finished this Combat, you will not deny her one request, which one day she intendeth to craue of you. Palmerin taking the Helmet, answered:

Faire Maide, most humbly thanke the Queen on my behalfe, and tell her that wheresoever I am, she shall finde me

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

me ready to fulfill any thing she will command. The Damsell departed, and made such speed, as in short time she came to the Queen her Mistress, to whom she acquainted with her whole Message: whereof she was very joyful, especially of Palmerins great curtesie, whom she began to esteem very greatly.

CHAP. XII.

How *Palmerin* entered the Combate with the Prince *Amarano* of *Nimra*, whom he slew: and of the great Honours which the *Soldane* and his Daughter did him.



The Princess *Alchidiana* hearing of those reports, which the *Queen* of *Tharus* *Damofell* made relation of before the *Soldan* her Father, being likewise marvellous glad that *Palmerin* was descended of such honourable Parentage, and so much renowned in the Region farre thence distant: began to love him more extremely then ever she did before, and resolved with her selfe, that seeing for her sake he undertooke the Combat, he bare her more secret affection then he durst bewray: and in this opinion she practised how to conferre with him againe, which this day she could not compasse, because he was continually with the *Soldan*. But when *Palmerin* took his leave for that fight, the Princess had a little leisure to thank him for his honorable kindnesse, and to glorie she was that the Gods had restored his speech againe. Some after she sent him a most sumptuous golden Armour, desiring him (for her sake) to wear it in the Combate, which *Palmerin* thankfully accepting, assured the Challenger, that he would sufficiently

revenge

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

revenge his Ladies injurie. In the meane time, the *Soldan* commanded his Knight *Marshall*, to see the field prepared in readinesse, and the Scaffolds for the Ladies provided, and to have two thousand Armed men in place, for defence of his owne person. All which the next morning was duly executed, the *Soldane* appointing two Kings, and *Amarano* his two Brethren Judges of the field, who going to their Tent, and all the Nobility to thier appointed places, expected wolvthe issue of the fight. The Ladies came to their standing: among whom *Alchidiana* shewed like faire Vesper, among the other Stars: and some after came the two Combattants, so bravely and richly appointed, as nothing wanted that could be imagined: especially *Palmerin*, before whom a King bare his Helmet, and the high Admirall of *Assyria* his Sword, and so bravely did he manage his Horse, with such Nightly behaviour, and gallant countenance, that each one judged he had learned his knowledge before he came thither into *Turkie*, and caused *Maulicus* to perswade himselfe, that the victory was destined to him. In the end, that they might the sooner begin the Combat, the Judges took their seats, commanding Silence through the field, which was pestered with wonderfull resort of people: and then the Herald fulfilling their charge, gave liberty to the Champions to doe their devolre. *Palmerin* clasping his Helmet, gave the Spurres to his Horse, and encountered *Amarano* with such fury, as they were both dismounted headlong to the ground: But *Palmerin* ashamed to be soyled before the *Soldan*, recovered himselfe quickly, and advancing his selfe, gave *Amarano* such a sound stroke on his head with his Sword, as made him stagger in great amazednesse. Notwithstanding, his courage and agility was such, as well beclard he had followed those affaires: So that the fight was so fierce and cruell between them, as in many places before the *Assyrians* saw not the like: for *Amarano* was the most hardy Knight in

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

all those parts, yet Palmerin assaulted him with so many sharpe charges, as he made him forget his cunning points of Defence, and with head and shoulders to awaide his strokes. Which when the Princes two Brethren beheld, they were marvellously abashed, for they imagined that through the Cast parts, no Knight might be found to equall him: wherefore one of them said, I thought my brother would have dispatched this companion at the first encounter, but seeing he hath hold out so long, no doubt he is more expert in armes, then we at first made account of him.

The two Kings were somewhat moved with these words, willing him to be silent, untill such time as the end was determined. Amaranos hearing what his Brother had spoken, offended with himselfe because he could not overcome Palmerin, began to encourage himselfe, and albeit he was sore wounded in many places of his body, yet he followed his intent so nobly, as taking his sword in both his hands, he strooke Palmerin so violently on the Helmet, as made him set one of his knees to the ground to save himselfe. But he perceiving that if he had so many such blowes, it would return to his disadvantage, intended to play double or quit, and remembering the honour of his Mistress Polinarda, he came with such valour on Amaranos, as cleaving his shield in two pieces, cut away a great part of his arme. The Prince feeling himselfe so maimed, began to faint, hardly enduring to defend his Enemies strokes, which Palmerin perceiving, chased him about which way him listeth, first here, then there, where best the Prince had hope of safety: but all these delays little availed him, for Palmerin left not untill he got him down, when Amaranos thinking to helpe himselfe, drew a little pocket dagger, and therewith thrust Palmerin under the short ribbes, which wound so moved him, as renting his Helmet from his head, immediately smote it from his shoulders. Palmerin

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

rin being then so glad and well disposed, as though he had but newly entered the field, took the head of his enemy by the haire, and presented it to the Princess Alchidiana, saying. Madam, I now thinke my selfe acquitted of the promise, which I made to my gracious Lord your Father, for here is that Sopping-head that first accused you: be, thinke your selfe therfore, if there is any other thing else to be done for you, because I remaine here ready to accomplish it.

The Princess exceeding sorrowfull for this worthy victory, answered. Truly my Lord, you have done so much for me, that although my Father, my selfe, and all my Friends, should bequeath our lives to your service: yet could we not recompence the very least of your noble courtesies, chiefly, even this one, surpassing all the other, and beyond our abilities to remunerate. Yet let me intreat you to carrie the Traytors head to the Judges, that they may Censure my Innocencie in this matter, and whether the Accuser hath not received condigne punishment. Which he did, and threwe the head before the Princes Brethren, whose griefe exceeded measure for their Brothers ill fortune, and taking up the head, with the Body likewise, they caused it to be sorrowfully conveyed forth of the field. Immediately was Palmerins Horse brought him, whereon he mounted, and was conducted with great Pompe, by the two Kings that were the Judges, and other mighty Princes, as well Califes, Agaz, as Taborlans, to the Wallace Gate, where the Soldane (to doe him the greater Honour) attended in person his coming, the like he never did before to any King or Prince, how mighty soever he was, and therfore his Subjects marvelled not a little hereat Palmerin would have done him reverence on his knee, but he would not suffer him, but taking him in his armes, he thus said: For ever (Gentle Knight) by the honor of this victory against our Enemy, and the false accuser of our Daughter, for which, I

The History of *Palmerin D'Olin.*

account my selfe so bound to the, that all the Dignities and riches I am able to give the, may not counterbalke thy unspeakable deserts: therefore I will remaine so much at thy disposition, as I and mine shall be at thy command. So taking him by the hand, he conducted him to his Chamber, where himselfe help'd to unarme him, commanding his Chyrurgions to be so carefull of him, as of his owne person: Thus leaving him to have his wounds dyed, he returned to the great Hall, where he found his Nobilitie attending his coming, to whom he said: What thinke you my Lords of our estate, if our Champion had beene spoiled? I had beene the most forlorn and abject Lord in all Assyria, to have beene enforced to doe justice on mine owne Daughter. But thanks to our Gods, they delibered me from that danger: therefore marvaile not, if (beyond my custome) I welcommed him with reverence and honour: For one that renounceth himselfe by Vertue and Worthes through the whole world, ought to be entertained, rather then such as live in vaine pompe and glory, whispering deceitfull Tales in Ladies eares. Next can you (in my judgement) honour him sufficiently, because he hath shielded my Daughter and me from death, expelled our ignominious slander, and slaine our false accusing Enemy, to make us live in perpetuall fame and memorie. The most part of them well noting his words, and confounded with the remembrance of their shame, when they durst not enterpryse the Combat for their Lady: knew not what to answer, but fearing to grow in further offence, sought how to change his minde to some other talke.

Alchidiana being all this while in her Chamber, prepared her selfe to goe visite Palmerin, not knowing how to shape her course, for freshly betraying of her secret afflictions: but the Goddesse Iuno, when she stood before Sir Paris, for sentence of her Beauty, was not more sumptuously adorned than the Princesse. Soz begins she to dispute in

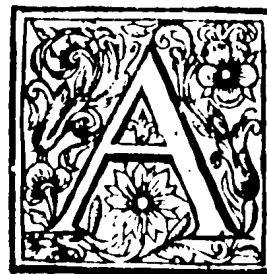
Emperour of *Constantinople.* PART. 2.

in her thoughts, the honorable graces of Palmerin, his Nobility so farre renowned, his mightily prowess and Paganimittie, whereof herselfe had so good experience, as she resolved never to have any other Husband. Then demands she of her Ladies, how she might recompence her Knight: If her Head were stood orderly: If her lockes of haye were tressed as they ought, and if her Garments were hyde enough. For conclusion, the lovely Maiden knew not how to dispose of her selfe, to gaine his love she earnestly longed for.

In this equipage she goes to see her friend, and in his Chamber she findes her Mother, who hindered her languishing Daughter, from discovering her sickness to him, that onely had the power to helpe her: wherefore living in hope of some better opportunity, for this time she smothered her griefes so well as she could, ending other talke with her Ladies, lest her Mother should suspect her.

CHAP. XIII.

How the Brethren of *Amarano*, would have buried his Bodie in the Tombe with *Ardenia*, which *Alchidiana* would not suffer: but constrained them to carrie him home againe into his Countrey.



Marano thus slaine, his Brethren (according to his charge given the, before he entred the Combat) tooke his body, and with great mourning they brought it to the Princesse *Ardenias* Tombe, thinking to burie him there with her, but *Alchidiana* advertised hereof, came presently and intreated her Father, that he would sende Herald to the Brethren of the banquished Prince, to charge them not to leave the body of

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

Amarano in his Repunitions, for if they die, he would cause it to be buried as a *Wrag* (a) defamed. Moreover, that they themselves should depart within four and twenty hours, on pain of the danger should ensue by their default. For good father (quoth she) if you should permit their boldness, it will be great blame and dishonour to you: in that it is publicly known with what great pride and arrogancie he came to your Court, thinking to intaymy good name, and thus misfor ever from your presence, or else by their scandal to end my life. The Soldane well regarding her words, willingly granted her request, whereupon the *Princes* *Wretches* were certified of the Soldans pleasure, by a *Wramper*: whereat they marvailed not a little, but seeing they could no way remedy it, they said.

Verain, it is reason that your Lord should be obeyed within his owne Territories, notwithstanding, you may say unto him: that the cruelties he shewes to a dead bodie, is very great, and against all equitie, which he hereafter happily may repent. So opening the Tombs againe, they took forth their Brothers bodie, and the *Princesse* *Ardeniaes* likewise, conveying them into a *Litter* of *Cypres*, to keepe them from corrupting, and thus returned with them to *Phrygia*, where the *Princes* death was greatly lamented: but chiefly by the aged King his father, who seeing his *Wonne* dead before him, after many dolorous passions, thus complained.

Oh Fortune, how cruell dost thou shew thy selfe to the mightie, as well as the meane? Oh my *Wonne* Amarano, too deare hast thou bought thy love to *Ardemia*. Wretched and despised old man, how unfortunate art thou among all other? for when thou perswadest thy selfe to have joy and comfort by thy *Wonne*, thou findest nothing but sorrow and griefe. O death, thou art too cruell. Yet if the Soldane had granted thee *Writall*, where thou diddest desire it before thy death, the lesse had bene my griefe. But looke shall

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

shall I cause him repent his hard dealing, and revenge thy death with sufficient requitall.

The second Brother to Amarano, named *Gramiel*, seeing his father in such extreme heaviness, stayed by all means he could to comfort him: promising in the presence of all his knights, with all possible speed to revenge his Brothers death, and so did all the *Great* *Wretches* solemnely vow together. Which speeches did somewhat comfort the aged King, who commanded the *Wodes* of the two *Knights* to be taken from his presence: and for a perpetuall memory of his *Wonne* death, he caused a sumptuous Monument to be made of *Parble* and *Wopphire*, whereon was engraven the cause of their unhappie death.

All this while *Gramiel*, who undertooke his Brothers revenge, gave charge to the people round about him, as also to the Kings and *Princes* of *Suria*, who were then enemies to the Soldane, to prepare themselves in readinesse, so that within a *Moneth* space, he had assembled a Power of fiftie thousand hardie Souldiers, himselfe being appointed Leader and Generall over them. In this sort they betooke themselves to the field, hoping to ruinate the Soldanes Country with fire and sword: but they were better entertained then they expected, as hereafter shall be largely discoursed.

The Hiltory of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

CHAP. XIII.

How *Alchidiana* overcome by vehemencie of her Love, offered her selfe to *Palmerin* as his Wife: and of the answer he made her.



But remembryng what hath past in the Chapters before, we may not forget how by the Message the Queen of Tharsus sent to the Soldans Court, *Alchidiana* who began as it were to despise *Palmerin*, was constrained to renue her Love, thus conferring with her selfe: that if so great a person as the Queen of Tharsus, commended, esteemed and honoured him, having never seen him, the more reason had she, being daily in his company, to practise the furtherance of her earnest desires. She therefore continually awaited opportunity, to discover the fire newly raked from the Embers, and which day and night consumed her with languishing: but so well it came to passe, that not many dayes after the Combat with *Amarano*, he came to visit her in her Chamber, right joyfull of the talke he had with the Soldane, as concerning the provision of his strength, to goe ruinate the City of Constantinople, which gave him hope of his returne to *Almaigne*. *Alchidiana* having curteously saluted him, and shewing better countenance then before she did, caused him to sit downe by her, and sone after began in this sort.

I desire you Sir Knight, by the reverence you beare our Gods, and the faith you owe to her, for whose love you take the Enchanted Crowne from the Prince Maurice: to tell me your name, what your Parents be, and of whence you are. For I sweare to you by the honour of a Princess, that the guerdon you shall receive in so doing, is my heart, having

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

having once conquered those desires that long have tormented me: intending to make you Lord of my selfe, and all the possessions of the Soldane my Father, without any sinister meaning you may beleve me. Consider therefore good Knight, that without feare of dissimulation, I have told you what nearest concerneth me, if then you desire not my present death, make answer as honorable duty requireth, balancing in your owne thoughts, how vehemently the impressions of love hath touched me: in respect that now I have twice for your sake, exceeded the limits of mine owne regard, whom bashfulness should protect from such boldnesse. And if patiently I endured your sharpe repulse, when last I bewrayed the estate of my love: thinke it was caused through mine owne good conceit, that being denyed the liberty of speech, you did not perceive the extremity of my passions. But seeing our Gods have been so far visible, as to restore the thing was taken from you, and likewise hath brought you into her company, who loves you dearer then her owne life: shew not your selfe so hard hearted, to flye the houte that Love and Fortune presents you withall. Therefore my onely beloved Lord, in recompence of your sharpe Combat with proud *Amarano*, receive me as your Wife, whom you have worthily deserved.

Palmerin seeing himselfe assailed by so faire an Enemy, who could sooner bring in subjection another *Hercules*, then ever did *Iole*; and as easily give life to a Statue of *Parble*, as *Venus* sometime did, at the request of *Pigmalion* the Carbar:) was in marvellous affliction, having before him, on the one side, feare to offend God, on the other, the loyalty he owed his Mistress, and then the immediate death of *Alchidiana*, if he denyed her. In the end, remembryng what the Soldane had spoken, concerning his Voyage to Constantinople: he devised by this meanes to make her such answer, as she should rest contented, and neither God nor his Mistress be offended: he thus began. Martine

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

ous and most excellent Princeesse, thus I am assuredly persuaded, that there is not any Monarch or Prince so noble, in all Asia, but might reckon himselfe among the happiest, in respect of your personage, and unvaluable riches: so esteeme you as his Wife. By farre greater reason, that any poore, a Knight errant, unknowne, and whose life you haue saved: may say, and name my selfe above all other in fortune. But knowing my selfe so simple, and of so slender deserving towards you: I esteeme it impossible for the Gods and Nature likewise, to lift me to so wonderfull degree of happiness. Wherefore, seeing the cause such, and greater then I can desire or imagine, likewise that it is conformable to your commendment: doubtlesse I were unworthy any labour of Fortune, and to be esteemed among the most ingratefull Knights in the World, if in any thing I should disobey your reason. My reason is, that you (being reckoned as chiefe among the most perfect and accomplished Ladies) daigne so much to abase your selfe as to make me Lord of your Love, which hath been desired by so many worthy personages.

For these causes most gracious Princeesse, I am bound to love you above all other Ladies living, which henceforth I hope to see, and loyally to serve you with my uttermost endeavours. And as I ought (*Sweet Adam*) to love none but you: so is my dutie to hold your regard in chiefe commendation: therefore will I with such secreete, as so honorable a Conquest will permit, conceal this extraordinary grace. And had I not this morning made promise to your Father, to accompany his power to Constantinople, there to revenge the death of your deceased Uncle Gamelio: I should our love sent to good effect, and I gather that *Sweet Flower*, which above all other would beautifie my Garland. Notwithstanding, my hope is such, that in this voyage I shall doe such service to the Soldane your Father, as at my returne he will recompence me to your content, and good liking

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

liking of his Princes and Subjects: which may no way now be moved, lest his minde otherwayes biased, should conceive displeasure against me, and so all our Fortune for ever squandered. In this respect (*Sweet Adam*) if ever hereafter I shall doe you service, let me intreat you to patience till my return, resolving your selfe that I am more yours than mine own, and dedicate my life to your most gracious service. As concerning the rest of your demand, my Name is *Palmerin D'Oliua*, and what my Parents are, the Queen of Tharsus within these three dayes will tell me more, then hitherto I could understand by any, when you shall have more knowledge of my Estate and Country also: but so farre as I yet can gather by mine own understanding, my Discent is from Persia.

This excuse he made, because *Alchidiana* should not suspect him to be a Christian, and with this answer he was so joyfull and contented, as nothing was able to inspire more chearfull life into her languishing Soule, which *Palmerin* perceived, and the better to continue her in this opinion, very often he kissed her hand, in signe of his affectionate obedience: And so leaving her, he departed to his owne Chamber, leaving the Princeesse triumphing of her Conquest.

He was no sooner come into his owne Chamber, but solicited with the remembrance of his Lady *Polinarda*, he imagined how she blamed him with mournfull complaints for his late promises: which thought so diversly afflicted him, as he spent all the rest of the day in teares, and as she had been in presence, humbly requested her to pardon what had past him, in respect he did it not willingly, neither gave any consent with his heart thereto, but dissimuled the matter, lest the Princeesse by his deniall should fall into despair: and rather then he would violate his solemn Vow to his gracious Goddesse, he would adventure on infinite dangers. Yet did this feigned answer to *Alchidiana*

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

diana greatly abaile him, and caused him to be more honoured then ever he was befoze, as also to be continually accompanied with her presence, whose onely delight was in daily beholding him.

CHAP. XV.

How the *Soldan* having determined to send his Armie to *Constantinople*, would elect *Palmerin* his Lieutenant Generall: which he refused, intreating him to give the charge to the old King of *Babarcia*.

But now was the *Soldan* continually mindfull of the promise he made to his deceased Father *Milos*, to revenge the death of his Brother *Gemezio*: wherefore seeing all his Dominions in peace, and having with him the valiant *Palmerin*, he concluded to leade a mighty Army, to finish that which duty daily called for. And having provided a huge number of Gallies, Fforys, Gallies, and other vessels, he sent abroad to advertise all the Kings, Princes, Califfes, and Emperours his Subjects, of his will and pleasure, who likewise gathering their forces together, were numbered to be above an hundred and fifty thousand fighting men. All this while the *Soldan* so favored *Palmerin*, as he had resolved on him divers Dukedomes, which he made but slender account of, because he continually wished to see his *Polynarda*. *Alchidiana*, building on his passed promises, daily presented him with many rich gifts, and practised all the devices she could to please his senses: for so dearly did the Princess love him, as she rather desired her own death, then to give him the least occasion of disliking. And *Palmerin* by faire and affecting speeches, perswaded such settled opinions in her: as she held his promises with greater

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

greater pertinacity then ever did any *Logitian* maintain his Aristotle. By this time were the men of Armes come from all places, whereto the *Soldan* calling for *Palmerin*, began with him in this manner. Sir *Palmerin*, considering how much I am indebted to you, my affections are so resolutely perswaded, that I esteem of you as you were my Sonne, and much more then I am able to utter: not so much for services as you have done me from time to time, as for the incomparable deeds of Armes and Chivalry, which makes you honoured through the whole world. Having now determined to send my forces to *Constantinople*, my onely hope I repose in you, and well it liketh me that you beare the office of my Lieutenant Generall, and principall governor of the Kings and Princes in this expedition. Wherefore my noble and approved good friend, using your wonted magnanimity and discretion, my people shall think well of my appointment, referring the honour of their victory, to the generall havoc and confusion of their enemies.

Now I perceive (my gracious Lord) answered *Palmerin*, that by your manifold courtesies and labours, you would deprive me of acknowledging mine owne duty: notwithstanding, in respect it is your pleasure, I would adventure the uttermost of my life for you, which I cannot with greater honour lose, then in your noble service. Yet, may it be spoken within compass of your Highnesse controll, me thinks you should rather give this charge to the King of *Babarcia*, a man wise, experienced, and farre more skillfull in Armes then I am. Beside, your people having a man of their owne nation for their head, will obey him more willingly, and serve with much more cheerefull courage: then under him whom they know not, but onely by your princely and liberall bounty, which hath bene such, that from the meanest state, where fortune hath put me as altogether undesired, your Highnesse hath lifted me to the highest earthly honour. This I take I, your Lord, as not

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua.*

not gainsaying your commandment, but for this consideration, that taking this honourable charge, the Souldiers may mutiny against me, and so your Service be altogether disappointed.

And thinke you (quoth the Soldane) that my people will be more obedient to the King of Balisarea, then to you? *Dea doubleste my Lord* (said *Palmerin*) *that is my opinion.* And then (quoth the Soldane) that for the counsell you have given me, my love is nothing diminished towards you: for I see by this noble regard, how deservedly you gaine the favours of Kings, and great personages: it shall be therefore as you have appointed. This counsell gave *Palmerin*, not for any good he wished to *Maulicus*, or the King of Balisarea, but (desiring nothing more, then the ruine and generall destruction of these Heathen heards, sworne enemies to Christ and his Servants) to ridde himselfe of that charge, which would bring him so great and shamefull report, to fight against his Lord and Father. Therefore premeditating on all these inconveniences, he but expected the means to get footing in *Christendome* againe. *Maulicus* thus contented with his answer, the King of Balisarea was appointed General of the Army, yet he gave commandment that *Palmerin* should be revered among them, as the second person to himselfe, and on paine of death, none to offend him. As all this strength was ready to take Shipping, it came to the Court of *Chameiel*, and his Brethren, what slaughter and spoyle they made through all *Africa*: whereat the Soldane being greatly offended, seeing his prohibition against *Christendome* thus changed, came to *Palmerin*, and said. My Sonne, what thinke you of our enemies? What shall I doe to these Followers of their Brother in pride? I pray you tell me in this necessity. *Palmerin* perceiving his desire prevented, was overcome with marvellous passions: yet to hide this discontent from the Soldane, he thus answered. Seeing it hath

Emperour of *Constantinople.* PART. 2.

so false out my Lord, that without any Summons our enemies have presumed upon us: I thinke it most expedient, that your Armie provided in so good readinesse, begin first with the arrogant invaders, for I doubt not, their attempt being so treacherous, and the courage of our men so resolute, but they shall bravely buy their presumptuous robberies. A matter soon begun, will be as soon ended, and our Shipping ready, we may afterward set forward to *Constantinople*: for this will be a good whetting of our swords, to deale with our enemies of greater multitude. This Counsell was accepted, wherefore it was immediately proclaimed through the field, that every man should be ready to depart within three dayes.

CHAP. XVI.

How the Prince *Olorico*, Sonne to the King of *Arabia*, came and offered his Service to the Soldane, bringing with him five hundred Armed Knights, and of his entertainment.



Some what before the Soldanes Armie was ready to depart, the Prince *Olorico*, eldest Sonne to the King of *Arabia* came to the Court, and with him five hundred Knights, so hardy, brave and comely personaged, as both for the Court and the Warre, better might not be imagined. This young Prince, being reputed among the most valiant of his time, bearing report of the rare beautie of *Alchidiana*, under colour of offering the Soldane his assistance: determined to behave himselfe so bravely in his Court, that by his liberallitie and honorable actions, he would obtain the Princeesse to his wife, wherefore being come to the Court,

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

and having done his obeisance to the Soldane, he began in this manner.

Right mighty Lord of all Asiria and Palestine, having of long time heard your great forwardnesse to the encreasing of our faith, chiefly of the last honorable counsell you helde, to reuenge the death of your famous deceased Brother Gumezio, whom our Gods now entertaine at their celestall banquets: I took my selfe to trauaile, with aduised resolution to doe you such service, as might stand with my ability, and your pleasure to command. And for I now behold, that my arrivall is in a time so fortunate, I celebrate their names with immortall thanks, assuring your Majesty so farre to stretch my endeavours, as the Son that is bound by duty to his Father. The Soldane who had heard great report of his bounty and valour, his Father likewise being one of his Friends and confederates, after he had made him very gracious welcome, thanked him for the succour he brought him, and henceforth he would not esteem of him as a stranger, but as his Sonne and most especiall Friend. All this while Palmerin noted the behaviour of the young Prince, and judging by his complexion, that he was of better nature then the other Asirians, began to affect him: so that after the Soldane had given them all the good night, Palmerin accompanied the Prince to his Chamber, where they could devise no other conference, but of this new and warlike enterpryse, which made Olorico demand of Palmerin, if he should goe in those affaires, that will I verily (quoth he) if sicknesse or prison doe not withhold me. Let me intreate you then, said the Prince, to doe me so much honour, as to accept me for your companion. Whereto Palmerin right soonie condescended, and then began such a league of amity betwixne them, that it endured to the death, as you shall reade hereafter. But because it was now late, they took their leaue of each other till the next morning, when Mauleus would have

Olorico

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

Olorico dined at his Table with Palmerin, where wanted no provision that becometh so great a person, being now set forth in most rich and honourable pompe. The Tables being withdrawn, the Prince began the dance, thinking to see faire Alchidiana, but he was deceived, for she kept her Chamber in her amazons orintons, and would not be seen till the appointed day, when the Armie should make show in open field.

This day the Soldane went to order the battell, and to appoint the winges and squadrons, which made Alchidiana likewise take delight to walke abroad with Palmerin, who was now in marvellous sumptuous Armour, bearing a Shield of Minople, with a bar of Gold figured thereon, signifying his inward joy, that in so short time he should get from these barbarous and unchristian hell-hounds. Before them went two young Lords beare-headed, and behind, a great number of Ladies and knights, so rich in apparell as could be devised. Being thus brought to their Palace, Palmerin began to carter and dance with his Prince before the Princess, who took no little delight in her supposed Lover, and riding along with him, fell into many discourses, nothing tending to Religion as I guess, but such debont services as Love teacheth his Schollers. In the midst of their communication, came the Prince Olorico, so altered with his affection to the Princess, that they which have felt like affanits, might easily judge the cause of his passions. Having made two or three humble reverences to her, he offered to kisse her hand: which she would not permit him, excusing the matter so modestly, and wishing his welfare as her owne, that he imagined himselfe greatly favoured.

Palmerin regarding the afflictions of this new-come Lover, and that he might give him the better meanes, to converse with her so privately as he desired, turned his Horse to the other side of the Princess, thus speaking to her. What

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliva*.

Winke you (*Madam*) of the gentle succour, which my Lord *Olorico* hath brought your Father? Behold me, the curtestie is so surpassing great, as your selfe ought especially to thank him, if it were but for his forwarde in qualifying the haughty courage of *Amaranoes* *Exethzen*. *Dubri* like (quoth she) his compaite is to be esteemed, and among ten thousand knights, hardly may be found so brave men as is in his troupe: in recompence whereof, I will not deny the Prince any thing, that he with honour will request of me. *Olorico* perceiving this subtile invention of *Palmerin*, returned him many thanks, and after the accustomed dissimulations used in such causes, albeit Love had for a while deprived him of speech: earnestly beholding the rare beauty of the Princess, he thus began. *Madam*, although I should owe to my Lord your Father, all the services that a knight is able to yield his gracious Patrone, yet the very least of these labours, which it hath pleased your Excellence to bestow on me, may be reckoned for much more then deserved recompence. Wherefore being persuaded that my service is placed in your good conceit, I shall not henceforth feare to put my life in hazard, so much I desire to see these present promises accomplished: whereof you Sir *Palmerin*, being esteemed among the most famous persons living, shall beare me witness, when time granteth convenient opportunity. I have promised nothing, said the Princess, but what I will right gladly accomplish: requesting nothing but your good opinion, which so many chaste Ladies have heretofore desired. And I demand no better pay (quoth the Prince) then her gracious labour whom I desire to please. Thus beguiled they the time, till the Army marched forward in array, which they followd softly followed, till tenne Pages belonging to the Princess, leading tenne goodly Carriers most richly Caparazoned, came before them. Another Page brought a scarlet Lance, the bannetle whereof was the Princesses colours

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

colours, and a Golden Shield, wherein was portrayed the Head of *Amarano*, held up by the hays by a Knights hands, signifying the victory of *Palmerin* against him: The Shield being bordered round about with Pearles, Rubies, Emeraldis, Crisolites, and other precious Stones of inestimable value, then began the Princess thus to *Palmerin*.

O my noble Friend, in this warre I desire you to be my knight, and for my sake to beare this Lance and Shield, that the proud *Exethzen* may see the shame of *Amarano*. And such is my hope, that as you served the eldest, so will you deale with the other, while one of them remains alive. These Horses likewise for the warre I bestow upon you, they being accounted the very best in Turkie, and these will serve you well when you are in the field: Our Gods bearing me witness (faire friend) that did not my estate hinder me, and the regard of mine Honour withhold me, with right goodwill would I beare you company, to see your noble and knightly deeds of Armes. And this I dare boldly say, that *Hyphicratea* neuer followed her Husband *Methridates* with greater affection, were he on Sea, or on Land, on Horsebacke or on foote: then I could see the Noble *Palmerin d'Oliva*. Notwithstanding, though my body may not be there, yet shall my spirit be continually present, to comfort my languishing life, which will be but a shadow of death to mee till you returne. But because I see many Eyes are fixed on us, all the things likewise taking their leave of my Father: I will leave you to the protection of our Gods, whosend you happily and right soone againe. These words were coupled with such sighes and teares, as she had fallen from her Horse, but that one of her Ladies of honour stayed her.

Palmerin after he had with great kindness thanked her, kissed her hand, saying. Forwaite your selfe sweet

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

Adam, your shield shall be shorne in such place, where his brethren that detracted your honour, shall easily see it, although but little to their advantage. Thus took they leave of each other, and Olorico likewise did bid the Princess farewell: then doing their dutie to the Soldane, followed the Army, leaving him and Alchidiana sorrowfull for their departure.

CHAP. XVII.

How the Prince *Olorico* being with *Palmerin* in his Tent, demanded of him if he loved the Princess *Alchidiana*, and of the answer he made him.



These two young Princes, *Palmerin* and *Olorico* continued still as they rode, with what great griefe and sorrow *Alchidiana* parted from them and falling from one imagination to another, they concluded to lodge together in one Tent. And because *Palmerin* was the better and more richly provided of all things necessary for the field, *Olorico* was the more glad of his company: so the day being spent, and the Tents pitched in a goodly plaine, *Palmerin* invited the Prince of Arabia to sup with him, for the Soldane had appointed him such honourable provision, as better he could not for his own sonne. The tables withdrawne, and spending the time a while at Chess-play, they went to Bed, where *Olorico* not able to sleepe, began in this manner to his friendly companion.

How fortunate *Palmerin*, how much more could I wish to resemble you, then the greatest King or Lord in the world, to be likewise beloved of her, who in beauty, good grace, and sweet speech, hath not her like. And because my

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

my good friend and Brother, I have noted the speciall love of the Princess *Alchidiana* towards you, let me intreat you to tell me, who she is you above all other love, and intend to make your espoused Wife: knowing to you on the word of a Prince, whatsoever she be, to conceale it with secrecy, and to disswade my selfe from my love newly begun, for your sake, though it cost my life. For your noble mind, and brave gentility, hath gained such sovereignty over me, as all other pleasures whatsoever I despise, onely to have your company and labour. Thus qualifying the passions, which day and night doe secretly torment me, I will set downe such order as my father shall not need to send his Ambassadors, nor employ any of my friends to demand her for me: yet for this onely cause, I left my Countrey in such sort as you have seen.

Palmerin hearing the words of the young Prince, and perceiving him wounded with her love, whom he desired to be furthest from, smiling said: My Lord *Olorico*, I sweare to you by the honour of my knighthood, I never thought of the love which you demand, nor have I any desire to follow that humour. But true it is, that I would do as much for her, as a knight may for his Ladie, for so she well deserves, her labour and gentle behaviour worthie farre better abilitie: wherefore my deare friend, if you will be laboure me, give not over your intent, but practise to gaine her to your Wife: and I promise you that I will remove the matter to the Soldane and her, as happily may effect the end of your desires. Let me intreat you to continue to visit a friend to her, rather than calling her to visit: otherwise I had rather die the death, then come to speake words on your behalfe. These words so cheered the Prince, as with a new courage, he returned, and returned her manifest love to her. Alas! my noble friend, I am greatly bound to my father, who gave me my present being: but much more I owe to you, because my estate had now ended,

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

ended, but that your gracious speeches called me againe to life. My second selfe, having thus lost my liberty, I despise of attaining what you have promised, and enture a death more then mortall: but that you breathe hope of successe in to me, assuring me of immediate felicity and joyfull dayes hereafter, which no father, but so good a friend was able to doe. After other such like speeches, the Prince slept, but Palmerin touched in another sort, was solicited with the remembrance of his lost friends: and perceiving his companion slept soundly, he began thus to deliber his sorowes. Ah unfortunate and wretched Palmerin, how can thy mind so long beare this yoke of servitude, onely standing in feare of death? Hast thou forgot those two perfect Lovers, Trineus and Agriola, with thy true friend Ptolome, not knowing whether they be alive or dead? What? Wilt thou not search for them? The Emperour of Almaigne, hath not he good cause to complaine of thee: yet, and to blame thee, if his Sonne be not returned? Darest thou present thy selfe before him? Ah touch of loyalty, faire Agriola, how justly mayst thou call me thine enemy, incenter and first motion of thy misfortunes? Oh wretched and miserable that I am for leaving thee so discourteously, I well deserve a million of torments, farre worse then those exercised by the cruell Dionise on the Sicilians. How could they be sufficient to expiate my heinous guilt, in the forgetting thee faire Princeesse, I live in daily delights among these Moores and Tartars. But were I such as I ought to be, mindfull of a fault so faultly committed: I should not live one houre in rest, or quiet, till I had found my dearest friends againe. Ah o foyall Traytour, how canst thou thus waste thy time here slothfully, knowing the great and continuall Trabels, thy Lady and Distresse endureth for thee? But I bow to God, this warre finished, I will not abide in the Soldans Court ten dayes, but intend to set forthwards to see the Revell of my welfare. And were it not to my perpetuall discredit, as al-

so

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

so that I should be judged a fainting Coward, I would begin my journey presently.

Thus all the Night continued Palmerin such like complaints, considering his friends misfortune and his owne, with such deepe impressions, and thence forward he lived in marvellous melancholly, and would not delight himselfe, as before he was accustomed.

CHAP. XVIII.

Of the Combat between *Palmerin* and two of *Amaranors* Brethren, whom he valiantly overcame and killed.



At following the true discourse of our Historie: The King of Balisarca, who being Lieutenant Generall of all the whole Army, caused the next morning to be proclaimed by sound of Trumpet, that every man should attend on his Ensigne: and not to goe robbing and Foraging the Villages along the Countrey, on paine of death to be inflicted upon the offender. So marching on in good aray, in short time after they Encamped themselves before a City, where the Enemies kept themselves in Garrison: and planting themselves there for their advantage; the next Morning they determined to give the assault. All the Night long they were ordering the manner of their Battery, the Pyoners digging and making Trenches, and such Defences as are requisite in warlike actions.

Every thing in due and perfect order, at Sunne-rising they beganne to assaile the Citie round about: following their intent with such Courage and Alacrity, as with Scaling-ladders, and other Engins, in lesse then two houres they got upon the Wallles, and (in despite of their Enemies)

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

mies) entred the City, warbering and expulſing the Phrygians, and ſharing the ſpoile among themſelves. All other Cities, Townes, and Villages, that were taken by the Enemy, within ſix dayes after were recovered, they not daring to withſtand the Soldans power. Gramiel, Amaranos eldeſt Brother amazed hereat, having undertaken to be revenged of his Brothers death, with his Forces betooke himſelfe to open field. Determining to give the Allyrians Battell, and that way to make triall of their fortune: in which reſolution they came within halfe a dayes journey of their enemies.

The King of Balifarea advertiſed hereof, diſlodged immediately, taking advantage of a little ſountain, which was in the open ſight of the Enemy. And Palmerin, who deſired nothing more then fight, that he might accompliſh his promiſe to the Princeſſe Alchidiana: when he received of her his rich ſhield and Lance, perſwaded the Generall, that he ſhould the next morning ſummon the Brothers of Amaranos, that within foure and twenty houres they ſhould depart the Soldans Confiner, or elſe endure the danger of the Sword. The King of Balifarea adviſing hereon in counſell, found it very neceſſary and expedient: wherefore calling his Sonne, Sir Palmerin, and the Prince Olorico, he committed the charge thereof to their preſent diſpatch. They being come to the Army of Gramiel, were immediately conducted to the Prince Trent, who was then deliberating with his Brothers, and other Captaines of the Army. So ſoon as he underſtood the arrival of theſe Embaſſadores, he called them to come before him, and they delivered their Deſires. The Phrygian Prince being of marvellous haughty diſpoſition, answered; that they would not obey any ſuch commandement. Whereupon, they intended to chaſe thence the Soldans Lieutenant, to the very gates of his owne City: Becauſe (contrary to all equity) he withſtood the Warrell of their Brothers body in his Kingdom. Guerelin,

Sonne

Emperour of *Conſtantinople*. PART. 2.

Sonne to the King of Balifarea, could not ſuffer ſuch injury to his Lord in his preſence: Wherefore he ſaid, that the Soldan had done them no wrong, but received their Brother and his Train with greater honour then they deſerved, and that none of them ſhould have the like againe. So he went forth of the Pavilion, Gramiel and two of his Brothers following him, whereof the one had bene in Aſyria, with his brother Amaranos: who ſeing Palmerin, that all this while kept himſelfe without the Tent, and marking well his ſhield, where in meekage was painted his Brothers head: he knew him immediately, and in great rage pulling himſelfe by the haire, ſaid:

O Laine that I am, how can I ſuffer in my preſence the Traytour that murdered my Brother? Bold and proud ſumptuous Cayſſe, how darſt thou adventure before me, thus to deride me with thy villanie? Truſt me (ſaid Palmerin) I dare come before thee with better aſſurance of my ſelfe, then thy falſe Brother when he entred Combat with me. Wherefore, if thou wilt prove ſuch a Gallant, as thou wouldſt have me judge thee to be, by theſe Whabadoes, and likewiſe haſt any ſtomacke to revenge thy Brothers ſhame: arme thy ſelfe and another of thy Brothers with thee, and come to me in place convenient, where I my ſelfe will ſtand for you both, that Amaranos was worthy ſhame, and as ſuch a falſe accuſing Traytour well deſerved. I deſire nothing more ſaid Orinello, (for ſo was he called that gave theſe hot ſpeeches, but my Brother ſhall not deale with thee, till I have tryed my fortune alone, and if I fail of my purpoſe, then ſhall he afterwards Combat with thee: this provided, that thou aſſure me from any in thy company but thine owne perſon. What wilt thou upon my Knight-hood (ſaid Palmerin) thou performing as much on thy behalfe: yet I thinke before the ſport be done, that thou wilt with thy ſellow with thee. Thus Palmerin, Olorico, and Guerelin, withorew themſelves: Orinello and his brother

pre-

presently going to arme them, and accompanied with many knights, came into the field, Palmerin likewise as ready as the foremost, came in with a good traine of Soldiers following after him, lest any treason should be wrought against him. Olorico shewed himselfe greatly discontented, because he might not accompany his friend in the Combat: but Palmerin perswaded him, that more needfull occasions were reserved for him, which should returne him greater honour, and whom he would court in better sort, then ever he did the Ladies of Arabia. Gramiel very richly armed, would needs come for his Brothers Combat, with good hope it would sort to their honour: but Palmerin seeing Orinello ready to the carrie, encountered his enemy with such puissance, as his Lance passing through his Body, caused him fall dead from his Horse without removing either hand or foot.

Having performed his course, he returned to take his Lance out of his enemies body, striking him with the great Truncheon end on the Stomacke, so that if any life was left in him: but seeing his soule was departed to Lucifers Palace, he caught his Staffe to receive the other Brother, who met him with such strength, as he was well nere dismounted, yet in the end he was sent after his Brother, though many hardy stroakes first passed betweene them. Whereupon was such a suddaine cry on all sides, some with joy, and others with sorrow, as made the ayre resound their voices. And I thinke that the Greekes when they received their liberty by Quintus Flaminus, made not the like clamour: when (as Valerius rehearseth) the Romans fell from the ayre with the tear of their eyes. In the meane while, the King of Balisarca, having heard hereof, came into the field, accompanied with many Knights, and conducted Palmerin with great honour and triumph backe to his Tent: especially the Prince Olorico, who exceeding joyfull for the good sortane of his companion, embracing him, said. Ah gentle

gentle Palmerin, how bravely have you accomplished your promise to the Princesse? The like successe Heaven grant you in labouring my cause. Believe me good Prince (quoth Palmerin) so well will I employ my selfe in this action, as I hope you shall have cause to thanke me. Now to returne to Gramiel, he caused his Brothers bodies to be conveyed thence, and embalmed them into two Chests of Leade, referring their Funerall till his returne: and with the teares in his eyes, he thus began to exorte his people.

Not knowing how (my loving Friends and Countrymen,) to animate your mindes sufficiently, with remembrance of the tyrannie exercised by the Solban, on the body of my late Brother and your Prince: unhappy accident presents you with a fresh memory of revenge, seeing these two young Princes, the belov'd Sonnes of your King, so shamefully slaine in your presence. For this cause, deere Friends, that each of you may take a new courageous spirit, to morrow to encounter these effeminate Assyrians let us all be resolute together, and cause them to understand that you, who have led your lives in the Deserts of Affrica, much better know how to mannage Armes, then such Rosterers in the Mistresses Chambers, who can doe nothing but before the Ladies.

Whereupon two hundred knights advanced themselves before him, swearing and undertaking to bring Palmerins body to him the day following: and therefore all that night they prepared themselves strengthening their Shields and Armour, and all other things necessary for the fight, thinking the next morning by Sunne rising to bid them battell these knights inuention to Assault them, such as you shall heare. Palmerin being brought thus honourably to his Tent, called for the Chyrurgions to visite his wounds, which they found so easie to be cured, as they assured him of speedy recovery. He then summoning the whole Councell together, advised them, that in his opini-

on he thought it expedient to dislodge from that place about midnight, with bag and baggage, and to cost the *Spaniards* signing a fearfull flight. For (quoth he) the enemy advertised of our retyre, will imagine that we despaire of our successe, by reason of the death of the two slaine Princes.

Thus our dissembled flight, will cause them disorderly to pursue us, which we will suffer, till espying our advantage: when returning valiantly upon them, I dare gage my life we shall eather kill them downe right before us, or at least drive them to a most shameful fogle. This devise was generally allowed for good, and at the houre appointed was executed. By great chance this morning was *Graelius* come among his men very early: and understanding how the Souldans power was departed with such silence, presently cryed *Alarum*, charging all his men to follow them, for he doubted they would enter a Citie nere at hand, which was so strongly fortified, as they should never entice them: sooth to say, thus, therefore he desired to prevent them at that helpe.

Whereupon the Horsemen galloped after them amaine, crying: upon them (my friends) upon them, the day is ours. *Palmerin*, the Prince *Olorico*, the King of *Balifarca*, *Guerresin* his Sonne, with a thousand men at Armes, seeing how they were disorderd: returned upon them, and made such a slaughter among the *Phyrgians*, as that the field was covered all over with their bodies. When *Graelius*, seeing that of the first scallie not one came backe againe, set forward with his Battell, wherein he had a thousand Horsemen, and furiously running on the Souldans power: by unfortunat he met with the Prince *Olorico*, to whom he gave such a cruell stroke on the head, as had almost set him beside the saddle. *Olorico* highly discontented hereat, turned valiantly towards his Enemie, and between them continued a very dangerous fight: but in the end, *Graelius* helmet being cut off from his head, he began to despaire,

despaire, when *Olorico* following his intent, nobly at one blow smote his head from his shoulders. This mishap was done by one of his younger Brethren, who running fiercely with his Lance against *Olorico*, was suddenly prevented by *Palmerin*, in that he strooke him beside his Horse, where he was troden to death with the trampling of the Horses.

Then came sooth the two hundred chosen knights from their Ambush, who had undertaken *Palmerin*'s death, and they hem'd him in so subtilly, as he was brought into very great danger. Which the Prince of *Arabia* beholding, made way through the thickest to assist his friend, after whom followed *Guerresin* with a hundred knights: without which supply, both *Palmerin* and *Olorico* had bin slain, for their Horses were killed under them, and they enforced to fight on foote. But when they beheld this fortunate succour, their courage nobly increased, and then began the sharpest encounter, for the wings on eather side approached, the Archers and Crosse-bowes likewise, sending their Arrows as thicke as haile among them, so that the Battaille endured till darke night. When the Brethren sounded the Retreat, for which the King of *Balifarca* was not sorry, having so overtravailed himselfe that day, as he could no longer sit on Horse-backe: notwithstanding, before he would enter his Tent, he saw the field assured, the Watch placed, and all the Souldiers planted in good order.

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

CHAP. XVIII.

How the Brethren of *Gramiel*, with all their traine, took themselves to flight, and how *Palmerin* suddainly pursued them with his Power, and tooke them Prisoners.



So suddainly after that these two Phrigian Princes had thus sounded the retreat, and considered how they had lost five of their Brethren, three in single fight with *Palmerin*, and the other in the Battell, the greatest part of their Power likewise, almost utterly dismayed; to know the certainty of their strength, they commanded a division to be made of the whole and wounded, and seeing how small their number was, they concluded not to stay in any place, till they came to the Realme of *Palmeria*, whereof *Maurice* was King, and their Kinsman, from whom *Palmerin* took the Enchanted Crowne, where they thought to supply their want, with men active and able to Armes.

The next day, the King of *Balifarca* ranged a thousand men in Order, to give fresh assault on the enemy: but he was suddainly advertised by his spouse, how the Phrigians were fled. He not a little glad of these newes, sent word to *Palmerin* thereof, who though he was sore wounded, armed himselfe, commanding his Captaines to provide five thousand men presently, to goe see the certainty of these youngs. With this strength the King joyned his power, and so went to the Enemies Campe, where they found no resistance, nor any but such as laughably mocked, of whom he demanded which way the cowards were fled: which the poor Soldiers reporting to him, he

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

he vowed to follow till he overtake them. This resolution agreed upon, betwene the King of *Balifarca* and him, with tenne thousand Light-Horsemen, he determined to pursue them: and the King to stay there with all the rest of the Armie, to recover the Cities and Townes againe to the Soldane, which before had bene taken by the Enemy, and to be in readinesse with assistance, if he should happen to stand in any need.

While *Palmerin* made election of his company, a Horseman was dispatched with these newes to the Soldan, how the Enemies had ben foyled, and of their flight. The Messenger being come before *Maulicus*, and the Letter opened, hearing how valiantly *Palmerin* dealt with his Enemies: before all his Nobility, he said: By all the Oracles of *Delphos*, I may well perswade my selfe, that wheresoever *Palmerin* is for us, we are assured of Victory.

The Princesse having heard these newes, sent for the Messenger, and when she understode by him, how *Palmerin* bare her shield in the face of her Enemies, and had slaine in Combat two of *Amaranocs* Brethren: she was marvellous joyfull, and so well rewarded the Messenger for his paines, as for ever he might extoll the bounty of the Princesse.

The Messenger dispatched againe with the Soldans Letters, brought speedie answer to the King of *Balifarca* and *Palmerin*, of their Request: wherein the Soldan heartily thanked them, desiring them to follow their fortune.

Palmerin understanding the will of the Soldane and *Alchidiana*, and how they desired him to pursue the Brethren of *Gramiel*: determined to set forth in the next morning, advertising the Prince *Olorico* thereof, that he might put himselfe in a readinesse. But notwithstanding their diligence, their Enemies got before them into *Palmeria*, where they rested themselves, in hope to be assisted by their Cousin *Maurice*. But when he was given to under-

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

And how the Dumb Knight named Palmerin, followed them, wherfore he commanded them to depart his Realme, for he would not ayd them against his dearest friend. This repulse dyd becom into great despair, yet seeing they could not helpe it, they were constrained to make a vertue of necessity, and as secretly as they could devise, by little and little stole toward their owne Country. Maurice hearing how Palmerin was come into his Realme, rode thre or foure dayes journey to meet him, and entertaining him with exceeding honour, offered himselfe, his people, and substance to his service.

Palmerin very thankfull for the Princes kindnesse, would have nothing but certain hopes of him, because others of his owne had miscarried. By this time were the Brethren entred the Confinnes which belonged to the Admirall of Tharlus, where they did very much harme, by Crackens and great murthering of the people. This Admirall was a very gentle Knight, and named Albarano, who seeing what insurre they did him, and understanding that they had bene conquered, and now fled without any place of assurance: levied an host of hardy Sculdours, wherewith he intended to keepe a straight, through which they must of necessity passe, being so narrow as they could not passe two together, and no way else could they escape him, except they should climbe the top of the Mountaine.

In this place lay the Admirall ambushed, with so many men as he thought convenient, and within thre dayes after Palmerin with his power came to assist them. The Phrygians having heard hereof, were greatly amazed at this unexpected Adventure, and had no other helpe but to climbe the Mountaine, where in holes and Caves they were glad to hide themselves, and there they continued fife or sixe dayes in safety, albeit they were ready to dye for want of sustenance. Palmerin seeing the incummodity of the place, and that they coulnot escape him, nor had he any

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

further to follow them: caused the Mountaine to be environed on all sides, thinking the end hereof would be such, as indeed it afterward proved to be. For these poore distressed men, having neyther food or other provision, came forth of their Caves, and assembled together on the side of the Mountaine, where entring into conference of their Estate, some gave counsell to go fight it out, but other (better advised) would not consent thereto: for better it is (quoth they) to yeld our selves to the Mercy of our Enemies, then to adventure our Fortune where no hope of successe is to be expected.

Whereupon they concluded, and the two Brethren of Gramiell, were the first that unarmed themselves, and coming in this manner to Palmerins Tent, thus they began. Noble Knight Palmerin, more fortunate then any man in the world: We, Brethren to the renowned Prince Amaranos, whom thou with thine owne hand hast slaine, and thre other of our Brethren likewise, whereof the noble Orinello deserbeth speech, all Donnes to a King; and themselves heretofore worthy accomplished Princes, though now forlorn and comforted with the dead: we (noble Lord) more certaine of thy clemency and corderie, then any successe end of a Battaille so unreasonable and desperate, come to yeld our Bodies and goods at thy disposing: desiring thee to pittie our Estate, and regard the woakes of Fortune, unto whom thou art subject as well as we. Besides, that the more shall greater persons be praised for honourable labour then by any rigour and unnaturall cruelty, which maketh them ever where hated and despised. When Palmerin saw them so humble, considering his owne Estate, and how time might froten on him, returned him this answer.

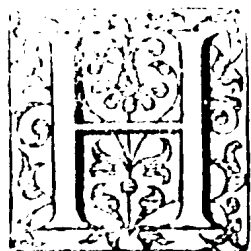
Now (my Lords) have you done yourselfe lay by Armes, and submit your selves, for otherwise your destruction was at hand. Notwithstanding, in respect you have thus yelded your selves to me: I entertaine you into my safe defence,

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua.*

assuring you Peace with the Soldane, so that you sweare your faithfull Love, and do him homage. So he gave them in keeping to one of his Knights, whom he specially trusted, and returning to Alfarano, in recompence of his wrongs, and losses sustained by the *Thrygians*, gave him all their spoyle, and the Ransome of all the Knights taken Prisoners. The Admirall humbly kissing his hand, desired him to repose himselfe in one of his Cities, which was within fife or six miles of the place, which gentle offer *Palmerin* would not refuse, because he was soe over-wearied with travaile: Wherefore by the Admiralls appointment, the Palace was well provided, both for *Palmerin*, and his good friend the Prince *Olorico*.

CHAP. XX.

How the Queene of *Tharsus* came to see *Palmerin*, in the Citie belonging to *Alfarano* her Admirall, where by the meanes of an *Enchanted Drinke*, she accomplished her pleasure with him.



Here our Historiographer willett us to remember, how that in our former Discourse was mentioned, that the Queene of *Tharsus* sent a most rich Helmet to *Palmerin*, and at the Damosels returne, being made acquainted with his Angular composed feature, rare curtesie, and knightly Chivalry: the report whereof enforced her amourosly to affect him, and that in such vehement manner, as she determined her own death, unless she might enjoy his lovely company.

Which the better to compass, she discovered her desires to a cunning Magitian, he by whose meanes she sent the Helmet to *Palmerin*, who gave her such an Enchan-

Emperour of *Constantinople.* PART. 2.

ted powder, as *Palmerin*, drinking it in wine or otherwise, should soon after become so forgetfull of himselfe, as the *Queen* might accomplish what ever she desired. He like, him did relate to her the febrall loves of *Palmerin* and *Olorico*, which Tale made her more earnest in following her intent. And understanding his arrivall in the Realme of *Palmeria*, concluded in person to goe see him: furnishing her with all things necessary, both rich Tapstry, and great store of Gold and Silver plate, habilliments, precious Stones, rings, and unvaluable Jewels. With these she adorned her Knights, Ladies, and Gentlewomen to the uttermost, and when she had furnished her Train to her own liking: she set forth with such expedition, as within three dayes she arriv'd at the City where he was, but first she adv.ised her Admirall of her coming, that he should imagine nothing by her suddaine presence. The Admirall was exceeding joyfull herof, because by this meanes he should the more honourably entertaine his Guests, acquainted *Palmerin* and *Olorico* therewith, who likewise were exceeding glad of th. selves, especially *Palmerin*, desirous to know whether his Dispayning.

Wherefore in most magnificent order with their men at Armes, and the Admirall *Alfarano*, they rode to meet the *Queen* for her greater honour: who by the speciall intelligence was given her, knew *Palmerin* among them all, in that he march'd foremost with the Prince *Olorico*, and the Admirall of *Tharsus*. She regarding in him farre more singularities, then sparing reproch acquainted her with all; after that *Palmerin* had saluted her with very great Reverence, as he was not to learne Courte civillitie, the *Queen* requited him with a sweet kisse, and thus beganne. Sir Knight, the fairest beyond all other that ever I saw, well worthy are you to be esteem'd among all the most happy, being able to winne the Love of Ladies that never saw you. Advise your selfe well of this great favour, and what

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

a precious Jewell you receive of them in requitall of your service, & acceptance of any amonious contentment.

Then wonder not (gentle knight) if to see you, I have left my Country: for besides your great valour, bounty, and loyalty, which never can be sufficiently commended: your beauty, affabilitie, and most rare perfections, deserue not onely the Love of the greatest Lady and Princesses, but their continuall service likewise, if they but consider their owne duties. If then your vertues and gifts of nature are of such value and merit, what may I imagine of her selfe, who is your onely Lady and Princess, and above all other is honoured with your faithfull service, as well records the memory of the burning Crowne? Palmerin hearing himselfe so commended by such an excellent Queene, blushed with bashfulness, and humbly shayed this answer. Madam, so farre amiable am I, to deserue the Love and good will you beare me, as never will fortune labour me sufficiently, to recompence the least part of this princely kindeesse. Yet hercof (faire Queene) you may assure your selfe, that you have a knight so forward in your service, as nothing shall withhold him from executing your commandement, though the penalty of my life were enioyned thereon.

Trust me (quoth the Queene) your behaviour promisetht no lesse then you speake of, and if I have taken any paines for you, I thinke my selfe now thoroughly satisfied: let it suffice you then, that I account my fortune not the least, having gained such place in your good opinion. These and such like speeches passed betwene them, till they came to Alfaranos Pallace, where they spent the rest of the Day in diversitie of pleasures: the Queene intreating Palmerin and Olorico the next day to dine with her in her Lodging, where she intended honourably to feast them. The next day at ten of the clocke, these two young Princes came to see her, finding her in a gaily Hall, which was richly hang'd with Cloth of Gold, and therein stood a faire Cupboard, garnished with

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

with the most costly plate that ever was seen: for the basest piece was cleane Gold, embelished with precious stones, besides divers other inestimable strange Cups and Glasses of Agatha. What their service at dinner was, I leave to the judgment of Ladies actions of labour. Yet this I dare well say, that the Viands were so rare and exquisite, and abounding in such plenty, as though she had them daily at her command. The Tables withdrawne, the Queen took each of the Princes by the hand, and sitting downe betwene them, with a sweet smiling countenance she began thus.

I pray you (gentle knights) to tell me, which of you is most affected to the service of Love, and followes it with greatest endeavour? Gladly would I be resolved by you, albeit I know the certainty as well as your selves?

Madam (quoth Palmerin) if you have such knowledge of our affectione, well may our answer be excused. Very true (said the Queene) especially you, of whose Loyalty the Prince Maurice is so notable a witness. Notwithstanding, which of you both most mistrust the attainment of her grace, to whom he is most devoted in Love, let him not give over the pursuit of his desire: but rather let me intreat you continue your Love with much more service, as to those renowned Ladies, who by their vertues and graces, doe worthily challenge you from all other: for I dare assure you such a successe end of your Love, as with speciall content you shall finish your affectionate desires. If they were so full of this assurance, it is no question to be demanded, chiefly Olorico, who till then despaired: but now so happily resolved, gave place to Palmerin, who was desirous to converse more privately with the Queene: therfore in meane time he debited with another Lady, and Palmerin taking the occasion so fit, began his tale in this manner. I cannot forget (faire Queene) when you sent your Lady to me at the Soldans Court: that after her message delivered, she

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliva*.

said to me, that you were acquainted with further secrets, concerning my estate. For this cause I intreat your highness, if you doe not imagine me too importunate: that it might please you to acquaint me with my Father and Mother, for that above all other things I most desire. The Quene amazed at this demand, thus answered. Know (gentle Knight) that what the Lady in this matter said to you, as also what my selfe even now promised you: cometh not from me, for one of my Knights acquainted me therewith, he being the most skillfull in the Magickall sciences, that is in all Turke. And now he is returned into his owne Country, and no other answer could I get of him: but that you are the Sonne of the most loyall, renowned, and valiant Prince in the world, whom before you have any further knowledge of, you shall deliver from death, and that very shortly. Beside, you be a Lady, who in all perfect ornaments, for one of spirit, hath not her equall.

In sooth (quoth Palmerin) I shall account my selfe right happy, to deliver my Father from such danger, and hearken I beseech that it may so be. As these tearmes came Alfarano, and the dancing began, which constrained them to breake off talke, and step into the dance, in which delight they spent the time till Supper was summoned, till which advertisement, they were as well, as was Oger the Dane in Faria. For never was Dido such an affectionate auditor of Aeneas, recounting the ruine of the Trojans, then was the Quene of Tharus to Palmerin: towards whom her heart was so enthralled, and with secret fire so wasted and consumed, as both the Waxe before the fire. Being set at the Banquet, Palmerin and Olorico on the one side, and the Quene and Alfarano on the other, the Waiters attending on them were two Ladies, who had in charge to give the one, the sleeping and dangerous drinke, and to the other, the amorous and delicate, yet in effect to provoke forgetfulness: so well did the Ladies discharge their office,

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

office, and the Princes took this mixed drinke so substantially, as they could hardly forbear sleeping at the Table: wherefore every one arising, the Quene gave the goodnight to Alfarano, who presently went to his lodging. Then were these two simple Princes conducted to their Chamber, where being in Bed, they slept soundly, and the Quene coming to them, accompanied with those trustie Ladies that waited at Supper: took the Prince Olorico, conveying him to another Bed, for he was so charmed as he could not awake.

Afterwards the Ladies departed, and the Quene went to Bed to Palmerin, whom she abused at her owne pleasure. A matter not to be esteemed fabulous, in that other have bene brought into the like case, as well may witness Brangiena, who endured these sweet skirmishes, because she would not manifest the History of Yseul her Mistresse, and Trilram. The Quene having satisfied her unchaste desire, caused Olorico to be brought into his place again, and then returned to her owne Chamber.

But now this Enchantment losing his operation, a fantasie appeared to Palmerin, resembling his Lady Polynarda, who said. Ah Palmerin, disloyall Traytour and Adulterer, how much are they deceived, that repute thee a loyall and faithfull Lover? Ah wretch, unworthy of so good a name, having so injuriously forgotten me. Dost thou not consider thy great offence, committed against the God of Heaven: meddling with a Woman more brute then brutishnesse it selfe, and thy disloyall treason against my selfe? We assured, that if thou presently forsake not her company: I will never forget thy fault, but chastise thee continually, as a dissembling reprobate. So she departed, Palmerin intreating her to pardon this injury, which she would not beare, but slung away in great anger: and he awaking, brake forth into these speeches.

Ah unhappy wretch that I am, thus to lose the graci-
ous

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

ous favour of my Mistress. These words awaked, the Prince Olorico, who embracing him in his arms, demanded the cause of his sorrow: but Palmerin was so surprised with griefe, as he would make no answer, but fell from the Bed, in a swoone. Olorico fearing he was dead, cried out for helpe, whereat the Duene arose, and calling her Night-mantle about her, came to know the occasion of this clamour: and finding Palmerin breathlesse, she called for so many present remedies, as extinguished the passionate fit. Palmerin seeing the Duene so neare him, clothed himselfe immediately, and departed the Chamber, commanding all his people to provide themselves, for he would depart thence within an heures space. Neither could the earnest intreaties of the Duene, nor courteous perswasions of Alfarano, cause him to stay till Dinner time: but his Carriages being sent before, and his Men attending him, he came to take his leave of the Duene, who very sorrowful for this strange accident, said to him at his departure:

Noble Sir Palmerin, my heart attainted with such extreme griefe, as the sight of you doth somewhat remedie, expected further hope of ease by your presence: but seeing your departure may not be withstood, I pray you vouchsafe to weare this Ring for my sake, and keepe it safely, till my messenger bring you another like unto it. Adam (quoth Palmerin) being unable to remunerate the great honours you have done me, I will not denie your small request: that I may the better fulfill the bond of Allegiance, wherein I stand bound to you while I live. So then in the safe protection of the Gods (quoth she) for thou hast left me such a recompence, as all my life time will be joyfull to me.

Palmerin not understanding her dark speeches, departed, putting the Ring on his finger, being the most rich and curious piece of worke that ever was seene: for in it was a goodly great Rubie cut in faces, so libely as could be described, which shin'd so brightly, as in the night time it spark-

led

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

led great light. The Duene likewise, after she had given great Riches to the Admirall, returned to her owne Citie, leading thenceforwards a very Chaste and Continent life, onely for his sake, by whom in (short time) she found herselfe conceived with childe. And at the time appointed by nature, she was delivered of a goodly Sonne, resembling his Father in brave constitution: whom the Mother caused to be named Palmerendos, as well in memory of his Father Palmerin, as also of his Grandfire Florendos, from them deriving his Name, as being the onely flower of Chivalry. And as Palmerin was vertuous, so did his Sonne follow him in all bountie, prudence, magnanimittie, loyaltie, liberallittie, curtesie and humanittie: in briefe he had all the noble vertues that a Child might receive from his father, as you may at large perceive in his Historye. But because as yet his deeds serve not to our purpose: we will leave him growing under his Mothers charge, and returne to them whom lately we left.

CHAP. XXI.

How *Palmerin* to colour his intended and delicious Voyage into *Christendome*, perswaded the *Soldane* to send his Armie to *Constantinople*, and what followed thereon.



Now greatly desirous was Palmerin to returne towards the Soldane, and therefore would not make his way through *Palmeria*, but journeyed thitherward, whence the King of *Baharica* traced his coming: who came to meet him with all the Lords and Captaines of his Army. Thus having brought the Country in quiet obedience to the Soldane, with their Prisoners they return-

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

returned towards his Majesty, sending word before of their speedy coming. The Soldane was not a little joyfull of these tidings, as also of the fortunate victory against his Enemies, wherefore he left the City of Calpha, and determined to meet them at a Castle of Pleasure, which he had lately builded, chiefly because he would see the good order of his Army, which was now conducted in better equiptage, then before was wont to be seen in Assyria.

The King of Babilarca caused the Captives to be lead before, who (by his commandment) when they came in the Soldans presence: threw their Armour to the ground, and three times fell on their knees kissing the Earth, protesting themselves before him with great reverence. All these ceremonies finished, Palmerin, the Prince Olorico, with the other Governours of the field came, and kissing his highness hand, he entertained them very graciously: and after he had embraced Palmerin, he would needs ride between him and the King of Babilarca. In this order rode they on to the Pallace Gate, where his Lady Lechea and Alchidiana her Daughter, tricke up in vestures of surpassing value, attended their coming: and after the accustomed reverences on all sides, entered the great Hall, where the Princess taking Palmerin by the hand, before her Father and all his Barons, thus spake.

Sir Palmerin, so well is your prowess and haughty deeds of armes knowne to every one, as my praise cannot extoll them to advantage: notwithstanding, I dare say before my Father, and all his Lords here present, that he is so much indebted to you, as he can never returne sufficient recompence. These words uttered with such affection, were noted by every one, especially the Prince Olorico, and straight Palmerin made this answer to the Princess: *Madam*, here may you behold the Prince of Arabia, one of the best knights that ever I knew, and who hath done more Service to your Father and you in this Warre, then any

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

any other beside: For with his alone hand he slew Gramicell, who was chiefe Leader of the Phrygians Army. Beside, such and so many have bene his rare Exploites, as no one that I know may be equalled with him. And all this he admitteth to your favour, wherein he earnestly desireth to continue, so please you to accept him for your knight: bestowing this assurance before hand, that hereafter he will adventure his life in your cause, wheresoever it shall like you to command him. For this cause (*Madam*) you may not refuse him, being the man that among the Assyrians, both best deserve to be your servant. Alchidiana, who well understood to what end his speeches tended, and the occasion why Palmerin thus spake, advised her selfe well, and returned this answer.

As helpe me our Gods, I know well that the Prince Olorico is as puissant and renowned as any man of whom I yet heard: notwithstanding, I hope the Soldan my Father will not be ingratefull in the knowledge thereof, and that sufficiently I dare warrant you. But I desire you, faire Sir, to tell me how the Quene of Tharsus intreated you, and what is your opinion of her? In good sooth *Madame* (answered Palmerin) He is one of the most courteous and vertuous Ladies that ever I came in company withall, and to whom I greatly desire to doe any service. You have good reason (quod the Princess) in that she came farre to see you, and discover her love: which others could as well accomplish, as good, or rather in Honour beyond her, if they might hope of any ease in their passionate desires. Palmerin feigning not to understand her meaning, entered into other kind of talke, untill Supper time, which finished, each one returned to their Chamber, when the Prince seeing himselfe alone with his Friend, thus sayd. Oh my deare Friend Palmerin, how worthily may you be sayd to bee without compare, in all perfections that a knight ought to have, Love onely excepted? Yet herein (if I be not deceived) you
doe

doe for me against all reason, for a thousand times are you more beloved, then your selfe can looe any. *Notwithstanding,* for this default, if so it may be named, and for the words this day used in my presence to Alchidiana, I remaine bound to your Service: for in truth you know not the good you did me, supposing my imperfection of speech when I was before my Mistress. Yet know I not whence such timidity should proceed, if not by being rapt with regard of her celestiall countenance, my over-laboured spirit forooke me, and being too much tormented in this languishing body: abandoned all the parts sensible, placing it selfe onely in mine eyes, which neuer could imagine themselves satisfied, contemplating beauty of so rare and especiall estimation. And were it not my hope onely consisteth in you, comparing my small desert, with the excellency of my Labie: long ere this had my soule forsooke her infortunate habitation, which soundly and secretly fell into these oppressing passions. And this I earnestly intreate you to let her understand: in that I feare least the imputed happy alteration, to want of wisdome and ability. Trust me, quoth Palmerin, I promise you my uttermost ability, and so much will I doe, as one friend may for another, to discharge my selfe of the promise which heretofore I made you.

And let me intreat you on mine owne behalfe, to remove that opinion of speciall love, which you repose the Princeesse beares me, being not such as you doe imagine: for (noble Prince, and my deare friend) you need not despair of the benefit whereof I have so solemnely assured you. After many other speeches, they slept till the next morning, when clothing themselves in their richest garments, they went and gave the good morrow to the Soldane, who very honourably thanked them: and Palmerin espying convenient occasion, thus began.

My Lord, you have sufficient experience, that by the bounty

bounty and great labour of the Gods, you have obtained victory against your enemies, to the no little content of your Subjects: all which being so happily finished, beseemed the thought, to seare the perfection of higher Enterprises. Wherefore my Lord, I thinke it expedient, so it may stand with your good liking, considering your provision for the Sea, is in such readinesse, your people likewise acquainted with your intent, before we medled with the Brethren of Amarano, came daily in troopes to offer their Service: that now you send your Army to Constantinople, for your answer once heard, right soone will we Embarke our selves, and set forthwards on our voyage. For the rest, I pray you deliver these Prisoners, to be used as your slaves: But as for the Princes, I thinke (having seene the fortune of their Brethren, and their owne bad successe in Armes) that they will serve you with continuall loyalty. My Sonne, (quoth the Soldan) let all be done as you have appointed, for such is my confidence in you, that this your intent cannot but sort to a good end: wherefore my Gallies and all things being ready furnished, depart when you please, having first sent your Souldiers aboard.

The Prince Olorico being present, offered againe to go in this voyage, with like number of men, as he brought against the Brethren of Amarano: for which the Soldan greatly thanked him, promising him such satisfaction at his returne, as would agree with his owne content. Alchidiana taking in ill part, the words of Palmerin on the Prince Oloricoes behalfe: sent for him to come (speake with her, which he did, and finding her very sad and melancholly, he demanded if any one had done her displeasure, and what the cause might be of her privynesse? Ah my deare friend (quoth she) how can I but be aggrieved, seeing no one Lady in this world, hath so many contrary fortunes as my selfe: Alas, my heart hath chosen you for my onely Lord and friend, thinking to finde place worthy my conceit,

and

and that your Love would answer me with the like : but in ought I can perceiue, I am too much beguiled, for you, either as ingratefull, or carelesse, use affecting speeches to me, imposing no other end, but that in leading you, I should take the Prince Olorico for my Husband. Do you imagine me so mutable and inconstant, that I will, or can love any other but you ? And that my affection entirely settled so high can brooke such a downefall, as to like the man so much less, ferious to you ? And (which most of all offendeth me) not contented to mocke me, in disdainning my knowne love : but discourteously wouldst perswade me to chuse another ? Let all our Gods be iudge, if I have not just cause to complain of you, albeit I have greater reason to hate and despise my owne selfe : Because that I have more then deserved your love, yet (as too much unwise) I cannot consider, that in the heart of an ingratefull person, Love hath no place of certaine abiding. But seeing our Gods have in such sort subjected me, as against my will I am constrained to love mine enemy, in daies I were it for me to resist against them, that they beholding the unspotted love of the one, may in the end punish the ingratitude of the other. Thus thinking to continue longer speech, so many violent Agbes intercepted her, as she was not able to proffer one word more, whereby Palmerin enforced, thus answered. I beseech you Madam, crosse me not with these noble words, for although the Prince is so worthy to be beloved, as any man that ever I saw : yet were I very much unprohibited of wit, and a more stranger to good consideration, should I refuse that spectall Felicity, then which I can desire no greater.

I know (sweet Lady) that you Love me intirely, perswade your selfe then, that my Loyaltie is no lesse, nor can death cause me to gainsay the promises I have made you : and were it not to the great disadvantage of mine honour, to forsake this honourable Warre your Father hath intended,

intended, which might procure him to misconceiue of me : assure your selfe I would forsake Dignities, Arms, and all, to do the service you worthily deserve, which at my returne shall be effected. Palmerin dissembled the matter so well, as the Prince was well pacified : and taking his leave, returned to the Soldan : Before whom he caused to be brought the Prince, and Lords that were Prisoners, and at his request Maucius gave them Liberty, with this charge, that they should serue him in this War. Which that they might the better accomplish, he gave them Horse, Armour, and all other things necessary, making all possible speed could be devised, that his Army might set forward to Sea.

CHAP. XXII.

How Palmerin Sayling with the Soldans Armie, was brought by Tempest into the Sea of *Almaigne*, where he took Landing with the Prince *Olorico*.



Palmerin quickly consented for to Embarque the Armie) desiring the Prince Olorico to accompany him to the *Taben*, to the end they might make choice of the best Vessels for themselves : and forbaying them all, they found a goodly Carracke, new and very well appointed, wherein many Prisoners lay chained, who formerly had been taken by the Soldans Gallies, and other Robbers of the Moores. Of whom Palmerin demanded what people they were ? They answered that they were Christians, and had of long time liued there in that thraldome. Palmerin not a little glad of these newes, asked of what Countrey they were, whereupon one of them that could well speake the Arabian tongue, thus answered : We are all borne in *Almaigne*, to whom Fortune hath

both excused in cruelty. These words were martiall welcome to Palmerin, and for which inwardly he thanked his God: but the better to dissemble his joy, he thus spake. This Country should seeme to be very farre from hence because I never heard thereof before. So finding this well fit for his purpose, he appointed it for himselfe, and the Prince Olorico, discharging all others that were therein, two Knights onely excepted, to whose charge he committed the Christians: causing his Voyles, Tents, and all other necessaries, to be carried aboard, as well the Prince Oloricoes, as his owne, accomplishing every thing in sixe dayes, as within thre dayes after the Souldiers were ready to depart. And now the day is come to launch away when the Soldane and other Labozanes, accompanied by King of Babilonia to the Haven: But the faire Alchidiana would not be gone, by reason of her griefe and sorrow for her Friends departure: For when she came to take her leave of Palmerin in his Chamber, she fell (in a manner dead) at his feet, and soon after she delivered these lamenting speeches:

This is no common farewell, my beloved Lord, which you now take of me, but say it is my very last Adieu: for my heart perswades me, that I shall never see you more, because the extremities of my sorrows are such, as well I know I cannot long endure. Adieu then sweet Friend, who instead of joy and comfort, leavest me in despair, which never can have end but by my death.

Good Heaven say not so, (qu. Palmerin) for I hope right soon to see you againe. So leaving her, Olorico and he went towards the Haven, the Prince being so passionate to leave her sight, by whose sweet looks his life was maintained. As had not his friendly companion comforted him, he had been unable to depart the Palace. But being come to the West, and seeing the Wind and Sea serviceable, both so little the time with any longer stay, they came to take their

leave of the Soldane, who took great care for their contentment, and many times embracing Palmerin, commending to him the disposition of all his affaires, said: My noble Sonne and Friend, I bow to you in presence of our Gods, that if you returne hither againe with victory, with such honours I will endow you, as shall be sufficient for the whole World to take on. Palmerin humbly kissing his hand, went aboard, the Partners hoisting Saile, anchored forth into the Sea: with such a brave noise of Drums, Trumpets, Clarions, Cornets, Fifes, and other Instruments, as though Heaven and Earth would have encountered together. Palmerin thus floating on the government of Neptune, imagined how with safetie he might make his company, wherefore he commanded to unbinde all the Christians. For (quoth he to Olorico) seeing they are Partners, and well skill'd in the Art of Navigation, they may stand us in good stead, if time to require, or any suddaine Tempest should assaile us: but the better to beguile his owne people, he caused them to sweare their faithfull service to him.

The night being come, and he seeing that every one slept soundly: called two of the Christians, and in the Almaine tongue thus began. My friends, give thanks to God for your Fortune, in that you Christians be he found one of your Faith and Religion, who hath good hope shortly to deliver you from these Heathen bill-bownds: therefore leave apart, and regard well your Quadrant, if you can compass any meanes to get the Coast of Almaine. The Christians more glad then can be expressed, and knowing that they would accomplish his commandment, and therefore he should repose his trust in them. About Midnight, as God would, began a great Tempest and blustering of Wind, so that in despite of the Pilots and Partners, the Fleet was severed in many parts: but the Christians perceiving that this Wind served well for their voyage, knew so well how

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

how to order their Course, that in short time they got safe enough from their companies, and thus continued the same for tenne or twelve dayes, for which Palmerin devoutly thanked God.

So happily stayed Palmerin with his Almaines that one of them at length told him, they were neare the Straites of Gibraltar: for which Palmerin was a little joyfull, said: With that they might passe Spaine without feare, and so the sooner reach Almaine. But when they began to Coast the Straite, the Turkish Mariners were amazed, saying that the Christians knew not their Course being more then eight thousand Leagues south of their Compass.

Palmerin fearing to be discovered before he came to his intent, answered in anger; that the Christians knew their Course better then they did, bidding them to paye no more on paine of their lives: which threatening, presently drove them all to Silence. Afterwards, they sailed with so good Winde, as they took Landing at a Port in Almaine which at this day is called Toledo: When the Christians said to Palmerin, how that was the place where they were borne, where (if so he pleased) they desired their libertie Palmerin assuring them of their request, answered that he himselfe would land there, and therefore went first on shore feigning to seek fresh Water, and all things accomplished to his owne desire: he caused his Boyes to be brought south and Oloricoes likewise, who was importunate to beare him company. No sooner was Palmerin on shore, but he knoeled downe, giving thanks to God for his safe deliverance. The Merchants and Mariners of the Citie, seeing them whom they thought lost in the Sea, more then ten yeeres before, were greatly abashed, welcoming them home with exceeding joy: but they answered, that they ought rather to thank the Knight in greene Armes: for he delivered us from the Moores and Infidels, without any harme.

Olorico

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

Olorico amazed at these signes of joy, as also when he saw Palmerin pray, knew not well what to thinke: which Palmerin presently perceiving, and to resolve him of all doubts whatsoever, said. No longer need I hide my good Lord and Friend, to hide the affaires and secrets of my heart from you: know therefore, that I am a Christian, and a Gentleman of the Emperours Court of Almaine. But that which most of all grieves me, is that I am constrained to forsake your company, and returne againe to my Lord, for too much should I offend my God, to goe with you in the Soldans Service. Wherefore my loving Friend, let me intreat you to hold me excused, swearing to you (by the faith of a Knight) that whether else it shall like you to goe, I will accomplish your mind: in any thing. I intreat you likewise, to entertaine all my Squires and Gentlemen into your Service, and among them to share all my treasure in the Ship, because I will have nothing with me but my Boyes and Armes. And notwithstanding all this, feare not to present your selfe before the Soldane and Alchidians: for to them will I write such matter of you, as they shall accept you in my place, and with as great honour as ever they did me. If Heaven so favour me, as I may come to the knowledge of my Father, I will certifye you with the truth of all. As for my counterfeiting to be dumber, was onely but to waite opportunity, when with safety I might escape from thence.

If Olorico at the first was amazed, what may be judged of him now? Notwithstanding, he loved Palmerin so perfectly, as he returned him this answer. Although Sir Palmerin, we are of contrary faith and Opinion, yet hath your Noblenes and humanity gained such privilege over me, that as you have long time lived a Christian among the Turks, so for your sake will I live a Turke among the Christians, disguising in like sort as you did, and when shall any occasion force me to forsake you, till you have

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

found your Father, and know if he be descended of the Soldans blood. No honor will it be for me now, to returne again to the Arabian Princes, and as for my people, I forsee not though they go backe again with my Treasure: for on my Knighthood, I will be no richer then you, nor will I receiue any thing with me, but what belongs to a Knight Errant, which is Horse and Armes. For the rest, let Fortune do the best she can, I hope for all this, one day to be in of Arabia. When noble Friend, be not offended, for I will beare you companie: if death or strong imprisonment doe not withhold me. Palmerin embracing him said.

Oh worthy Prince, so noble is your Mind, and replete with fidelity, as perswade your selfe to finde me your loyall Brother, and fellow in Armes, neuer to forsake you while I can lift my Sword, so please you to abide with me. So calling the chiefe of them in the Ship, they said as much to them as you have heard, commanding them not to stirre from Arabia, before they heard some other tidings. As for their strange conceit at these newes, I bequeath to your judgments, yet durst they not gainsay their Masters: but launching into the deepe, sailed backe again into their own Countrey.

Palmerin and Olorico for this night lodged in the Cittie, to refresh themselves: and the next Morning, after they had taken leaue of the Merchants, they delibered, they set forward on their journey. Continuing their travaile these dayes together, at length they met a Knight, who seeing them Armed after the Turkish Manner, said. Gentlemen, God save ye, if I should not seeme troublesome to you, because I judge you to be Strangers: I would gladly know if you could tell me any tidings of two Knights, which long since left this Countrey. How were they named (quoth Palmerin?) He said the Knight, one of them is Trineus, Sonne to our dread Lord the Emperour; and the other, the most valiant Palmerin d'Oliua. Two yeeres and more since, they

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

they left the Court, without any newes what is become of them: saying that we heard they were a while with the King of England, and thence they conveyed his Daughter, the Emperour continuing so sorrowfull for their losse, as every hour his death is expected. May it be (quoth Palmerin) that all this while Trineus is not returned? What danger will Noble Almaine sustaine, by losing their yong Prince? Overcome with exceeding griefe and sorrow, by report of these unhappy tidings, to himselfe he began in this manner.

What shall I do? Dare I be so presumptuous, as to present my selfe before my Sister? What sufficient excuse can I make for the losse of her Brother? Doubtlesse, if it were such a Hell to me, to finde the means for my departure, from that long Captivity in the Soldans Court, much more will it be to me now in search of the Prince, for without him I dare not approach the Emperours presence.

While he thus secretly discoursed with himselfe, he became so exceeding passionate, as Olorico thought he had lost his senses: which was the cause, that without any further enquire the Almaine Knights departed from them, when Olorico amazed at this suddain alteration, said:

How now Sir Palmerin? What hath moved you to this Heaviness? I beseech you conceale not the cause from me: for if it be by any offence, that the Knight offered which spake to you, (wee shall I beseech him his Penance. Wherefore tell me I pray you, for undoubtedly I will not suffer you to rest, untill you have acquainted me with the truth. Palmerin knowing how dearly the Prince loved him, and that onely for his sake he had left Countrey, Parents, and Friends: reposing on his loyalty, imparted his Lobs to him, as also the losse of Trineus and the Princesse Agriola. Olorico then laboured to perswade him, advising him to compass some secret speech with his Lady, of whom he might learne how to recover her lost Brother, and the faire

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

Agriola of England againe. Palmerin following his counsell, pacified himselfe, and he kept himselfe so closely as he could, from being knowne to any.

CHAP. XXIIII.

How *Palmerin*, by the meanes of *Vrbaniilo* his Dwarfes, spake with his Lady *Polynarda*, with whom he stayed five dayes, to recompence some part of his long absence, and to the great contentment of them both.



Such expedition in their Journey made these Noble Companions, and most worthy Knights, that at length they arrived neare a Strong Castle, which was about foure Miles distant from Gaunt, where the Emperour as then was disposed for Hunting, for the delight of the Ladies: but chiefly to expell his owne melancholic and sadness, for the losse of his beloved Sonne, as also to recreate the Princesse *Polynarda*: who under pretence of shadowing the cause, by her Brothers absence, lamented continually for her Noble friend *Palmerin*, of whom she could understand no certain tidings, albeit she travailed her very uttermost endeavours, which forced her to so many extreame imaginations, as that the very least was worse then death it selfe.

The Emperours Traine lodging each way about the Castle, hindered our Knights from any good Passage, so that they were constrained to lodge in a homely simple house: Where they demanded of a Courtier which lay there, what time the Emperour would depart thence: Who answered that his Highnesse was minded that day to returne to Gaunt, to conferre with the Princes Electours of speciall affaires concerning the Empire. *Palmerin* joyfull hereof

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

hereof, caused his Horse to be bridled: and accompanied with *Olorico*, went and Ambushed themselves in a little thicket neare the High way, where the Emperour must needs passe, to the end he might behold his Noble *Polynarda*. *Palmerin* attending her coming who was the only support of his life: his heart leapt with conceit of his Joy to come, yet trembled likewise, because he durst not present himselfe before the Imperiall Majestie, without the Noble *Trineus*.

Some after, by the Guard of Archers that came foremost, he well perceived the Emperour was at hand: when remembryng the honours and labours he had receiv'd in his Court, the teares trickled downe his Cheekes, chiefly for want of his Highnesse Sonne, which was so especially committed to his trust. Then followed the Emperesse, and with her the faire Princesse *Polynarda*, clothed all in blacke, witnessing by her outward habit, the secret sorowes of her heart. Her thoughts still hammering on her private griefes, yet assailed with a suddaine Motion, she gave such a sigh, as *Palmerin* easily heard it: which troubled him in such sort, as without the assistance of *Olorico*, he had saue himselfe from off his Horse. *Polynarda* beholding his suddaine alteration, without any regard of her Mother, called *Vrbaniilo* the Dwarfes to her: who since his coming from England, never boudged from her, and to him she said. Pass thou heretofore (*Vrbaniilo*) I sawe these two Knights, who shadow themselves in the Wood here, while we passe by: As trust me *Adam* (quoth the Dwarfes) I never sawe them, to my remembrance. I pray thee (said she) ride to them so fast as thou canst, and demand of them from me, of whence they are? And if they can tell any tidings of thy Father, and my Brother *Trineus*. The Dwarfes, who was a good Doctor in such like affaires, dissembling that his Horse would fall, suffered the Traine to passe by, and then rode towards the Knights, who were abiding on the Princesse

Princesse beauty. Palmerin well knowing *Vribanillo*, and seeing him come in such haste, was not a little glad, thinking now he should heare some newes of his Mistress, wherefore he said to *Olorico*. I pray let us go meet this Hoysman for I thinke his returne is onely to us.

Now was the Dwarf come to them, and having humbly saluted them, said. I beseech you faire Knights to tell me whether you belong to the Emperour or are Strangers? For the Lady whom I see is very desirous to know: and that for matters nearly concerning her, whereof if you can any way truly resolve her, your reward shall answer your owne contentment. What *Vribanillo* (qud Palmerin) lifting up his Heber: Didst thou not know thy Master?

O Heaben (quoth the Dwarf) praised be my Master for ever for this Adventure. And moved with extreame joy, he fell at his Masters feet, saying: Oh my Lord, what comfort will this be to the Princesse *Polynarda*, when she shall understand of your presence? And not without just cause: for by this meanes is she delivered from the greatest torments in the world. And that nothing may want to furnish this long expected joy, tel me if the knight in your companie, be the Prince *Trineus* or no? It is not he (quoth Palmerin) for it is more then a yeare, since that of him, and the faire English *Agriola*, (after that I unfortunately lost them) I heard any certain report. For this cause *Vribanillo*, it behoves thee to be faithfull and secret, not discovering my being here to anie but my Lable: of whom thou must learne, by what meanes I may best come to see her? The Dwarf taking his leave of his Master, turned his Horse to be gone, but comming backe in a while againe, said. As this Sir *Proleme* that is with you? *Madam* *Brionella* will not be a little glad to heare of him likewise. For is it he (qud Palmerin) I left him in companie with the rest. God will restore them one day again (said the Dwarf) so giving the spurs to his Horse, he galloped till he came to the Princesse, who

who seeing him returned in such haste, knew not well what to think: yet fearing to be discovered by a knight that accompanied her, determined not to request his tidings, untill she came home into her Chamber. But never was poore lover in greater agonie, when she expected her friend in some private place, then was the faire Princesse at this present: wherefore as soone as she came to her Chamber, she called for the Dwarf, who being come, she said; I pray thee *Vribanillo*, by the reverend dutie thou owest me, whence are the two knights, & what answer did they make thee? They are such sweet *Madam* (quoth the Dwarf) as when all the men in the world could tell no tidings of, my selfe by happy fortune, have found: for by them I bring you the Key of Paradise, if your self will but find the meane to enter. Truly, I pray thee, quoth the Princesse, jest not with me in this sort, for now is no time of sport or merriment tell me who they are I desire thee? Know then faire *Madam* (quoth he) that one of them is my Mr. Palmerin, who thus concealeth him, because he hath not brought the Prince your Brother with him, and he (humbly kissing your hand) commends him to your gracious favour, desiring you to send him answer, how he may secretly speake with you, because he would not be knowne to the Emperour, or any other of the Court. How welcome these long expected newes were to the Princesse, I leave to the opinion of long absent friends. O heavens (quoth she) both Palmerin live, and is so nere at hand? Now hath my heart his only desired comfort: and such is my hope, that seeing he is come, my brother (by his meane) shall not be long hence, to such good fortune are all his actions destined. Presently she ran to tell *Brionella* these newes, who likewise was exceeding joyfull, because she imagined Palmerins companion to be her *Proleme*. Whereupon they concluded together, that Palmerin should the night following come to the Garden, where first his sweet amours were solicited, and by a ladder of cords he should ascend her Chamber. This resolution set

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua.*

set downe, the *Dwarfe* departed to execute his charge, when *Polinarda* thus began to *Brionella*. Ah my deare friend, how impossible is it for me to hide the joy my heart concealeth, that was solate in such surpassing heaviness?

What will my Ladies now thinke, when they behold their Distresse so pleasant? Let them speak what please them (quoth *Brionella*) Should you render them account of your behavious? Yet this I thinke, that your discretion is so good, when you have seene the onely comforts for your cares: that you can so well dissemble your thoughts, as the most warie Eye shall hardly discern you. Well have you said (quoth the *Princesse*) if *Loue* could be governed by wisdom: but the pleasure which the wisest have received by his rules, hath in the end discovered their vanity and folly. Much were the speeches betwene these two Ladies attending all the Night in good devotion, when each one thought to see her Lord and best beloved, that their long sorowes might somewhat be qualified.

The *Dwarfe* being gone on his Message, as you have heard, the Knights repased themselves on the grasse till Sunne-setting, that they might more covertly enter the Citie: and the time being come that they would set forthwards, *Palmerin* said to *Olorico*. My Lord, we will take this by-way, which leaeth to the Citie, for I intend before I depart, to heare some newes from my deare Distresse. Woe which way you please (quoth the *Prince*) yet must I needs marvaile at you, that you would be so long absent from such an excellent Place: Trust me *Alchidiana* is faire, yet may not be be equalled with your Lady. The griefes I have endured (said *Palmerin*) by my long absence, are not to be spoken of: yet could no way compasse my returne sooner. By this time they were come to the Citie, and to a Lodging appointed them by *Urbanillo*, who being now come to his Master, delibered the Message he was commanded. *Palmerin* understanding his Distresse pleasure,

Emperour of *Constantinople.* PART. 2.

pleasure, presently unarmed himselfe and wrapped a Scarlet Mantle about him, taking his trusty Swoord under his Arme, he intreated *Olorico* to stay there till he returned, or heard further tydings from him, leaving *Urbanillo*, in his compaignie, with charge to use him as his owne person.

He being come to the Wallles lovely Paradise, found the Ladder ready prepared for him, wherely he made a speedy passage: and finding *Brionella*, there staying his coming, embracing her sweetly, sayd. Trust me Lady, the want of my *Proton* your friend, hath not a little grieve me: but by the grace of God, ere it be long I hope to bring him with me. Ah my Lord (quoth she) right happie is your good coming hither: for your presence hath been here most of all desired. But albeit I see a good countenance on this answer, yet were her secret sorowes innumerable, being dejected of the comfort she expected. *Palmerin* who thought he stayed too long from his Ladies Chamber; who angrily had throwne herselfe on a Wall, because he stayed to speake with *Brionella*, then falling on his knees before her, he offered to kisse her hand, which with dissembling disdain, she would not suffer him, saying: Truly you shall receive no favour of me, before I know certainly who you are: for I stand in doubt to be deceived, and that you are some other then my *Palmerin*, seeing you have been so long tyme from me, and (which is more,) would never vouchsafe to send to me.

Then taking a Light in her hand, and earnestly beholding him, hardly could she let it from her againe, when welcomning him with an infinite number of sweet kisses she thus said: Now know I well that this is my *Palmerin*: what Countrey might be so delectable, or Fortune so contrarie, that could with hold you all this while from me? What it might have stood with mine honour, for my selfe to have sought you out: with good will could I endured the *Arabian* Sea, much more then you have done for me,

The History of *Palmerin D'Oltra.*

me. How often (considering the dangers of the Sea) hath very death surprized me? And into how many kind of opinions have I fallen? Sometimes to disguise my selfe into a Wans attire, to enter the estate of a Knight Errant, and begin a search which never should have ended, till I found you. For this hath been received for a generall Rule, that by too long sufferance and expectation one may endure a thousand deaths: and think not but the very least of my afflictions, have been of force to deprive my life. Consider that griefe, desire, remembrance, languor, sorrow, hope, suspicion, teares, complaints, and other such like passions common in love, continually beate upon the heart with burning affliction, and to such inconvenience their issue growes, as the vitall spirit is chased from the body. For Good sake Adam (quoth Palmerin) leave these wounding speeches, and suffer me to take a little life, in beholding that which is no lesse divine than humane, for my offence deserves not these accusations. When discovered he all his sorrows passed, which move the Princeesse to no little admiration, when she said;

Believe me my Lord, seeing that by your meanes my Brother Timens is lost: for my love, and to satisfy your promise to my Lord and Father, you must no longer finde him againe. What shall I Adam (quoth Palmerin) but before I begin this Journey, let me intreate that favourable regard: which is the comfort in love, and untirely life and Soule together, which heretofore you have granted, and I hope will not now leave me. What may I judge (quoth she) of your constancy since your absence? For not long since I was solicited with a Letter, which told me, that you committed breach of promise to a Queene, to my no little griefe: although I thought I reproved you therefore, to cause you to forsake that Queene, when she thought the Queene thus answered. When I heard Polynarda, that although Palmerin esteeme thee above all other, yet shall

Emperour of *Constantinople.* PART. 2.

shall he leave some part of his love with me. Hearing these words, I brake forth into teares, wherewith you seemed to be moved, and so forsaking her, followed me: and here, with I awaked, finding (indeed) my face besprent with teares, and my heart overcome with insupportable griefe. Palmerin abashed hereat, remembred what entertainment the Queen of Tharsus made him at the Banquet: of her sundry delights and great favours for his arrivall, her piercing, amorous, and alluring speeches, wherewith she incessantly did sollicite him: and such was his conceit, as he verily persuaded himselfe, that by enchanted practices she had abused him: whereupon he sayd, I sweare to you Adam, by the Religious vowes of our Love, that never did I commit such wrong against you: if the Queen of Tharsus, of whom you have spoken, did not one night deceive me by an Enchanted drinke, which unwittingly I received as I sat at Supper, causing me to loose both sense and understanding: and so acquainted her with his Dreame that night likewise.

Doubtlesse my Lord (quoth she) considering the extremity of her affection, she practised some meanes to compass her desire: but seeing it fell out in that sort, and perceiving you would not willingly offend me, I am contented to pardon that fault. In these and such like speeches, they spent that night, and four more afterward, all which time Palmerin was kept unseen in her Chamber: till his departing time being come, when the Prince attyring her selfe in her wonted Evening Garments, and wiping her countenance to her former sorrow, showed her pleasures past: and thus we will leave them, returning to our Assyrians dwelling on the Sea.

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

CHAP. XXIII.

How after the Tempest was past the *Soldans* Armie assembled together, and came against *Constantinople*, where by the Emperours power they were discomfited: and the King of *Balisarca*, his Sonne *Guerefin*, and diuers other great Lords of *Turkie* slaine.



Now the Tempest (which had throwne *Palmerin* on *Heracles* Pillars, after many long and contagious Stormes, began now to cease, the Sea being faire and calme, and the Windes very quiet, whereupon the King of *Balisarca*, Generall of the Armie, in short time assembled together the most part of his Fleet, and came upon the Coast of *Natolia*, where he attended the rest of his *Flootts* and *Galleys*. And having there stayed about sixtene dayes, among all the Whippes the long stay whereof caused him to doubt, lest he had unhappily perished in the Sea, and overcome with excedding griefe, he thus began:

O gentle *Palmerin*, the flower of all *Chiballie*, in a lucklesse houre dost thou betake thy selfe to the Sea: what answer shall I make the *Soldane* for the losse of thee, and the Prince *Olorico*, being so especially committed to my trust? Now cannot fortune be so favourable to us as she would: for by the losse I utterly despaire of expected victory. Cutt off these bootlesse complaints, he was counselled by the *Lordes*, *Knights* and ancient Captaines, to send forward to *Constantinople*, to discharge themselves of their promise to the *Soldane*, least in returning without dealing with the enemy, they should be reputed for fearefull and fainthearted Cowards. Setting their sailes to the win-

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2

at length they came to the *Bosphor*. Now was the Emperour very aged and sickly, having altogether committed the superintendence of the Empire, to his Sonne *Caniano*, who had a Sonne aged aboutene yeres, named *Cariteos*. And being aduertised of the coming of so many *Affyrians*, *Turkes* and *Moore*s, he sent to all the *Chyrtian* Princes for succour: the greater part whereof, was there as now arrived, with resolute determination to welcome these Infidels.

When the Emperours soutes had espied the Enemy to enter the Straight, yong *Cariteos* beholding the knights on all sides, some on the Walles, and other in the field: came and knelled before his Graundfather, earnestly beseeching him to graunt him his knighthood. For my Lord, quoth he, a better time and occasion cannot be then now. The aged Emperour granted his request, and with the teares in his eyes sayd. In the name of God, my Son, maist thou receive thy order, and to the glorious maintenance of the *Chyrtian* faith: albeit thy youth forbids thee to venture so soone.

Presently arose the yong knight *Cariteos*, and clasping on his Helmet, was the first that went forth of the Citie, accompanied with tenne thousand Horsemen, and twentie thousand footmen, to hinder the landing of the Enemies: which a great while he did with such valour, as the Haven was changed with the blood of the slaughtered. The King of *Balisarca* seeing thereof, commanded his Archers to their taske, whose shafts flew so thicke in such multitude, as it were the Hail that falleth from the Cloudes: and on the other side he got thirty thousand men on Land, who assailed the *Chyrtians* so furiously, as yong *Cariteos* was slaine, and a great number of Noble personages, which was the cause that the *Chyrtians* retreated to the very Gates of the Citie. The Prince *Caniano* aduertised of his Sonnes death, & the great danger where-

in

in the Army was: issued forth of the City with eight thousand Horsemen, and four thousand hardy Archers, who like hungry Tigers ranne upon the Turks, beating them to the earth in such heapes, as twelve thousand of them were slain at this encounter, and the rest repulsed backe to their Ships, where many entred for safeguard of their lives, and a great number were miserably drowned in the Sea.

At this mishap the King Balisarca was greatly enraged, who with his power presently went on shore: the fight enduring so cruell and bloody three houres space, as neither side could be repented likeliest of victorie. In this encounter ended their lives, the King of Balisarca, his Sonne Gueresin, and a great number of Califfes and Tabozlanes of Turkey: and of the Christians, the Prince Caniano, with others other great Princes and Lords, whose deaths are to this day lamented in Greece, yet were the Pagans and Christians so animated one against another, as darke night was the cause of their separation. When the Emperour understood the death of his Sonne and Nephew, hee was ready to die with conceit of griefe: but seeing the necessity of the time required other matter, then sorrowing, teares and unprofitable lamentations, hee presently dispatched Postes and Messengers, to hasten the succor was coming from Christendome. In short time arrived a mighty Christian power, and in despite of the Turkes entered the City, when the Emperour presently sent tenne thousand into the field, and provided a signall for the other, to set fire among the Turkish Fleet, at what time they received the signe from the City. The Infidels seeing the Christians to sallie abroad, left their Ships and came to meete them: whereupon, the Christians divided themselves into squadrons, and running furiously on the Moores, Arabes and Affrians, made such havocke and slaughter of them, as happy was he that could best defend himself. When

suddenly

suddenly was the signall of fire made, on the highest steeple in Constantinople, to the Emperours power waiting on the Sea: which immediately launching among the Turkish Fleet, suncke the greater part of them, and burned the rest with their wilde fire. When the Turkes beheld this stratageme, and that they were now destitute of any helpe, they began to faint: so that at the coming of the Emperour, who came himselfe upon them, with a fresh sagle of five thousand men, they were all slain, except a few that escaped into Gallies, that brake from the rest upon sight of the pollicie. Great was the spoyle gotten by this conquest, which the Christians taking with them, entered Constantinople, where they gave God thanks for their happy victorie.

But although the Emperour saw his enemies vanquished, after the Princes were departed that came to his succour, right grievous was the losse of his sonnes to him, wherefore his Lords advised him, to send for his Daughter the Duchesse Grian, and King Tarisius her Husband, and to commit the government of the Empire to him. For the accomplishment of this generall determination, the Duke of Pera was appointed Lord Ambassadour, being one of the most ancient Princes of Greece: who accompanied with many noble Gentlemen, made such expedition in his journey, as he arrived in Hungaria before the King and his Duchesse Grian, whose sorrowes may not be expressed for the death of her Brother. When they understood the Emperours pleasure, they resolved on their obedience, which caused the King to send for two of his Nephewes, who were Sonnes to the Duchesse of Ormida his Sister, the one named Promptalco, and the other Oudin, to be his Lieutenants in Hungaria during his absence. Up on their presence, before the Ambassadour of Constantinople, the King Tarisius tooke their oathes, for their loyall and faithfull government. But because we must not reſiſte

The History of Palmerin D'Olive.

matter long expected, as concerning the noble Prince Florendos of Macedon: I am loth to spend any further time in vaine, and will now report what happened at Buda, during the time of this determination.

CHAP. XXV.

How the Prince *Florendos* of *Macedon*, accompanied with none but *Frenato* his Cozen, departed from his Country in a Pilgrims habit, journeying to *Hungaria*, where he killed the King *Tarissins*: and how he and the Queene *Griana* were taken Prisoners.



Lovings, let us now remember how after that Palmerin was departed from Macedon, having recovered the health of the old King Primaleon, Father to the Noble Prince Florendos, who during the time of Palmerins presence: was somewhat more pleasant then of long time he had ben, appearing his complaints for the Princess *Griana*, by the happy tryings of the ancient Knight, that sent the Sheld to Palmerin at his knightling. But now Florendos hearing no newes of him, returned to his former heaviness, and languished much more then ever he did: so that when the Macedonian Princes and Lords, pressed him with continuall request of marriage, that he might have issue to succeed in the Kingdome, he was constrained by their importunity, to make them promise of their request, craving a yeeres respite before, in which time he intended to make a devout voyage, whereto they consented in respect of his promise. Now did he not demand this time of his Subjects, for any desire he had to be a Pilgrim, or any superstitious zeale to the Spanish Leather Cape, Shoes, Frock and such like: but for he longed to see his

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

his sweet Mistress *Griana*, whom he served in heart with such loyall affection, as till death he would not marry without her consent and licence.

The day being come that he would depart, he took his leave of all the Princes, Lords and Gentlemen, and accompanied with *Frenato* Father to *Ptolome*, both escaped after the manner of Pilgrims: mounted on two Palfreys of small value, and without any weapons, except each of them a little short Dagger, departed the Citie, making such hast in their journey, as they arrived at Buda, where as then the King kept his Court providing to set forward to Constantinople. There were they lodged in one of the best Houses in the Citie, and the next morning went to the great Church, where the Queen was ever wont to heare divine service: And so well it fortune, that at the time these two Pilgrims entered the Church, the Queene herselfe was in the Chappell. Florendos who was marvellously disguised, stood not in doubt to be knowne: but seeing the Chaplaine had begun service, hypocritically he approached to the Altar with holy devotion, to the end he might the better behold the Queene. Regarding her sweet countenance, he remembered the curtesies he sometime received of her, and what exceeding affection as then she bare him: but now being in the custodie of another, and he out of hope to have any more gracious pte his spirits were so wonderfully troubled, and so many passionate Agues he breathed from his heart, as he fell downe in a swoon, that every on reputed him for dead. The Queene, who many times had noted his pittious looks, commanded *Tolomestra* one of her Ladies, she that had the charge of her in the Tower at Constantinople, that she should goe underhand the Pilgrims disease, and doe her best to recover him againe, which *Frenato* had done before she came.

Tolomestra demanded of *Frenato*, the cause of his sickness: who answered, Madam, we are newly come from the Holy

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

bagage of Ierusalem, and hee (who was wont to endure many vehement alterations, which the contrary ayces by the way doo bynde) feeling the freshe coolnesse of this Church, hath therewith bene overcome as it should appere.

My friends, quoth Tolomestra, withdrawe your selves to the Court, and enquire for the Gallery in which place the Queene doth daily giue her almes: there shall be provided some remedy for you, and I will giue you certain precious Drugges, which shall hereafter comfort you, when any such humour offendeth you. A thousand thanks (good Lady) said Frenato, we will doe as you have commanded us. Merulce being cured, they went to the Gallery, whither some after came the Queene, and opening the Casement of her Window as she was wont, tooke to behold the Almes giuen to the poore Pilgrims. Frenato and his companion had gotten so neare the window, that the Queene might easily heare any thing they said. After most humble reverence made, Florendos thus beganne. Most excellent Queene, resolued beyond all other Ladies among so many of your daily charities, may it please you to pittie the most poore and miserable knight in the world: The Queene at these words knew him, and was in such feare least the King should know his being there: as she could hardly sustaine herselfe, but fate downe on a Waller by Tolomestra, who seeing her suddaine alteration, said. What ayle you Adam, that your colour changeth in such sort.

Oh my trustie friend (quoth the Queene) the Pilgrim that swooned in the Church, is the Prince Florendos of Macedon. I pray thee go to him, and intreat him presently to depart hence: for if the King come to the knowledge of him, all the world cannot shield him from death. For the rest, will him follow no further what he lea by his owne default: and that the favour heretofore granted,

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

my duty and honour now forbiddeth me. Tolomestra entering the Gallerie, said the message to the Prince Florendos: who understanding this sharpe answer, shed many teares with greife of minde, saying: Oh my deere friend Tolomestra, beleeve my gracious Mistress Giana, that in requitall of so many tormenting Passions, which now so twenty yeares long I have patiently endured: He will aske mee once to speake with her, and kisse her hand, before I depart. Tolomestra brought this answer to the Queene, perswading her to heare him speake: which she might doe with safety, under colour of requesting to know the marvailles of Palestina, with the precious and worthy Monuments of the holy Citty.

I am content to grant so much (quoth she Queene) but I greatly feare the issue of his speeches: goe then and cause him secretly to enter. A gentle habit, whereunder many one often begetteth their delight, which in the end proves worse then Tragical. The two Pilgrims being entred, Florendos fell on his knees before his Lady and kissing her hand, said:

Oh my God, thy Name be praised through all worlds, permitting me now to kisse these hands so long time desired. Now here sweete Mistress your Florendos, that with such loyalty hath loved you, and hitherto hath kept the faith which he vowed to you at Constantinople, in your Fathers Pallace: and which no death can cause me forsake or change, unless you please to suffer me take another Wife, wherein I shall satisfy the importunate requests, which daily the Lords of Macedon make to me for Marriage, that I might leave them an Heire of my Lineage. Which is a matter so grievous to me, in that I failed of you, to whom I first gave my Faith: as I resolved never to take any other, which I know not how I shall performe without losse of my life.

As he thought to have proceeded further in speeches, and the Queene having not answered one word: unhappy the

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

King entred, which the Queene beholding, swooned with feare. But she was immediately recovered by her Ladies, when the King seeing her in such estate, and in what secrecie the two Pilgrims were talking with her, he gathered some suspicion and overcome likewise with the force of jealousy, said;

Madame, what make you here at this tyme? And in so tender companie of Ladies? How dare you stand talking with these Strangers? I would gladly know the matter and what hath made them so bold to enter your Chamber?

Florendos seeing his affaires to grow from badde to worse, and that his Lady was so threatned: entring into choller, he drew his Dagger from under his Frocke, and taking the King by the Bosome, said: Tarisus, I will not hyde from thee who I am: It is more then twenty yeres since I promised thy death, and now I am come in person to performe it. With these wordes he stabbed the Dagger to his heart, and downe fell Tarisus dead at his fete: which when the Queene saw, she on the other side fell in a swoone againe: Frenato greatly amazed heret, said to Florendos: For Gods sake my Lord, let vs Wilt for our selves before this misfortune be blazed abroad. Content thy selfe, said Florendos, never shall it be reported that I lest my Lady to suffer for mine offence: or that for the feare of death, which is the end of all mishaps, I will endure such intolerable anguishes and torments.

Now by ill fortune, one of the Pages of Honour attending on the King, and having seen this homicide, hastilic ranne downe the Staires, crying aloud: Arme ye Knights, Arme ye, and revenge the Kings death, who by a traitorous Pilgrim is slaine in the Queenes Chamber. Cardyno one of the Queenes Squires, her Brother that carried young Palmerin to the Mountaine, had no leisure to take any other armes then a Sword and Sheld, wherefore he was the first that came to the Queenes Chamber, where he

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

he found Florendos guarding the Entrance, who presently knew him, saying: Depart my good friend Cardino, unless for the Queenes Love I shall take thy life from thee. And what art thou (said Cardino) that knowest me so well? I am thy friend (said the Prince) the most unfortunate Florendos.

Strange it is my Lord (quoth Cardyno) that you durst venture into this Court: But take here my Sword and Sheld, and defend your selfe: for I thinke you will stand in great need thereof. In the meane while, I will goe advertise the Duke of Pera of this mishap, he is your good friend, and by his meanes you may have some succour: for oftentimes have I heard him say at Constantinople, that he wished you as well as my Lord the Emperour. Dispatch then (said Florendos) that thou be not seene here with me, assuring thee, if I may escape this present danger, I will acknowledge this service to thine owne content. Florendos armed himselfe with the Sword and Sheld, whereof he was so glad, as if he had bene backed with many trustie friends: bowling before he dyed to make such a spoyle among his enemies, as should remain for an after memozy.

Cardyno went with all diligence to the Duke, and secretly acquainted him with all this misfortune: Whereat the Duke greatly amazed, answered. I will doe my uttermost for his safety, because full well he hath deserved it. And so accompanied with many Grecian Knights, he went to the Queenes Chamber: and thrusting through the doores in despite of them that guarded the Staires, he gotte to the Chamber. At the entrance whereof he found Florendos, defending himselfe with such manly courage, as nine or ten lay slaine at his fet.

The Duke and his men caused the Hungarians to withdraw themselves: saying; that himselfe would not suffer the matter so to escape, for the offence ought to be punished by Justice, after the truth were knowne and thoroughly understood.

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

Now. Whereupon the Kings two Nephewes came in great rage, saying to the Duke of Pera, that the Quene and the Pilgrims ought presently to dye: What (quoth the Duke) depart you likewise: your wills shall not here stand for Law: nor shall the Quene be intreated with such rigour.

So drawing out his Sword, and his Knights likewise, resisted the Hungarians, so that many of them were slaine: untill certayne Gentlemen came, who loving and esteeming the Quene, appeased the tumult. Then was it agreed upon, that the Duke should take him into his charge, who had murdered the King: on whom such punishment should be inflicted, as the cause required: and hereupon the Duke took his Oath before all the whole company. In this sort the Kings Nephewes were quieted, who presently departed the Chamber, causing the dead and wounded to be conveyed thence, that the people might receive no further occasion of offence, and then the Duke comming to the Prince Florendos, said:

Yield your selfe to me my Lord, and I promise you on the faith of a Prince, that I will maintaine both your right and the Quenes, whatsoever danger I should hazard thereby. If you will not, assure your selfe that your bodies cannot suffice the villanous fury of these people, for they have confidently sworn your deaths. I know my Lord (quoth Florendos) that you speake the truth, and I repose my trust in your Noblenesse, which is such, as you will not suffer any injurie to the Man being in your Guard: I yield my selfe to you: and earnestly intreat you not to impute on the Quene (for on mine Honor) she is guiltlesse. And if any offence hath bene committed, it was by me: yet not without just cause, and in defence of mine owne life. My comming hither was, because I am newly returned from Jerusalem, and rememb'ring the manifold honours, which sometime I received of my Lady in the Emperour her Fathers Court: in

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

in my passing by, I was desirous to doe my duty to her. At the instant time I was saluting her, the King came into the Chamber, who moved with an ancient hatred, which you very well know, would have slaine me: but I preventing his intent with the ayde of my weapon, bestowed that on him which he wished to me. I believe well what you have said, quoth the Duke, yet you must needs abide it all in this case.

Frenato perceiving his Cousen in such danger, sought about the Chamber for some Weapon to defend him: and finding the Kings Sword by the Quenes Bed-side, he took it to the Duke, that he might give the better credit to the Princes words. Yet notwithstanding all their excuses, these two Pilgrims were taken into sure custody, and shut up both together in a strong Tower: which was very long before they could accomplish, because in leading them thither, many sought meanes to kill them, and they had done it, but that the Duke very strongly defended them.

CHAP. XXVI.

The sorrowfull complaints made by the Quene *Griana*, seeing her Husband dead, and her Friend taken Prisoner. And how the Duke of *Pera* conveyed her to *Constantinople*, causing *Florendos* and *Frenato* to be brought thither, by five hundred armed Knights.



Very sad and sorrowfull was the Quene *Griana*, seeing so many severally misfortunes succeed one another, as every houre her death was expected: and saine she would have committed violence on her selfe, but only that Cardyno with divers worthy Knights attended on her, that none of the Kings kindred should offend

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

offend her, whiles the Duke of Pera led Florendos and Frenato to the Tower. At whose returne, as he thought to comfort her, he fell on her knees before him, saying. Ah Noble Duke of Pera, if euer pity had place within your heart, for Gods sake make an end of my infortunate life: and execute on me (without any fauour) the sharpest rigour of equall Justice, not suffering longer life, to a Woman so despised and miserable.

O God, dost thou permit a happy life, to enjoy so bad an end? Thou that onely knowest the inward secrets of the heart, seeing I stand suspected in this Treason, let my speedy death deliver my innocency. Ah inconstant Fortune, that in my younger yeares was so aduerse to me: how might I exceed thy continuall malice, by this strange and unexpected accident. Ah gentle Prince Florendos, it was not for love that thou camest to see me, but for a secret hatred, more then deadly: seeing that by thee (and that with great shame) I shall remain for euer defamed. Where was that great loyalty, and the great leaue to offend me, which sometimes thou seemest to haue? Knowest thou not that in a royall and noble minde, one onely iote of infamie is an extreme torment? Doubtlesse, if thou wouldst well consider the wrong thou hast done me, thou shalt finde it to exceed all other worldly injuries. But I may perswade my selfe, that my destinie was such: For being long since by thee dishonoured, it must fall out for a small conclusion, that by thee also I shall receiue death.

In this manner the Quene complained, with such effusion of teares and bitter sighes, as the Duke pitying her case, said? I beseech you Madam, to endure this mishap patiently, seeing now it cannot be recalled, and consider that these teares and lamentations can yeeld yee no amends: but rather threaten danger, and will in the end not onely weaken your body, but hazard desperation. The King is dead, he must be buried: Florendos hath offended, he shall be

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

be punished: your people are wounded, they must be cured. Offend not then your selfe with these fruitlesse requests: but commaund that the proofe of your innocency be followed. Whereupon the Duke caused preparation for the funerrall pompe, and brought the King to the bed of honour, not without many teares and lamentations of his subjects.

When the Obsequies were finished, Promptoleon and Oudin came & exclaymed on the Duke, because he brought not the Quene and Florendos to open punishment. My friends (quoth the Duke) haue I not heretofore told you, that we must not inconsiderately put such persons to death? let the Councell be called together, and as they determine I will proceede.

When were all the Princes and Lords assembled, among whom the Duke was intreated to speake his opinion, which he did in this manner. I thinke it conuenient, vnder correction of you my Noble Lords, that the Prince Florendos and the Quene, ought to be sent to my Lord the Emperour, and there to haue Justice extended on them: as well for the surety of your owne persons, as for the conservation of the Realme. For except iustly and by probable causes you condemne the Prince Florendos, hardly may you perswade the Macedonian Princes: beside, the Lords may say, that without hearing he was cut off, and likewise by his open enemies. Again, thinke you that the Emperour will let passe in silence so great a wrong, to punish his Daughter, and not acquaint him with her offence.

Considering this indifferently, you shall find your selues in either side endangered: your goods will be spoiled, your liues endamaged: so hardly can you resist against such power. So well could the Duke set, so to his discourse, with confirmation of Histories both ancient and moderne, that in despite of the Kings Prophecie it was concluded; how the Prisoners should be sent to Constantinople. If they were heretofore offended, it is not to be doubted, but hearing the

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

the Counsellors resolution, prepared themselves to goe to the Emperour, determining a sharpe and seuerer accusation, trusting to march in their owne strength and prowesse, that if the Emperour (for proofe of the cause) should commit it to the Combat, they easily thought to compass their intent.

So were the two Pilgrims committed to the Dukes Nephew, with an hundred Knights of Greece, for their guard, and seuer hundred Hungarians, who would needes follow, for the love they bare the Quene: she being maruellously fauoured in her Countrey, for her many vertues, and chiefly charity.

The Quene herselfe, with the young Princeesse Armida her Daughter, and all her Ladies and Gentlewomen, were committed to the Duke of Pera his charge, and the rest of the Train that came with him in commission of the same Embassage. When the Duke understood she should be carried to the Emperour, he was further out of patience then she was before: rather desiring a thousand deaths, then to come with this reproch before her Father: yet not withstanding all her intreaties, she was conueyed into a Litter, and not so much as a pinne left about her, for feare of inconuenience.

To comfort her, her Daughter Armida was placed in the Litter: without whose company, such was her griefe to come before her Parents, as she was other times in danger of death by the way. But the young Princeesse being twelue or thirteene yeeres of Age, could so well comfort her sorrowfull Mother, as her talke expelled many bitter Imaginations. If the Quene was in heavinesse, we must thinke Florendo's griefes not being inferiour, seeing his Lady ledde in such sort, and accused of a crime where in none but himselfe was culpable: and yet made he no account, being reuenged of his ancient enemy, so the Duke no more delibered, though himselfe endured the death. But now are they come to Constantinople, yet not so soone: but the

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

the Nephewes of the Deceased King were before them, where they had blazed a most false and shamefull report. And but for the good aduise of certaine Noble Princes, that fauoured Florendos and the Quene Giana, upon the trothlesse speeches of these swaine: the Emperour had concluded to burne his Daughter and the Prince so soone as they came, such horrible slaunders had these Traytors spread of them. Namely, that the King was murdered, finding Giana committing adultery with Florendos. At which wordes the Emperour was so enraged, that like a man deppressed of reason, he violently puld himselfe by the beard saying,

Ah wretched and infortunate olde man, haue the heavens suffered that thus long life, that after the death of thy Sons Caniano and young Cariteos, thou maist see thy daughter convicted of treason, adultery & murder? If I haue had some comfort by my Sonnes, lying now in the House of honor, for maintenance of the Christian faith: doubtlesse this injury is so great and enorme, as no sort of comfort can now abide in me. Ah my lovely Daughter Giana, whom I had good hope would be the chiefe support of mine age, and for that cause sent to haue thy company: comfort thou now with such shame & monstrous report? Florendos, if heretofore against the Turke Gamazio thou didst me service, with great wrong hast thou now reuenged thy selfe, taking from me that good, which thou canst neuer restore againe. But let it suffice, that knowing the truth of thy disordered dealing: such shall be thy punishment as shall remaine for perpetuall memory. The Emperesse likewise forsaking her Chamber, came and knelled before the Emperour, desiring him to put Florendos to the first counsell, and he to be dispatched with diligence. At which wordes the choller of olde Remicius augmented, hee answering.

Madame, for Gods sake get you gone, for you are the onely

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

onely cause of my dishonour: and then you beganne it, when you would not suffer the Prince Florendos of Macedon to match with our daughter, but gaue her to your Nephew perforce, and contrarie to her owne liking. The Prince seeing him so offended, intreated her to depart, perswading her, that the accusers of Griana were her chiefest enemies: and that might easily be gathered, by their proud and malevolent detractions, which happily would prove false, rather then truth. For if they might herein speed of their purpose, and their accusation passe for currant, the Princesse Armida should be disherited, and themselves be the onely heires to the Kingdome. This was their principall drift, not any devotion to revenge their Achilles death, as they in outward shew declared: and hereupon all opinions were set aside untill the next day. When the prisoners arrived.

CHAP. XXVII.

How *Florendos* and *Griana* were brought to *Constantinople*, and there were appointed by the Emperours Counsell, to purge themselves of their accusation, by the Combate of two Knights, against their accusers *Promptaleon* and *Oudin*.



When the Duke being arrived at Constantinople, immediately caused the Queen *Griana*, and *Armida* her Daughter, to be conducted to the Palace, by many noble Lords and Gentlemen. When *Griana* saw she must needs goe before her Father, she began againe her wonted pittifull complaints: notwithstanding, she was so comforted by the Lords of Greece, by their solemn promise to defend her right, as she encourag-

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

ged herselfe, and comming before her Father, fell on her knees, and thus began. O my gracious Lord and Father, inconstant Fortune euermore hath bene, and still will continue, a most cruell enemy to them of highest calling: and no further needs I take for proofe of my words, then the success of your last warres against the Turkes, and the present slaughter of mine enemies against me. I cannot likewise forget, that twenty yeres and more are now expired, since (to my great griefe) I was separated from you: but with much more excusing heauinesse am I now returned, if by my misadventure you receive any impeach, or I deserve to lose the name of your Daughter. Therefore my Lord, forgetting the name and office of a Father, let naturall regard be exempted from you, and exercise on me tyrannous torments, with the greatest rigour that may be devised. Yet all too little in respect of my deserts, not for any offence in this matter, as God is my witness: but for the suspicion of the common and vulgar people, more credulous of the faults of Princes and noble Ladies, then of their discreet and sober vertues. Nevertheless, receiving death for a matter never committed, and with patience: despite of mine enemies, it will rebound to my immortall hono-
r.

Upon these speeches, the Princesse *Armida* making great reverence to the Emperour, and with the teares trickling downe her cheekes, sayd. O dead Lord, my chiefest desire euermore hath bene to see your passage: but so it falleth now out, that instead of joy and pleasure, it is with griefe, teares and tribulations. Yet gracious Lord, for the first request that euer I made to your highnesse. I beseech you to credit me, that my Mother hath committed no treason, or any dishonour to the deceased King my Father, neither euer permitted any man entrance into her Chamber, but he to whom now the question concerneth and at that time, I with those other Ladies were present, and are cre-

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

vible witnesses of the whole action. Such efficacy wrought her words in the Emperours minde, as he began to belie the accusation, perswading himselfe that it was nothing but falshood: and lovingly taking the young Princeesse up by the hand, addrest his speeches in this manner to the *Queene*.

Well hast thou said, that Fortune hath bene so contrary towards thee, so when my whole hope remained in thee, and that the Crowne of mine Empire should have bene placed on thy head: thou hast fallen into such wounding reproch, as both thee and I shall be for ever dishonoured. My Lord, quoth *Griana*, under correction, and saving the reverence to your imperiall Maestie, never imagine the case any thing to your defame: if you credit not mine enemies, or common report, from whence is engendred all untruth. This I speak I not to excuse my death, which I know to be the refuge for the desolate, and end of all afflictions: but to declare mine owne innocency, and that mine honoz shall at length be found unspotted. But now consider good Father, with what violence you enforced me to match with the King *Tarinius*: my heart being still against it, and the nearnesse of lineage betweene us forbidding it. Nor were you ignorant of my love to the Prince *Florendos*, the most gentle Knight of Greece, and whose onely tra-vaile hither was to make me his wife: all this will I not deny, nor can my heart permit to passe in silence. Notwithstanding, by your commandement I was constrained to forsake my best beloved, and take the man I was not borne to fancy. After I saw it must needs be so, acknowledged him my Lord and Husband, and my selfe his wife and Subject: neither in word or deed, nor so much as by thought, did I dispose my selfe to any disobedience, but lived in most loyall and honourable duty. Very true it is, that he found *Florendos* talking with me: but I protested before Heaven, that it was with such chast and modest regard,

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

regard, as the Sister might conferre with her Brother. And so little time our talk endured, as I had not the means to answer the Prince, so the King coming in, and provoked with frenzie or twisted jealousy, would have slaine him, whereby such fortune fell out, as the King received what he would have given. Nor can *Florendos* be worthily blamed for coming to see me, in respect of the long time since our last company: besides, having not forsaken his Pilgrims weeds, wherein he travailed to the holy Land, he came to acquaint me with the marvelles in his journey.

We here in briefe the whole truth of this Historie, and if the Kings Rephelwes abouch otherwise, I say (my Lord) they lye falsly. In which respect, as well to protect mine owne honour as the Princes, I humbly desire your Maestie, that our innocency may be decided by Combat: for such is my hope in a rightfull cause, as I shall find some Knight to fight for me. The Lords of the Empire were altogether of the same opinion, and instantly desired the Emperour, to grant his Daughter her lawfull request: whereto he answered, that he would take counsell thereon, and justice should be done her as it ought. Whereupon the Emperour went into his Chamber, and the *Queene* was brought to the Emperesse her Mother: where the poor Lady was assaulted afresh, so she was no sooner entred the Chamber, but her Mother thus begane. I know not Daughter how badly thou hast bene counselled, that since the day of thine espousall to the Prince *Tarinius*, who loveth thee so dearly: thou hast continued such hatred against him, that at length thou art become the onely cause of his death.

Madame, quoth the *Queene*, you speake your pleasure: but (in regard of my reverence to you) I answer, that I never thought it. Wherefore I intreate you to forbear such speeches, and if you consider all things well: your selfe

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

will be found in greater fault then I. For contrary to my solemn promise, which I had made to the Prince of Macedon, you compelled me to marry with him: and if Florendos had the opportunity, and in defence of his own person hath slain him, ought you then to impute the crime to me? With these words the Emperesse held her peace, and sat conferring with the young Princeesse Armida: in means while came the Duke of Pera, who had the Queene in charge, and conducted her to her Chamber, and afterward (by the Emperours commandement) hee shut Florendos into a strong prison.

The next day, Promptaleon and Oudin came to the Palace, where with great and audacious impudence they came before the Emperour, saying. Why have you not my Lord punished the fire, to burne your Daughters and her adulterer Florendos? Most and faire, answered the good Remicius, be not so hasty, I finde them not so faulty as your accusation delivereth: for no other harme was committed then talking together, and because Florendos was disguised, is that a consequence, my daughter must dye? For will I incurre such infamous report, in putting such a Prince to death, without hearing how he can answer for himselfe: you therefore my Lord of Pera, goe fetch Florendos that he may answer to their propositions. The Duke obeyed his commandement, and brought the Prince, so spent with extreme griefe, because hee had brought the Queene into such danger: as hardly hee could sustaine himselfe, but after he had with great humillity prostrated himselfe before the Emperour, he began in this manner. Most mighty Lord and Emperour of Greece, marvaile not that with such headynesse I come before your Maestie: when in stead of being you service, according as my duty commandeth me, I bring you cause of offence and displeasure. Nevertheless, I repose my selfe on your benignity and princely Justice, wherein I trust intreats you to have regard on the

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

the Queene your Daughters innocency: for the fault that is committed, if it deserve to be called a fault, was done without the Queens knowledge, or so much as a thought of the matter on her part, before it hapned. Moreover, there is none of so harsh judgement or reason but will consider, what familiarity and friendship, both passe betwene Princes and Ladies in occasion of honour. Which may serve to answer the cause of my coming to see the Queene, being thereto bound by duty and honest love, wherewith in my younger years I faithfully served her. And this I did, without any injury to her honour, much lesse occasion of offence to the King: which he would needs interpret in that sort, when with so great indiscretion he came and assailed me.

These are tales, quoth Promptaleon, for the conspiracy and treason betwene thee and the Queene is so manifest as every unknowen it. And if the Emperour doe not this day consume your liues. both together in one fire: he offereth the greatest iniustice that ever Prince did, and before the whole world we will hereafter accuse him. Darest thou maintaine by Combat in field, sayd Florendos, what thou wilt with such bravery affirmest in this Hall? What wilt I by mine honour, quoth Promptaleon, and let the Knight come that dare adventure: on this condition, that if I be the conquerour, the Queene and thou may be burned as you have deserved, and the Princeesse Armida declared not legitimate, and so disinherited of the Kingdome. How hast thou revealed thy villany, sayd Florendos, and for the last condition dost thou follow the cause so earnestly rather by any matter of truth and equity: but thou art deceived in thine intent, and thy death (villaine) shall deliver assurance of her succession. So please my Lord the Emperour of his grace, to prolong the day of Combat till I have recovered some health: my selfe alone, against thee and thy Brother, will pursue you false Traytors, and that

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

that maliciously ye have accused the Queens. The Emperour seeing the Prince so weak and sickly, and yet with so good courage willing to defend his Daughters wrong: resolved himselfe that he was innocent. Remembryng then his noble services in defence of his Empire, and how insatiably he denied him his daughter: he was moved in such sort as he could not refraine from teares, thinking for vengeance of that offence, that heaven had justly permitted the death of Tarisius, wherfore beholding Florendos with pittifull lookes, pronounced the sentence in this manner. Thou Promptaleon and Oudin, Repheles to our deceased here and beloved sonne the King of Hungaria, shall maintaine your wordes in open field, against two such knights, as my Daughter and the Prince Florendos can deliver on their behalfe, and that within twelve dayes after this instant. One of which the Prince himselfe shall be, if he be not furnished with another to his liking: alwayes provided, that the vanquished shall be declared Traytors, and attainted of the crime of Lese Majestie, and so punished according to the exigence of the case. The two Brethren accepted these conditions, being so farre overcome with their owne pride, as they reputed themselves the most balliant knights of the world. Florendos feeling himselfe so weak of body, would gladly have demanded a longer day: but the sentence being given, the Emperour likewise promising to appoint another knight in his stead, he was contented, and committing all to the Emperours pleasure, was carried back againe to prison in such penitence, as he was judged not able to live till the Combat day. The Queene likewise was kept in sure guard, despayring how she should finde a knight, that would adventure on her behalfe in fight: because the strength and prowesse of the Challengers was so renowned. Leaving thus these two lovers in doubts and feares: let us returne where we left before, to noble Palmerin, that he may bying them some better comfort.

CHAP.

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

CHAP. XXVIII.

How *Palmerin* having stayed with his Lady five dayes, in so great pleasure as heart could desire, fearing to be discovered to the Emperour: tooke his leave of her, promising to beginne the search of *Trineus* and *Ptoleme*.



Polynarda having her friend in her custody, would not willingly presume so farre upon her owne selfe, or the trusty faithfullnesse of her Ladies, as that she would permit or suffer him to stay there in the day time: and doubting likewise lest his coming in the night should be espyed, committed the whole matter in especiall charge to Bryonella, as they performed their loves without any impeachment. During these delights and Amorous contentments, which these timorous Lovers passed together, the Prince among other familiar talk reported to her friend, how the King of France sent his Embassadors to the Emperour, to treat on the Marriage betwene her and his eldest Sonne, as also her Brother *Trineus*, with his Daughter *Lucemania*. And how importunate the Emperesse had been with her, discovering what Honour and felicity it should be unto her, to be Queene of so great a Kingdome as France is. And trust me my Lord (quod he) I know my Parents are so affected to this Alliance, as if my Brother *Trineus* were come, I know no meane whereby to excuse my selfe. Alas Madam, (quoth *Palmerin*) here in you may consider, if the Emperour by violent force constrain you hèreto: what continuall griefe it will be to your servant *Palmerin*? what torments? what tyrannous paines of strange conceits, may

The History of *Palmerin DOLIVA*.

equall themselves with the very least of my Passions: nor can I any way be able to endure them. The doubtfull feares of this mistofone stroke to his heart, with such an Impression, as he fell in a swoon betwix his Ladies armies, the embracing him with such ardent affection, as the soule of the poore tormented Lover, feeling with what equall desire his Lady requited him, receyved fresh strength into his languishing body, and having come to his former estate, the Princesse sayd. Alas my Lord, at the time I supposed to be in assurance with you, and to think on no imaginations, but new pleasures and delights: forgetting the regard you have long continued, in expectation of the wished fortunate hour, will you be now the cause of my death?

Think you, that if Love be so violent on your behalfe, it exceedeth not a thousand times more in me? Believe me: You men make your vaunts of the great Passions, feares, and doubts you have to offend your Ladies, whom to serve loyally you have especially chosen: but in no wise may these appoyntions be compared to ours. Where is he among you, who hath experienced, how great the payne of dishonour is, and can cover his extrem love with dissimulation? What a death is it to constrain violence against it selfe? To containe the piercing Eye, and subdue an heart so affectionate, as bringeth death to the rest of the bodie, if she shew not some part of her desire, by looks (the faithfull and secret Messengers) to him she hath chosen, loveth, and wisheth? The torment of the will likewise, when one dare not come in presence, nor behold her favoured, to languish, and yet may seek no means of helpe. All these insupportable miseries two poore Ladies must endure, being given by Nature, or forced for a custome. Therefore my Lord, present not me with your Passions, considering each thing as it ought, they may not be compared to the least of mine: for Love who hath overmastered me, reigneth with such resolute Authority, as I must sooner dye, then offer you any wrong,

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2

wrong, seeing that as my Lord and Husband I have elected you, and bestowed those labours on you which are most desired, to wit, willing obedience, and that (then which) nothing is more precious, having then made you sovereign of my selfe, the Prince of France cannot enjoy an other mans right. And if my Father using his authority, shall enforce me, although it be grievous to me, I will tell him what hath hapned, and no menaces whatsoever shall alter my opinion.

Palmerin seeing his Lady so firme and loyall, was not a little sorry, thus answering. Doubtlesse my deare and most gracious Mistress, hitherto I durst presume on my selfe, that by my manifold loyall services, I should one day deliver recompence, for some part of the Honours you have done me: but now may I well perceive, that abounding in your graces, you despise me of all means to acknowledge your Bounty, which commonly men desire to shew by their obedience: nor shall I be able to deserve the inestimable value, contained in the simplest word of your last most honourable promise.

Now the Princesse discerning by the Astrologer, that Aurora, Phœbus his faire Sister, beganne to let forth the shining light, and provided way for his Masters journey: withdrew herselfe to her Chamber, and quickly layd her downe by Bryonella, who the better to hide her Ladies absence, dissembled that she had a fever Quotidian, by which means she compassed to keep her Chamber, & entertained Palmerin as herselfe desired. All this while Urbanillo brought newes from the Prince Olorico, who was so desirous to see the Princesse againe: as he durst not to depart the City, before he accomplished what he intended.

Palmerin who loved him as his Brother, was in great doubt, how he should safely bring it to passe: untill Bryonella, whose devices were ever readiest, sayd. My Lord, the man being no way able to hurt you, and of the less importance

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

importance made you make the matter: Will you see how we will a little juggle with the Emperour? Let it be said, that the Prince is Cousin to Urbanillo, and the cause of his coming into this Countrey, was to seek you: then because he understands how my Lady loves the Dwarf, his Witte (without any doubt) will suffer the two Cousins to take their leaves of her: Will not this device then shew his seeing the Princeesse? Without question (quoth Palmerin,) I should never have invented such a subtilty, be it then as you have determined: But with great policy, that the Emperour misdoubt nothing, for if he discover us, we are shamed for ever. Referre it to me (sayd Brionella,) if I describe not their kindred cunningly, never believe that a Woman can invent a lye without Rude. Brionella conferring with the Dwarf, laid downe the Plot, for in such order as the next day the Prince came before the Emperour: when Urbanillo on his knee desired leave, that he might depart with his Cousin there present, to seek his Master, in whose search he would travele, till he heard certainly of his life or death.

As Urbanillo (quoth the Emperour) in such a good lucky houre mayest thou goe, as to finde both him and my Sonne Trineus, God leave half thou to goe when thou wilt. But when I beheld you both advisedly, very hardly doe you seeme to be Cousins: for if there be any Alliance between you, it never came by the Fathers side: and if it be by the Mother, the one was then married in Barbary, and the other in Scotland. Why my Lord (quoth the Dwarf) rather had I dye then tell an untruth before your Highnesse: and with such protestations did the Dwarf sooth his tale, as they of greatest doubt gave credit to him. Whereupon the Emperour commaunded them to goe take their leave of his Daughter, willing her to write to her Brother. Having obtained what they desired, they stayed not long in returning thanks: but went presently to the Princeesse Chamber

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2

her, where she (advertised of their coming) stayed for them. Venerable salutations on each side belivered, a Charge was brought to the Prince, and he sitting downe by Polyarda, she thus began. Albeit my Lord I am very loath to forgoe my Servant: yet having found him so honest, and for the good will I wish to all his kindred, especially you, who have interpled to seek his Master and my Brother, I am the better contented to part with him.

If the Prince commended her Beauty, when being in Embascado he saw her passe by: What may he imagine of his opinion now? For beholding her, the comfort of her long absent friend, had called all her Beauties together, enriched with so many sweet and amiable graces: as he could not repute her of humane linage, but rather some Angel descended from Heaven, to make the glory of Palmerin more ample, whereupon, to deceibe the Ladies being present, returned this answer. Undoubtedly Madame, if I and all mine had spent our soules in your service, we should hold you affoord our Cousin, which he is no way able to describe. And perswade your selfe faire Princeesse, that if he be your obedient Servant, my selfe am no less, in all things that your Excellency shall please to command me: So that if there were not urgent occasions to excuse my departure, it would be my onely content to remaine at your disposition. Yet such is my hope, that this griefe shall be changed into joy by a speedy returne, when we shall bring the Prince Trineus, and our noble Master Palmerin. The sooner, the better welcome will they be (quoth the Princeesse) for there consisteth my chiefest comfort. And after many other speeches between them, she gave him many rich gifts, where with he held himselfe so honoured, as if he had gained the whole Monarchy of Asia: So kissing her hand, the Prince with his new Cousin, returned to his lodging. Now was it concluded betweene Palmerin and the Princeesse, because

the

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

the Emperesse on the morrow would come to see her daughter, that he should depart the same way he came: Wherefore the houre being come that he should passe the Wall, Polynarda thus spake. Now is the time (my Lord) that you must leaue me, & I be forced to consent, because there is no remedy: but perswade your selfe, that with this parting begins my sorowes. Yet if I knew where you travelled, my griefe would be the lesse, and my life prolonged with better hope: but being uncertaine of your way, and knowing what misfortunes and dangerous perills may encounter you in vnknowne Countreys, I know not, how I shall dissemble my toymen. Notwithstanding, sweet friend, if your stay be long, send Urbanillo againe, to comfort poore Bryonella and my selfe: For loosing the onely maintenance of our languishing liues, impossible is it but our Spirits will soone forsake their miserable habitation.

For Gods sake Madame (quoth Palmerin) neuer talk of such a separation, for the remembrance thereof, is death to me: and it so much offendeth me to see you in this perturbation, as I lose both courage and hope of well doing. Continue then the hauiour you haue bene since my coming, that I beholding you pleasant, may be comforted thereby, during the search of your Brother, which I hope will be both short and sudden. Otherwise, before the Earth be ready for me, I shall be enforced to take vniuersall leave. So after many sweet kisses, and gracious kissing Curtesies passed between them, they took their leaue of each other, with such effusion of Teares, as the very inward soules benimed their departing. So with his Lady vnder of Gods he got ower the Wall againe, and came to the

lodging where he left Olorico: then Arming themselves, they rode away in great haste, because they feared to be knowne by any.

CHAP.

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

CHAP. XXIX.

How after Palmerin was delivered from his Lady, there appeared unto him one of the Fayries of the Mountaine Artifaria, who declared to him part of his Fortunes following. And of a Combat which he and Olorico had against tenne Knights.



Next morn in their Journey made these two Knights, so that in short time they came to the Kingdome of Hungaria, where passing through a great Forest, they ascended a high Mountaine, at what time the Ayre being calme and cleare, was upon a sudden obscured with many darksome Clouds, and such outrageous Windes, as they were glad to shroud themselves vnder certaine Pine Trees nere at hand.

Having there sheltered themselves a while, they beheld a very thick Mist about a fyer Tree, and heard with all a very terrible Thunder: and the fogge somewhat clearing, they beheld a comely Lady vnder the Tree, where at they were strooke into no little admiration, yet Palmerin being desirous to vnderstand the effect of this adventure, made towards the Tree, when the Lady began in this manner to him.

Palmerin d'Oliua, marvell not at this Accident, which hath hapned onely for thy sake and profite. Wherefore I came to thee on another Mountaine, where I and my Sisters healed the Wounds thou didst receiue by the Serpent. And this time I am come to thee, to with thee follow thy journey begunne: Assuring thee that they whom thou seekst, are yet liuing, and in the custody of Turkes and Infidels: but before thou canst finde them, thou shalt be liberated.

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua.*

liberated from death by him thou hast most. And after that thou hast found this labour by him, he shall ayde thee in recovering from Prison and death, the best and dearest friends: and so I leave thee to thy happy successe. When suddenly vanished the Woman away, and could not afterwards be seene againe, leaving Palmerin very penible for what hee had heard, which he seemed to be true, because hitherto he had found no lesse all that the Sisters said to him on the Mountaine Artiferia.

Returning to his company, Olorico demanded what Goodesse had talked with him, and what had made him on a suddaine so cheerefull: Trust me my Noble friend (quoth he) the matter is such, as for all the Gold in the world, I would not but have knowne, which Urbanillo can better declare unto you, more then I am able: But because we would make no more strange Adventures in this Mountaine, let us speedily set forwards on our Journey.

All that day they rode without any occasion to stay them, and the next day likewise, till towards the Evening, when they espyed ten knights besoye them, the foremost of them leading a Lady, who made very grievous and pittifull lamentations: whereupon Palmerin clasped his Helmet, desiring Olorico to doe the like. Because (quoth he) for any thing I see, we shall have pastime with some danger. The Prince did as his friend requested him, and when the Lady was come somewhat more nere them, she framed her speeches to them in this manner. Gentle knights, for Gods sake helpe me, for these Traytors have forcibly brought me hither: and to compass their villainous intent, they have murdered my Husband, and two of my Brethren. Palmerin without answering one word, approached to him that led her, and gave him such a rap on the pate, with a stroke that he carried at his double-bow, as with the Croak he fel dead to the earth: making him sure not to escape, during the time that he dealt with the other. Olorico had taken his

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2

his careire against another of them, whom he encountered so puissantly, as the knight breaking his Lance, Olorico thrust his quite through his body: whereof Palmerin being glad, said.

To the rest noble Prince, for we are sure two of them can doe us no harm. With such courage did these Gallants bestirre themselves, as in lesse space then halfe an houre, five more of them were slaine: for Palmerin never gave stroke, but either he brake an arme, head or neck. The two which were left, seeing the hard fortune of their fellows, would abide no further danger, but took themselves to flight with all the speed they could. When the Lady saw herselfe delivered of her enemies, she came and humbled herselfe at Palmerins feete, earnestly desiring him not to leave her, but that it would please him to convey her to her Castell nere at hand: whereupon Urbanillo alighting, holpe her to mount on one of the vanquished knights horses.

By the way she rehearsed, howe that lechde her, had of long time loved her, but because he was proud and of evil conditions, her Father could not like of the match: but gave her to a young Gentleman his neighbour, who was a very vertuous and worthy minded knight. This seemed displeasing to him that was refused, so that he brought nine of his kindred and friends with him, and hid themselves in ambush neere my Fathers Castle, whereto I have invited you to conduct me. They staying there thus unknowne to any all the night, and the most part of this day, till my Husband, two of my Brothers and my selfe, took horse, intending to goe hunt at the Nibers Abbe, they seeing us far enough from any rescue, violently set on us, kild my Husband and Brethren, and brought me away with them, the Traytor himselfe saying, that after he had ravished me of mine honour, he would commit me to the like usage by the Women of his Stable, who when they had satisfi-

The History of *Palmerin D'Oltra*.

first their villanous wills, should put me to cruel and shamefull death.

Behold me *Madame*, quoth *Olorico*, you are happily delivered from such violence, and I thinke if all such like *Mussians* were so served as they are, *Ladies* might passe through the Countrey safely and without danger. By this time they were come to the Castell, where (because it was night) the Siege was brake: but when the guard heard that the Lady was come, it was presently let downe, and one of them ranne to the Ladies Mother, who fearing she had lost her Daughter, was now greatly comforted, especially when she understood, that they which had slaine her Sonnes, were likewise killd themselves: and certainly both the Mother and the Daughter reputed themselves so beholding to the Knights, as they knew not in what sort to entertaine them, whereby they might expresse their comfort.

Being very honorably used by these Ladies, after supper they were conducted to their Chamber, where they reposed themselves that night: and the next morning came to take their leave of the Ladies, to the no little griefe both of the one and the other. All that day they travailed without any adventure, till at length they came to a goodly fountaine, where they alighted, to let their horses pasture awhile: and having refreshed themselves with certaine victuals, that *Urbanillo* had provided for them, *Palmerin* laid him downe and slept, and *Urbanillo* by him, finding themselves somewhat weary with riding all the day. *Olorico* being a young Prince, and desirous to see any strange occasion, walked about into others places, regarding here and there the situation of the Countrey, the Mountaines and goodly Castles builded upon them. He was no sooner departed, but there arrived five armed Knights, two of them being they that escaped, when *Palmerin* so nobly delivered the Lady, they having that night past lodged at his Fathers

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

Fathers house who led the Lady, and which *Palmerin* first kiloe with his Dace. And thinking now to revenge themselves, had brought three of their Cousins in their company, and watched at the Ladies Castle the coming forth of the Princes: but their stomacks would not serve them to medle with them there, wherefore they followed them all that day, till they beheld them seperated as you have heard.

When they saw that *Palmerin* slept, one of them (feareing least the noise of the Princes should awake him) alighted, and drawing his Sword, came therewith to have slaine him: but by good fortune there arrived a Knight, who had bene hunting there about all that day, and he cryed to him with his Sword drawn. Ah villaine, kill not the man that sleeps. The Traytour seeing this new come Knight so brave a person, beganne to be afraid, and therefore kept backe againe a little, at that time *Palmerin*, by the Knights crye, awaked: and seeing him so nere that thought to give the mortall stroke, was greatly amazed, suddenly drawing his Sword to defende himselfe, not having the leisure to put on his Helmet, by which occasion he received a small wound upon his head. The Knight seeing the cowardly villanie of them that assailed *Palmerin* altogether, bestirred himselfe so worthily among them, as he that gave the wound, died soon after under his Sword. Whereupon the foure Knights divided themselves, two against *Palmerin*, and two against him, who defended themselves so worthily, and had brought their enemies into such danger, as they two that before escaped, seeing to what danger the fight would extend, gave the spurs to their horses, and galloped away so fast as the horse could pace. By this time y^e Prince *Olorico* hearing the dwarfs clamour, being greatly afraid of his Masters death: came running thither with all speed, when the knight that had saved *Palmerins* life, said.

Noble Knight, well may you give thanks to Heaven,

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

in that your enemies, who thought to kill you sleeping, are foiled: for if God had not permitted my coming this way, without all doubt you had lost your life. But since it hath been my good hap to prevent your ominous fortune, I must advise you hereafter to beware of like hazard: and may it please you to accompany me to a Castle within two miles distance, your entertainment shall be good, and your wounds cured by a Lady very expert in Chirurgery. I accept your offer gentle Sir (quoth Palmerin) with right good will, as well to have your friendly company, as to shield you from any other such like villaines, who happily may seek your harme for this noble favour. So they rode on altogether, Palmerin rememb'ring the words of the fair Lady, and could not imagin whom the Knight should be, y had so honourably preferred his life: this made him mize to manue, that he should be his enemy, whom (to his remembrance) he had neuer seen in any place before.

To put him from these cogitations, Olorico ashamed of his absence in such a needfull time, came to Palmerin with these words. Certes my noble friend, I am hence, for to be worthy to beare Armes, seeing that in such danger I left your company: unhappy that I am, might not former experience teach me, what suddaine adventures doe often happen to Knights errant: what punishment may be sufficient for my heinous offence? Leave such speeches to Women, (quoth Palmerin) for if we knew before what would happen afterward, neuer should we fall into any inconvenience: but it is sufficient that we have so well escaped, and let God haue the glory for so happy deliuerance. By this time they were come to the Castle, and entering the base Court, the Seruants came to take their Horses to the Stable: meane while the Knight himselfe went to aduertise the Lady, of the other Knights arrival, saying. Faire Leonarda, I pray you purchase the best honour and entertainment you can devise, to the two Gentlemen I haue here brought

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2

brought with me: for I imagine by their rich Armes and Courtly behaviour, that either they are Princes or descended of very honourable Parentage. Trust me my Lord, (quoth she) for your sake I endeavour my selfe to welcome them as they ought.

And coming into the Hall to salute them, after many courtesies delibered on either side, the Lady seeing Palmerins Armour besmeared with blood, by reason of the wound he receiued on his head, said. I feare my Lord you are very sore hurt: therefore the sooner it be seene to, the better ease you shall find. Whereupon herselfe helped to unarme him, and afterward she brought him into a goodly Chamber, where when he had stanch'd his bleeding, and bound up the wound, he was laid in a marvellous Rich Bed provided for him, she promising within ten dayes and lesse to recover him so well, as he should at pleasure trauell without any danger.

For this kindnesse Palmerin returned her manifold thanks, and because he might the better rest without disturbance, she caused ebery one to depart the Chamber, herselfe likewise courteously bidding him good Night. Palmerin being alone, looked round about the Chamber, to see if by any Armes or deuise, he might know the Knight that so happily deliuer'd him: At length, vnder by his Bed-side, he espied the picture of Frytol, with the Sonne painted therein, which he well rememb'ed to be his Enemy, whom for Polynardes sake he hated, according as you haue heard in the former part of this History, which when he beheld, the teares trickling down his cheek, he thus began to himselfe. I perceiue that the Lady which saluted me on the mountain is of excellent knowledge: for though the Knight be my chiefest enemy, yet for the honourable kindnesse he hath this day shewed me: I will forget all former injuries, and loue him henceforth as he were my Brother, and what I could neuer compass by rigour and force of Armes, I will now

The History Of *Palmerin D'Oliua*

seeke to conquer by loue and courtesie. While he continued these pious speeches, Fryfoll opened the Chamber doore, and entred to bid Sir Palmerin good night: who not a little glad of his comming, sayd.

I pray you Sir Knight, by the honorable loue you beare to Chualite: to tell me your name, and if heretofore you were neuer in the Realme of England. My name, quoth the Knight, which hitherto I neuer bid from any man, is Fryfoll, and two yeeres I remained in the Realme you speake of, with the Duke of Gaule in his Court. You remember then a Knight, sayd Palmerin, with whom in lesse space then twelue dayes together, you had two seuerall combats. Very true, quoth Fryfoll, and some good reason I haue to remember it, for the fight on my behalfe was so dangerous, as but by the fauour of a Lady and a Squire, I neuer had escaped with life. Now hast thou in thy custodie, sayd Palmerin, the man that did thee such wrong, no more an enemy, but for euer thy bowed, true and trusty friend: and by the othe I haue receiued, there is no man this day liuing, that shall withhold me from thy friendship, because thou better deservest it then any Knight in the world.

And hast by my meanes, quoth Fryfoll, the onely slauer of Chualite againe deliuered from death: and the resolute hatred betwene vs, turned now with loue more then brotherlike: in an happy houre went I on hunting this day, and fortune could neuer honour me with more desired successe. For confirmation of this new alliance, he ran and called Leonarda, Olorico and the rest, and before them all kissed Palmerin in the M.d, to seal the perpetuall league of amity betwene them. When was recounted their adventures and hard past, wherat every one greatly meruailed; seeing this sudden change to such surpassing loue.

Fryfoll also rehearsed, how after the rape of Agriola, the Duke Grenus his Lord went to the Court, where he abused

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2

abused the King to pursue his Daughter, or to send him in search of her: whereto he could not any way perswade the King. Moreover, how his Father would haue kept him still in his seruice, whereto he might not grant, for the promise he made the Lady that came thither, whom after he had brought to her Castle: he troubled by the Emperour of Allmaignes Court, where he certainly understood, that Tryneus and Agriola were not as yet then arrived, nor could any news be heard what became of them.

Yet during all these speeches, he concealed all his owne noble deeds of Chivalry in England, Allmaigne and other places, so virtuous and behauiour was this gentle Knight, cobeting in nothing to extol himself. He forgot not likewise to report, how that he cured him of a long and grievous disease: for which he had to giuen himselfe to her service, as for euer he vowed himself her Knight. Palmerin not a little contented with this discourse, said, I think the King of England would not send his Ships after his Daughter, remembering her happines to come, being now the expected wife to Lord Tryneus, and the honour thereof had been already lost, but that the tempest of the sea was too much their enemy. Then declared he their troublesome time on the sea, in what manner he lost them, and how he now traualled to find them againe. Since fortune hath so appointed (quoth Fryfoll) that this loue and friendship should be begun betwene vs, to continue the same I will beare you company, and will not forsake you till you haue found them, may it like you to accept me for your companion.

As it like me, (quoth Palmerin) you neede not doubt thereof, and rather you then any man that I know: for which noble kinde of life, I think myselfe most fortunate. In this manner beganne the concord betwene Palmerin and Fryfoll, which continued with vertuous and perfect constancy, as in the Chapters following you shall perceiue. Thus sojourned these Knights there leuelling together, till

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

Palmerin being recovered, and able to beare Aimes: they departed thence, leaving the poore Lady Leonarda in great heavineſſe, becauſe her friend Friſoll left her ſo ſone.

CHAP. XXX.

How *Palmerin*, the Prince *Olorico*, and *Friſoll*, went to *Buda*, thinking to finde the Court there, where being arrived, they heard newes how the Prince *Florendos* waſtaken: whom they went to ſuccour with all diligence at *Conſtantinople*.



Friſoll, becauſe he would not have his Lady Leonarda too much diſcontented, made promiſe of his ſpeedy returne to her: Which words ſome- what pleaſing her, he departed with his two new friends, and ſuch quick haſte they made in their Journey, as within ſix days after, they arrived

Buda. There were they advertiſed of the Kings death, whereof the Prince of Macedon waſt accuſed, and the Queene likewiſe: For which cauſe they were as Wiſſoners conveyed to her Fathers Court, to the Citty of *Conſtantinople*.

At theſe tidings *Palmerin* waſt very diſpleaſant, where- ſo he ſaid to his Companions. Believe me good friends, My heart will never be at quiet till I have bene beſore the Emperour, who ought to be an indifferent Judge to *Florendos*, and he is the onely man of the world, to whom moſt gladly I would doe any ſervice: therefore let us make haſte to *Conſtantinople*, to the end we may ſuccour him, if he ſtand in any need of our aide. I am ready (quoth *Friſoll*) and let us ſet ſo forward when you pleaſe. Wherewith he remembred his father, to whom the Crowne by right apper- tained,

Emperour of *Conſtantinople*. PART. 2

taine, if *Tariſius* decaſed without any heire: whereſo (by this means) he might attaine right ſone. Perſwading himſelfe with aſſurance hereof, he waſt now moze earneſt to be gene, and haſtned his companions in ſuch ſort, as they came to *Conſtantinople*, two dayes beſore the appointed time ſo the Combat. As they entred the Citty, they met a knight riding on hunting, whom after they had ſaluted, *Palmerin* queſtioned withall, if he knew any thing of the Prince *Florendos* his miſfortune, and what the Emperour intended to doe with him. Sir, (quoth the knight) the Emperour hath reſolutely ſet downe, that the Prince and his daughter ſhall receive their tryall by Combat againſt the two Pephewes to the decaſed King: and furniſhed they muſt be of their Champions, beſore the limited time of ten dayes be expired, and nothing elſe as yet is done to my knowledge. I thank you good Sir, (quoth *Palmerin*) it is happy the matters are no further ſo ward. So leaving the knight they praunced merrily into the Citty, and becauſe it waſt too ſone to take up their lodging, they rode to the Wallace, to know at ſall the certainty of the matter: thus being all armed, except their Helmes, which their Squires carried after them, they made a ſolemely ſhew as they rode, in that they were all three of one ſtature, and very beautiful young Princes, they were eſpecially noted, and followed by many knights and Gentlemen, who imagined ſuch perſons went to the Wallace ſo other matters then Courtly dancing.

Theſe three companions being entred the great Wall, which waſt hanged round about with black velvet, in ſigne of mourning, they marvelled what might be the occaſion thereof: whereſo *Palmerin* falling on his knee be- ſore the Emperour, and having humbly kiſſed his hand, thus ſpake. Moſt renowned Monarch of the world, my friends heere and my ſelfe, within theſe ſew dayes, as we travelled through the Realme of Hungaria, were ad-

The History of Palmerin D'Olive.

verrified that you keep in prison the Prince of Macedon, whom (so please your Majesty to purchase) I would gladly see, in respect that he is my Lord, as for the desire I have to deale in the Combat appointed, if it like him to make chesse of me.

The Emperour percepuing Palmerin so faire, modest, and courteous, began with himselfe to conceiue well of him: and imagined that his Son Caniano was againe reuiued, so neere did he resemble him in countenance, stature, and all proportions of his body, wherefoze he returned him this answer. It shall not in ought displease me my friend, to let you see him, to the end you may conceiue no suspicion of iniustice. So calling a Gentleman vnder, commanded him to conduct the knight to the Tower where the Prince Florendos was: afterwards inquiring of the Prince Olorico and Fryfoll, what the knight was that so hardily did enterprise the Combat. Dido Lord. (quoth Fryfoll) he is called Palmerin d'Olive, a knight (in my Iudgement) of the very highest quality in the world. When he and the Prince Olorico were at the pyres and deeds of Chivalrie by him accomplished in France, England, Allmaine, Bohemia, and Turkie: which being heard by a Bohemian knight present, he came to Fryfoll, saying.

I pray you Sir, is this that Palmerin who killed the Serpent on the Mountaine Acriferia, and brought the water from the fountaine, which healed the good King Primoleon, whether to Florendos? It is he Sir (quoth Fryfoll) and no other. When came I say, gracious Lord (quoth the knight) that you have seene the most valiant and vertuous Gentleman that ever came in France. Whereupon he discovered the noble victory he obtained in Bohemia, against the two Giants Dominico and Mordano, whom he slew before his victory by Combat on the behalfe of Dyardo, Countin germaine to the King and faire Cardonyal against the Countie of Ormeccue, and his Cousins, in the Company of

Prince

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

Prince Adrian and Ptolome. Whereat were all the Princes and knights present amazed, so that the Emperour himselfe, said:

All may Florendos now adventure the triall of his cause, hauing the onely Champion of the World on his side: and in this manner they dratted of him, till his returne from the Prison againe. Palmerin entering the Tower, Florendos was astounded, because no person was wont to come to him: but chiefly when he saw him on his knees to him, vying these speeches. Alas my Lord Florendos, how grieuous to me is your imprisonment: in unhappy time did you know him, that hath caused you to be so ill intreated. I pray you my Lord comfort your selfe and take courage: for here you may behold your Seruant Palmerin, who will be helued in a thousand pieces, but he will deliuer you from this misery. Florendos, whose eies and face were greatly shewne with excellent weeping, onely with the sorrow he conceiued for his Lady, knowing him to be the same man indoubt: was so exceeding ioyfull, as infinite embracings and kissings, would not serue to be: wray his comfort, for such gracious welcomes, reverence, and courtesy he vnder, as Palmerin (bashfull to be entertained with such honour) sayd.

Truely so it my Lord, that you should thus much abase yourselfe to me: for (vnder correction) it ill agrees that the Master should honour the Seruant. The poore Prince could not but still hold him in his armes, and with teares and maruailous affection, thus answered. Oh Palmerin, mine onely hope and comfort in trouble, where hast thou been? what fortune hath kept thee so long from mee? Oh deere friend, how many plesant thoughts haue I endured, expecting thy comming: so that when I saw thee dost not returne, and I could no way beate what was become of thee; the carelesse conceit of thy absence had neere slaine me. When couldest thou what became of my selfe being

depyl,

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua.*

deprived of my love and honour of my life, I am fallen into these miseries farre exceeding death: which Fortune I see hath permitted, because I am perswaded, that thou wilt deliver me from all mishapps: and by thee shall I attaine my chiefest desires. Ah happy and fortunate houre, well worthy for ever to be celebrated with triumphs, finding thee the onely cause of my good, whom long since I feared was consorted with the dead: but seeing now thou art so happily come, acquaint me with the fortunes that staled thee thus long, for very desirous am I to know them. Palmerin was so grieved to see him in such weak and sickly estate, as he could hardly make any answer, yet scribbling with himselfe, said.

Noble Lord, the time requireth now other occasions, hereafter shall I tell you the whole discourse. Grant me, I beseech you without further intreating, that I may enter the Combat in your name, against one of those Traitors, who have accused you: for such is my hope in God, that I shall speake luckily, and bring him to the end such a villain deserves. With all my heart, quoth the Prince I am contented, assuring my success so well in your vertues, as if five hundred of my knights did enter the field for me. And to the end, that without feare or doubt you may take my cause in hand, I sweare to you by the living God, that since Tarinius espoused Grima, I never saw her, till when the King came and found me with her: which was so short a time, as she had not the leisure to make me any answer. True it is that I kild the King: but how? I did it in respect hee was mine enemy, and abused my Lady and lawfull Wife. What though they were espoused together? the marriage was not to be allowed, in that it was done against her will: she bring (as I have said) my Wife, by solemn speeches before God married to me. It suffiseth, (said Palmerin) I have enough. You shall likewise understand my Lord, that I have brought with me another Knight, who will

Emperour of *Constantinople.* PART. 2.

shall gladly adventure the Combat on the Queens behalfe, and such a one he is, as that the other accuser will scarce dare to stand against him: wherefore let me intreat you to comfort your selfe, expecting our happy and fortunate successe.

Florendos falling on his knee, gave thanks to Heaven for his lucky event, and having an indifferent while consorted together, after Palmerin had advertised Frenato of his Sonne Ptolomies health, and that in short time hee had good hope to find him, he returned to the Emperour, to whom making great reverence, he said. Now my gracious Lord, I come to understand your answer. I pray you Sir Knight (quoth the Emperour) hold me excused, if I have not welcomed you, as your Nobility, Bounty, and high Chivalry deserbeth: but after the Combat is ended, which for my part I grant you, what hath wanted now shall be supplied, so that your selfe shall rest contented. I thank your Majesty for this extraordinary labour, says Palmerin. and seeing the Prince hath committed his cause to my Fortune: I beseech you send for the Kings Pephelus, that the appointed day may not be prevented by any further delay. And if the Quene your Daughter be not provided of a Champion, this Knight (pointing to Fryfoll) my beloved friend and Companion, shall undertake her cause, in that he came hither for no other businesse: and such good experience have I made of his Valour and hardinesse, as if by knightly Chivalry her right may be defended: assure your selfe my Lord, this is the man. I think (said the Emperour) he is not as yet determined of any one, albeit full many have made offer of themselves: for we will expect no farther, this Knight shall be preferred before all that come. I humbly thank your Majesty for this labour, (answered Fryfoll) yet would I be loath to presume too farre, before I understand the Queens pleasure. The Emperour caused him to be conducted to the Queens Chamber, and his two

The History of *Palmerin Dolya*.

two companions with him, who desired to see the Ladies: where being entred, Frytoll humbly upon his knee, began in this manner. Right noble and excellent Queen, so farre throughout Chylendome, is spred the report of your rare vertues and integrity of life, especially your innocency in the crime wherewith you are accused: as from farre Countreyes I am come to be your knight, if you will boughsafe me such honour as so to accept me. Assuring you, that but for your commandement, and in the company of my Noble friend, who undertakes the Combat for my Lord Florendos, I might willingly and I to adventure life and credit.

His gentle Knight, (quoth the Queen) this offer procketh both from your civill and countie, not by any vertue on my part deserving: For too contrary hath Fortune evermore for herselfe against me. But being ingratefull might I be accounted, and never be reckoned among Ladies of regard, if having taken such paynes for me, I should not accept you for my knight, especially in such urgent occasion. Therefore I entertaine you into this Service, and I desire of God, that you may be as easily delivered from the charge you take in hand for me, as my conscience is cleare from the crime wherewith I am accused.

I hope Madam (quoth Frytoll) that my Lord your Father shall ere long perceiue, your loyalty, perfect, and pure Nobility, which never can keep company with ferbyle and detestable treason. All this while Palmerin beholding the Queen, seeing her sweet face so fained and flubbered with reasonableness with natural remorse, was constrained to turne his head aside, to hide the teares which trickled down his cheeks.

The Queen likewise regarded him so earnestly, as when she beheld him weep, she imagined that one gave a violent pull at her heart: which she vissambled so well as she could, determining not to demand the cause thereof, untill such time as the Combat were finished. So taking their leave of the Queen and the Princesse Armida, they returned

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART 2.

returned to their Lodging till the next morning, when the Emperour sending for them to the Pallace, where Promptalcon and Oudin stayed their coming: the Emperour himselfe thus began. Now Promptalcon, here mayest thou behold the two yong knights, who speake the contrary of that thou hast repozed: Wilt thou yet maintaine that my Daughter hath committed treason, and been disloyall to her husband, thy deceased Uncle? I will my Lord (quoth he) and sweare by my Baptisme, for that cause she shall dye the death: and if any dare undertake the contrary, I am ready to prove it by force of Armes. I thinke it convenient (saide Palmerin) my good Lord, that no combate should be granted, without the presence of the accused.

Immediately Florendos and Giana, were sent for, and being come befoze the Emperour, Palmerin sayd to the Prince: Now say you? My Lord, doe you permit in maintenance of your right, that I give these false accusers such discipline, as their wicked and trecherous dealings deserve? I doe (quoth the Prince) and Heaven prosper thee in thine enterprise. What say you Madam (quoth Frytoll) to the Queen, doe you affoord the like to me? She answered as Florendos befoze had done: Whereupon Palmerin thus spake to the Accusers.

The two knights will maintaine, that you both are Traytours, and that by covetous and greedy desire of rule, and to enjoy the Kingdome, you would (against all right) dishonour the yong Princesse Armida: for which cause you have shamefully accused the Queen her Mother, to have committed murder, and more then that, charge her with disloyall subtility. For if the Prince Florendos talked with her, when the King found him in her Chamber: it was in no other sort then honour allowed, and according to the duties of honest Love, wherein all Princes are bound to their Ladies. Besides, if your King was slaine by the Prince, it was in defence of his owne life, and in repelling the in-
ursions

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

rious speeches he gaue him : To approue what I say, we present our gages to the Emperour, to please him but to receiue them. The like did the two Wethzen, desiring his Highnesse to appoint the Combat presently, in the wide and necessary place before the Pallace. For (quoth they) we will teach these haire-glorious strangers, the pride of such inuicious speeches, spoken to those that know how to correct them.

I think (quoth Palmerin) thou shalt need to teach thyselfe: but if thou haue any new exercises, practise it well thou art best, for I can tell thee the time will require it. The good Emperour Remiclus commanded silence, and taking the Gages of these foure Knights: bad them goe Arme themselves, saying he would see the end thereof before he took any satisfaction. The Duke of Mencia, and the Countie of Rodona, ancient Princes of Greece, were appointed to be Judges of the field: who commanded two hundred Knights to Arme themselves, for the assistance of their owne persons.

CHAP. XXXI.

Of the noble Combat in the City of *Constantinople*, by *Palmerin*, and *Fryfoll*, against the two Nephewes of the deceased King of *Hungaria*, whom they vanquished, by which means the Prince *Florendos* and the Queene *Griana* were delivered.



Promptaleon and Oudin being departed to the sumptuous Hall, Palmerin and Fryfoll taking their leave of Florendos and the Queen, whom the Emperour caused to be shut uppe in their Prisoners gayne, went to their Lodgings to Arme themselves, for performance

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART II.

manen of the Act on undertaken. The Duke of Mencia, an honourable Prince, descended of the most ancient race in all Greece, with many other great Lords went after them: and when they were Armed, the Duke would needs beare Palmerins Lance, and the grand Squire attending on the Emperour, carried Fryfols. In this manner came they to the place appointed for the Combat, where the two Wethzen were already staying for them, the eldest of them thus beginning in mockage. Behold me Knights, for men that shew themselves so hardy in a Hall, me thinks you haue been very long Arming your selues. I think you came on your footcloth Hales to the fields entrance, for feare of falling to hurt your selues: but soon shall you be taught better horsemanship I warrant you. If there were in thee so much wisdom and exercise of Armes, (answered Fryfoll) as are high words and brawling behaviour, it would be a little better discerned then it is: notwithstanding, ere we haue done, I think they that came first into the field will tarry last here, vntill some body for pittie carry them out before. Wherewith the Trumpets sounded, and the Heraldos commanded the Champions to doe their deuotie, which was the cause, that these hote words were changed into deeds: and running fiercely against each other, they encountered with such puissance, as Palmerin cast Oudin forth of his saddle, with a very great wound on his left side, and Promptaleon was receiued by Fryfoll so roughly, as he fell backward on the crupper of his Horse, because he was loath his Brother should fall without company. The two Wethzen enraged to be thus foiled at the first, came with their Swords drawn to kill their aduersaries Horses: so that they were constrained to quickly to alight, when they assailed each other with marvellous fury, for either side expected his death, the one in hope of a kingdome, the other to saue their friend and son.

Strange was it to behold this violent fight, yet the two

The History of Palmerin D'Oliua.

two Wretches seemed unable long to hold out, for they were made so cut and mangled, and themselves so bitten with the sword, as hardly they could sustain themselves: so that Promptaleon desired Frytoll to rest a while, who moved with anger, thus answered. Nay Traytor, now shall I teach thee how to defend thy selfe, and not one minute will I grant thee to trauersse with me: but will send thy soule to the Father of thy villanie, vnlesse with speed thou banish the slander. With these words he layd so many round strokes on him, as at length he fell downe dead at his feet, which when Oudin perceiued, he threwe his sword at Palmerin, and caught him fast about the middle, thinking that way to get him downe, but Palmerin striking away his feet, caused him fall on his back, and without attending for his rebolt, nobly strooke his head from his holders.

So coming to Frytoll, he asked if he were wounded: So my Lord (quoth he) I thanke God, the greatest wound I haue cannot withhold me to doe you further service, if so be you haue any need. When putting by their swords, they demanded of the Judges, if any thing else remained to be done, for deliberance of the Prisoners. Nothing, woorthy Lords, answered the Judges, and then will the Emperour now deliber, with all possible speed. The good Remicius heartily thanking God for his victorie, sent a knight to the Champions, with request to come and lodge in his Pallace, as also that they should presently come speak with his Majesty: yet could not the Challenger make such haste, but they were come forth of the field, the Duke Mecena and the Prince Olorico bearing them company.

When the knight had overtaken them, he said. Returne woorthy Knights to my Lord the Emperour, for he would conferre wit h you, and haue your wounds attended by his owne Chirurgions. So turning again to the Pallace, they entred the hall, where the Emperour meeting them, said.

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

said. Right welcome are ye my noble friends, who haue so happily defended my Daughters honoz: for whose sake I shall make ye such recompence, as shall be henceforth an encouragement to all knights, to aduantage the Combat on the behalfe of any distressed Lady. Immediately in their presence, by sound of Trumpet he caused to be declared, that the Prince Florendos and the Queene Griana, were innocent of the Trayterous accusation, and therefore in open field had they should be deliuered: commanding likewise his most expert Chirurgions to giue diligent attendance on the wounded knights, causing them to be lodged in the most stately Chambers of his Pallace. Afterward, he suffered the bodies of the vanquished to be buried, giuing expresse charge in paine of death, that none of the knights of Hungaria should depart from Constantinople without his leave: because he would while they stayed there provide for the government of the Kingdome, as appertaining to his young Daughter the Princess Armida. The Emperesse was so ioyfull for the deliuerance of Griana, as she had scarce forgot her Sepholnes misfortune: the Queenes Ladies likewise were not a little glad, but above all, the young Princess Armida, her comfort could not be expressed, that her Mother was so graciously defended: and also the Duke of Pera, who had the Prince Florendos in custody, fetching him forth of prison, said: My Lord, thank God and the knights that fought the Combat for you: for by their means, the Emperour doth freely you absolved and set at liberty.

The Prince lifting his eyes to heauen, thus beganne: Oh my God, how happy is the man that trusteth in thy mercy: doubtlesse he that belongeth in thy promises, shall neuer perishe. Noble Duke, in all mine afflictions, I haue receiued sound your speciall fauour: but if God prolong my life, I will not be vngrateful of your gentleness. In sooth my Lord, quoth the Duke, so to good a Prince, any honest

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

mind would gladly endeavour himselfe : and if I haue pleased you in any thing, I did no more then my duty, which christian amity requirerth of each other. So taking him by the hand, he brought him before the Emperour, when falling on his knees, the Prince thus spake. If heretofore bread Lord, both I and my people gave our selves to trauell, and aduentured desperate hazard in your defence: at this time I count my selfe sufficiently recompenced, seeing your displeasure qualified, and the hard opinion you conceiued against me, changed into princely and honorable justice.

Sir Florendos, answered the Emperour, when I remember the wrong you did my Daughter, leaving such a scandalous report of her, at the first time you came to this Citie : I thinke your way the of the sharpest death. But placing mercy before rigorous justice, I am desirous to let you know, that it liketh me better to be loved then feared: forgetting quite the offence against our person, the murder of our Son, without any regard to the murmur of the people, whose ignorance cannot consider of Princes mercy: Nor will I stain mine aged yeres with mine own proper blood, or the death of a Prince so noble, whereby I should leave to my following posterity, as a Trophée of my life, an endless memory of tyrannous cruelty: but rather shall my chiefest adversaries stop their mouths, with remembrance of my clemency and princely bounty, as your owne conscience shall beall witness with me. You therefore my Lord, the Duke of Pera, let that the Prince Florendos be lodged in the best place in our Citie, and keepe him company, untill his traine shall come from Macedon. With great humilitie the Prince kissed the Emperours hand, acknowledging his manifold and princely courtesies: desiring the Duke likewise before his departure, that he might speake with the two knights Frycoll and Palmerin.

Being

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

Being brought to their Chambers, the Embracements and gracious courtesies he vsed to them, I am not able to utter, and very loath was he to part from them, but that he would no way prejudice their health: wherfore giving them the good night, he was conducted to his Lodging, leaving Palmerin very sad and pensive, remembering what the Quene of Tharsus had said to him, how he should deliuer his Father from death, before he could know him, which was likewise confirmed by the apparition of the Ladie to him, under the name of his best and dearest friends.

And that the Heavens did so fauour me (quoth he) that I were the Son of the Prince Florendos and Quene Grianina, then would I imagine my selfe the happiest man in the world. Yet can I not forget, that the fayres told me on the Mountaine Artifaria, that one day I should be Lord of all Greece, but God is my witness, that I covet not such honours and preferment, were it not for the love of my Lady, to the end her Father might not dislike of our contract. And hence will I not depart, before I vnderstand the truth hereof, and to what end this aduenture will happen. Frycoll on the other side, he desired hold to make himselfe known to the Emperour and Empresse: because he had good hope when himselfe might be knowne, that his Father Netrides should enjoy the Kingdome of Hungaria. The Prince Florendos likewise could take no rest, for his great desire to recover the Quene Grianina. Such were the passions of these three Princes, each one liuing in hope of good success, which happened according to their expectations, as you shall read hereafter.

The History Of *Palmerin D'Oliua*

CHAP. XXXII.

How the Queene *Griana* with the young Princeesse *Armida*, went to visit *Palmerin* and *Fryfoll*, and how the Queene knew *Palmerin* to be her Sonne, to the no little joy of the Emperour, and the Prince *Florendos*.



Two daies after the deliuerance of the Prince *Florendos*, the young Princeesse *Armida* devising with the Queene her Mother, said. Methinks gracious Madam, we are to be reproued of ingratitude, in that we haue not as yet visited the poore wounded knights, considering how greatly we are beholding to them: I beseech you let vs this morning goe to see how they fare.

Alas Daughter, answered the Queene, hast thou the heart to bring me among such persons, when I am said to be the cause of thy Fathers death? When the Princeesse breaking forth into teares, replied. Welcome me Madam, if you remember your selfe well, you are in as little fault as I am, and so hath an honorable story declared: but had you been any way culpable therein, yet now you ought to comfort your selfe, hauing had such a famous proofe of innocency. In signe whereof, and to declare your thankfulness, to those gentle knights: it will be counted a speciall point of courtesie, to visite them that ventured for you. Whereon then, said the Queene, seeing you thinke it so necessary, and are so desirous. So accompanied with many Ladies, clothed all in mourning blacke, they went first to *Fryfoll*, greatly thanking him for the paines he had taken, putting his life in danger, for the conservation of their honours. Not so me Lady, answered *Fryfoll*, ought you to giue those thanks

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

thanks, but to him that onely giueth strength to man: and if from my butto I had continually travelled in your service yet your graces are such, as I should neuer deserue to be reckoned among your meane & fauourites. The young Princeesse thinking her selfe greatly bound to him, would not giue him good morrow with so little talke: but sitting betwixt on the bedde by him, taking him by the hand, began againe thus.

I know not Sir Knight, how the Queene my Mother will procede in requitall of your noble service, for mine owne part, not forgetting how the *Traytors* threatened me, whom (to their endlesse shame) you haue vanquished and ouercome: I find my selfe so indebted to you, as it far exceeds my power, to giue you with answerable recompence. *Fryfoll* perceiving the young Princes affection, whoe he had caught somewhat within his reach: knew immediately by her suberbaish illookes, the cause why so many sighes were coupled with her words, himselfe likewise suddenly sick of the same disease, returned this answer. Madam, if *Fortune*, the friend to your happiness, would fauour me so much, as the enterprise done by your commanding, might sort to an ende fitting my desire: I should then account my selfe more then sufficiently gratified in this, that the act is agreeable to your liking, and the fauourable countenance of such a Lady, is more then so meane a thing as my selfe can merit. Beside, from the day that the high renoune of your prudence and gracious beauty, assured me of those exquisite gifts, wherewith Nature hath plentifully enriched you: I tooke such a religious vow of bondage on me, as (considering your high calling, and my selfe so far inferior) I shall neuer obtaine the fauour of liberty, if your benignity, exceeding all things else, grant me not that speciall grace. The Queene loth to trouble this forme of confession, withdrew her selfe into *Palmerins* Chamber, where (as it fell out) she found no body but him- selfe:

selfe : by which occasion, remembering the loue she bare to Florendos, after she had humbly saluted him, she thus began.

Beloue me, gentle Sir, your knightly Chualtry hath shew'd it selfe of such desert, as the Prince Florendos, for defence of whose honoz, you haue not feared to adventure your life, your dangerous wounds well witnessing the same : shall neuer deaile sufficient satisfaction. For in my judgement it may well be said, that goods, honour and life hath been restor'd him by your noble magnanimity. Pardon, quoth Palmerin, these wounds that for these two dayes haue made me keepe my Chamber, thanks be to God are not so dangerous, as if occasion were offer'd, either for you or my Lord Florendos, but full well could I be seene therein, to purchase entertainment into your gracious conceit. The Queene then sitting downe in a Chaire by him, and viewing him very earnestly, his locks of haire kept downe by a gorgeous wrought Cap, embzedered with Saphires and small Emerals : she beheld the mole on his face like a Crosse, which made her remember, that her Son had the like, and in the selfe same place, when Cardyna tooke him from her and caried him to the Mountaine. Whereupon she tooke greater occasion to regard his countenance, and imagining him very much to resemble the Prince Florendos, immediately she perswaded her selfe that he was her Son. Which conceit mou'd her to such alterations, as of long she continued silent, though Palmerin (in meane while) demanded many questions of her. These changes ouerruled by reason and discretion, she commanded her Ladies to depart the Chamber, and to goe accompanying the young Princeesse Armida: they being no sooner gone, but she began in this manner.

Let me request, Sir Palmerin, to know your Parents and the name of the Countrey where you were borne. Palmerin somewhat amazed at this demand, was now in the

midst of this onely desire, verily perswading himselfe that the Queene was his Mother, wherefore he thus answered.

Madame, I sweare to you by my faith, that I know no Lady this day liuing, to whom I would willingly reueale more then to your selfe : but so contrary was Fortune to me in mine infancy, that as yet I could not get any knowledge either of my Father or Mother, nor of the Countrey where I was borne. Yet thus I haue been certified, that I was nourished on a Mountaine not farre from this Citty, which is called the Mount of Olmes, where (as I haue been many times tolde (my foster Father found me in rich swadling clothes, and more then this, so please you to credite me, cannot I be wary of whence or what I am. O heauens, quoth the Queene, how greatly am I bound to praise your infinite bounty and pittie, for so safe protecting mine infant, whom I forsooke so cruelly ? O gentle Knight, see here thy Mother, even she that commanded thou shouldst be caried to the Mountaine : and the Prince Florendos, whom so lately thou diddest deliuer from death, he (noble Palmerin) is thy Father. Notwithstanding my Sonne, I desire thee by the reuerend loue thou bearest me, to conceale secretly what I haue said, untill I gaue the meane to discover my Hamie to the Emperour : yet such a shame, as neuer came greater good to thy Mother, nor can I now count the deede sinfull, in that my fortune hath brought me such an honorable Sonne. So raniſhed with joy was both the Mother and the Sonne, as neither could expresse their inward contentation, for such was their alteration, as they reported for an illusion or dreame, what was most certaine indeed : such wonderfull comfort brought this unexpected chance, wherewith the greatest endowments of honoz or riches may not be compared. Being in this errasse, the Mother of her Sonne, and the Sonne for his Mother: Palmerin hauing now againe recovered his senses, said

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

O God, I render thy name immortal thanks, in that I owe my breath from so noble and vertuous persons, as also for granting me knowledge of them in a time so fortunate: for heare then (good Mother) to misdeeme of any thing, for I will discover the matter in such sort to the Emperour, as forgetting all things past, he shall receive both the Mother and Sonne with greater joy then you can imagine. But to the ende Madame, you may be more certain of your Sonne, see here a Crucifixe of Golde, which was tied about my necke when I was found, and hath of long time been kept by the most perfect Lady in the world. The Quene knowing it right well, after she had kissed it many times, answered. Assuredly my Sonne, it is the very same that my selfe tied about thy necke, when I was in the greatest griefe that ever distressed Mother might be: to see her infant violently rapt from her, so soone as Nature had brought him into the world. But if my mishap as then surpassed all other womens: yet now is it recompensed with such a fortunate hoire, as no Lady may compare her felicity with mine. Ah my Sonne, by thee are my sorowes changed into joy, my despaire into content, & from death it selfe am I brought againe to life: for if my husband had hap made me despise life, now may you be assured how much I desire it.

When declared she, how to save the Prince Florendos life, whose faithfull love brought him to such extremity by sickness, she adventured her honour for his safety & entering the paradise of love, bestowed that Jewell on him which she most of all esteemed. And so maist thou (quoth she) report to the Emperour, yet in this manner, that not by care nor impudicity I so consented, for Gods my witness, that notwithstanding the perill wherein I saw him, no perswasion could cause me yield him that especiall remedy, before he had first solemnly vowed marriage to me, which against all right was broken by the Emperours commandement.

Madame,

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

Madam, (quoth Palmerin) Florendos is of such valour, and his honorable actions so well received among men, that albeit he had made you no such promise, yet reason may excuse you in this matter. But if by promised faith, and to save the life of so gentle a Prince (who happily by your refusal might have miscarried) you honoured the Temple of Love with so sweet an offering: among people of good mindes, it ought rather to be tearmed a vertue then any bad affection or unlawfull lust. And therefore Madam comfort your selfe, for shortly I dare to assure your peace with the Emperour: and seeing I have you for my Mother, and the Prince Florendos for my Father, I sale my selfe free from any griefe or vexation, assuring you, that I will dye before it to no further delay, but this morning will I confer with his Majesty.

The Quene being fearefull, that her long stay should cause any bad opinion, having kissed her Sonne: gave him the good morrow, and so went to her Chamber, where she found Cardina her Gentlewoman, to whom she showed the Crucifixe her Sonne had given her, saying. Tell me I praythee Cardina, dost thou remember, that heretofore thou hast seen this Crucifixe, and in what place? Whereupon she answered (quoth she) I thinke I have seen it before now: but in what place I am not certaine? Why? Forgetfull creature, knowest thou not, that this is the Crucifixe which was tyed about my Sonnes neck, when the selfe did carry him to the Mountaine? In good faith, the Knight is he, who fought the Combat for my Lord Florendos. Now for the great mercy and bounty of our God, who preserved his life then, and from infinite dangers hath defended him hitherto. Notwithstanding, be thou secret, and on perill of thy life reveale it to none, untill the Emperour my Father be acquainted therewith. Cardina was so joyfull hereof, as she must needs goe presently to see Palmerin, and finding the Chirurgions with him mending his wounds:

hounds: he fetched a gorgeous Mantle of purple Velvet, bordered round about with Pearles, Diamonds and Rubies, as well might become the greatest Monarch to wear. As Cardina holpe him to put on his Mantle the noted the Marke on his face, which he remembred since the time of his birth: and in this manner goes Palmerin cherefully to the Emperour, whom he found conferring with his Lords and Barons, but his presence caused them to break off talk, imagining him the goodliest person that ever they beheld. The good old Emperour Remicius, rejoycing to see him in so good and able plight, demanded of him how he fared: Right well (quoth he) I thank God and your Highnes, ready to adventure on any occasion that like you to command: And now am I come to advertise your Majesty of such matters, as will not a little gladye in the hearing, to please your Grace to vouchsafe me private audience. Whereupon the Emperour commanded every one to depart the hall, and they being now alone, Palmerin thus began. My Lord, and Mighty Emperour, till this time have I frequented the Courts of many Kings and Potentates, without desire of requesting any thing, untill this present: when I would I request one boone of your Majesty, the grant whereof shall returne you both profit and honoz. My Noble Friend Palmerin, answered the Emperour, what ever thou pleasest, demand, and on my word it shall be granted.

Palmerin, with humble obeysance kissing the Emperours hand, said. In sooth my Lord, all that I haue to request, is onely to desire your Highnes: that all offences committed by the Prince Florendos and Adam Giana your Daughter, may not only be forgotten, but also forgiven. For the sake Palmerin, quoth the Emperour, I forgive all their offences whatsoever. May it then please your Majesty (quoth he) to remember, how when Florendos came to doe you service during your Warres against Camezio, because

because you denyed to give him your Daughter, he was so sick, as every houre his death was expected: At then so fortune my Lord, the Prince of your Daughter, acquainted with the cause of his sickness, to give him some comfort, as also to defend so good a Prince from death: by gracious speeches he gave him some hope of cure, and such (for truth) as before they parted, a solemn promise of Marriage was concluded betwene them. I know not the conditions of their agreements, but it seemed the Articles concluded on no difficult accorde: for each receiued of other the sweet desires of Love, in so much as that night was I begotten. And for a truth my Lord, I am Sonne to the Prince Florendos, and Adam Giana your Daughter: who (as I vnderstand) by the Emperors perswasion, against all right you compelled to marry with the Prince Tarsius. Florendos, notwithstanding my Mothers wrong was very great, hath continued so loyall, as he would neuer accept any other for his Wife, nor as yet will, but onely her. Now my Lord, that this matter is not some a fantastical invention, I can resolve you of the place of my birth, which was in the Tower, where my Mother remained Prisoner by your Commandment, under the charge of a Lady named Tolomestra: who to defend your Daughters honoz, caused me to be carried to a place not far hence, which is called the Mount of Olives, from whence my surname is likewise derived, & in that place was I found by a Country Peasant vnder a Palme-Tree, who in signe thereof named me Palmerin d'Oliua. My sorrowfull Mother, having one day to see me again, diligently noted others marks I haue, and hung about my neck a golden Crucifixe, which this day I gave her againe: and by this Marke on my face like a Croffe, she well remembers me to be her Sonne. In this respect my Lord, that your Daughters offence was occasioned by ruse and faithfull Love, and having likewise promised to forgive all causes of displeasure: grant my father now

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

now at length to enjoy his lawfull Wife, that I being their Sonne, may not be esteemed as Illegitimate, the doing whereof, will renoune your name for ever, and lobe tryed in so many afflictions, shall be crowned with his long and desired reward.

The Emperour amazed at this strange discourse, could not imagine what answer to make: Wherefore having stood a pretty while silent, lifting his eyes to Heaven, he thus began. O mighty King of Kings, onely good and full of mercy, I render thy Name everlasting thanks, for thy gracious regard to the distressed Empire of Greece: for though in our last Warres thou tookest away my Sonne Caniano, thou hast at this instant sent me another, who well hath learned to defend this State, from the proud invading Governour of Turkie. Ah my Sonne Palmerin, right well doe I believe what thou hast said, and albeit thou hadst not shewne such probable arguments, yet dost thou so perfectly resemble my Sonne Caniano, as easily may be conjectured whence thou art descended. Whatsoever thou demandst my Sonne, is already granted. And with these words, the teares trickled down his milke-white Beard, such was his inward earnest conceit of joy: and embracing Palmerin in his armes, he called his Lords, who marshalled not a little at this event, and thus spake the Emperour.

Behold here my Friends, your Liege Lord and Sovereigne, the Sonne of my Daughter Giana, and the Prince Florendos: Now may you applaud the bounty of Heaven, providing for you such a Noble Prince? The Lords all wondering at these speeches, came and entertained him, with many signes of honour: So that it is not registered in any ancient memory, that ever King or Prince had such sudden and gracious welcome.

By this time these newes were spread throughout the whole Palace, and the Emperesse hearing thereof, sent one of her Squires for Palmerin: When the Emperour taking him

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

him by the hand, brought him to her Chamber, saying: Behold here I have your Sonne, who by your meanes hath long time bene banished our Court: hereafter letke he be better used.

The Emperesse surprized with incredible joy, lovingly embracing him, said: Welcome my Sonne, forget my heinous offence, when I would not suffer thy Mother to enjoy the Prince Florendos, which fault Heaven hath revenged, with the death of my three Nephewes, whereof I now make no reckoning, saying God hath sent us such a gracious comfort. The Emperour on the other side welcomed the Quene his Daughter, which as yet he had not done since her coming from Hungaria. Nay by (quoth he) faire Daughter, these blacke garments, the witness of your inward Mourning, and deck your self presently in rejoicing habits: for now before all my Lords of Greece, will I have you espoused to the Prince Florendos. So departed the Emperour and the Prince, leaving the Quene with her Ladies, who disrobed her of her Mourning garments: his Majesty commanding Palmerin, to go seek the Prince of Macedon his Father, accompanied with all the Noblemen of the Court.

In the mean while he caused all the ornaments of black to be taken downe, and the Pallace to be hangd with sumptuous Cloth of Gold: and gave in charge to the Emperesse, that the Quene, the Princesse Armida, and all the Ladies should adorne themselves, as to receive the very greatest Prince in the World. Likewise he said to all his Knights, Rejoyce my good Friends with me: for God hath taken away my Childzen, and hath doubly restored them, for those that be dead, he hath raised us more. Palmerin having with him all the Emperours Knights, went to the Lodging of the Prince Florendos, and by the way the Citizens of Constantinople, Nobles, Merchants, and Artizans, welcomed him very honorably: making bonfires and

Carlands.

The History of *Palmerin D'Oltra*.

Barlands of triumph, in every Strate, crying; Welcome to this noble City our new Lord and Master: and such cherefull delights did they solemnize the time withall, as though it had been the Feast of Christmas, Palmerin & his Maidene, being come to the Princes lodging, found two Squires at the gate, sent thither by the Emperour, the one holding a Hoyle very richly Caparisoned, and the other costly Garments of cloth of Golde, which he caused to be brought by after him into the Chamber, where falling on his knees before the Prince he said.

Now come I my Lord to kisse your hand, not as I have done heretofore, but as becommeth a Sonne to his Father: for I am your Sonne, begotten on the Queene Giana, whom the Emperour will now bestow on you in Marriage. Florendos was so ravisht with these speeches, as he was ready to swoone betwixt Palmerins armes: but at length fetching a great sigh, said. O celestiall Monarch, what am I, whom thou shouldst so respect, and lift to such surpassing happinesse? Ah poore Florendos, not long since the most wretched among men: what man may now compare with thy fortune, having such a Knight to thy Son, and faire Quene Giana to the Mother with me Sonne (quoth he, embracing Palmerin) for it is no reason to stay, when such happy newes hath sent for us. And creepe me, the very first time I did behold thee, my heart was solicited with greater joy, then I am able now to expresse: which ever since made me conjecture, that there was more betwixt us then friendly alliance. When was he cleared in the rich Garments sent by the Emperour, and his Cousin Florendos in like manner: So coming to horseback, the Duke of Pera rode on his right hand, and his Sonne Palmerin on the left, with many Princes, Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen, riding both before and behinde them. In this manner came they to the Pallace, where the Emperour himselfe stayed their coming at the Gate: and after they

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

they were alighted, the Prince making humble reverence to his Majesty, thus spake: High and redoubted Lord, I know not how to render sufficient thanks in that your Highnesse is pleased to honor me with your daughter, which is the thing I alwayes desired, notwithstanding, I hope to be so such desires hereafter, as neither she shall be discontented, nor your Majesty repent your gentle gift. Noble Lord (quoth the Emperour) well have you deserved her, and mine Empire with her, in respect of your worthy Sonne Palmerin, whom all Europe, Asia and Affrica honour. Wherefore in the presence of all my Lords, I will give her to you: deferring the day of solemnity, untill the Gates of Macedon come, therefore Sonne Palmerin goe for your Mother.

Presently he departed, the Dukes of Pera and Mecena with him: and soone they returned, bringing with them the Empresse, the Queene, and his Sister the young Princesse Armida: whom he had schooled with such gracious speeches, as she had now forgotten her displeasure towards the Prince Florendos, for the death of the King her Father. There openly in the Hall, by the Archbishop of Constantinople, the Prince Florendos & Giana were affianced together, to their no little contentment: as also to the good liking of all the Princes and Lords of Greece, who spent the rest of the day in joyfull discourses, and triumphes.

CHAP. XX XII.

How *Frisoll* declared to the Empreſſe, that he was Sonne to her Nephew *Netrides*.



At this pleasure of the Princes and Lords of Greece, so many joyfull and unexpected accidents, might not be compared with the pleasures of the Prince *Frisoll* and *Olorico*, who would now no longer keep his Bed, in respect of his joy for the good fortune of his friend, wherefore putting on his garments, and accompanied with *Olorico*, he came downe into the great Hall, as the Prince of Macedon was betrothed to his Lady, when *Palmerin* stepping from all the rest, welcomed them with gracious carterie. After they had been generally saluted, *Frisoll* came before the Empreſſe, and on his knee began in this manner.

Most excellent and gracious Madams, may it please you pardon mine offence in shedding the blood of your kinsman. Notwithstanding, as the law of judgement and reason exhorteth me, of two evils I chuse to take the least: so bin I rather thinke it good, to bathe my hands in the blood of mine owne Cousin, then permit him (by the Prince *Florendos* violence) to suffer open violence. This speaks I Madam, as being the Sonne to your Nephew *Netrides*, whom long since his elder Brother disinherited, and banished him his Countie, to a little Castle, where at this time he remaineth in good disposition. Now judge which of the two Chances is most admirable: that of your noble Son *Palmerin*, or this which I have now rehearsed. But may it please you (quoth the Empreſſe) that my Nephew *Netrides* is yet living? And can it be possible that then art his Sonne?

True

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

True me Madam, said *Frisoll*. I have told you truth, and by Gods leave, you shall have more ample proofs thereof within these few dayes.

Whereupon the Emperour, the Empreſſe, *Florendos*, and *Palmerin*, with inexpressible rejoycing, embraced *Frisoll*, not a little extolling their fortune, that such hardie Knights were descended of their Linage. When *Frisoll* rehearsed before them all, the three Combats he had with *Palmerin*, and what great honour he wanted at the Turney in France, which report greatly contented the Prince *Florendos*, hearing the honourable Chivalry of his Sonne, not would he consent to joyne therewith his conquest on the Mountaine *Artifaria*, with his Combats both in Bohemia and Durace.

At these reports the Emperour somewhat amazed, said before all his Lords, I beleeve my friends, that the marvellous and rare fortunes, of these two Cousins, *Palmerin* and *Frisoll*, with the strange adventures they have finished in their youth: promise greater matters in their following years. Then an ancient Knight of Hungaria, who was named *Apolonio*, said to the Emperour, how in time past he had been Page to the Father of *Tarissus*, by which meane he knew *Netrides* right well if he might see him. And if he be yet living, quoth he, in regard of his manifold princely vertues: the Realme of Hungaria needs no better Gouernor, nor will the people themselves mislike of so good a change. Wherefore may it so stand with your Highnes pleasure, to grant me company beseeching the cause, I will use my duty in the search of him, and bring him hither with me to the Court. Willingly the Emperour consented thereto, and like order took the Prince *Florendos*, that *Cardina* with her Brother and other Gentlemen, should goe to the Mountaine of Olives, and enquire for *Gerard*, *Palmerins* foster-father, *Marcella* his Wife, and *Dyosena* their Daughter. *Palmerin* seeing all things

¶

so

for to so good end, falling on his knee before the Emperour and his father, said. Seeing it hath pleased God, to make me knowne for your Sonne, I will not conceale a matter from you, which concerneth me very nighly: and although it be of great importance, yet will I not further proceed without your advice. So disclosed he all his several apparitions, while he continued with his supposed father, whereby he was prouoked to goe seeke the Lady, who by fatall destiny was promised him: nor did he hide his troubles in her search, but therewith bewrayed that her name was Polynarda, Daughter to the Emperour of Almaigne, and his wife by solemn vowes passed betwene them. He declared moreover, how he travelled to find the Prince Tryneus, whom he lost on the Sea with the Princeesse of England, and then he would recurre againe, in respect of his faithful promise to his Lady. Notwithstanding, quoth he, if you thinke it convenient, I would gladly send to aduertise the Emperour and my Lady his Daughter, of my present good fortune, that his Majesty may confirme our priuate agreement: because I doubt the Prince of Fraunce, whose Ambassadors haue been there to conferre on the matter, may otherwise present me of mine owne choice. In like manner, if Netrides shall be found, to be made King of Hungaria, and the Princeesse Armida to be bestowed in marriage on Sir Frycoll, who is such a Knight in my judgement, as well deserves one of the chiefe Ladies in the world.

So God helpe me my Sonne, quoth the Emperour, no reason were it to disappoint what thou hast so well contriued: for seeing things haue bene so appointed by fortune, more folly it is for men to contrary them. And because I haue heretofore heard, that the Emperours Daughter is the fairest and chiefe Lady among all other, whose vertues challenge the man beyond compare in Chivalry: I will send mine Ambassadors to the Emperour, as well

for the perfection of the marriage, as to comfort her in her despair, with certaine assurance of our health and welfare, and so shall your intended trauell not be hindered. But withstanding, before you begin your journey, you shall receive the homage of all Princes and Lords of Greece, as their liege Lord and supreme Governour: which being done, I will likewise take order for my Nephew Frycoll, so soone as his father shall come to our Court. Then calling for the Master of his horse, commandment was giuen for speedy dispatch of messengers to all parts. So leauing the Emperour busied in these affaires: Florendos and Palmerin went to the Quene, who causing them to sit downe by her, after she had very graciously welcommed them, said.

I pray ye tell me, which of vs three is most beholding to Fortune: the father, the Mother or the Son? Doubtlesse, who so considereth the condition of our adventure, will find it such, as seldom hath the like been seene heretofore. And in sooth my Lord Florendos, the grieuous torments I haue endured since the losse of my Sonne, and my great disloyalty towards you by breach of my promise: I judge may be equall'd with the burthen of mine offence. Nevertheless, if you esteeme not your selfe satisfied, let your noble regard excuse what Nature hath perfected, which is, to endure much more then as yet we haue bene. Madam, answered Florendos, in times of joy, remember not our passed misfortunes, but thinke what now is done, our happy starres haue graciously furthered and limited to this end, that my loyalty, with the bounty and promise of our Son, would be laid open to euery judgement. Here had the Prince occasion to rehearse his afflictions in loue, endured twenty yeeres space and more for her sake, which Palmerin hearing, either fearing to offend them, or induced by modest bashfulness, he went to his sister the Princeesse Armida, whose thoughts he sounded by such subtilties and

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

disimulation, as he found the effect of her desires, which was to enjoy Sir Frisoll to her Husband. He not a little contented herewith, confirmed her choice to be commendable, sealing the assurance thereof, with an honourable report of his laughtly deeds of Armes. When the Emperour called for the Duke of Meccena, and the Count of Reisfort, as also his principall Secretary, whom he commanded to write to the Emperour of Almaine, touching the Marriage of the Princesse Polinarda and his Sonne Palmerin, who by the secret agreement betwene themselves, and committed the rest to the discretion of the Ambassadors.

The Letters sealed with his great Signet, was delivered to one that had the charge of this Postage: who could not so speedily depart from Constantinople, because the Wind and weather was not navigable. Now had Palmerin promised Frisoll, that he would speak to the Princesse his Sister, and solemnly resolve upon their Marriage: wherefore (meeting with this earnest Lover) he thus laboured to please him. *Wilt me Cosen, I have so surely imprinted your especiall generosity in my Sisters minds, as the Characters can never be defaced: but remain more perfect by your speedy Marriage. Frisoll rebided with these words, as all pretenders of love may well imagine: offered to kiss his hand, which Palmerin would not suffer, whereupon he thus proceeded. Al my Lord, how am I more and more indebted to you: right wise was he which said, that affability and liberality, are continuall companions with Noblenesse and Magnanimity. And though by all my services I cannot deserve the honour you doe me in accepting me for your brother: yet am I so faithfully bound yours, as the honours of my Father, nor love of the Princesse your Sister, can separate me from your company, until you have found your long desired Friend Trincus. And for this cause my Lord, I earnestly intreat you, to be*

Don

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

Don Apolonio towards my Father, for I will send him to the place, where he shall be assured to find him. Palmerin accorded thereto immediately, and so labored with the Emperour, as the Letters were delivered: and the oaths taken of all the Hungarians, they were sent home into their Country, with a Lieutenant appointed to governe them until the coming of Netrides, to whom Frisoll wrote the truth of all his fortune, with earnest request of his speedy presence.

And to induce him to the greater hast, he feigned that many Princes laboured for the Crowne of Hungaria, and were in likelihood to obtaine it: all which was but to cause the faire Princesse Armida. The same day Florendon sent to the King his Father at Macedon, that he should send the chiefest States of this Realme against the day that Palmerin should be chosen the Prince of Greece.

CHAP. XXXIV.

How *Cardina* the Gentlewoman attending on the Queene, accompanied with her Brother and diuers other Squires, brought Gerrard, his wife and daughter to the Court, and what entertainment *Palmerin* made them.



Cardina, with those that were commanded to keepe her company, in short time came to Gerrards house, whom she found sitting at dinner with his family. The good man was at first amazed, seeing such courtly personages enter his house, a matter esteemed rare among the persons dwelling on the Mountaine: but seeing they came in decent and modest sort, not proffering any discourtesie, he entertained the very friends,

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

ly, when Cardyna taking him by the hand, said. Good Father, are you the man that is called Gerrard? I am the same quoth he, gentle Distresse. You are then the man, answered Cardyna, that I seek, and therefore I pray thee tell me what thou didst with a Child, that twenty yeres and more since, thou foundest in swadling clothes under a Walme Tree on this Mountaine: for certaine I am that thou didst take him home with thee to thy house? Ah Distresse, quoth the good old Man, you haue kil'd my hart in remembering me of him, whom I loued dearer then any of mine owne. The infant whereof you speake, I found not farre hence under a Walme Tree, for which cause at his Baptisme I named him Palmerin. From that time forward I nourished him as he had bene mine owne Sonne, till he came to tall stature, and as he grew in yeres, so did he in vertuous and noble qualities, which made him not a little beloued in these parts: for when he attended my cat-tell, he took pleasure to course the Wolfe, Hart, Beare, Boze, and Lyon, and oftentimes would kill them when him liked, which none of mine owne Children durst at any time aduenture.

Ah swete Distresse, when I remember his many seruises, the dutifull reuerence and loue he bare me: I am ready to dye with conceit of grieve, that it was my ill hap so soone to loose him. Yet came not this misfortune alone, for mine eldest Sonne, who loued him as he had bene his owne Brother: immediately went after him, and yet could I neuer heare any tidings of them. Notwithstanding, Distresse, if you know of whence he was, I can shew you all the clothes wherein I found him. I shall be contented to see them, quoth Cardyna; but what will ye give the party that can tell ye where he is? Gerrard, at these wordes fell on his knee befoze her, and with the teares trickling downe his gray beard, said. Be my troth Distresse, if it shall like you to doe me so great a pleasure, of all my substance, I will

give

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

give ye the one halfe: of all my herd of Beastes, which ye saw feeding on the Mountaine as ye came, bestow my continuall seruice while I live. Gramercies Father, said Cardyna, but call to your Wife and Daughter, and then shall I tell ye newes that will content you. As for him, whose friendly Parents you were so long time, he is now at Constantinople, & is the Sonne of Madame Giana Daughter to the Emperour: who commaundeth you thence to come to the Court, that he may content ye for nourishing so well the noble yong Prince. The old man exceeding joyfull, without ordering his affaires, or appointing his Seruants their course of labour: sayd to his Wife and Dyosena his Daughter.

Make ye ready presently in your best garments, and let vs goe see that noble Gentleman: for all the gold in the world cannot make me stay, now I haue heard so happy tidings. The good woman and her daughter trickt by themselves in their Country tyzes, and taking the rich swadling clothes, set forward to Constantinople so merrily, as sometime did the foster Father of Paris, Alexander, his Wife, and their Daughter Pegasis, when they brought the Cradle and accoutrements of the infant royall, to the City of Troy, after he was known by his Father King Priam, and Quene Hecuba his Mother.

Palmerin being advertised by one of the Ladies of honour attending on the Emperesse, that Cardyna had brought Gerrard: to prouoke greater contentation, he would needs goe meete him, and so went downe into the Court, accompanied with many yong Knights lately come to the Emperours seruice. Gerrard seeing this goodly troupe, among them all knew Palmerin perfectly, wherefoze alighting from his Horse: and without giuing him in charge to any Page or Lackey, ran and fell downe at his feet, but Palmerin staying him in his armes, said. Father Gerrard and my deere friend, the God of Heauen be enermore praised, in

The History Of *Palmerin D'Oliua*

that by bringing me to the knowledge of my Parents : I haue the meane to satisfie your paine and trauaile for me, sauing my life in my yongest yeres, and nourishing me to the state of discretion.

By my Lord, quoth Gerard, I thinke in all the world is no man so happy as my selfe, hauing defended from perill so noble a person, therefore needlesse it is to make offer of money for your nurture : in that I prize your golde and silver lesse then youe, such is my content to see you so well. Palmerin likewise, whose match might not be found in courtlesse and nobility of hart : longingly welcommed Marcella and her Daughter Dyosena, walking along with them vp into the Pallace, where in this sort he presented them to the Emperour. So here my good Lord, they that from mine infancy, with exceeding kindness and loue nourished me : let me therefore intreate your maiesty so to conceiue of them, as their paines and charges may be sufficiently repaid. The Emperour taking great pleasure to behold them, said they should continue in the Court with him, commanding them to be brought to his Daughters Chamber, who entertained them very graciously : but when they came to vnfold Palmerins little pack of clothes, hardly can you imagine the inward ioyes of the Mother. For Tolomestra well knew the Scarlet mantle, which her selfe had all embroydered with curious knots of Gold, and all the other pretty trinkets, saying. Doubtlesse Hadamir, it cannot be but that Palmerin is your Sonne : for well I know he was wrapped in these clothes, when Cardyna carried him hence to the Mountaine. When did Gerard discourse befoze all the Ladies, in what manner he found yong Palmerin among the Trees : not forgetting to report euery thing, from that day till his departure without his knowledge.

Many sweete smiles did the Quene intermingle with her forced teares, hearing the sundry dangers her Sonne had

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

had endured : and for the great loue she bare to Marcella, she made her one of the Ladies of her Chamber, and gaue Dyosena a worthy dowrie to her marriage. As for Gerard himselfe, the Emperour made him one of his chiefest Barons, and dubbed his Sonnes knights, who proued afterward of hardy courage, as hereafter in the History you may perceiue. This done, the Emperour brought Florendos and Palmerin into his Treasury, saying. My friends, take, beare away, all is yours, dispose thereof as you please, furnish your selues with all needfull things against the day of my Daughters marriage. Giue bountifully to the poore knights, that they may likewise prepare themselves in readines, all which will rebound to your perpetuall honour.

In sooth my Lord, answered Florendos, it is against all equity and reason, that during your life I should presume so farre : well worthy were I of the happiest reprobation, to vsurpe that, which by right appertaines to him who gaue me life and honour. When the Emperour saw he could not perswade them, he sent a sumptuous hoysse laden with Gold, to the Prince Olorico and Frisoll : besides diuers other Jewels of inestimable value, that they might the better furnish their estate against the solemnitie of the Macedonian Prince. On which day, these two knights determind a Triumph at Armes for the love of their friend and companion Palmerin, who the same day should be sworne Prince, and sole heire to the Empire. Upon this occasion, and by his highnes commandement, the Herolds were sent abroad to publish the Tourney, which should endure tenne dayes together : with the excellency of the prize to them, that should beare the honoz of the Host each day. These disposits so prouoked the Lords of Greece, as neither King, Duke, Countie, Baron or knight, that was able to mannage hoysse and Armes, but repaired to Constantinople, in such troupes, as though a new world had been to be conquered.

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

CHAP. XXXV.

How the Knight that *Florendos* sent to *Macedon*, relieved to the King *Primalcon* the effect of his charge : and how *Palmerin* entertained his Fathers Princes and Knights.



Florendos having set one of his Knights to *Macedon*, in very short time the Messenger arrived at a Castle of pleasure, where as then the King remained for his delight, with the Princess *Arifmena* his Daughter, to expell such contagious thoughts as daily troubled the, for the absence of the Prince, of whom they could understand no tidings. The Knight being come into the Kings Chamber, where his Majesty satte dealing with his Daughter : and setting his knee to the ground, in this manner began his message. Right high and mighty King, I bring you the very strangest tidings, yet replete with joy and special comfort, whereof your Majesty neuer heard the like. My Lord the Prince *Florendos* your Sonne, with humble duty saluteth your excellency, and the faire Princess *Arifmena* his Sister, certifying you, that the adventurous Knight *Sir Palmerin*, even he by whose meanes your health was recovered : is his owne Son, begotten on the Princess *Griana*, Daughter to my Lord the Emperour, to whom he is now betrothed, by the consent of all the Princes of the Empire, and *Sir Palmerin* your Sonne shall be Emperour, after the decease of his noble Grandfather. The good King *Primalcon* old and decrepitate, was so surprised with these newes, as he imagined he heard some fantastical illuding voice, rather then matter of truth and certainty : with which inward

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

ward oppression of conceit, his weak state unable to support it selfe, being overcome with joy, doubt and suspicion, as hardly could *Arifmena* his Daughter keepe life in him, so often he swooned with hearing this reposte, yet at length taking the Knight by the hand, he said. My good friend, God I trust will blisse thee with honoz and prosperitie, for bringing me the tidings I have long desired. Now may I well say, that neuer any Princes age was moze beautified with happines, then mine is, having my Sonne allied in such an house, and another Sonne excelling all the Knights in the world. But if the Heavens vouchsafe me so much graces and favour, that I may once see him before I end this life : it will be such sufficient content to me, as then I force not though I live no longer. Then calling for one of his Secretaries, to read the Letters his Son had sent him, and having heard the contents thereof : commanded present dispatch of Messengers, to aduertise the Lords and nobilitie of his Realme, who likewise were so glad of these newes, as each one prepared himselfe against the day appointed. The King having written Letters to his Sonne, as also to *Palmerin*, whom he intreated to come and see him : gave them to the Messenger, and withall such an honozable gift for his paynes, as well might content a greater personage. He returning to *Constantinople*, effectually discharged his answer : and *Palmerin* reading his Grandfathers Letters, bowed to fulfill his request, and afterward to follow the search of *Triacus*.

Now the day being come, when the Lords of *Macedon* should set forthward to *Constantinople* : they came to take their leaue of the King, who beganne to them in this manner. Ah my good friends, God is my witness, with what good will I would weare you company, if my aged yeres did not forbid me : nevertheless, let me desire you to behave your selves in such sort, as if I were in person with
 you,

ye, and honor Prince Palmerin no lesse then my selfe. So creating the Duke of Pontus his Lieutenant in this Embassage, because he was a bzabe and comely young Prince, bequeathed them to happy fortune in their journey, commanding a Knight to passe before them, that Palmerin might be first advertised of their coming. On the same day as they should arrive at the City, Palmerin accompanied with the young King of Sparta, the most subtile and ingenious Prince of his time, (as well instructed in the manners and conditions of the auncient Kings his predecessors, especially imitating cautious Vlixes) and others other young Princes and Knights, rode to meet the Lords of Macedon at the Gates of the City. Where alighted all the Lords to kisse his hand, which he would not permit them to doe: but casting himselfe likewise from his Horse, embraced them all one after another. And mounting on horsebacke againe, entred the City which was so plentifully stozed with Knights and Gentlemen against the triumph, as the Prince Olorico and Fritoll were appointed by the Emperour, to see the Lords lodged according to their estate, and to erect Tents and Pavillions without the City, where the rest of their traine might be decently entertained.

This choice made the Emperour of these twaine in this matter, because in all his Court were not two more courteous Princes: beside, they were the only men in the world so affable and gracious entertaining strangers. All this busines ended, and Palmerin deuling with the Queene his Mother, Fritoll being in his company, saw her enter the chamber, to whom he had bowed his serviceable deuotions: wheresoze seining some occasiō at the window where the Princes stood, he went and stood by her a pretty while, and at length entred into these speeches. *Madame* as yet in all my life I neuer requested any thing of a Lord, and now would I gladly moue one sute to you, (as

to her that is the only Mistress of my heart) if I should not seeme over-bold in this petition: assuring you, that having obtained this favour of you, you shall not command any thing, how difficult soever it be, but I will gladly enterprise it for your sake. *Believe me,* Sir Fritoll, answered the Princesse, you speake but reason, demand then what you please, and you shall obtaine it: because I hold this opinion of you, that you will not request any thing, that shall in ought be prejudiciall to mine honor. A thousand thanks good *Shadam,* said Fritoll, this houre (I hope) hath booded me good fortune, and this is my request: that you would so much honour me, as to permit me enter the Tourney under the name of your Knight, because I would enterprise nothing but by your commandement. And this (in my judgement) is such an especiall labour, as I durst not presume to sollicite you withall, without the grant my Lord your Mother Palmerin made me: with this addition, (that according to my desires in the Tourney (if you can so fancy) to accept me as your Lord and Husband. With these words the Princesse was touched to the quicke, in that her desires were that way addiced: and her colour changing with her private conceit, she shadowed so artificially as she could, and with words fearefull and trembling, thus answered.

In sooth my Lord, never was I moved with any such sute heretofore, but my Mother may so farre command me, as what liketh him I would be loth to gainsay. As for your demand, to enter the field under the name of my Knight, with right good will I grant it: assuring you thereof with this Jewell, which henceforth so please you to weare, shall remaine as token of my love to you. So taking a goodly Emerald from her finger, kissing it, with great curtesie gave it him. Now am I sure *Shadam,* quoth Fritoll, to have part of the prize, seeing I shall adventure in your service: nor is this King of so little value, but when in the

Combat

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

Combat I shall behold it, my forces will be redoubled, and new life enter my fainting spirit. For ever I dare say, that never did the King of Gages bring him more honour, then this will to me: for that could not profit or advantage him, but onely by being invisible. On the contrary, I haue no pleasure but in your presence: nee shall I think my selfe at better ease, then when among Lances and Swords I may labour for your love. Then entered the Emperesse, with other Ladies newly come to the Court to see the Joyns: which brake off their talk, wherefore taking leave of each other, they repaied the Chamber.

CHAP. XXXVI.

How the Duke of *Mecena* and the Countie of *Reisfort*, arrived in *Almaigne* at the Emperours Court, and after their Ambassage dispatched: the Emperour sent backe with them to *Constantinople*, the Duke of *Lorraine*, and the Marquesse of *Licena*, as his Ambassadors.



Now is the day come, when the first appointed for the Ambassage to *Almaigne*, should depart, wherefore being furnished with all things necessary for their voyage, the Wind and Sea liked the voyage so well: they came to aduertise *Palmerin* thereof, to know if he would command them any further service.

Palmerin walked with them to the Haven, and by the way gave a Letter to the Duke of *Mecena*, saying. Most worthy Duke, present my humble duty to my Lady *Polinarda* and give her this Letter, whereof I pray you bring me an answer. And pleased God that I might go with ye, never could

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

could any voyage better please me: therefore let me intreate your returne so soon as possible may be. The Duke promised to accomplish his desire, and taking leave of each other, they went abroad, where hoping their sailes, with a merrie wind away they went, and arrived in *Almaigne* sooner then suspected. When they were come on shore, they sent a knight before to the Emperour, that he might be acquainted with their coming: yet could not his Majesty put marriage at this Ambassage, because in all his time he neuer had the like, and therefore thought this strange occasion would last to as strange an end. At length, to doe them the greater honour, he sent all his knights and Gentlemen to reserue them, who conducted the Duke of *Mecena* and the Countie of *Reisfort* to the Palace, and afterward to the presence of the Emperour. When the Duke entered the Chamber, he saluted his Majesty with great reverence, yet not kissing his hand, because he came from as great a State as he was: afterward he beganne in this manner.

Most mighty and redoubted Monarch of *Almaigne*, the most high and excellent Emperour of *Constantinople* my Master. Understanding the losse of your Sonne *Tryneus*, greetly you with heath and continuall happines. Giving you to vnderstand, that within these few daies such good fortune hath befallen him, as in all his life time he neuer had the like. And albeit in his last waire with the *Turkes* and *Moors*, he lost both Sonnes, *Arphelven*, and many great Lords of his kindred, and since that time hath bene troubled, with the hard hap of his Daughter *Griana* Queene of *Hungaria*, and the suddaine death of her Husband the King: yet hath his Majesty changed all these griefes into joy by knowledge of the good knight *Sir Palmerin*, whose renowned lines as well in *Heathinelle* as in *Christendome*, being now found Sonne to my Lord the Emperour, and therefore created sole heire to the Empire. And the noble Prince

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

Prince Palmerin on his behalfe, humbly saluteth your most
 perillous Majesty, bring the Lord to whom he is most affec-
 ted in service, to that to find out your Sonne Trineus and
 the faire Agriola Daughter to the King of England, whom
 two yeares since and moze he lost in the East seas: he aban-
 doneth all honorable preferments, untill his travaill shall be
 finished, and he hath brought him hither before your High-
 nes. And having already searched in many Kingdomes, at
 length he understood that they were living and in health, al-
 so that himself should in the end recover them: he thought it
 necessary to acquaint you herewith, because he doubted of
 your extreme sorrow and heavinesse. The Emperour aske-
 ned to heare the good fortune of Palmerin, as also the loss
 of his Son Trineus, could not subdue his passions, which
 moved the teares to trickle downe his cheekes, with con-
 solt of joy and griefe together: yet shadowing his alterati-
 on so well as he could, thus replied. In truth my Lord
 Ambassadour, I alwayes imagined by Palmerins worthy
 actions, that he was descended of noble or royall lineage, and
 greatly it contenteth me, that he so happily hath found
 the house of his descent: expelling altogether (considering
 his promise and promise) what hath been long imprinted
 in my heart, concerning the loss of my Sonne Trineus. For
 so favourable are the Heavens to Palmerin in all his enter-
 prises and admirable adventures: as one may imagin, that
 Odes of praise and account are reserved only for him, chiefe-
 ly the recovery of my Sonne, which I hope he will effectu-
 ally bring to passe. And trust me, not without great and
 sufficient reason, both the Emperour your Master repulse
 himselfe happy: this only good fortune being of so great
 enough, to discharge his minde of all sorowes and cares, that
 former occasions moved him withall. For know I how to
 recompence his princely kindness, honouring me with so
 good and happy tidings: but that it may please him to ac-
 cept of me hereafter, as his loving Brother and faithfull
 friend.

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

Friend. No other thing my Lord (quoth the Duke) doth
 his Majesty desire, and to begin this amity and alliance
 betwene you, he requesteth, that if his Sonne Palmerin
 hath heretofore found such favour in your eyes, you would
 now confirme it, by giving him to wife the Princesse Po-
 lynarda your Daughter, whom he will not marry, untill he
 hath brought home your Sonne Trineus. As for the other
 conditions of the marriage, these letters shall certifie you:
 so kissing them, he delivered them with very great reve-
 rence.

And her shall he have with right good will, said the
 Emperour, for a better Husband can we not have: I think
 likewise her selfe will consent thereto, for the good opinion
 she had of him while he remained in our Court. And be-
 cause I will not displease the King of France, who in like
 manner requested her for his Sonne and heire: I will con-
 ferre with the estates of the Empire, and then deliver you
 certaine answer. So the Ambassadors withdrew them-
 selves to their lodgings, and the Emperour caused the let-
 ters to be read before all his Princes and Lords, who
 could no way mislike of this marriage: and therefore great
 joy was made through the Empire, in hope the Prince
 Trineus should soon be recovered. These joyfull newes
 soon spreading through the Court, at length were brought
 to the Princesse Polynarda in her Chamber: who not a-
 ble to conceale her sudden joy, ranne to Brionella, saying.
 Sweete friend, now mayst thou rejoyce with me, in that
 our loves are now assured by, whereas before we utterly
 despaired. Ah my Brionella, Heaven hath now confirmed
 our fortunate successe, in that my Palmerin is faine to be
 the Emperours Sonne of Constantinople: before of he hath
 certified my Lord and Father by his Ambassadour, as how
 Palmerin hath heard tidings of my Brother Trineus,
 whom shortly he will bring home againe, yet not the least
 thy Ptolomie I hope. Therefore (my enely companion in
 love

The History Of Palmerin D'Olive

lour and feare) let us abandon all griefe and sorrow, which greatly may prejudice our health and welfare: and now dispose our selves to a contented resolution of life, attending our long desired fortune. God graunt it may be so, quoth Bryonella, yet my minde perswades me, that we shall not see them so faine as you wene. The Emperour having conferred with the Lords of Allemaigne, who very well allowed the marriage of his daughter with Palmerin: determined to send to the Emperour of Constantinople Ambassadors, to perfect confirmation of the marriage. And by generall consent, the Duke of Lorraine and the Marquesse of Licena, were chosen for this present Embassy. Which being done, the Emperour went to the Emperesse Chamber, and sent for his daughter Polynarda, who was so joyfull of these happy notes, as she should scant imagine how to dissemble her content, when she should come in her Fathers presence, yet shewing it from any open suspect, after she had saluted her Father with great reverence, the Emperour thus spake.

Daughter, you have hitherto refused so many noble offers, as hardly can I permit to move you with any other: yet once more will I try you againe, in hope you will stand upon no more refusals, but joine with me in opinion, as beyond all other best becomming you. The man of whom I speake, is noble Palmerin, of whose honorable behabtour you have some knowledge: and for no other cause hath the Emperour sent his Ambassadors, advise your selfe then what you answer, for all our nobility allow the match, and thereto have generally subscribed their consent. The Princess covering her inward joy with modest bashfulness, thus answered.

If heretofore my good Lord, I excused my obsequance to your commandment, especially for taking a husband, it was onely for the promise I made to my Brother Trynens: but now, seeing it is your pleasure, and the good liking

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2

king of all the estates, as also that the marriage shall not be solemnized till my Brothers presence: I will not disobey your command, assuring your Majesty, that more content am I to match with him, then any other you named heretofore. And this one speciall cause, that he laboureth to buye home my noble Brother, which Heaven graunt he may: otherwise can I not marry, without very great impeach to mine honour.

The Emperour well perceived by the grace of her answer, and her countenance none nothing sad or melancholly: that she was nothing offended with this motion, wherfore he said. Happy may I count my self faire daughter, that among all the Christian Princes you have chosen such a Husband: therefore apparell your selfe to morrow in the best sort you may, for then shall my Lords the Ambassadors see you. So departed the Princess to her Chamber, and no more speeches were used till the next day, when the Emperour sent for the Ambassadors of Constantinople, and in the presence of the principall estate of the Empire, ratified the marriage betwix Palmerin & his daughter. And for further confirmation thereof, promised to send his owne Ambassadors with them, to satisfie (on his behalfe) the Emperour, Florencos and Palmerin. For which exceeding gentleness, the Duke of Mecena (in the Emperours name) thanked his Majesty, earnestly intreating him to dispatch them thence so soone as might be, because their charge was to returne with all possible speed. This resolution absolutely set downe, the Emperour (for the greater honour) caused them to dine with him at his stately Table, a grace being said by the Lord Almoner, the Duke of Mecena desired his Majesty, that he might see the Princess Polynarda: wherof he made promise so soone as Dinner was done, when taking the Duke of Mecena, by the one hand, and the Count of Reifort by the other brought the to the Emperesse Chamber, where they found

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

the Princess in such sumptuous ornaments, and accompanied with such rare grace and exquisite beauty, as they judged her rather an Angell then any earthly creature. And greatly was the Duke abashed at such a singular spectacle, not knowing how to frame his opinions: but hauing humbly saluted the Emperesse, came to the Princess, and on his knee reuerently kist her hand, with these speeches. Let it not displease you faire Madam, that I vse this honorable duty to you: for I doe it in this respect, as to the gracious Lady and Emperesse (hereafter) of Constantinople.

By this meanes he secretly conueyed Palmerins Letter into her hand, for which the Princess gaue him many deuout thanks, which were coupled with such majesticall gestures, as neither by Nero or Calba were done the like, no not by Constantine himselfe to the Pope. And the Dukes words had raised a sweete blush in her cheekes, yet could she with such chiefe answers excuse the same, as gaue greater countenance to all her behauiour. Then turned the Duke to the Emperour, and smiling, said. Trust me my Lord, now doe I verily believe what hath heretofore been told me of the Prince Palmerin, that he is an especiall Judge of the beauty of Ladies, for in mine opinion he hath chosen one without a second: and of her may truly be affirmed, what the Poets described of Helena, tearming her the Goddess of beauty. With this rare Princess to be matched an Husband so famous, well may be said: the couple to be without compare, for the faire forned Paris may not be equalled with Palmerin. So the Ambassadors departing, the Princess with her selfe to her Chamber, where reading her Friends Letter, her ioyes and pleasures redoubled, because she might now boldly credit her fortune.

And before she would forget the inuention her spirit offered, she presently wrote an answer: earnestly intreating

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2

ing him to hasten his return, to abate her languishing desires, which now made her life but a shadow of death. Hauing close sealed her Letter, she sent it to the Duke by one of her most trustie Ladies, with diuers other rich gifts and presents. The Duke of Lorraine and his company ready, departed thence with the Ambassadors, and winde and weather seruing so well, they arrived at Constantinople the day before Florendos his Appittals. As he being brought hereto to the Court, Palmerin accompanied with many Princes and Knights, went to the Palace, and at the Landing of the Ambassadors, Palmerin embraced the Duke of Lorraine, and the Marquesse of Licena: and so riding to the Palace, beguiled the time with diuers discourses, whereamong, the Duke of Lorraine thus spake. Sir Palmerin, I alwayes did imagine, that those strange adventures atchieued by you, during the obscurity of your younger yeares, would in the end reueale your honourable Parentage, and make your name so ever famous: and were the Prince Trincus with you now, on the very best condition in the world would I not leaue your company. Gentle Duke, answered Palmerin, if I did not perfwaine myselfe, how greatly I should comfort your mind, by remembering your Prince Trincus, I should account my life so unhappy, as presently I would desire my death. God grant (quoth the Duke) that you may see him againe, for that will be the greatest good that euer came to our Empire: considering the vertues, magnanimity and speciall Chivalrie, which is as currant in our young Prince as in any other. And thus they spent the time till they came to the Palace, where the Duke of Lorraine after he had saluted the Emperour and the Princes, deliuered the Message committed to his charge. Wherewith Palmerin was not a little pleased, considering what he had read in his Ladies Letter, which discovered the sorowes she endured for his absence: but being assured of her firme loyalty, as also that

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

He was now promised him in marriage, his cares were the less, commanding the Duke to be lodged near his own Chamber, that he might the better confer with him of his misfortune, whom he loved as well as his own life.

CHAP. XXXVII.

How after the Prince *Florendos* and Queen *Griana* were espoused together, *Palmerin* was sworn Prince and heire of Greece and Macedon, by the consent of the Lords of the Empire and the Realm.



The Ambassadors of *Alimaigne* being now come, the Emperour was advertised thereof, and considering that the Princes of *Thrace* and *Macedon* had expected their presence for the space of six daies: it was appointed, that on the morrow the Prince *Florendos* and *Griana* should be married. And the day being come of this long desired wedding, he was clothed in such rich and costly vestures, as though he had bene still a virgin. And here to set downe the sumptuous vestures of her, her Husband, the Emperour, the Emperesse, with divers other Lords, Ladies and Gentlewomen, also the solemnitie and ceremonies, both at the Church and at the Pallace: would waste a great deale of time in vaine, and without any pleasure or profit to the Readers, and therefore I will let it passe under your conceit, and speake of such things as are most needfull.

After that the Prince *Florendos* and *Griana* were espoused by the Patriarch of *Constantinople*, the whole traine returned to the Pallace, where before the Gate was erected a goodly Theater, hanged round about with cloth of Golde, and therein were set many Chayres and Canopies

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

ples of estate. There was the Prince *Palmerin* placed in the chiefe seat, the Emperour and *Florendos* on the one side, and the Emperesse and *Griana* on the other: then was *Palmerin* sworn Prince of Greece, with all the observati- ons in such causes accustomed, by all the Lords of the Em- pire, from the Emperour himselfe to the very meanest Gentleman. In like sort did the states of *Macedon*, his Father *Florendos* first beginning, the Duke of *Pontus* next, and in the selfe same order as the Imperialistes had done. This done, the Tables were covered, and all the Princes placed according to their dignities: the Emperour and Em- peresse at the chiefe, the new married couple at the second, and the Prince *Palmerin* at the third: so consequently the Kings, Princes, Dukes, Marqueses, Counties, and all the rest in order. As for the magnificence of service, the royall order observed, the Triumphes, Pomeries, Pasques, and dancing: would but fill paper with needlesse reports, in that your judgements can conceive thereof sufficiently. But the Tables being withdrawne, the noble Gallants went and Armed themselves, and entred the field which was appointed without the City, and furnished with Scaffolds and Standings for the Lords and Ladies, where the after- noon was spent bravely at Tilt and Tourney, with vain- ty chivalry performed by *Frycoll*, *Olorico*, the King of *Sparta*, the Duke of *Pontus* & many other Knights. When night was come, and Supper ended, the Brides and Brides- grooms were honorably brought to their Chamber, and *Florendos* being alone with his Lady, thus beganne. Ah sweete *Padamie*, how many sorowes have I endured, in expectation of this long desired hour: but having at length compassed my wish, I hold myselfe sufficiently satisfied: giving credite to the ancient proverb, That true love ne- ver wanteth his reward, and that which I thought would have been my death, hath now returned me greater honor and profit. In such my Lord, answered y^e Dame, I was

The History Of *Palmerin D'Oliua*

bermoze perswaded of your loyalty : but where necessity ruleth, reason hath no place. And if by the exteriour action I haue bene disloyall to you : yet my hart, which first of all I gaue to you, neuer diminished in will to loue you firmly. For which Tarisus very often reprooched me, notwithstanding in the end, and by the suffrance of God I thinke, he receiued the reward, that the blarper of another mans right deserbeth. But why should we (my Lord) call now to memory things past, or remember matters which be of no thing but heauinesse: it is for you to excuse me, and for my selfe to love and honour you. All the points of theyr former Diuises debated betwene them, to such effects they pleased, so that in the end, as that night she conceived with a daughter, which proved to be beyond all other in beauty.

On the morrow the Prince Palmerin entred the Lyons Royall, because this day he desired to fight. Wherfore him went the chiefe Princes of Greece on foot, and six Trumpets to make him way: he managing his Horse with such lofty Volages, as every one delighted to behold him.

After he had done his reverence to the Emperour, he gaue the spurs to his Horse to encounter Fryfoll: But when they came to meete, Fryfoll threwe by his Lance, and would not touch him. The like did the Prince Olorico, and others other knights: wherat Palmerin somewhat angry, strooke his Lance into the ground, and brake it, and causing himselfe to be unarmed, went vp to the Emperour in his standing to see the Pastime of the other knights: and he was no sooner come, but the Emperour thus spake vnto him.

We not offended my Sonne, because you haue unarmed your selfe without tryall of the Joust: for the knights haue down as best besetmed them, not to adventure on their Lord and Master. But if you would so faine haue some spozie with them, you must hereafter disguise your selfe from being known: otherwise I see you shall but lose your labour. When Palmerin heard these wordes, to the end he might somewhat

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

somewhat delight the Emperour and the Ladies, especially, such as neuer saw his behaviour in Chivalry: he was determined the last day of the Tryumphe, to come suddenly among them, and to be armed in such sort as none should knowe him. In briefe, now is the last day come, and the Emperour being standing that Palmerin would enter the Lyons disguised, went to his standing, and Palmerin secretly entring his Chamber, found there a white Armour, such as the young knights was accustomed to weare, which his Dwarfke had there provided for him: Armed himselfe presently therewith, and mounted on a Horse of the same colour, entred the field on the Assailants side, because he had heard, that this day the King of Sparta would encounter the Duke of Pontus, Fryfoll, Olorico, and others of the most gentle knights in the company. The Emperour knew Palmerin among all the rest, and said to Florendos: What thinke you (Sonne) of the white knight? Do you know him? So my Lord, (quoth the Prince) I know not what he is: but me thought he entred with a jolly countenance: It now remaines to know what he can do.

At the encounter, Palmerin vnhoised the Prince Olorico, afterward the Duke of Pontus, and five other knights afterward: then having broken his Lance, the Emperour sent him another by a squyre, willing him (for his sake) to imploy it as he had done the other, but he would make no answer because he feared to be knowne. Now was Fryfoll much offended at the Prince Oloricos misfortune, wherfore he would revenge his friends cause: but the King of Sparta, esteemed a hardy & approved knight, kept betwix him, and being cast off from his Horse, was so hurt with the fall, as he was carried south of the field to his Chamber.

When Fryfoll gaue the spurs to his Horse, and encountered Palmerin with such puissance, as he made him lose his stirrups, and had he not caught fast hold about his Horse necke, he had fallen to the ground: but Fryfoll, his fortune was

The History of Palmerin D'Olive.

was so bad, as his Horse stumbling fell down, and his Spauler under him, whereupon the Emperour said to Florendos, that the Knight in white Armour was his son Palmerin. In sooth my Lord (quoth the Prince) his fortune is good if it be he, and well may he be esteemed the worthiest in the company. The Duke of Lorraine hearing their talk, said.

Perballe not my Lord that Prince Palmerin hath so good success, for in Almaine have I seen him too much more then this, and so much, as my Lord the Emperour hath bene constrained to command them give over. Palmerin seeing himselfe Master of the field, departed as secretly as he came thither, and so did the Emperour, Florendos, Giana, and all the other Ladies, among whom the young Princeesse Armida was most present, for her friends misfortune, so that by her countenance her inward affections might easily be discerned. But on the Morrow, when Palmerin sent for all the Knights of name with whom he had fought, and every one knew that he wonne the Prize of the last dayes Tryumph: the sorrow of the Princeesse Armida was converted into pleasure, reputing it an honour to her Knight to be unhorsed by her Brother.

When the Emperour understood that Palmerin was fighting with the Knights; he came into the Wall, and taking him by the hand, merrily said. Wee here my Friends the White Knight, whom you all were so desirous to know, but if you finde your selves agreed with him, you must lay the blame on me, for I was the onely cause of his enterprize, to the end that having made open proofe of himselfe, you all might witnesse his valour and bounty, who after my decease must be your Lord and Governor.

Now were all the Knights well contented againe, especially the Prince Olorico and Frisoll, who though he

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

was somewhat abused with his Horse falling on him, came and embraced Palmerin, saying. In sooth my Lord, the strength of your arme and Lance yesterday, hath given us good experience of your vertue: yet our desire to revenge our companions foyle was such, as had you bene our Father we should not have knowne you. It may be (said Palmerin) that ye made no reckoning of the Knight, who handled ye in this rough manner: or that you thought him not worthy to receive a Lance, because you refused to fight with him the other day. A kinde flout (quoth Frisoll, perceiving how Palmerin jested) and quietly delivered, is this your recompence to the Knights that friendly spared you: If I had knowne so much before, I should have cryed quittance with you before we parted. These words Frisoll spake in such sort, as Palmerin imagined he was in choller: wherefore he thus answered. Good brother I pray you excuse me, if in doing my devoute I have offended ye: when you please I will doe penance for it, if it be but to please her, who cannot hide her good will towards you.

Whereupon all the three Friends embraced together, taking leave of each other till the next Mornning, when a new Journey was begun againe, and continued for five dayes together: the hono^r whereof (to make short) happened to Frisoll, untill the last day, when a strange Knight came into the field, and brought one with him resembling a Giant in stature, who with a Turkish Bow and innumerable arrows, flew and wounded very many. So that Palmerin seeing the spoyle of his Friends, was constrained to arme himselfe, and despying the Giant, overcame both him and the Knight that brought him.

Some have reported this Giant to be a Monster, in forme of the Centaures, that encountered Hercules at the Nuptials of Hippodamia: but such ridiculous follies are not here to be inserted, and though the Spaniard in his History

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

Roze affirme it, yet carries it no likelyhood, whersoeze lea-
ving such impertinent discourses, let vs proceed as occasion
only leads vs.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

How the aged Knight *Apolonio*, found *Netrides* Father
to *Frisoll*, and brought him to *Constantinople*, where
he was made Governour Generall of *Hungaria*: and
how *Frisoll* espoused the *Princesse Armida*.



Apolonio having receiued *Frisolls* Let-
ters, and a byleefe direction for his jour-
ney, to the place where he should finde
his Father *Netrides*: he followed his
intent with such diligence, as he came
to the Castle where he remained, and
found him sitting at the Gate, being
newly returned from Hunting in the
Forrest. Sooner had *Apolonio* seen him, but he presently
knew him, whersoeze feigning that he and his company
were knights errant: saluted him, and demanded if he
would giue them entertainment for that night, because they
knew no place of lodging nere at hand. *Netrides*, who was
ever of a most noble mind, welcomed them very courteously,
commanding their Horses to the Stable, and themselves
to be honorably seated at Supper. All Supper time, *Netri-*
des very earnestly viewed *Apolonio*, perswading himselfe
that he had seen him before: and *Apolonio* likewise well
regarded *Netrides*, neyther daring to question with other
for feare of misconceit.

In the end, *Apolonio* thorowly resolved that this was
the man he sought, and seeing two yong Gentlemen sitting
at the Table by him, he thus began. I pray you Sir tell
me, are these two Gentlemen your Sons? They are Sir,
answe-

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

answered *Netrides*. Have you not one more (quod *Apolonio*)
elder then these? When *Netrides* remembred his Sonne
Fryfoll, whom he judged to be dead because of his long ab-
sence: whersoeze breathing forth a very great sigh, said.
In truth Sir, I know not whether I have or no, for it
is long since I lost mine eldest Sonne by great misfortune,
and hitherto heard no tidings of him, nor know I whe-
ther he is living or dead. By what mishap I pray you
Sir (quoth *Apolonio*) did you loose him? Whereupon *Ne-*
trides discouered the whole circumstance, in selfe same
manner as *Fryfoll* had reported: whereby he was now as-
sured that *Fryfoll* was his Sonne, and so without dissem-
bling any longer, said. I can resolue ye my Lord, that he is
yet living, and in very good disposition. W my God (answe-
red *Netrides*) if these newes may be true, then am I the
most happie knight in the world. And so are you, said *A-*
polonio, for he is living, recovered of the disease he had
when he departed from you, and is now one of the most e-
steemed knights in all Greece: so that having deliuered the
Queene *Griana* from Prison, which victory he obtained in
the company of noble *Palmerin*, against the two Sypheus
of King *Tacilus*, he is found to be neare kinsman to the
Empresse. For which cause he hath sent, and I am expre-
ly hither come, to bring you with me to *Constantinople*, to
the end you may receiue your owne by right, I meane the
principall Regiment in the Realme of *Hungaria*. Ah Hea-
uens, answered *Netrides*, for ever be your praises, in re-
dealing the wrong my Brother did, when cause he ba-
nished me my Native Countrey: but that I may be resol-
ued in one doubt, I pray ye tell me, were ye not sometime
of my Brothers Court? Yes truly answered *Apolonio*,
and to your Father I serued as a Page in his Chamber:
now in respect of the manifold courtesies I receiued at
your hands, for ever I bowed my selfe to doe you any ser-
vice, desiring you with all possible speed to hasten your de-
parture:

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

picture : for I greatly doubt we shall not else Ande your Sonne at the Court, because he determineth to journey with Palmerin in the search of Trincus, the Emperours Sonne of Almaine.

Whereupon Netrides leading the charge of his house to one of his Coyens, departed with his Wife and his two Sonnes : making such speedy dispatch in their journey, as not many daies after the Triumph, they arrived at Constantinople. Which when Frycoll understood, he went to meete them : being accompanied (for the greater hono^r to his Parents) with Palmerin, the King of Sparta, and many other young Princes. There were many salutations and welcomes, given with great joy by the Sonne to his Father, Mother, and Brother, and by the Parents likewise to their Sonne, with such exceeding signes of love, as you can better conceive than I expresse. After all these courteous greetings, they went to the Court, where began a fiersh occasion of joy, betwixt the Emperesse and her Brother Netrides : she then embracing him in her armes, thus spake.

Oh my noble Nephew, how have the Heavens blessed me with speciall favour, in suffering me before my death to see my dearest Friends, whom I was out of all hope to behold againe : especially you, whose long absence from your Countrey, hath rather belibred imaginations of your death then life. Nevertheless, it is the providence of the highest, that after all the troubles you suffered in your youth, you might receive the recompence in your age, by the knightly hono^r and bounty of your linage. In sooth I have said Netrides, not so pleasant to me is high preferment, as that I live to see my Sonne againe, for having contented myselfe in my little Castle, with a life free from offence and solitarie, I did account it to exceed all other : but now seeing in my declining yeares, the God of Heaven hath thought good that I might profit his people, the thought

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

thought more base and abject in me to make refusall. So long were they debising on these and other matters, as the good night being given on all sides, the Emperour caused those new come Friends to be conducted to their Lodgings.

But on the Morrow, when Palmerin came to bid the Emperour good morrow, he thus began. You know my Lord, that a Common-wealth without a head and Governour, (as for example is the Realme of Hungaria) cannot long endure without scillious tumults or Rebellion: wherefore under your Majesties reverend regard, I thinke it expedient that my Sister Armida, should be given in Marriage to Sir Frycoll, because in flexibility of minde and perfection of judgment, hardly may so good a Knight be found, nor she enjoy a fitter Husband, and so may the Realme lineally descend, from Netrides now aged, to his Noble Sonne.

The Emperour liked well of this advice, wherefore the same day were Frycoll and the Princess Armida espoused together : to the good liking of all, but especially of the lovers themselves, whose secret desires were now effectually requited. After the feast was ended, Netrides instituted Governour of Hungaria, departed with his Wife and Sonns to his Kingdome, where he was received very honourably by his Subjects, who had not forgot their former love to him : and the unnaturall dealing of their King his deceased Mother.

CHAP. XXXIX.

How *Palmerin* tooke his leave of the Emperour, his Father and Mother, to follow the search of the Prince *Trincus*.

Certaine dayes after the solemnity of this honourable Marriage was ended betwixne Fryfoll and the young *Princesse* of Hungaria. *Netrides* likewise gone to his Seat of government: all the *Lords* and *Princes* of the Empire, except such as continually abode in the Emperours Court, returned to their owne homes, the like did all the strange knights that came to the *Triumphes*, except the King of Sparta and the *Lords* of Macedon. Wherefore *Palmerin* now remembryng his promise to his Lady, and how long he had stayed without at Constantinople, determined to depart, and understanding that his Father was with the Emperour, came to them with these speeches.

My gracious *Lords*, it is now thre Moneths and more that I have remained here by your commandement, contrary to the promise that I made my Lady: wherefore (with your leave) I am now determined to depart hence, before the Duke of Lorraine retorne backe again, that he may assure my Lord the Emperour, that I am gone to seek my friends. My Sonne (quoth the Emperour) unwilling am I thou shouldst leave us so soon, but if the matter may not be contraited, in respect you are bound to her by faithfull promise, who aboves all other deserbeth loyalty: I neither may or will gainsay you, but in great your returne so soon as may be. You shall therefore take with you a good company of knights, who may prevent any sinister occasions, which your travaile in strange Countre

Countries happily may offer: that my heart enjoying life by your presence, may once more see you before my date be expired.

I beseech you my Lord, answered *Palmerin*, grabe not your selfe by my absence, which shall not be long I hope, neyther will the multitude of knights abaille in my enterprise, for more by fortune then by force of Armes must the adventure be finished. Doe then as you thinke good answered the Emperour, in meane time I will cause provision for your traine. *Palmerin* having now licence to depart, perswaded Fryfoll so earnestly as he could, to abide at Constantinople, as well for the love he bare his sister *Armida*, as because he was loth to part the new married couple: but all the circumstances he could use, might not persuade him: for his religious love to his friends, exceeded his affection to the *Princesse*, so that for a flat resolution, he answered, that nothing but death should separate their company. *Palmerin* seeing Fryfoll continue in his former amity, and that the desire which conquers all men, could not prevaille in his noble minde: rejoiced greatly thereat, determining to recompence his princely kindness, if fortune did not contrary him in this enterprised journey. And fearing least any new occasion should arise to delay this intent, dispatched presently his Letters to the Emperour of *Almaigne*, and his Lady *Polynarda*, honouring his Highness Ambassadors with many sumptuous gifts. Having now ordered all his affaires, and every one being ready to mount on their backs, he came to bid the Queen his Mother farewell: for well he knew, that if she could any way hinder his departure, his journey should be soon prevented. The Queen with motherly love embracing her Sonne, said: Ah my Sonne, hast thou been so long a time with me, and wilt thou now leave me? trust me it is a point of great ungentleness: to deale so hardly with thy mother: but seeing the Emperour and my Lord have given their

their consent, may gaine say will be to little purpose. And nothing would it abate me to set before thine eyes, the inconstancy of fortune, her sleights and treachery, commonly against great persons: when they are in the way to prosperity, honoꝝ and renowne. Wherefoꝛe my Sonne, I commit thee to the protection of Heaben, desiring thee to regard mine honoꝝ, which by thee ought to be defended, and now may runne in danger of common reproch, in that the vulgar sort judge after their owne humours, not according to the quality and estimation of vertue. Foꝛ this cause let thy returne be the sooner, as thou tenderest my life and thine owne good.

All which Palmerin promised to doe, and so comming downe into the Court, found there the Emperour and his father mounted on horsebacke, who bare him company two miles from the City: where after many courtesies betwene them, the Emperour and Florendos returned to the Court againe, where the Duke of Lorraine stayed their comming, when taking his leave likewise, went abroad and sayled with so good a winde, as in short time he arrived in Almaine, where he was graciously welcomed by the Emperour, and especially by the Princesse his Daughter, to whom he reported the honourable behavioꝝ of Palmerin, and how he was sworne Prince of Greece and Macedon. Whereof was she so joyfull: as never could she be satisfied with the discourse, making many demaunds to the Duke, as well of the Triumphs, Journey and dispatchs, as also of the marriage celebrated at Constantinople: whereto the Duke returned such answers, as nothing wanted to extoll her Friends honoꝝ, yet with any occasion of jealousie to the Princesse, whereto amorous Ladies are commonly subject.

But now returning where we left before, you must note, that Palmerin being departed the Confinnes of the Emperre, entred his fathers Realmes, where in every City

he was entertained with great triumphing: especially in the City of Hermida, where the Merchant dwelt that was Palmerins Master, foꝛ whom he sent, but he was advertized by his Wife, that her Husband was gone to the Sea, and his two Sonnes with him, wherefoꝛe he gaue her many Rich gifts, and Letters foꝛ his Masters fre enfranchise and liberty. At his departure from thence, he came to the place where Urbanillo his Dwarf was boꝛne, whose father was there living a poore ancient Knight, and his sister of as tall stature as Urbanillo, whom Palmerin (at her Mothers request) sent to Constantinople, to his Mother. And foꝛ the honoꝝ of the Order his Dwarfs father had received, he gave him the Village wherein he dwelt, and in the presence of the Macedonians put him in possession thereof, who not a little commended the discrete and liberal minde of the Prince.

From thence he journeyed to the chiefe City of Macedon, where remained the Aged King his Grandfather: but how the Cittizens entertained him, and what honourable Triumphs were made at the Court, I list not here set downe, because it would be more tedious then beneficiall. As foꝛ his Aunte the Princesse Arismena, she at his comming met him in the Base court, with all her Ladies: and as Palmerin fell on his knee before her, to kisse her hand, she stayed him in her armes, saying: God forbid say Palmerin, that the knight of greatest fame in the World, should reverence so simple a Damosell as my selfe: but rather am I bound by duty to honoꝛ you, as the man by whose especiall vertues, our Linage is this day crowned with perpetual memory.

Happy Aunte (answered Palmerin) if before I knew you to be my fathers sister, I devoted my selfe to your service, with much more Affection shall I desire to followe it now: Wherefoꝛe suffer me (Sweet Madams) to kisse your hand, as being the Lady to whom I rest continually bound.

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

best. I beseech you my Lord (quoth the Princess) to pardon me, for never shall a Macedonian Maiden be so reproved, but that she well knowes her duty to her betters. At these speeches came the King of Sparta, the Duke of Pontus, and Mecana, and the Prince Eustace, whom the Princess welcommed with exceeding honour. After all courtesies ended, Palmerin sayd.

I understand Madam, that the King your Father is crazed and sickly: if it be so I am verily sorry, I pray you therefore let us goe see how his Majesty fareth. When you please my Lord (quoth the Princess) for I thinke if heretofore he receiues health by you, Fortune may at this time afford the like: and yet (as I haue read) there is no remedy for trouble some age, but onely death it selfe, which is the Gate to Immortality, and endeth all Diseases whatsoeuer. So entred they the Kings Chamber, and the Princess going to the Bed side to her Father, said: My Lord, see here the good Knight Palmerin your Nephew, may it please you to speake to him, and bid him welcome? Well know I that he is right welcome to your Majesty, were there no other cause then the happy recovery of your Majesty's health, which his Adventurous Traveill heretofore hath brought you.

The good Old King, whom the Pallie caused to shake and tremble: raised himselfe by a little, and beholding Palmerin, with weak and feeble voyce, thus spake. Come neare my Noble Sonne, that these armes halfe dead may embrace thee, and my lips now drie and withered, may once kisse thee before I die. So holding him between his armes, and lifting his eyes to Heauen, said. O my God, for ever be thy name honoied and praised, in touching me to see my Sonne before my death. Ah sweet death, the end of all afflictions, and beginning of felicity, now art thou welcome, for thoueart the stroke, in that I haue now seen the honorable defence of my Subjects hereafter, and such a worthy Friend

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

Friend for them, as never had they the like. Ah my Son, how dearly ought I to love thee? how gracious hath thy remembrance bene of me? yet seld I my selfe so weak and feeble, as nature cannot prolong my life thus long. Alas, I knowe not which of two waies hath greatest cause to rejoyce; either the Father seeing his Sonne, when when he is ready to leave him, or the Sonne seeing his Father about tending his coming before he give up the ghost. I hope my good Lord, said Palmerin, that you shall not leave us so soon, therefore take a good hart, and that no doubt will prolong your life. Alas my Sonne, quoth the King, but what age hath so weakened my body, and when dyed up my vital blood, as longer I may not live: and had not hope to see thee lengthened my languishing daies, thou hadst found my body breathlesse, which yett hath such feeble life, onely by thy presence.

Now that I may leave this world with content, and travaile with better quiet to mine end: tell me (good Sonne) the whole matter concerning thy Father Florendos with the perfect discourse of thine own sayings. And Palmerin rehearsed every circumstance, both of his Fathers doings, how he had married the Queens Griane, and in what estate he left them both at his departure.

CHAP. XL.

How the aged King *Primalcon* of *Macedon*, Grand-Father to *Palmerin*, dyed: and how the King of *Sparta* espoused the faire *Princesse Arismena*; Sister to Prince *Florendos*.



At two dayes had *Palmerin* stayed in the Court of his Grand-Father, but the aged King resigned his life to the celestiall powers: for which cause, all the Triumphs ceased, and generall sorrow entertained for the loss of their good King. *Arismena* who so tenderly loved her Father, as in his life time she would not match in Marriage with any one, because it was his will it should be so: never felt her selfe discontented therewith; but her Father being now dead, she committed the whole Ministry of the Realme to the Count *Roldin*, who appointed for that office by generall good liking. With such honorable pompe was the funerall Obsequies executed, and the Princesse gracious behauiour thereon so especially commended: as the yong King of *Sparta* became amorous of her, and discovered his minde to *Palmerin*, intreating him so to labour the same, as he might make *Arismena* his Queene.

Palmerin very ioyfull of the Kings motion, in that he was one of the chiefest Estates of Greece, acquainted his Aunt with the Kings request, and what an honor it was to her to be so matched. For was the Princesse hart so cold by her Fathers death, but seeing the yong beautifull King loved her so well, it began to warme againe: so that considering her owne estate, being now in yeares past foure and twenty, she made some excuses by her Fathers late decease,

decease, but *Palmerin* perceived by her modest yielding looks, that the heart consented, although the mouth was loth to utter it. Wherefore the next day they were espoused together, by which means the King was more affected to follow *Palmerin*, as he determined before he came from *Constantinople*: as well for the great kindness he found in him, as for his labour in furthering him with the end of his desires.

Now was the King more importunate on *Palmerin*, to accept him for his Companion in his Travell: who at length consented, although he imagined, that his Aunt had rather have her new Husband tarry with her. The day being appointed for their departure, *Palmerin* concluded with the King of *Sparta*, that he should send *Arismena* to *Constantinople*, there to stay his returne with her Brother *Florendos*. For her safe conduct thither, all the chiefest Knights that came thence with her were chosen, except Prince *Eustace*, donne to the Duke of *Mecena*. And *Palmerin* fearing his Voyage would be longer then he expected, commanded *Urbanillo* his Dwarf to return to the Queen *Arismena*: and if I stay (quoth he) longer then a yeere from *Constantinople*, go then to *Almaigne* with this Letter to comfort my Sister, and take with thee thy Sister, whom I sent to the Queen my Mother.

The Dwarf (although he had rather have gone with his Master, then attend on Ladies) not daring to gain say him, returned with *Arismena*, who in short time after arrived at *Constantinople*, where the Prince *Florendos* being ioyfully received her, being not a little contented that she was iorned in Marriage with the King of *Sparta*, yet his Fathers death he took very heavily. How welcome he was to the Emperour, Empresse, and Prince *Griana*, I doubt not but you can sufficiently imagine, who continually comforted her till her Husbonds returne. Before *Palmerin* departed from *Macedon*, he established all things in

The History Of *Palmerin D'Olive*

one and decent order, creating the Countie Rouldin Lieutenant Generall for the Molins: commanding as full, full obedience to him, as to their Sovereigne Lord the King his Father. Afterwards he took order that his Shipping might be ready, because he would delay no longer the search of Tryneus.

CHAP. XLI.

How *Palmerin* and his Companions sayling on the Mediterranean Sea, were taken by *Olimacch*, Admirall to the great Turke: and of their fortunes in *Greece*, where *Palmerin* saved *Laurana* the Princesse of *Durace*.



NOW Rouldin being established in the Government of Macedon, and the Shipping ready which *Palmerin* had appointed: he went aboard with his toward friends that would not leave him, viz. Frioll, the Prince Olorico, the Duke of Pontus, the King of Sparta, and Eustace come to the Duke of Mecena. These five having sworn they would in the search of Tryneus, committed themselves to the mercy of the Winds and Seas, not knowing where they should first take Landing. Being thus sailed five or seven dayes together, the Seas nothing rough or tempestuous: they climbed up to the main top, to see if they could discern any thing. And as they were beholding wearily together, they suddenly espied a great flect of shippes, which with winde at will made apace towards them: but because you shall understand of whence and what they were attend the sequel and you shall be resolved. The Prince Olimacch, as you have read in the former part of this History, after he had given the Princesse Agriola to the great Turke, entered

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

into so great credit, as in recompence of his gift, he was made high Admirall of Turkie: so that being rewarded for a Knight of parricide desert, the Turke gave him the charge of his great Army, wherewith he should continually disturb the Christians. This Olimacch was Generall of this huge flect deserv'd by *Palmerin*, wherof somewhat amysd, he called one of the Pilots, demanding if he knew the Cause of whence they were. The Pilot had no sooner beheld him, but he presently said they were Turkes, and no way was there for themselves to escape, because he saw the light Gallies were made out to him, and the rest came mainly by them. But *Palmerin* as a Prince experienced in dangers, thus spake to his Companions:

Public Gallies, where mightily force or bounty cannot abate, if we are so fully to visit, we are but five, and all in our flight, and cannot flye before we shall be taken: I therefore will therefore that we be soundly slain, and I shall at which fortune will better teach us the way to recover our faith, and release us in our Enemies to their confusion. We should have taken, and leave me alone to talk to them, because I can well speak the Arabian language. But I have not that cowardice or feare of death makes me to be so terrified: for in an action invincible, heretofore and famously but we will be esteemed as folly and insurrection. Have then patience, my good friends, I hope that all shall come to our good.

So soon as he ended his speech, but he heard the Capitaine command them to flye, as also they should do. Dye (quoth *Palmerin*) that goes very hard: assure us our lives, and we will, otherwise not. I promise thee, said the Capitaine, neither thou nor thy company shall have any harme. So saying upon the ship, they brought it to the Admirall Olimacch, presenting to him all the Knights they took therein: for which he heartily thanked them, saying.

Tell

Well me Gentlemen and dissemble not, are ye Turks or Christians? For, quoth Palmerin, saying, Fortune hath bene so contrary to vs, you shall understand truly what we are. We are Christians and pious knights, searching adventures to gaine honor and profit, in some Princes service, be he Heathen or Christian. And because we cannot now shew you what we are able to do: so please you to suffer vs enjoy our liberty, and graunt vs the benefite of our Armour, we will promise you feall and faithfull service. Olimaell, who was by nature stern and austere, seeing these six knights so young and brave accomplished persons, imagined their assistance would greatly abattle him wherefore he thus answered, Gentlemen, if you will stay to me by your faith, that you will not depart from us without my licence, but will loyally employ your selves in what I shall command: you shall have your Armour, gaine, and I will not use you as my Slaves and prisoners, but as my honest companions and friends. Which oath they all took to him, wherefore they were immediately armed againe, and remained in the Valley with Olimaell, who seeing their Armour so rich and costly, esteemed them to be of noble blood, and therefore caused them to be honorably intreated.

So saying on, at length they came nere to the great City of Albania, when Olimaell commanded these three souldiers, to goe understand in what estate the City was: who were advertised by certaine Frenchmen, that the people were oppressed of any fortifications, so that winning the Ports, the whole City might easily be conquered. These sayings caused them forcibly to enter the Haven, where setting all the shippes on fire, they were of force, and murdering the Warders at the Gates, took the City at the first assault, when Palmerin and his noble friends (to their great sorrow) declared how well they could skill of such matters. The City thus overcome, and

the chiefest Citizens therein taken prisoners, the Duke following their Fortune, marched further, and came to the City of Durace, where the faire Princess Laurana abode, of whom Palmerin was sometimes Amorous: when he imagined by her excellent Beauty, that it was she who so often solicited him in his Dreames. Palmerin being there come on Land, presently knew the Countrey: wherefore he said to his companions.

I now perceiue where Friends, that Fortune forceth vs from ill to worse: What speake I in respect of this City, against which we must be compelled to fight, and not many yeares since, with the price of my Blood I labored to defend it. But, because the Dukes Daughter is as worthy a Lady, as in my heart I reverence and honour: I beseech you every one employ your selves, to preserve both her and her Ladies, and demand them of the Admirall for our part of the spoyle.

Whiles Palmerin thus conferred with his friends, Olimaell understood by certaine Prisoners, that the City was very slenderly defended, and therefore no great matter to winne it quickly. Yet at the first assault, they were so ballantly repulsed, as Olimaell and his men beganne to despayre of victory: wherefore he made open Proclamation, that he who first entered the City, should haue of him any Ransome he would request. Palmerin joyfull of this promise, caused six strong Scaling-Ladders to be raised by against the Wall, wheron he and his friends ascended, and on the Wall cried, the City is ours: whereunto the people within were so dismayed, having endured a long and furious battell, as they all fled out at the further Gates. The Turks then burned the Gates on the Sea side, and entering the City, put olde and young to the sword. But Palmerin and his companions, fetching so purpose therein that Ransome, ranne straight to the Pallace, at the entrance whereof they found many Moors, who had taken the Duke, where-
soe

The History of Palmerin D'Oliua.

for they went to finde the Princesse Laurana, who sat in her Chamber, well nere dead with griefe, because she heard that her Father wasaine. Her he committed to the custody of the King of Sparta, Fryfoll, Olorico, and Eustace, desiring them to comfort the Princes, in that manner the of her Ladies should fall into the Tyrants power: and so coming to Olimaell, on his knees he began in this manner. You know my Lord the promise you made to day, by vertue whereof, because I first got over the wall into the Citty: for my share I request the Dukes Daughter, and for my friends that followed me, but Ladies and Gentlewomen, for other spoile of the riches and treasure we desire not.

Olimaell granted his demand, charging his people on paines of their liues, not any way to offend the Ladies. In this manner was the Princesse saved, whereupon the Duke of Pontus presently went to her, and taking her by the hand, acquainted her with these joyfull newes, where with she thus replied. Can it be possible that Palmerin, who heretofore ventured his life in my fathers defence, against the County Palasco of Meceua, should now become so familiar among Turks and Moors? Hath he so forgot his honor to God, that he is not only a traitor to the enemies of his faith, but hath likewise taken their destruction on that serbe Christ Jesus? Be silent good Madame, answered the Duke, for if his name be knowne we all perish: what hath bene done, is for the safety of your life, and our own likewise, which he hath obtained of the Generall of the Army.

With these wordes she was somewhat pacified, and the old ciuers of love, which now began to spread abroad, caused her returne this answer. In sooth my Lord, seeing I am become Palmerins prisoner, I thinke my honor in better assurance: and my fathers death is the lesse grievous to me, in that this matter may soone to better effect then

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

then I can conceiue. By this time was Palmerin come to her, who entreated her to keepe all things secretly, for he would endure a thousand deaths, before she should be any way dishonoured. In time (quoth he) we may be deliuered from these Hellhounds, as for you and your Ladies, the Admirall hath openly commanded that you be reverently bled.

Althou'and thanks my Lord, quoth the Princesse, and seeing matters are so come to passe, yet doe I reioyce that I fall into your power. The Citty of Durace left in the same state as Albania was, the Turkes went aboarde, taking no prisoners thence but Laurana and her Ladies, whom Olimaell intended to giue to the great Turke. So passing along the Coast of Thessalie, they spoiled many Citties on the Sea side, took the King and many Noble men: so that now they were stozed with a number of Christian prisoners. Now Olimaell feared, that the Christian Princes hearing what spoyle he made in their dominions, would raise a mighty power against him, wherefore he gave charge to his Pilots, to order their course towards the Citty of Tubant, where as then the great Turke kept his Court.

The King of Thessalie thre daies before his taking, sent his Queen (who was great with Child) to one of his Castles, a good daies journey from the Sea: but when she heard her Husbands misfortune, the griefe she conceived, caused her presently to fall in trouble, when she was deliuered of a wooly Daughter, named Francelina. At this time the three Magical Sisters, who appeared to Palmerin on the Mountain Artifaria, and one of them afterward in his going to Buda: made their abode in an Ile thereby named Carderia. When they (by their hidden Philosophy) heard how the King was taken, and should be kept in perpetual prison, without the helpe of his Daughter which was nowly borne: they concluded to frame such an enchantment

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

chantment, as murther the Turke and his power, as he that would not deigne to kisse his shooe, should be deliuered from imprisonment. Hereupon the youngest of those three Sisters went to the Castle where the woefull Queene remained, where she was very honourably entertained: because the Queene desired to know, if she knew her Husband was dead or alive, and if any hope might be expected of his deliuerance.

The Damosell Enchauntresse aduertised the Queene, that in departing with her Daughter *Francelina*, she King her Husband should enjoy his liberty, and in time to come, she should be married to one of the best Knights in the world.

We neede not doubt that the Queene was hereat amazed, yet the love of the Mother to her Infant, cannot conquer the Love of the Wife to her deere Husband: which among all Loves is the most honest and loyall: So that in hope to see him againe, on whom depended her wealth and welfare she gaue her Child to the Damosell, intreating that she might be used as beloued the daughter of a king and as the sweet beauty of the Infant deserved. She returning to Carderia, with the Child, made her Sisters very joyfull by her coming, who there nourished the Infant till she was three yeares old: when the beauty of the young Princeesse began to shew it selfe, as faire *Cynthia* dooth among the Starres.

Now did the Sisters enclose her in a strong Tower, made of purpose for young *Francelina*, wherein was the most goodly Garden in the world, there was she attended by her Purser, and five waiting Gentlewomen: and such Enchantment's were imposed in the Tower, as no man should euer see her, unlesse he were the best Knight of his time. The Entrance into the Tower was very strait and narrow, barred vpp with a great Gate of Iron and Guarded by two furious Lyons. Over the Gate stood a huge image of Copper, holding a mighty Scepter of Gold, wrought

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

wrought by such cunning, as if any Knight but he that was destined to end the aduenture, should assay to enter, hardly might he escape to returne againe. Moreover, the conqueror should not denie the first demand of the Princeesse, which was the deliuerance of her Father: and for this cause the Sisters enchanted the faire *Francelina*, whose History we must yet forbeare, proceeding where we left before.

Olimacell being thus on the Sea, laden with Christian spoiles and prisoners, at length entred the port of the great City of *Tubane*: where he made such a cheerefull noise of Drummes, Trumpets, Clarions and Cornets, as though the greatest Monarchy in the world had come to take landing. The great Turke marvelling at this suddaine melody, sent one of his Knights to vnderstand the cause, who being certified by *Olimacell*, what great victories he had obtained against the Christians and the number of prisoners he brought with him returned, to the Pallace, where he told his Lord that the Admirall *Olimacell* was come, and had brought with him great spoiles from the Christians, where among (quoth he) is a Christian King in personne, many worthy Knights and Gentlemen, and a young Princeesse of incomparable beauty. Not a little joyfull was the Turke at these newes, wherefore comming into his great Hall, where the imperiall scales of justice are erected, himselfe sat downe in the one, and faire *Agriola* of England in the other, expecting the comming of *Olimacell*: who in triumphant manner set forward with his prize, being mounted on a lusty Courser sumptuously caparaised, and abbauncing his sword beaume in signe of victory. Being come to the Pallace, *Olimacell* saluted his Lord with great reverence, standing by him to make report of his conquest, and make present of his prisoners after their estate and calling.

First he caused all the riches to be brought, and all the meanest

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

meanest captines one after another to his the great Turke
 wrote: then commanding them to be caried thence, he be-
 gan in this manner. It is not to be doubted, most high and
 mighty Monarch, that this victorie gotten on the Chri-
 stians, enemies to our Gods, hath bene obtained onely by
 your favour: therefore it is great reason, that to the princ-
 pall head of this enterprise, the great and chiefeest honour
 should be done. The witnes hereof are the treasures pre-
 sent, and their prisoners abiding your mercy: who from
 the very meanest to the highest, shall humble themsel-
 ves at your Majesties foote. When every man had done
 their reverence, and the King of Thessalie should next sal-
 low, who though his armes were pinnions behind him,
 yet had a Crowne of Gold on his heade to shew what he
 was although he saw himselfe in the Tyrants power, and
 Olimacell had commanded him to kisse his Masters foote,
 boldly made this answer. For will I so much displease my
 God, backcum: I a Tyrant as thou art in such sort to abuse
 my selfe, being a King, & administratour of justice to faith-
 full Christians: to kisse the foot of the most rascie and un-
 cleane creature in the world: profaning the worship which
 I onely owe to my maker. It is in thy power to take my
 life from me: but not to constrain me do the thing where-
 in consisteth my damnation, and a thousand deaths I will
 endure, before I pay so much as in thought to thee. Mel-
 laine (quoth the Admirall) dare thou speake so varou-
 rently in the presence of my Lord? did not my regarde of
 him withhold me, soone should I separate thy cursed head
 from thy shoulders. With these words he gave the King
 such a blow on the face, as made him fall on his knees to the
 ground.

As Traytour, quoth the King, well hast thou shewne
 the nature of a villaine, that without command askest a
 King captive, and unprovided of Armes: but might it so
 please thy Lord, in open field will I prove thee a d. Nor,
 all

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

all and unchristened Turke, that thus abused the blood roy-
 all. The great Turke seeing the King so moved and angry,
 the blood likewise trickling from his nose and mouth: com-
 manded him to be caried thence, to one of the strongest
 Castles in Nacolia, where he should be enclosed without a-
 ny company, that this captivity might be the more grie-
 vous to him.

When the King of Thessalie was departed, Palmerin
 approached, leaving the Princess Laura by the hand, he
 and his five companions being Armed, except their Hel-
 mets, Mantlets and Swords: whereat the great Turke
 marveling, demanded of Olimacell why he suffered them
 to be Armed? My Lord, quoth he, these are knights were
 the first prize I took, who (after they had given me their
 oaths) have done such service to your Majesty, especially
 this, pointing to Palmerin, one of the best knights that ever
 I saw: as full well doe they deserve liberty, which in re-
 compence of adventuring their lives in your service, under
 your high correction, I promised them. By Oathomet,
 answered the great Turke, for thy sake I likewise confirme
 it, and if hereafter they will abide with me, I will make
 them greater then ever they were. While the Turke was
 making these promises, Agriola having well noted Palme-
 rin, knew him, and with the suddaine conceite thereof was
 ready to swoone: but staying her selfe on her Chayre, sayd.
 O sole beauty, who is this? are not mine eyes deluded and
 my thoughts beguiled? At these words Palmerin know-
 her, which before he did not, by reason of her strange dis-
 guised apparell: yet thought he best to conceale his in-
 ward joy, least crooked Fortune should now againe pre-
 vent him.

The great Turke seeing Agriola looke so pale and wan
 started from his Chayre, and taking her in his armes,
 said. Alas Paname, hath any suddaine ill befallen thee? hath
 any one in this company offended thee? by our Gods if I
 know

The History of Palmerin D'Oliua.

knew him, presently should he die the death. The Prince, trembling with feare, seeing Hippolyta was not present, spake thus in English. What will my Lord and Husband Trineus say, if he be in this company, seeing I have so suddenly forsaken him, and thus (though God knows perforce) in stead of him, have taken the enemy to him and out-farther? But one comfort have I that this misfall hath not earned the knowme me, for which protection I thank the heavens in justice. At these speeches Palmerin was so glad, as to teare of he it could not with-holde him: but in the same long time he thus answered.

I am not good of name, Tryneus is not in our company: but to please you to say I am your Brother, you may be happy save my life, and practise your deliberance. The Turke misdoubting by Palmerins perswading, that he had caused this suddaine alteration: imagining him to be her Husband of whom he had heard her talke so often, in a great rage sayd, Knight, how durst thou presume my Ladies presence, knowing the sight of thee would any way displease her? By the Prophet Mahomet thou shalt immediately die, that all such audacious villaines may take an example by thee.

Agriola knowing the Turkes censures were very peremptory and commonly no sooner said then executed, embracing him thus replied. Oh my Lord, do not the thing in haste, for which afterward you will be sorry, for I assure you on my honor, the Knight that spake to me is my Brother, and hath left his Countrey onely to find me: and him do I love so effectually, as if you put him to death, impossible is it for me to live afterward. When the Turk heard her speake with such effect in qualifying his anger, said, I promise ye Madame, for your sake, he shall have no harme, but he entertaines with love and honour: conditionall ye, that you forget this melancholy, and henceforth shew your selfe more pleasant, for in seeing you sad I am more

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

grieved, then if I had lost y^e most of my dominions. In sooth my Lord answered Agriola, now shall I be merry, seeing you intend to love my Brother, for greater good cannot happen to me then his gentle entreatance: and henceforth shall I treade under foot, the said remembrance of my Countrey & parents, having him with me, by whom I hope to gaine my greatest comfort. So the Turke arising from his Chayre, caused Palmerin and Laurana to accompany Agriola, and the other five Knights having kissed his hand: he went to his Chamber, commanding Olimacell (for his greater honour) to usher Agriola, who as she went, thus spake.

Believe me Madamzell, if I was offended when thou broughtest me Prisoner hither: thou hast now made me sufficient amends, in that by this I enjoy my Brother, whom I was out of all hope to see againe. Alas Madame, (quoth he) little did I thinke him to be such a one, for had I his visage should have been much better which sault I hope hereafter to recompence. I commend him to thy courtesie, said Agriola, let him and his friends have all things they want, according as my Lord hath appointed. So taking her leaue of them, she entred her Chamber, where she and Hippolyta conferred with Laurana, of all her fortunes past, and the adventures of her Brother. Now was Palmerin and his companions, by the Turkes commandment, lodged nere the Pallace, and to each of them he sent a goodly house with costly furniture, thinking by these means to conquer Agriola, and purchase that of her which he long had desired, and talking with Palmerin, said. Right well may you be Brother to my Lady Agriola, in that your beauty and complexion belideth great likelihood: Seeing then our Gods have permitted, that for her comfort you should be brought hither: perswade her I praye, that she be no longer repugnant to my will, for could I have a Child by her, I would think my selfe the happiest Lord on the earth.

Well, I would have you forsake the folly of your Chastity, and give your selfe to our Law, which is much better then yours: and you shall see how our Gods will favour you, likewise what great good you shall receive thereby. My Lord (quoth Palmerin) I will labour with my Sister, so much as lies in me to do, as for your Law as yet I am unacquainted therewith: but when I shall finde it to be such as you assure me, easily may I be drawn thereto, and to serve you with such loyalty, as so great an estate both to my selfe deserue. I confesse my selfe likewise greatly bound to your Majesty, in that you have accepted my Sister as your Wife, and to me a prize have given both Life and Liberty, which I beseech you also graunt the Prisoners, in whose Well it was my chance to be taken, in so doing they may be greatly moved by your magnificent liberality and mercy.

The great Turke presently gave his consent, causing theyr safe Conduct to be openly proclaimed: So Palmerin and his Friends humbly departing to their Longing, the Turke went to Agriolae Chamber, where sitting downe by her, he thus beganne. How shall I perceive Madam, how much your Brother may preuaile with you: for he hath promised me so to order the matter, as you shall grant my long desired fate. My Lord (quoth she) my Brother shall commaund me nothing, but I will do it with all my heart: as for your request, it is not in my power, but in the hand of God, who defendeth me as best him pleaseth. For can I change the opinion I have held so long: though by having my Brother with me, I enjoy farre greater content then I did before.

It sufficeth me (saie the Turke) to see you so well pleased, and as for your Brother, that you may perceive how well I love him: before one Month be expired, I will make him the chiefeest Lord in my Court, next mine owne person: so kissing the Princess, he departed to his Chamber.

ber. The day following, Palmerin said to his companions, Pass on my Friends, how friendly Fortune smileth on vs. but least she change, as evermore she is wont: woman, practise some good means to escape from these Turkish Inuols. Well, seeing we have found the Princess Agriola I hope Tryneus is not so secretly hidden, but we shall heare some tydings of him. Of her therefore will I enquire, if we know what became of him & Ptolome, when I left them: in meane while you may closely conclude with our Prisoners, that they be ever ready at an houres warning, for I hope we shall see hence before eight daies be past. Palmerin went to Agriolae Chamber, and there by good hap he found her alone: whom after he had humbly saluted, the Princess thus spake to him. My noble Friend, you must be carefull how you spake to me, especially before the aged Lady you saw here yesterday, for she understandeth all languages, and if we be discovered, there is no way but death: therefore when you see her with me; confesse rather with Laurana, and say to her what you would have me know, because she is a Lady both vertuous and faithfull. No lesse (Madame) have I alwaies found her, quoth Palmerin: therefore I beseech you make account of her, and acquaint her with your greatest affaire, for she is Daughter to one of the most gentle Princes in the world. But Madam, I would gladly know what became of Tryneus, also that so unhappily I departed from you: The Admirall Olimaell, quoth she, came with his Gallies so soon as you were departed, who took vs and then separated vs in sunders: sent permitting me to spake to him & Ptolome, no knowing I what is become of them. It sufficeth then Madam, answered Palmerin, that I have found you, for on you dependeth the life of Tryneus, who shall not long (I hope) be concealed from us: therefore advise your selfe on the day when you will depart, for I have a ship ready to carry you from this servitude. Thanks be to heaven, quoth

The History Of *Palmerin D'Oliua*

the, for so good fortune, I will be so ready as you shall not say for me. Now entered Hyppolita, who brake off their talks to other occasions, where we will leave, and returne to the Prince Trineus.

CHAP. XLII.

How *Tryneus* being Enchanted into the Shape of a Dog in the Isle of *Malfada*, there came a Princess of the *Moors*, who requested him of the aged Enchantresse, to whom he was given: and what happened to him afterward.

THinks as yet you remember, without repetitions of the former discourse, in what manner the Knight, taken to the Admirall Oli-maceli, to whom the Prince Trineus was given: arrived by Tempest in the Isle of *Malfada*, and how he with his people, were transformed into diuers Shapes of Beasts, among whom *Tryneus* had the likeness of a goodly Dog. Being thus disguised, a young Princess named *Zephira*, Daughter to the King of the same Country, came to demand counsell of the aged Enchantresse *Malfada*, for the cure of a certaine Disease, which by strange adventures happened to her in this manner.

This young Princess one day being pleasant in her Fathers Court, among many of her beuytiful Ladies: entered a goodly Garden, which abounded with great diuersity of sweet flowers, and after she had walked a pretty while in an Arbour of Spike-roses, she espied a Willey-flower, which seemed so faire and beautifull in her eye, as she was provoked to goe crop it from the stalk. Having this delicate flower in her hand, wherein (by misfortune) a venomous worme was crept, she took such delight in smelling it:

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

it: as her breath blew by the worme into one of her pores, she was not bring able to get it out againe. So the venom and poison of this little worme engendred a putrefaction, and other like Tumours, which gave a smell so filthy and loathsome, as hardly could any abide to stand by her. Her father not a little grieued at this mischance, sent for the most skillfull Physicians, to know what remedy might be concluded upon: but all their pain and travell was in vain, for the Disease continued still without any amendment. In the end, the King fearing it would turne to a Canker incurable, and having heard what strange things the Enchantresse *Malfada* performed, sent the Princess *Zephira* to her, where she being arrived without any danger, because she would not hurt any inhabiting in the Isle, declared to the Princess the whole manner of her misfortune.

The Enchantresse answered that she could give her no remedy, and hardly should she finde any at all, except it were by an ancient Knight, who remained in the Courts of the King of *Romata* and *Grisca*, Realms subject to the Souldan of *Persia*, and the Knight was named *Muzabelino*. The Princess was so displeased at this answer, seeing her intent frustrated, as she would receyve no succourance: wherefore walking in the fields, to expresse her anger, and so to the Sea-side, where the ships lay consorted, she beheld the Dog which was the Prince Trineus, and so farre in liking was she with him, as she desired the Enchantresse to give him her, and having obtained her request, returned to her father, who lay sick in one of his Cities called *Nabor*, whereof the whole Kingdome bare the name.

When the King saw his Daughter returned without cure, his melanchallike conceit so took to his hart, as within three dayes after he died. Having made his Testament before his decesse, he gave his Daughter as her portion a

Citty called Elain, one of the greatest & surest strengths in the Realme, with all the Signories belonging thereto. So Maulerino his youngest Sonne, he gave an other like position, which was a daies journey distant from Elain. After the things funerall rites were solemnized, the Princeesse with her Brother Maulerino, went to their owne possessions: doubting the fury of the Prince Tyreno, their Close Brother, who alwaies had shewne himselfe proud and contentious.

She being thus in good quiet by her selfe, took no other pleasure then in playing with her Dog, because he seemed very subtil and politique, so that she prepared a Couch for him at her Beds side. Tyreno being crowned King after his fathers decease, began greatly to despise that his Sister should enjoy the fairest Citty in the Kingdom: for which cause he cunningly practised all the meanes he could to put her to death. And that he might the better compass his mischievous purpose, he secretly sent a Messenger to the Master of the Princeesses Houses, that if he would but consend to kill or poison his Brother and Sister, he would give him fifty thousand Seraphes, and make him Governour of Elain. The wicked Noble man, greedy and covetous, seeing the large promise of the Tyrant, consented thereto: so that one night the Princeesse being asleep, he entered her Chamber with his sword drawn, there to have murdered her, and afterward the Prince her Brother.

Tryneus, who had lost nothing belonging to a man, but nobly shape and voice, seeing the Traytor enter his Ladies Chamber with his Weapon drawn, started up presently, and setting his two forefeet on the Villains breast, bit him so cruelly by the face and throat, as he being unable to help himselfe, was constrained to cry out aloud. With this noise the Princeesse awaked, and her Brother likewise, who lay in the next Chamber, coming in haste to see the cause of this outcry: and knowing the Traytor, beat him so sore with the

the pommel of his sword about the stomack, as in the end enforced him to confesse his Treason. Whereat Maulerino not a little merwalling, and wrathfull at his villainous intent, smote his head from his shoulders. In the morning he appointed such guard in the Citty, as no stranger might enter without great examination. The Princeesse knowing how her Dog had saved her life, loved him afterward so tenderly, as she would feed him at her owne Table, and none but her selfe might give him any food. Here will he likewise pursue a while, and declare the deliberance of the Princeesse Agriola.

CHAP. XLIII.

How the great Turk became enamoured with the Princeesse *Laurana*, by meanes whereof he was slaine, and *Agriola* delivered.



DAlmerin being upon a day in his Chamber with his companions, practising some meanes for the deliverance of *Agriola* the Princeesse *Laurana* of *Durace*, came to them, framing her speeches in this manner. Gentlemen, if any of you be desirous to deliver us from this cruell enemy, who holds us in this thral and bondage: I have devised the best meanes that may be, and thus it is. The Turke, the most luxurious and unchaste man in the world, not contented with infinite number of Concubines, hath many times made love to me, so that to compass mine intent, I have made him promise within thre daies to graunt his request. In this time I have intreated the Princeesse *Agriola* to shew him the most obsequious countenance that may be, which she hath faithfully compassed, and for this cause hath sent me to you, to convey hence

hence all the riches he hath given ye, and which she herself will likewise send ye: so that when the houre is come for me to fulfill his pleasure, one of you being privily armed, shall in my place murder him, in revenge of the ill Chastendome hath sustained, by the last unhappy voyage of Olimell, who determineth very shortly, as I understand, to goe spagle the Isle of Rhodes. Palmerin very glad of the Princesse notable invention, thus answered. Where cause (Padam) I lately promised the Turke, not to forsake his Court, but to keepe him company, when he beneyed his Admirall, that I and my companions should goe with him to the Rhodes: I cannot be the man to end this worthy revenge, therefore one of you (my Friends) must resolve to performe it. As meane while, you Padam Laurana may retorne to the Turke, pleasing him with faire and friendly speeches: for if never so little suspicion be gathered, not one of us can escape with life. Feare not, said the Princesse, I will be the matter so carefully as you can desire, right well know I how to enflame his hart with quaint looks, coy disdaines, feint peldings, and other such like ceremonies used in love: as feare not you to prosecute the stratageme, in that a beginning so good, must needs last to a successe end. The young Duke of Pontus, who began to grow affectionate towards the Princesse Laurana, said.

In sooth my Lord, so please you to commit the charge hereof to me: so well hope I to execute the same for his sake that tis so worthily invent it, as I dare warrant to deserve no reproch thereby. For my first earnest to gentle Love, shall be so gracious, as in qualifying the unlawfull hate of our enemy, I will bind my selfe never to love any other: and her faith received, if I bring not his heart to Padame Laurana, let me be accounted as one of the worst of all Knights that ever bare Armes. Advise me therefore of the place and howe, and doubt not of my faith.

full performance. At this pleasant answer they all began to smile, whereupon Palmerin thus spake. Welcome me noble Duke, considering your youth and brave disposition, I know no one in this company more meet for the Princesse Laurana, then you are: but I thinke when the appointed houre shall come, you will be a little more angry with the Turke than ter, if she have you in that subjection as it seems she hath. But let us not now trifle the time in baite, when such weightie occasions commandeth our diligence.

So returned Laurana to the Princesse Agriola, acquainting her with the Knights determination, when not long after, the great Turke entered the Chamber, accompanied with Palmerin and the King of Sparta, and that he might the better speake to her he so earnestly desired, he caused Palmerin to sit betwixt him and Agriola, then turning to Laurana, he began to devise familiarly with her. Which when Palmerin and Agriola perceived, the better to beguile him, he made a signe to the King of Sparta, that he would enter into some talke of hunting: whereat the Turk presently arose, and taking Laurana by the hand, led her to the window, with these speeches. Mistress of my heart, and the very fairest creature that ever mine eyes beheld, will ye grant the request I make to you yesterday? What you not what great honour I have done to Padam Agriola? Notwithstanding, if you will love me, I will make you my wife, that I may have issue by you to succeed in my Kingdoms, and your honours shall be nothing inferiour to hers. And though she still deny me the favour, which with long and continuall pursuite I have desired: yet doe you consider my griefe, and in short time you bestow me no pity, the extreme afflictions I endure for your love, are raised at the price of my life. God forbid, quoth Laurana, that so great a losse should come to the Orientall Empire by me, rather will I forget the accustomed regard of mine honour, to be accepted into your grace and favour. And she said.

The History of Palmerin D'Oliua.

cause that made me deferre so long from this answer, was the feare I haue of Madame Agriola, and her Mother, to whom I was giuen by your Admirall after my Fathers decease.

But to the end my Lord, that none of them may suspect our love, I thinke it convenient that Hyppolita, who alway lieth in your Chamber: restore her selfe to the Ladies attending on Agriola, and her shall you command to giue me the key of my Ladies Chamber, which hitherto she hath vsed to carry. By this meane way I the more safely, and without suspicion of any one, come in the night to fulfill your desire. The Turke imagined he had gained the Princesse love: insooe, was not a little joyfull wherefore he said.

Sweete Lady, you shall haue the key as you request, nor shall she longer lodge in my Chamber, whom you feare so much. Moreover, this night will I perswade Agriola, that I take my selfe not halfe currant: and therefore to keepe her selfe in her owne Chamber, and so may you come boldly to me this night. If any one chance to meete you, say, that I sent for you: and if they dare be so bolde as to hinder your coming, in the morning shall my Souldiers put them to death, whatsoever they be. So taking a Ring from his finger, wherein was a stone of inestimable value, he gaue it to the Princesse, saying. Hold Madame, take this as a pledge of my promise: for which Laurana humbly thanking him, thus replied. My Lord, I see Agriola hath foure or fife times earnestly noted you, I thinke it good therefore that we breake off talke: assuring you that I will not faile at midnight, when every one is fast asleep to keepe my word, and in the mantle which you sent me yesterday, I will courageously enter your Chamber, conditionally that you keepe your promise to me afterward.

Now not therof, said the Turk, and so taking his leave of her, went presently to his Chamber, where finding Hyppolita

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

Hypolita, he commanded her to take thence her Web, and carry it to the Ladies Chamber, likewise taking the key from her, he sent it by one of his Pages to Laurana, who having it in hand, came laughing therewith to Palmerin, saying.

How say you my Lord, haue I not handled the matter as it should be? The Turke moued with pittie of our wretched imprisonment, hath giuen me the charge of Madame Agriola: so by his Page hath he sent me the key of her Chamber, and Hypolita shall lodge new among other Ladies. And because this night the action must be fulfilled, for you advertised the Duke of Pontus, that at midnight he shold come, to see drunken Holoternes as he hath deserved. Palmerin and the King of Sparta, praising God that their affaires went so farre so luckily: returned to their lodging, intreating Agriola to be ready at the houre, that their intent might not be hindered by her. Afterward they rehearsed to their companions, what was concluded by the Princesse Laurana: wherefore quoth he to the Duke, prepare to bring your Armour secretly to Agriolacs Chamber, where you shall finde the King of Sparta and my selfe. Meane while, Frysol, Olorico and Eustace, set that all our baggage be conuayed into our ship, which may safely be done without suspect, considering what great multitude of Souldiers are imbarquing, and therefore provide all things ready against our coming. The houre being at hand, Palmerin, the King of Sparta, and the Duke of Pontus, went to the Princesse Chamber, where the Duke was immediately armed, except his Helmet, which he left on the Table, covered with the mantle wherof Laurana spake, putting on the Armes the Princesse wore upon her head, and so finely was he disguised in those habits, as in the dark he might be reputed rather a woman than a man, and being ready to depart about the practise, he said to Palmerin. I thinke it best my Lord, that you and the King of Sparta, conduct

The History of *Palmerin D'Oltra*.

conduct the Ladies before to the Doore: for if in mine attempt, I should happen to faile, yet should you loose but the worst in your company. So importunate was he with them to follow his advice, as he caused them to depart presently to the Haven, where they were joyfully welcomed by Fintoll, and the rest, without meeting any by the way to hinder them. When the Duke saw himselfe left alone, and now he was to dispose himselfe to his intent, falling on he thus spake.

My God, that suffered the mighty Holofernes to be beheaded by the Servant Iudith: afford me at this time the like grace, and give me strength to worke his death, who is the greatest living enemy to Christians. This said, he went to the Turke Chamber, where he found the doore ready open, and approaching the bed: the Turke (who verily thought it was Laurana) raised up himselfe, and taking him by the arme, said. Welcome sweete Lady, for very long have I expected thy coming. Ah Traytor, quoth the Duke. I am not she. How look'st thou? regard of honour will not suffer her to tarry in such sort. With which words he stabd him to the heart, and smiting off his head, wrapp'd it in the shewle that Laurana gave him: so going to Agriolles Chamber, and clasping on his Helmet, went presently to his friends, whom he found in prayer for his good success, and shewing the head into Laurana's lap, said.

Madame, he that was so importunate for your dishonour, as a witness of his love to you, hath sent you his head here by me: wherewith I present you so devoutly, as henceforth I dedicate my life & service to your disposing. A thousand thanks my Lord, quoth the Princesse, who vertuous and hath made me so constantly to be yours: as in any thing that toucheth not the impeach of mine honour, I remaine with my uttermost endeavours to please you. As the Duke would have replied, the other Knights came to
 looke

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

looke on the head, which when they had cast into the Sea, they presently boiled saile, and before day had gotten saile enough from thence.

In the morning, as the Parriners came from their Gallies towards the City, they espied the head floating on the water, and taking it up, shewed it to their companions, to know if they could tell whose it was. When they beheld it so dreadful, the mustachoes strutting out like stiffe bastiles, and the locks of hayre hanging shagging downe, they knew not what to thinke: and one of them having well marked it said:

We all our Gods, if I be not deceived, this is the head of my Lord the great Turke: at which words all the other began to scorne and mock. Hyppolita seeing faire Phoebeus let forth the morning light, came to the Princesse Agriolles Chamber, where not finding her nor Laurana, the chamber likewise full of many things: she doubted immediately that they were fled, wherof to be resolved, she went to the great Turke chamber, and seeing the Pages standing at the doore, said; Why enter ye not? the house is past, and my Lord is not yet risen. Lady, quoth they, as yet he hath not called us, and you know that yesternight he forbade our entrance till we were called: it may be he slept but badly this night, and therefore now is contented to take his rest. I feare, quoth she, some other matter then sleepe doth hinder his calling you, so thrusting open the doore, and entring the Chamber, saw the blood dispersed on the ground, and the headlesse trunk hanging beside the bed, with which sight she made a very pittifull outcry, wherewith many noble men and Gentlemen came, who likewise beholding what had happened, joynd with them in sorrowfull complaints. Soone was the report of this murder blazed through the City, so that Olimaell hearing thereof, ranne thither in all haste: where he was no sooner present, but Hyppolita thus began. Ah Olimaell, thou broughtest

broughtest the traitors hither, that haue slain my Lord, and by thy means hath this Treason been committed. By all our Gods, said one of the Turks. Nephewes present, it is true: but because thou hast suffered Agriola, thy Brother and the other Knights to escape, thou Villain shalt abide severely. So saying forth his Seminary, killed Olimaell therewith, saying. Such be their reward that traitorously betray their Soueraigne: mine Vnckle of a worse Janizary made thee his chiefest Admirall, and thou for his kindnesse hast requited him with death, but now thy Villany is worthily recompenced.

Olimaell thus slaine, his men ranne furiously on the Turks Nephew, and slew him, with fifty Knights besides that defended his quarrell: and had it not been for an ancient Bassa, who with an hundred Souldiers came to part them, they were in danger of a greater sediton, because they saw none pursue Palmerin and his Companions.

The Bassa that had thus pacified the tumult, by promises perswaded the Janizaries, and prevailed so well with them: as the same day he was declared younger Brother to the Soldane deceased, and great Emperour of Turkie. Many injuries did he to Christians afterwarde, in revenge of his Brothers death: which yet we will forbear, to rehearse what happened to Palmerin, and his Companions, being on the Sea.

CHAP. XLIII.

How *Palmerin* and his companions met two Turkish Ships, from whom they delivered *Estebon* the Merchant and his Sonnes: and came to the Isle of *Malfada*, where *Palmerin* lost them all, and of the sorrow he made for this mishap.



Aurana was so joyfull, that she had so fortunately escaped the Turkes hands, and besides was so revenged of her chiefest enemy, as nothing could yield her greater contentation: but how much more would she have rejoiced, if she had knowne the daughter at the Palace? As she sat discomfiting heron with Palmerin and the Duke of Pontus, Frisoll being aloft on the becke, espied some Shippes coming towards them with full sail: whereupon he called to his companions, that they should presently arme themselves. For (quoth he) I see two flying Shippes, and they have taken two other, or else my judgement faileth: let us therefore labour to withstand them, lest we runne a further danger.

So sooner had he spoken these words, but they all put themselves in readinesse, so that when the enemy closed with them, and many entred the Ship, thinking it was gained: they had a sharper entertainment then they expected, for not one escaped alive that came aboard, but either were slaine or throwne into the Sea. In briefe, they overcame both the Pirats, and left not one alive to carry tidings hereof into Turkie. Afterward, as Palmerin searched the Cabins, to see what Prisoners the Shippes had taken: he espied his Father Estebon, the Merchant of Hermida, and his two Sonnes by him, with two other Merchants chained

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

chained by the hands and neck, in like sort as are the poor
slaves in the Gallies: whereupon he said?

Trust me Master, he that put this Coller about your
Necke, was little acquainted with your honest humanity.
So looking up and downe, for the bunch of Keyes, that open-
ned the Locks of the chaynes, he espied a Turkish Warri-
mer, who fearfull of his life had hid himselfe: to whom he
said: By God villain, if thou thewest me not quickly where
the Keyes are, I will send thy soule after thy fellows. Where
my life most noble knight cryed the Turk, and I will give
ye not only the Keyes, but also shew you such secrets here,
with in, as no other now but my selfe can shew you, wherein
is infinite wealth and riches.

Dispatch then (said Palmerin.) The Moore fetching
the Keyes, opened the Locks, took off their Chaynes, and
broke the Panacles round about their hands: when Pal-
merin, lifting his eyes to Heaven, said: Thanks to my
God, that so happily sent me to succour Estebon, by whose
meanes I came to the knowledge of my friends and Pa-
rents, and who first gave me Hoys and Armoz for knight-
ly service. Estebon hearing his words, and marvailling
not a little, fell on his knee, saying. I beseech you my Lord
to tell me your name, to the end I may be thankful to him,
by whom I have escaped these cruel Insects, and received
such an unspeakable benefit. Wherby Master (qd. Palmerin)
know you me not? I am your Merchant Palmerin, who you
first provoked to follow armes by your liberality: and
ever since have I followed that profession, and now have re-
quited some part of your kindeesse. Ah my noble friend
Palmerin, said old Estebon, suffer me to kiss thy hand, for
if heretofore thou dost deliver me from the Lyons throat:
what may I say of this danger, from which I am now de-
livered? In a happy houre was that knightly furniture
given, and with successfull fortune have you employed
them: but may it please ye, to goe with me, I will provide
you

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

you of all things necessary, and give you my Sonnes here
to be your Servants.

The King of Sparta (being Estebon his such zealous
speeches, said to him. Father, you are very much deceived
imagine you the Sonnes to the Emperour of Constantinople,
a simple Monsieur: your age (father) makes you so,
not your selfe. At these words the good old man somewhat a-
frighted, excused himselfe to the King, and turning to Pal-
merin, said: Alas, my Lord, in not knowing you otherwise
then one of my Servants, I have offered your excellency
very great wrong: and great hath bene my desert of pu-
nishment, being the great Lord of Grece so irreverently:
But pardon my boldnesse, noble Lord, and let mine igno-
rance excuse the offence committed: for unwittingly did I
fall into this error. Content thy selfe, good Master, quoth
Palmerin, in nothing hast thou offended me: but if thou
wilt returne to thy Countrey, these Jewells belonging to
the Jewes, and all the treasure of them, will I franchely
bestow on thee. Ah my Lord, answered Estebon, since for-
tune hath so happily brought me into your company, so
please you to licence me, loth am I to depart from you: for
such Roys of Thieves and Robbers are on the Seas, as
hardly can I escape their hands alive, and soyre should I
be, said Palmerin, that you or those Merchants should any
way miscary, though perhaps your Jewells would glad-
ly have ye at home: but this I must tell ye, that I cannot
returne to Constantinople. I shall be contented, said Este-
bon, to stay your good lecture: for a peace life is better to me
in this company, then welthy possessions among mine ene-
mies.

Whereupon, Palmerin commanding all the riches
in the Jewes shippes, to be conveyed into the other, set
fire on the Jewells, and having sailed, rode on merrily. With-
in three daies after arose a mighty winde at North East,
which caried them with such violence: as the Pilots tolde

The History Of *Palmerin D'Oliua*

Palmerin they were now come on the borders of Persia and very nere the Isle of Malfada, where they arrived before the Sunne setting. They seeing the Countrey so faire and delitable, would needs goe one hoze to refresh themselves: for the Ladies were so discompered with the rough Roome, as they were very desirous to recreate themselves a little.

Palmerin not able to shun this fatall chance, went on hoze with his friends and the two Princeses, all the other likewise speedily following them, where they had not long stayed, but they were all diversly enchanted. Both the Ladies were transformed into the shape of Hinds, the other to Dogges, Wolves and Leopards. All of them running with such swiftness, as though the hounds had food to chase them: but Palmerin could not be enchanted, by reason of the gift he receiued of the three wise Sisters on the Mountaine Artizria, whereat he greatly grieved, for such was his impatience thus to lose his friends, as he entered into these lamentations.

Oh peruerse and inconstant Fortune, how diuers and dangerous are thy treacheries? Oh stepmother too cruell, why dost thou not exercise thy rage on simple and forsaken soules, but on such as excede in honoz and vertue? Doubtless my sinne hath caused this mishap, when I perswaded my friends to goe against their Christian Brethren, only by feare of my wretched life. As he stood thus complaining, he beheld the Lady of the Isle with her seruants, coming to take the spoyle of their boate: whereof being ioyfull, and thinking by her viues to find some succour, he ran apace towards her, and falling on his knee, thus spake. Alas noble Lady, if euer pittie had power to moue ye: instruct me how to recouer my companions, and the two wretched Ladies transformed into brute Beastes. Malfada swelling with anger, that he was not likewise enchanted, answered. Wretched knight, accursed be

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

their power that defended thee from my incantations, like me then in hope to find any remedy here: for these enchantments are of such strength, as they may not be broken, but by the most skillfull Magician in the world, which thou art not. I am well assured, and therefore dost thou but lose thy labour. But because by mine arte I cannot be reuenged on thee, some other meanes will I seek for thy destruction. Thou therefore my seruants, lay hands on him, and carry him to the darkest of my prisons: that his following daies may be spent in greater misery. Unconscionable and despightfull, quoth Palmerin, are these speeches, especially coming from one that vaunteth of her knowledge, nor can they be measured by love or charity: and therefore shall I chastise such bad creatures, as refuse a matter no way hurtfull to themselves, but wherein their owne honour might be discerned. With which words he smote her head from her shoulders, and ballantly buckling with the other, in the end left not one to carry repoze of this massacre: afterward he fell into his lamentations againe in this manner.

Unfortunate Palmerin, dost thou not how mishap will neuer leave thee? for where thou thoughtest with comfort to finde thy Brother Tryneus, now hath Fortune overwhelmed thee with a whole world of mischaunces. Oh noble Agriola and gentle Laurana, two of the most modest Princeses that euer the earth bare, how may ye justly blame me bying you from where you liued in honoz, in this accursed place to be transformed to brute Beastes. Neuer did Circes deale so cruelly with Grillus, and other Houlsters to the wise Vlysses: as this villanous old hag hath done with me. Had you yet bene altered to Lyons or Tigers, you might have defended your selves from the cruelty of other Beastes: but this damned Sorceresse hath transformed you, to the most fearefull and timorous among all other creatures, and therefore subject to every inconvenience.

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

Al! loyall companions who loved me better then your
father or Brother : from the Turks that cherished you
with such kindness and love, have I brought you to the cru-
ell and merclesse Malfada. My noble friend and Brother
Frycoll, what now will availe thy haughty Chivalrie ?
And gentle Prince Olorico, who for my sake forsooke Coun-
try, Parents, friends and all : how maist thou justly
condemne me of infamous reproch ? what answer shall I
make to mine Aunt Arismena, for her noble Husband the
King of Sparta ? And vertuous Duke of Pontus, a knight
of high and especiall quality : greatly maist thou blame
thy fortune to be acquainted with me. For forgetting the
magnanimous Prince Eustace, how can I excuse thy hard
hap to the good old Duke of Mecena thy father ? Had it
pleased the Sovberaigne Creator of all things, that among
you my selfe had taken the strange shape, my quiet would
have bene the better, to accompany you with mischance,
as I have none in good fortune. Ah sweete Sister Armi-
da, little thinkest thou what offence thy Brother Palmerin
hath committed : and gracious Mistresse Polynarda, what
forment will this be to your heavenly thoughts, when
you shall understand the summe of my ill successe ? Wan-
dering along in these mounes, he came to the Enchantresse
Castell, where at the Gate he saw two Damselfs, who
humbly saluting him, said. Welcome, Sir knight, here
may you repose your selfe if you please. Alas Ladies, quoth
he, it is now no time for me to rest, because the Rule of
this place I thinke, being the most ingrate and despightfull
woman that ever I saw, hath dejected me of all my joy
and comfort : but I hope I have so well paid her for her
paines, as hereafter she shall doe no farther harme. Yet if
any of you have been so well instructed by her, as to undo
the devilish conjurations, and will accomplish it, or tell
me, if so force they may be riddered to their former shapes,
who remains enchanted here in this Island : so ever
will

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

will I be her knight, and will preferre her in honour be-
yond all other of her race. The Damsells, (who thought
they Ladies cunning had brought him thither, that she
might abuse him, and afterwards transforme him as was
her custome) being amazed at this answer, thus spake.

Accursed Willaine, of an evil death maist thou be, whom
our Mistresse by her Artificiall skill cannot transforme, now
know we that thou hast murdered her : but assure thy selfe
to finde us thy two most mortall enemies, and though we
can change thy friends to their former shapes, yet in dis-
spight of thy Willaine, we will not, nee shalt thou know
how it may be done.

Alway Trumpets (quoth he) get ye going, or else I
will send your soules after your Mistresse : and were it not
a disgrace to mine honour, to besle my hands with the blood
of such wicked creatures : By Heavens I would cut ye as
small as Ashe to the pot. When came a knight scotth of the
Castell, who embracing Palmerin, said : My Lord Palme-
rin, what cruell fortune hath brought you into this accursed
Island ? Palmerin seeing such strange events succede
one another, knew not what to imagine : but at length re-
turned this answer. You maist hold me excused for, for in
truth I know ye not : Why my Lord (quoth the knight)
have you forgotten Dyardo, whose life you defended in the
King of Bohemias Court ? By Heaven (said Palmerin)
I could not call you to remembrance, But tell me good
knight, what adventure brought you hither ? For my chance
hath bene so unfavourable, as the rehearfall would be most
dolorous. When Dyardo declared, how the King had sent
him with some small assistance, to pursue the Roys of the
Prowly Pyrates, who had done many injuries to his Sub-
jects. And (quoth he) after I had long time chased them,
the other Gallies came, and joining with them, took me
and slew all my men.

At length, by tempestuous weather, we were cast on this

The History Of *Palmerin D'Oliua*

He, where he landing to seek fresh Water, all the Moores were changed into Warts, Dogs, and Boies: but the Lady sparing me in regard of amorous desire, hath kept me in this Castle a yeare and moze, abusing me at her stons pleasure, and neuer could I compasse any means to escape hence againe, for if I had but made offer neare the Gate, by sozible strokes haue I ben beaten backe, yet not able to discern who smote me.

Your hap (quoth Palmerin) hath bene very hard, but her carred head lying on the Gaze she, perswades me hereafter she shall doe us moze harme. But tell me good Dyardo, is there no one within so skillfull in her Magicall Science, as we may winne to doe us some good? Not one (answered Dyardo) therefore I am loth you should stay long here, in doubt of further danger. I will then (said Palmerin) go seek such a one as shall end these Enchantments: and because you shall not be injured by any in the Castle, we will make them fast in prisons till my returne. After they had so done, they went to the stable, where Dyardo gave Palmerin a lusty Courser, and taking leave of him, set forth on his journey.

CHAP. XLV.

How *Palmerin* departing from the Isle of *Malfada*, came to the Court of the *Princesse Zephira*, she that kept *Trynens* transformed: where he was entertained to ayde her against her eldest Brother, who vexed her with dayly troubles.



Immediately after *Palmerin* had left the Island of *Malfada*, he passed through a dangerous River: the same Night he came to a little Village, where taking up his Lodging, he fell a talking with his Hoste in the Arabian tongue, if he knew any one that was expert and skillfull in

Pygromancy

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PAGE 2.

Pygromancy? I know none (quoth the Hoste) but an old Lady in an Island hard by, to whom our *Princesse* not long since went, for remedy of a strange disease, whereunto she is tormented. Where abideth your *Princesse* (said *Palmerin*) Not past thirty miles hence, (quoth the Host) in a City called *Elain*. Perhaps (quoth *Palmerin*) by her means I may be better resolved. So bidding his Hoste good Night withoze to him, hee into his Chamber, where many imaginations passed him concerning the *Princesse Zephira*.

It may be (quoth he within himselfe) that the Enchantresse unable to helpe her, hath yet assigned her by direction, unto some other man, moze expert in that Diabolish science: who compassing her health, happily may giue me some counsell to amend my misfortune. In this opinion the next morning he rode to the City of *Elain*, heavy and sad, yet in hope of comfort: and as he came nere the City, he was inclosed with two or thre hundred Light Horsemen, whom the *Prince Maulerino*, Brother to *Zephira* had there ambushed, to take all Abaunt-carriers and Knights passing by them. Yet obserbed they these conditions, that who so would take the *Princesse* Waxe, and swear faithfull service, should sustaine no harme: but such as refused so to do, were carryed into the City, they Waxe and Armour taken from them, and they inclosed in strong Prison. These Horses were amazed to see *Palmerin* so richly Armed, and much moze beholding him so bravely mounted, wherefore they said to him:

Weld your self Knight, and swear to maintaine our *Princes* quarrell: else be assured thy Death is present. The condition is very hard (said *Palmerin*) but for I haue heard the wrong offered by the King to your *Princesse*: I will sustaine her cause, not as a Prisoner entized hereto, but of mine own good will, as all Knights Errant are bound by duty, to defend the just Quarrell of distressed Ladies. Presently was *Palmerin* brought to the *Princesse*, and her Brother,

Brother, who were conferring together about these our most affayres: when the Knight that conducted Palmerin, kept to the Prince Maulerino, and thus spake. Now here my Lord, a Knight lately taken, whom so that we have found honest and courteous, we have suffered him to remaine Armed and commit him to your opinion. While the Knight continued these speeches, traus-formed Trineus, who lay at the Princesses foot. seeing Palmerin with his Weber open, ran and leaped on him, whining and saluting on him so lovingly, as every one greatly marvelled thereat. In briefe, they might discerne by his cries, calling about his legs and pittifull mourning, that saue he would have spoken, and shewed his loyall friend his inward complaints. The Princess marvelling at this strange occasion, said. I thinke (say Knight) my Dogge knowes you, for since Malfada gave him me, I never could see him so sad on any body. In sooth Spadame (answere Palmerin) to my remembrance, I never saw your Dog before this present. Whereupon she called him to her, and made many meanes that she shold come to her, yet he would not leaue Palmerin, but shaking his head still turned to his friend, as craving aide and succour at his hand, wherewith the Princess moved, thus spake.

I pray the Knight conceale not anything from me, for I perswade my selfe, that thou hast bene heretofore some great friend to the Enchantresse Malfada, seeing my Dogge is so loath to come from thee. Let me vnderstand the truth I pray thee, and if thou likewise wilt assist me against my cruell Brother, thou shalt be honourably rewarded, and thy ordinary pay redoubled. Spadame (answere Palmerin) here you may behold the most distressed Knight living and a Christian, whose hard fortune hath bene such, as arriving in the Enchantresse Ile whereof you spake: I have lost five friends, my true and honourable companions, and with them two Ladies, who in all things may

not be equalled. Yet have I reuenged their losse on the old Hagge and her servants, whose heathenlike bodies remaine so fowle to the soules of the aire. And because I heare (saie Princess) your selfe was not long since with her, so counsell in some unhappy fortune befallen you, saue would I knowe, may it please you to graunt me so much labour, if she assigne you to any other more skillfull then her selfe, by whom you not alone shall find remedy, but my tormenting griefes may likewise be comforted. Good Knight answered the Princess, the Gods themselves will traualle to helpe thee, and it may be I have learned of her, by whose death thou hast reuenged the wrong of many noble persons: some hope of further good, to ease those passions which thy speeches bewray. True it is, that I stayed with Malfada the space of eight days, yet not learning any thing of her worth by the rehearsal, this euely expected: she told me that in the Kings Court of Crisca and Romata, remained an ancient Knight named Muzabelino, by whom (if my malady were curable) I should find helpe, and by no other man whatsoever, so did she extoll him beyond all other. And had not the King my Father died some after my returne, and by inuious brother ere since missest me: long ere this had I gone to that skillfull man, whom I mean to find, so soon as I can bring my troubles to any good end. By all our Gods, quoth the Prince Maulerino, seeing Malfada is dead, Muzabelino may finish all the enchantments: but during her life, neither be not all the Pagittans in the world were able to compass it.

As for the Kingdome of Romata, it is very farre from this Countrey: the greater will your paine and danger be in traualling thither. Right pleasant will the paine be to me, saie Palmerin, so may I recover my dearest friends againe: and so you sweete Spadame will I adventure my life, either to winne you peace with your Brother, or a happy

The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

He, where we landing to seek fresh Water, all the Moores were changed into Harts, Dogs, and Boies: but the Lady sparing me in regard of amorous desire, hath kept me in this Castle a yeare and moze, abusing me at her stome pleasure, and never could I compasse any means to escape hence againe, so; if I had but made offer neare the Gate, by forcible strokes have I been beaten backe, yet not able to discern who smote me.

Your hap (quoth Palmerin) hath bene very hard, but her crossed head lying on the Hoze she, perswades me her self, for she shall doe no moze harme. But tell me good Dyardo, is there no one within so skilfull in her Magicall Science, as we may winne to doe us some good? Not one (answered Dyardo) therefore I am loth you should stay long here, in doubt of further danger. I will then (said Palmerin) go seek such a one as shall end these Enchantments: and because you shall not be injured by any in the Castle, we will make them fast in Prison till my returne. After they had so done, they went to the stable, where Dyardo gave Palmerin a lusty Courser, and taking leave of him, set so; wards on his journey.

CHAP. XLV.

How Palmerin departing from the Isle of *Malfada*, came to the Court of the Princesse *Zephira*, she that kept *Trynew* transformed: where he was entertained to ayde her against her eldest Brother, who vexed her with dayly troubles.

Immediatly after Palmerin had left the *Island* of *Malfada*, he passed through a dangerous River: the same Night he came to a little Village, where taking up his Lodging, he fell a talking with his Hoste in the Arabian tongue, (if he knew any one that was expert and skilfull in

Emperour of Constantinople. P A R T. 2.

Pygromancy: I know none (quoth the Hoste) but an old Lady in an *Island* hard by, to whom our Princesse not long since went, for remedy of a strange disease, wherewith she is tormented. Where abideth your Princesse (said Palmerin) Not past thirty miles hence, (quoth the Hoste) in a City called *Blain*. Perhaps (quoth Palmerin) by her means I may be better resolved. So bidding his Hoste good Night withjoy to him, hee into his Chamber, where many Imaginations passed him concerning the Princesse *Zephira*.

It may be (quoth he within himselfe) that the Enchantresse unable to helpe her, hath yet assigned her by direction, unto some other man, moze expert in that Diabolical Science: who compassing her health, happily may give me some counsell to amend my misfortune. In this opinion the next morning he rode to the City of *Blain*, heavy and sad, yet in hope of comfort: and as he came nere the City, he was inclosed with two or three hundred Light Horsemen, whom the Prince *Maulerino*, Brother to *Zephira* had there ambushed, to take all Abaunt-carriers and Knights passing by them. Yet observed they these conditions, that who so would take the Princesse's Paye, and sweare faithfull service, should sustaine no harme: but such as refused so to doe, were caried into the City, they Hoste and Armour taken from them, and they inclosed in strong Prison. These Hostes were amazed to see Palmerin so richly Armed, and much moze beholding him so bravely mounted, wherefore they said to him:

Sold your self for Knight, and sweare to maintaine our Princesse quarrell: else be assured thy Death is present. The condition is very hard (said Palmerin) but so; I have heard the wong offered by the King to your Princesse: I will sustaine her cause, not as a Prisoner enticed hereto, but of mine own good will, as all Knights Errant are bound by duty, to defend the just Quarrell of distressed Ladies. Presently was Palmerin brought to the Princesse, and her

Brother,

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

Brother, who were conferring together about these ar-
most affayres: when the knight that conducted Palmerin,
kept to the Prince Maulerino, and thus spake. See here
my Lord, a knight lately taken, whom for that we have
found honest and courteous, we have suffered him to re-
maine Armed and commit him to your opinion. While
the knight continued these speeches, transforned Trineus,
who lay at the Princesse foot, seeing Palmerin with his
Weber open, ran and leaped on him, whining and bawling
on him so lovingly, as every one greatly marvelled thereat.
In these, they might discern by his cries, rolling about his
legs and pittifull mourning, that faine he would have spo-
ken, and shewed his loyall friend his inward complai-
nings. The Princesse marvelling at this strange occasion,
said. I thinke (O) knight my Dogge knowes you, for
since Malfada gave him me, I never could see him so faine
on any body. In sooth Spadams (answers Palmerin) to my
remembrance, I never saw your Dog before this present.
Whereupon she called him to her, and made many meanes
that she should come to her, yet he would not leave Palmerin,
but shaking his head still whynd to his friend, as craving
aids and succour at his hand, where with the Princesse mo-
ved, thus spake.

I pray the knight conceale not anything from me,
for I perswade my selfe, that thou hast bene heretofore
some great friend to the Enchantresse Malfada, seeing my
Dogge is so loath to come from thee. Let me understand
the truth I pray thee, and if thou likewise wilt assist me a-
gainst my cruell Brother, thou shalt be Honourably ble-
ssed, and thy ordinary Day redoubled. Spadams (answers Pal-
merin) here you may behold the most distressed knight
living and a Christian, whose hard fortune hath bene such,
as attribing to the Enchantresse the whereof you spake:
I have lost five friends, my true and honourable compani-
ons, and with them two Labres, who in all things may
not

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

not be equalled. Yet have I revenged their loss on the old
Dagge and her servants, whose breathlesse bodies remain
for food to the foules of the aire. And because I heare
(saith Princesse) your selfe was not long since with her,
for counsell in some unhappy fortune befallen you, faine
would I knowe, may it please you to grant me so much
labour, if she assigned you to any other more skillfull then
her selfe, by whom you not alone shall find remedy, but my
lamenting griefes may likewise be comforted. And
the knight answered the Princesse, the Gods themselves will
travail to helpe thee, and it may be I have learned of her,
by whose death thou hast revenged the wrong of many wo-
ble persons: some hope of further good, to ease those pain-
s which thy speeches bewraye. True it is, that I stayed
with Malfada the space of eight days, yet not learning any
thing of her world by the reportall, this only expected:
she told me that in the Kings Court of Crisca and Romata,
remained an ancient knight named Muzabelino, by
whom (if my malady were curable) I should find helpe,
and by no other man to be desired, so did she extoll him be-
yond all other. And had not the King my Father died soon
after my returne, and by injurious brother ever since in-
ferred me: long ere this had I gone to that skillfull man,
whom I meane to find, so soon as I can bying my trou-
bles to any good end. By all our Gods, quoth the Prince
Maulerino, seeing Malfada is dead, Muzabelino may
undo all the enchantments: but during her life, neither
be not all the Pagitians in the world were able to com-
passe it.

As for the Kingdome of Romata, it is very faire from
this Countrey: the greater will your paine and danger be
in travelling thither. Right pleasant will the paine be to
me, saith Palmerin, so may I recover my dearest friends
again: and for you sweete Spadams will I adventure my
life, either to winne you peace with your Brother, or a hap-
pie

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

pie history by his death, that we may the sooner set forward to *Romana*.

A thousand thanks good night, quoth the *Princesse*, and this day shall we know what our *Brother* intendeth: if peace, it is welcome, if warre, we must defend our selves so well as we may. With this the *Dogge* cling about *Palmerins* side, so that he demanded of the *Princesse*, if she brought him from the *Ill* of *Malfada*, for doubtlesse, quoth he, I thinke it be some knight transformed by that cruell woman, who heretofore belike hath knowne me. At which words the *Dog* howled exceedingly, where *Palmerin*, took an oath that he would search all the world over, to finde some means to bring him to his former shape, that he might know from whence this love proceeded. The next day the King *Tyreno* assaulted the City, who was slain in the battaile by *Palmerin*, so afterward was *Maulerino* crowned King of *Nabar*, and all the Countrey enjoyed their former quiet: whereupon the *Princesse* *Zephira* gave *Palmerin* her *Dogge*, who requited her with many gracious thanks, because he greatly suspected, that it was his friend *Tryneus* transformed into that shape: but now let us returne to the *Soldane* of *Babilon*, understanding how his Army was discomfited at *Constantinople*.

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

CHAP. XLVI.

How one of the Nephewes to the King of *Balisarca*, brought newes to the *Soldane* of his Vncles death, the foyle of his Armie, the losse of *Palmerin* and *Olorico*, And how the *Princesse* *Alchidiana* bought *Ptolome*, whom she greatly honoured for *Palmerins* sake.



The King of *Balisarca*, (as you have heard before) being slain, his Armie discomfited, and all his Gallies burnt before *Constantinople*, one of his Nephewes that kept the Straite of the *Bosphor* with two Forts, lest any succour should come that way to the Christians, by one Galley that escaped, heard all this misfortune: wherefore making haste backe againe, fearing to be taken, at last darred in the *Soldans* Kingdome, where not staying long, he passed to the Court, and to the *Soldane* related all that had happened. When the *Soldane* heard how his Army was thus overthrowne, *Palmerin* whom he loved so well, and the Prince *Olorico* lost in the Storme on the Sea: being with griefe and rage, he called his Lord Ambassadour *Maucetto* to him, saying: Wasse thou good *Maucetto* to my Brother the *Soldane* of *Persia*, and desire him to leade us a strong Army against the Month of *March* next ensuing, to encounter with the Emperour of *Greece*: promising him the spoils whatsoever it be, reserving for my selfe nothing but the same of revenge.

Maucetto departed presently on his journey, and by the way met the *Moore*s, leading two Christians to the *Soldans* Court to sell, which were *Ptolome* and *Colmelio*, of whom he demanded wherefore they were so bound in chains?

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

My Lord, quoth one of the *Proces*, they be *Chyrtian* slaves, who not long since were taken at the Sea by *Olimacell* Admirall to the great *Turke*. And how came you by themselves *Mauetto*. The Admirall, quoth the *Proce*, gave them to one of his *Coynes*, who is dead, and his wife having leach to keep them any longer, sends them to the Court to be sold for money. *Mauetto* bought *Colmelio* of them, refusing *Ptolome* because he was somewhat sickly, and so passed on his *Embassage*. The *Proces* coming to the Court with *Proce* *Ptolome*, and placing him among other slaves that stood to be sold, there came a deformed *Proce*, far worse misshapen than was *Thersites* the Greek, and he would needs buy *Ptolome* of the *Merchant*: but *Ptolome* disdaining to be subject to so vile a creature, gave him such a stroke on the *Stomack* with his fist, as made him tumble over backward, saying; Thou monstrous villain, let me rather die, than come into thy subjection. At this instant passed by the *Princesse* *Alchidiana*, smiling to see the *Proce* ly along: but when she beheld the good personage of *Ptolome*, she remembered her lover *Palmerin*, and was therewith moved thus to speak. How durst thou take such hardines upon thee, being a bondslave and a captive, thus to strike a *Proce*, son of this Countrey? *Ptolome* perceiving by the Ladies attending on her, that she was the *Soldanes* Daughter, falling on his knee, thus answered.

Assuredly *Padame*, rather desire I death, then to live at such an ill favoured villaines controll, my selfe being a knight at armes. Are you then a knight, said the *Princesse*. I am good *Padame*, quoth he, although my servitude hath very much altered me. *Alchidiana* without any further questions, delivered the *Merchant* two hundred *Scaphes*, and by two of her *Servants* caused him to be conducted to her Chamber, where he was presently disrobed of his villainous garments, and clothed in such as well became a knight

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

knight to wear, afterward, the commander attendants to depart the Chamber, and coming to *Ptolome*, he thus bespake,

Now Sir knight, I intreate you by the holy faith you owe to your best beloved, that you will truly tell me, by what misfortune you happened first into this house. *Padame*, quoth he, seeing of your own grace and bounty, you have delivered me from these villainies that made sale of my life: I will not fable with you in any one point, but tell you a *Tragedie* replete with wonderfull sorrows. Having revealed the manner of his taking, and all the mischances he endured ever since, the teares trickling downe his cheekes, he said. And yet sweete Lady, all these passed miseries, and still abiding your slave, grieves me not so much, as the losse of my dearest friend, the best knight in the world, who went to see his *Falcon* die, when the *Pirates* came and unhappily took us. Tell me good friend, quoth the *Princesse*, what may the knight be called, of whom you make such estimation? Quoth *Ptolome*, he nameth himselfe *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

Sovereigne Gods, said *Alchidiana*, have you been companion to the noble *Palmerin*? What have I in truth *Padame*, quoth he, and know more of his affaires then any other man doth. Unhappy that I am, said the *Princesse*, now see I well that I am deceived in all my hope. May good knight, may more, I conjure thee by the faith to the soveraigne Creator of all things, to tell me, if he be of our Land, and hath bene dumbe of long, or no? By Gods *Padame*, answered *Ptolome*, your adjuration is such, as rather will I make a sacrifice of my selfe, then be found untrue to you in any thing. He is a *Chyrtian*, borne in *Grece*, and never had defeat in his speech, if discreet consideration of following events, either to escape captivity or death did not enforce him to feigne such a deceit, for he is most expert among all other, in dissembling any matter what

The History of Palmerin D'Oliua.

may turne him advantage. When such hath bene my fortune, quoth Alchidiana, as his beauty, bounty, and love sought, vnder the spere of a yeare and more in my Fathers Court, made me so religiously pained to him in love, as I neuer intended to make other choice: and I swore by all the Gods, if I heard not the better tidings of him by thee, my spirit will forsake this wretched body, and spend better fortune among the Soules in Elysium. My impetuous love, how wonderfull is thy stroke: my friend is contrary to me in law and position, a knight errant, unknowne, absent from me, and laque me: for these occasions, were I the onely Daughter to the great Emperour of Turkie, I neither can nor will change my former opinion.

W. p. then what shall, and let my Father make an oblation of my blood to his secret Idol, I will not desist from loving him. And thou my friend (quoth she) to Ptolome, because thou hast not thy birth from me, be thou at this instant free, and vnder thy liberty as thou pleasest: for rather let me abide the death, then the companion to my noble Lord suffer shame by me. Ptolome salting on his knee, humbly kissed her hand, and began to reueale the knightly Chivalrie that Palmerin and Trincus sometime did in England: likewise how they brought the Kings Daughter from thence, who remained captiue among the Turke, and her Husband giuen as slave to the Admirals Cosen. It is enough said the Princeesse, talk to me no more hereof, for by the great God, the very remembrance of him is greater griefe to me, then the mercilesse seruitude a poore slave endureth. The love he bare to you, to the other knight, and the young English Princeesse, whose misfortune I cannot sufficiently bewaile: calleth me hence to trouble in search of him, and may I find him with them, right gladfome will the journey be to me, because he is the onely darling and laboure of fortune. And now shall I

tell

Emperourof Constantinople. PART. 2.

tell you how I mean to colour mine intent. My Father not knowing your captivity, to him shall I say how you are the onely companion to Palmerin, and hither are you come to seek him, as having heard he says that he remained in your service: of this I dare assure you his Majesty so sorely loveth Palmerin, that he will deliver you all things necessary for his search, be it by Land or Sea. And if your God shall favour you so much as in your travails you happen to finde him, or else to send me certaine tidings of him: you doe me the greatest honour that ever knight did to distressed Lady. The sayward was the Princeesse in her amorous desire, and loth to waste time with tedious delay: that very day she acquainted her Father therewith, and so cunningly she plaid the Matrix, as she wolane gave Ptolome Armour, Horses, Merchants, and forty knights to attend on him. W. Now, he furnished him with the great ships that he might acquire at all the Ports on the Sea, for Palmerin.

The day being come of his departure, he took his leave of the Wolane, the Princeesse Alchidiana accompanying him to the Ports, where for her adieu she gave him a sweet kisse, saying: Sir knight, if your fortune be such as to bring me the man, who only hath power to mitigate my torments: beside the continuall labours of a Princeesse, I will make you one of the greatest Lords in the Orient. W. Now (quoth he) I will see my diligence, and till I returne let good hope persuade ye. So having said they set to Sea, where we will leave him till he meet with Palmerin.

CHAP. XLVII.

How *Palmerin* and the *Princesse Zephira*, departed from *Elain* towards *Romata*, to seek *Muzabelino*, and what happened by the way in their journey.



After that *Maulerino* was crowned King of *Mabor*, the *Rebellious Subjects* brought to obedience, and the bodie of the *Quaine King Tyreno* entered: the young *Princesse Zephira* and *Palmerin*, thought long to set forward on their journey, wherefore the King allowing them a very honourable Train, bequeathed them to their desired fortune. Having passed many Regions, and sundry dangers incident in trauelle, chiefly of a *Ballique*, whom *Palmerin* with the helpe of the *Dog Trincus* valiantly overcame, at length they entered the Realme of *Romata*, where by commandement of the King *Abimar*, their entertainment was according to their estates, the occasion thereof being thus.

This King *Abimar* holding the greatest possessions in that Region, would neuer yield himselfe as subject to the Signory of *Persia*: whereat the *Soldane* now growing offended, sent an *Ambassador* to command him presently to determine on his obedience, or else he would overrunne his Countrey with a mighty Army, and put both old and young to the sword.

Abimar assailed at this Embassage, demanded counsell of the wise *Muzabelino* what answer he should make the *Ambassador*, whereto the *Magitian* thus answered. Feare not my Lord the threatening menaces of the *Soldane*, for in that you have two noble Sonnes, to wit, the *Princes Tomano* and *Drumino*, Knights of high and speciall account: yet come there two others, (one whereof may not be

be knowne) with the *Princesse Zephira*, Daughter to the King of *Nabor*, who shall deliver you from his tyrannye, and make him your friend; therefore you may not so send him a hardy answer, as well becometh a Prince son, and not be commanded. And though one of the Knights that cometh with the *Princesse*, shall a while be unknowne to you, by the bounty of his companions, with whom no other may well compare: yet ere long you shall know him, to your no little joy and contentation. *Abimar* giving credit to *Muzabelinos* speeches, gave charge in all the Cities where through the *Princesse* should passe, that she should be entertained with honourable triumphes, as if himselfe had been in company. And though the Prince *Tomano* grieued herent, who loved the youngest Daughter to the *Soldan* of *Persia*, yet the King answered the *Ambassador*: that he would maintaine his right by the sword, and if the *Soldane* came to assault him, he would defend his Countrey so well as he could.

The *Ambassador* dispatched with this answer, *Tomano* came to *Muzabelino*, saying. As my dear friend *Muzabelino*, what wrong have you done me, in perswading my Father to hold warre with the *Soldane*? Whose Daughter you know I love in such sort, as if I obtaine her not in Marriage, hardly can my life long indure. Content your selfe my Lord, answered *Muzabelino*: for if the two Knights that come, bring fortune for your Father, you must expect the like for your selfe. But said the Prince, may I not know their names? Let it suffice (quoth *Muzabelino*) what I have said, yet hereof I dare assure you, that they are Christians, and extract of the greatest lineage on the earth, in bounty, and valour incomparable: whereof if you list to make experience, and thereby to credit what I have said before, I shall shew you a meane available for the purpose. You shall cause two Tents to be erected by the Cedar Fontaine, which is halfe a mile distant from this

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

City, in the one of them let your Brother Drumino be and your selfe, with tenne of the best Knights in your Fathers Court, and in the other let your Sister be, accompanied with ten of her chiefeest Ladies, and about a Bowshot from thence towards the high way side, you shall set up a Marble Pillar; wheteon let these lines be engraven.

Sir Knight, in these Pavillions doth remaine,
A Lady faire, kept by a Princes Sonne:
Foyle him by Ioust, and winne her hence againe,
Thou maist not passe before the deed be done.

If it happen that they passe by and see not the Pillar, send one of the Ladies to them, to let them understand, that they may not passe, before one of them have Iousted with the Prince and his Knights. If they be unhorsed by him, the Lady must be delivered to him: yet with this condition, that he refuse not to grant her one demand. By Mahomet, said Drumino, husband to the Lady, I will not meddle in this matter, he may be such a one, as if he hap to winne my Wife, he will be loth to restore her back againe. Feare not that (quoth the Pagitian) he is so courteous, and hath so faire a friend himselfe, as he neither may, or will withhold her. By heaven, said Tomano, I will cope with him, and to morrow let the Pillar and Pavillions be erected, there will I with my companions stay his coming. See here the cause why the King Abimar, commanded the Princeesse Zephira and her Knights to be so honorably entertained. By this time is the Princeesse come within a dayes journey of Romata, and Tomano with his Brother, Sister, Ladies and Knights, betake themselves to the Pavillions, hearing that Zephira was come so neare: and being themselves Armed, their Sister decked likewise in most sumptuous ornaments, they bowed to breake many Lances for her sake.

CHAP.

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

CHAP. XLVIII.

How *Palmerin* Iousted against *Tomano*, *Drumino*, and their Knights, whom he all dismounted, and what entertainment the King *Abimar*, and the wise Negromancer *Muzabelino* made them.



By this time is the Princeesse with *Palmerin* and her company, come to the place where the Pavillions are erected, and not seeing the Pillar, they passed on: wherefore *Tomano* sent a Damofell to declare the conditions of the Challenge. *Palmerin* seigning himselfe somewhat meane, made this answer. Damofell, you may say to the Prince and his Knights, that the Princeesse *Zephira* is not in our garde, as the Lady he fights for, abideth with him. For comes she hither to be sought for, rather both she intreat him to spare us the Ioust, in that it will be small honour to him to conquer Knights overlaboured in travail, and whose Horses are not able for that exercise.

The Damofell certifying the Prince of this answer, he grew into anger, swearing they should not passe before they tried their fortune: wherefore he sent the Damofell againe, who thus spake to *Palmerin*. Sir Knight, your excuses may not serve you, you must either Ioust, or leave the Princeesse behinde you. Trust me Damofell, answered *Palmerin*, sorry should I be to accompany her so farre, and leave her in the custody of one I know not, did your Prince the more courteous, it would agree much better with his order: but because he shall not thinke, that we refuse the Ioust though hee's or cowardise, say he shall have his desire both he and his Knights shall try their fortune ere we passe further.

23

This

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

This answer returned to the Prince, Drumino first showed himselfe in the field, and by unfortunate intreacy, certaine of the Princesses Knights would first try their valour: but such was their ill fortune, as Crumino vanquished them one after another, Zephira somewhat offended herent, entreated Palmerin either to win them passage, or else with his successe she was content to stay prisoner. I goe Madame (quoth Palmerin) and Fortune speake me, as I regard the safety of your hono^r. Muzabelino, having acquainted the King with this pastime, they came in habilitie of gnt to behold it, at what time the Prince Drumino encountred Palmerin. But not to hold you with tedious discourse, considering which was the victorie intended, the two Princes and all their Knights were manfully spoiled by Palmerin.

The Host going ended, and the King returned againe to the City: Muzabelino came to Palmerin, and having saluted him with great reverence, thus spake. Worthy Lord, who onely deserbest the name of Chualry, let me intreate you to excuse the Kings Son, who to make proofe of your valour, by my meanes attempted this noble adventure, from which you have escaped with great honour, and to their shame that made the challenge. What are you Sir, said Palmerin, that know me so well, and the cause why I came into this Countrey? My friend Muzabelino, (quoth he) whom you have taken such paines to finde, and who knowing you to be a Christian, will keepe you from all dangers among these Heathenites. Palmerin suddenly alighting from his Horse, came and embraced him, saying. Noble friend, suffer me to kisse your hand as a witness of my reverence to your honorable Age. Not so my Lord, answered Muzabelino, rather suffer me to doe my duty, to that incomparable person, by whose meanes ere this wordeth be past, the greatest Nobility in the world shall receive incredible honour.

While

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

While these courteous Ceremonies endured, the conquered Princess with her Ladies came from the Banquet, on, and saluting Palmerin with great courtesie, said. We here Sir Knight the Lady, who trusting in your honorable benignity, cometh to submit her selfe as your disposition, being woone with more choise Chualry, then ever any other Lady was. Notwithstanding, I hope that you will not refuse to graunt me one demand, according to the conditions agreed in the Host. Palmerin seeing her so discreet and modest, so sumptuous in Apparell, and accompanied with so many Ladies, judged that she was the Kings Daughter, and wife to the Prince Drumino, wherefore entertaining her very graciously, he thus replied. Unfitting it is faire Lady, that a Princess of so high and speciall quality and worth, should be subject to a poore and unknown Knight: and though the agreement of the Host be such, yet doe I humbly thanke you for this honour, bequeathing you to your former liberty, and restoring you to him that hath best right to you.

A thousand thanks worthy Lord, said the Princess, now see I that words of Muzabelino to my father are true, that the Knight who conducted Madame Zephira, as in Chualry is surpasseth all other, so in franckie minde and Liberality he hath not his second, which was the chiefest cause why I adventured my self in this hazard of Fortune.

Madame (quoth Palmerin) if the wise Muzabelino hath used any speech of me in mine absence, and to my honour, it proceeded not by my Vertue, but by gods will in so doing, which if I live, I will one day acknowledge. Right welcome are you said the Princess, and faire Zephira the rather for your sake: and such be the heere of your arrivall here, as you may obtaine the end of your desires. Zephira humbly thanked the Princess, Tomano, Drumino, and all the rest embracing Palmerin, thinking it no dishonour to be conquered by him: they mounted all on Horsebacke,

The History Of *Palmerin D'Oliua*

and coming to the City, they found the King there ready with an honourable traine to receive them: who saluting the *Princesse Zephira* very kindly, said. *So marvellous* *Padame*, if you durst undertake so long a journey, having the onely Knight of *Fortune* in your company, as my *Donnes* have good occasion to witness: and he that commits her selfe to his charge, may be well assured of speciall defence. *Zephira* with humble thanks requiting the King, *Palmerin* and all the rest graciously welcommed: they rode all to the *Palace*, where being entertained in choicest sort *Muzabelino* still accompanied *Palmerin*, who forgot not his wanted kindnesse to his loving *Dogge*.

CHAP. XLIX.

The talke that the *Princesse Zephira* and *Palmerin* had with the wife *Muzabelino*: and how *Palmerin* departed from *Romana*, to the *Castell* of the tenn *Rockes*.



The *Princesse Zephira*, who had not as yet talked with *Muzabelino*, in the *Morning* sent for him and *Palmerin*: she causing them both to sit downe by her, beganne her speeches in this manner. My Lord, if your wisedome know ledge and great Judgement have acquainted you with the cause of my coming hither at this time, and that you be pleased to do any thing for the love of my *Palmerin*, let pittie persuade you, for in you onely consisteth my remedy. *Padame* (quoth *Muzabelino*, he is not such speeches, for what my Lady and practice hath taught me, you must make no account of: but referre your selfe wholly to the *Supreme Creator*, who by the meanes of Noble *Palmerin*, will restore your health, him

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2

him will I acquainte with the manner how it must becom- passed,

Your Disease happened by smelling to a flower, and by the smell of an other it must be recovered. The flower appointed to give you Health, groweth in an *Arbour* in the *Castell* of the ten *Rocks*, and kept by the Enchantment of a Lady moze skillfull in all *Magicall Artes*, then ever was the skillfull *Medea*. This Lady deceased a hundred yeres since and moze. She sitting befoze her death the virtue of this flower, and of a *Wyrd* which is kept there by the selfe same meanes, having Enchanted them in a *Garden*, the most sumptuous in the world: raised tenne *Rockes* of *Parble* without the *Castell*, each one ascending higher then an other, and by these *Rocks* was the *Castell* named. Such Enchantments did the Lady *Crezelle* on them, as when any one thinketh to passe by them, presently starteth out of each *Rock* an Armed Knight, who returneth the adventurer so forcibly, as to this day they have not bene passed by any. Courageous therefore must he be that passeth these *Rocks*, which if *Palmerin* by his bounty and prowess doe not accomplish, no man living can end the Adventure: for by force not cunning, must the Enchantment be ended. When the *Princesse* heard, that by the dangerous travell of Noble *Palmerin* her health must be restored, she was sorrowfully complained.

Oh Gods, ye sufficeth it not that heretofore this good Knight adventures his life, in the dangerous Battell when my *Wife* was a sine: but now he must abide the diabolish Conspirations, where Death is daily and hourly expected: Shall I consent to offer him such wrong, and be guilty of his Blood, who surpasseth all other in Chivalry: rather let my death be a warrant for his safety, then Noble *Palmerin* should endure such perill for me. Lament not *Padame*, quoth *Muzabelino*, befoze you have cause, he that in *Malfada* and her *Servants*, is so highly and special- ly

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

ly fabured of the Heabeny powers, as no Enchantment whatsoever hath any power to hurt him. Why Madam, (said Palmerin) thinke you my good will is like to do you service, then when I was first brought to your Court: Forbear these teares I pray you, and offend not your self: for such is my hope in God, that what is done by man shall be destroyed by man: besides, it will be great reproach to me, if coming into strange Countries to seek Adventures, I shall depart without trial of my fortune. Muzabelino hearing him speake so courageously, took him aside saying: Noble and hardy knight, whom feare of Death cannot dismay, haply shall I account my selfe to see thee any service.

And to the end thou maist with better affection follow this Enterpryse, assure thy selfe to passe the Rockes with safety, and enter the Castle with happy victorie, where ending all the Adventures therein contained, thou shalt finde a part of remedy for recovering thy companion, but not all, for the rest is in the Tower of Mallada, where as yet thou canst not enter, but at thy returne shalt easily open, and in the end sorrowfully finde all thy Companions and Friends: For the rest, feare not my discovery of thy secret love and Parentage, which is the most Noble in all Christendome: for rather will I be torne in a thousand peeces, then to see a knight shall be injured by me. Seeing you know so much (quod Palmerin) I commit all to God and you, let me therefore right soone craue leave of the King for my departure, because I long that the Princesses were eased. Right soon was the King to part with him so soone, yet the hope of his swift returne somewhat pacified him. And when the news were spread abroad that Palmerin should traualle to the Castle of the tenne Rockes: Tomano Drumino and the Princess Zephira would needs beare him companie, which he being not able to gainsay, because they were importunate on him, gave his consent. So departing from

Romana

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2

Romana, they made such haste in their journey, as within some dayes after they arrived at the Castle: and coming to the first Rock, they beheld a goodly Swoord, encloed therein by to the Crosse. The two young Princes marvailling thereat, alighted from their Horses, and assailed to by strength to pull it out, which were they not able to doe: wherefore Tomano entreated Palmerin to try his fortune, who after many courteous refusals, offered to pull it forth, but a fearful flame of fire suddenly issued forth of the Rock, which compelled them to retire back, wherefore Palmerin said to the Princes: This Swoord I see must be none of ours, therefore it is vaine to strive any further.

CHAP. L.

How *Palmerin* passed the tenne Rockes, vanquished the tenne Enchanted Knights, and entered the Castle, where he finished all the Enchantments: *Tryens* returning to his former shape, and what happened to them after ward.



Palmerin when he had failed in drawing the Swoord out of the Rocke, he prepared himselfe to the Combat with the Enchanted Knights, whom as yet he could not any way discern: but first he began his Discours in this manner. O Sovereigne Creatour, who evermore hath succoured me in all my necessities and fortunes: this day give me strength to confound this diabolish Enchantment, and let thy Name have the honour of a glorious victorie.

Then giving his Horse the Spurres, galloped onward, saying. Sweet Mistress Polynarda, if ever your remembrance gave me ayde and labour, now let your divine regard

gave

The History of Palmerin D'Oliua.

and comfort your Seruant. Being then betwene the two foremost Rocks, a mighty knight mounted on a lusty Courser, with a huge Lance in his hand, called to him, saying.

Turne thou knight, you may passe no further: then furiously encountering one another, they met so roughly together with their bodies, as they were both cast forth of their saddles. The Dog, that still followed Palmerin, seeing his Friends horse offered to Rart, caught the bridle by the reigne with his teeth, and would not let him passe any further. In the meane while, Palmerin having fought with the Knight, and after a long and cruell combat, smote his head from his shoulders. In these he was so favoured of Fortune, as having vanquished all the ten knights, he passed the ten Rocks: and no sooner was he mounted on the foremost, but a dark Cloud compassed him about, so that the two Princes, Zephira, and their knights, to their great amazement, lost the sight of him, yet his former victory, exempted all feare from them of bad successe. Where stayed they Palmerins returne till Danner setting, when the two Princes demanded of Zephira, if she would be part thence, or stay there all night? Depart, quoth she, as by my life, here will I bide the good knights returne from the Castle: whereupon her Seruants having erected their Pavilions, they there took up their Lodging for that night. By this time Palmerin was come to the Castle Gate, where looking on his Armour which was hacked in peeces, his flesh cut and mangled in many places, breaking forth a bitter sigh, said, If yet this travaile may availe the Princess, and my Noble companions that are Enchanted; let happe to me what please the Gods, for their libertie is more deere to me then life. When looking on his Dog, who all this while held the Voyces bridle in his mouth, he remembered that he had not demanded of Muzabelino any thing concerning him, wherefore he said. Oh gentle Dog,

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

yet no Dog (I thinke) but rather some Knight thus transformed, how forgetfull have I been of thy service in my necessity: why did I not demand the truth of Muzabelino, what thou art? But must thou prove to be my good friend Tryneus, when all the enchantments in this Castle shall be ended, thy former Shape I hope shall be restored.

So striking at the Castle Gate, to see if any way he could get it open: at length he looked up to the battlements, and beheld an ancient knight, with a long beard so white as snow, who furiously thus spake to him. Where knight, who made thee so bold thus to beate on the Gate? enter, unto thy father till I hope, with these words the Gates opened of themselves, when presently Palmerin with his dog entered, and the old man, who seemed over spent with yeeres and weaknes meeting him in the Gate taking him by the arme, threw him violently against the ground, saying. When that hast overcome the ten knights young and Armed, what canst thou doe to an old man without defence? Wretched villane, answered Palmerin wherefore hast thou smitten me? by the living God, did not thine age excuse thee, (was should I lay thee breathlesse at my foote.

Soft and faire, said the old man, thou shalt have worke enough to defend thy selfe. So catching Palmerin, about the middle, he wrong him so cruelly, as one might heare his bones crack. My God cryed Palmerin, defend me against this cursed devill. At length he forced the old man to let goe his hold: when began such a furious fight betwene them, as never was Palmerin in such danger, in that every blow was given him, he thought did breake all his bones in peeces. The dog seeing his master in such extremity, caught the old man by the throte, and never left lagging till he got him downe, when suddenly he vanished away, and was no more seen afterward. For this victory,

Palmerin

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

Palmerin thanked God, and having cherished his dog, entered further into the Castell. Where he beheld most stately Galleries, erected on great columns, of porphyry and Alabaſter, as never did he beheld a more sumptuous spectacle.

In the midst of the Court was a goodly Tombe, enclosed with barriers of beaten Gold, and over it stood a goodly Table of Chryſtall, upheld by four Statues of Agatha: and on the Table was pictured the personage of a Lady, done by such curious arte and workmanship, as hardly could it be equalled through the world. Palmerin approached to behold the counterſeite, which held in the one hand a Wake fast Shutte, and in the other a hoke of Golde, pointing with the key toward the Gate of the Pallace: whereupon he imagined, that this was the Tombe of the Lady Enchantresse, whereupon Muzabelino had told him before, and putting his hand betwene the Golden barriers, the image presently offered him the key. Whereat being somewhat abashed, he judged that this happened not without great cause, wherefore taking the key, he went and opened the Pallace Gate, and entering the great Hall, he found it so richly paved, and garnished round about with such costly Tapestrey, as the greatest Monarch in the world had not the like.

Looking behinde him for his Dog, he beheld him suddenly changed to his former shape, and running to embrace Palmerin said. May be the howze of thy coming deere friend, to whom I remaine for ever bound, in acknowledging the speciall graces and fauours receiued. But Palmerin deceaſed with so many illustrious beſe, would hardly giue credite to what he now beheld: reputting him rather some bellish fury so disguised, onely to entrap him with further danger, which Tynecus perceiving, spake againe. Ah my noble friend Palmerin, for Gods sake doubt no more, I am thy Brother Tynecus, who since thy coming

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

ming from Blain, followed thee in the enchanted forme of a Dog: reioyce then with me, for since thy long ordered hope hath now so good an end, doubt not but the residue of thine affaires will prove as fortunate. Palmerin being now the more reſolved, I leaue to your judgements the kinde gratulations betwene them: who well can receive the wonderfull joy of long absent friends, especially of such as live to die for each other. Ah my Lord, quoth Palmerin, why did I not sooner acknowledge thee: the great succour thou gauest me by the way, might well have perswaded me: yet though I still imagined thee my friend transformed, hardly could I resolve thereon till further experience.

Ah forſinne, if heretofore thou haſt bin envious towards me, yet now haſt thou recompenced me in such sort: as now I have no cause to exclaim on thee. So sitting downe together, Tynecus revealed the manner of his taking, and all that befel him til his transformation. Which Palmerin to requite, diſcouered the knowledge of his Parents, how he was betrothed to his Lady Polynarda, and how he recovered the Princess Agriola, who afterward was likewise enchanted in the Isle of Malfada. Tynecus at these newes, was ready to die with griefe, but Palmerin perswaded him of the wise Muzabelinos promise: that shortly he should returne againe to the Isle, and they finish all the enchantments whatsoever. While they thus conferred together, they saw suddenly sette before them a Table furnished with all kind of meates, and a hand holding two great golden Candlesticks, wherein burned two faire waſe Tapers: beside, they heard the trampling of their ſeete that brought the meate to the Table, but they could not discern any living creature. Trust me, quoth Palmerin, I thinke some body knowes I have an hungry appetite, sit downe with me good friend: for these two moneths had I not a better stomack. After they had well refreshed

refreshed themselves, the Tables was presently taken away again, and they entering a good wardrobe, where under a Canopy of Cloth of Gold, they found two marvellous costly gilded Armours, so beset with faire Emerals and great Orientall Pearles, as never proud Pagan wore the like in Heathenesse. By them stood two goodly Shields of plate, in the one being figured the Armes of Constantinople, and in the other the Crest of Almaine: whereat Palmerin not a little marvailling, said to Trineus. I thinke my Lord, that these Armours were provided for us, let us try if they be fit for our bodies: so helping to Arme each other, they found them so fit as they had bene purposely made for them. There found they likewise a Silver Cassket, wherein were two sumptuous Kingly Crownes of Golde, and between them stood a rich Golden Cup, having in it a Ring, with the most beautifull Stone in it that ever was seene.

Wondering at these events, and doubtfull to take thence these rare presents: immediatly a Damself came before them, and humbly on her knees thus spake. Most mighty and magnanimous Princes, the Jewels you have found in the Cassket are yours, and them must you carrie to the Ladies of your affections: because they were purposely made for them, as these worthy Armours were for you. As for her that bewitched them, in this she accounteth her selfe right happy: that this day they are salve into your power, and by you shall all the Adventures here be finished.

You my Lord (quoth she to Trineus) must take the Ring that is in the Cup: and leave it not where so bet you come, lest you be changed to the Shape of a Dog againe. And you my Lord Palmerin must take the Cup to put the flowers therein, which you must beare to the Princess Zephira: assuring you that no one must drink therein, but she to whom you must serve it. Faire Damself, said Palmerin,

merin, tell me how I shall find the Garden, where those flowers grow of such soveraigne vertue, and how I may come to the Arbour, where the Strange Bird remaineth perched: likewise if any other then your selfe is in this Castell?

My Lord, quoth she, the Lady of this Castell at her decease, left all the persons in this Castell a sleepe by enchantment, except my selfe that am her Maec, and such contractions hath she charmed them withall: as they shall not stirre till you have taken the Birds you aske for, at whose fearefull cry they shall all awake, in all this long time no whit consumed. And here have I ever since remained, so appointed by her to doe you service, in shewing you the manner how to gather the flowers, and to take the fatall Bird perched in the Arbours: whether I will bring you at the appointed howe. In meane while rest your selves in this rich bedde, which hath bene prepared onely for you, and here repose your selfe till my returne. By my two Damself, quoth Palmerin, you tell us matters full of wonder: notwithstanding, seeing we find some part of them true, we give credite to the rest. So bidding her good night, there slept they till the next morning, when the Damself came to call them: conducting them into the Garden, the most brave and stately that ever they beheld, and after she had shewed them the Arbour, departed. Palmerin looking round about him, marvelled at the ingenious foundation of the Castell; the surpassing faire Galleries, and the beautifull fountains in the Garden, where he heard an exceeding pleasant harmony of Birds. Then calling Tryneus to him, entered the Arbour, where taking the fatall Bird by the wings: he gave three great cries so loud and fearefull, no man both the Princes greatly amazed.

At this instant were all the enchantments there ended, and the Servants restored to their former liberty, when

The History Of *Palmerin D'Oliua*

Palmerin having tye the Bird to his fist with a thred the Damsell gave him, and filling his cap with the soveraigne flowers: they came south of the Garden, and in the great Hall met them the Lord and Lady of the Castell, so old, withered and decrepit, as it seemed hardly they could sustaine themselves, casting themselves at Palmerins foete, they said.

Oh noble Prince flower of all chivalry, the highest God hath blessed thee from thy Cradle, and in the end shall make thee the happiest in the world, for the especiall good thou hast this day done, restoring all them to life that here slumbr'd, except the aged Lady my vertues sister, who for these hundred yeres past hath slept in her Tombe. After many courteous speeches passed betwene them, Palmerin and Tryneus departed the Castell, and as they went to the Rockes, Tomano and the Princeesse Zephyra came to meete them, she courteously embracing him, said: Whom saies my noble Lord: greatly did I despaire of your health: for this morning I heard such a fearful cry from the Castell, as we were out of all hope to see you againe. By the aide of God, Padam, answered Palmerin, and this knight my deere friend, whom in the shape of a Dog you brought from Malfada, I find my selfe in perfect content: and here have I brought you the soveraigne remedy for your so long and unfortunate disease. But may it be, quoth the Princeesse that so faire a knight should be so troubled? No lesse do I rejoyce for his good fortune, then mine owne. So entred they the Princeesse pavillion, discoursing all the marvellis they had done.

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

CHAP. LI.

How the Princeesse Zephyra was cured of her disease, and how Tryneus ended the adventure of the enchanted sword in the Rocks.



After that the Princeesse Zephyra had felt the sweet odours of the flowers Palmerin brought her, the embowomed woymes which so long time had tormented her, fell from her head dead to the ground, and the lothsome smell of her Canker began to cease. Yet all the scarres on her face were not thoroughly healed: but the soveraigne ease that she found by the flowers, gave her hope that in time they would weare away. Meane while the two Princes of Romata, conferred with Palmerin about the strange Bird, as also of the costly Armour they brought with them from the Castell: which being past over with no little admiration, they remembered the sword enchanted in the Rocks, whereupon the Prince Tomano entreated Tryneus, to try if that adventure were reserved for him.

May quoth Tryneus, if you have already failed, hardly may I hope of better fortune: yet can I but lose my labour as you have done, and shame were it for me to passe hence without tryall. So taking the sword by the handle, with very great ease he pull it out of the Rocks, being the goodliest sword in workmanship that ever was devised. Trust me, quoth Tryneus, he that made the weapon doubtlesse hath tried the vertue thereof. What may be, answered Palmerin, but had he likewise knowne the valour of the knight, who now is worthily become master thereof, of greater count would he have esteemed his labour, and so

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

the perpetuall honour there friendmaist then imploy it. But now worthy Lord, seeing the Princesse Zephira hath found so good ease, and my loving Brother Tryncus hath wonne this woode: I thinke it best that we set forthward to Romata, which (after they had seene the sumptuous buildings in the Castell, the rich Tombe, the beautilfull Garden, and all the other monuments worthy blew) they did.

Being come to Romata, and there receiued with speciall signes of honoꝝ, the wise Muzabelino, caused the faire Bird to sing of the flowers, which Palmerin hadde brought from the Castell of the tenne Rocks. As soone had the Bird taken the flowers, but presently she uttered such melodius notes, as sweeter harmony was neuer heard before: and during the time of her singing, fell so many dropes of precious water from her beake, as before dinner time the Cuppe was well nere filled. Which when the wise Magromancer perceiued, he brought a very faire Lute to Palmerin, saying, I beseech you my Lord play some exquisite peece of Musique, that the Bird listening to your melody, may cease her stonie records: els shall we lose the soberaigne vertue contained in the Water. Palmerin taking the Lute, played thereon so artificially, that the Princesse of Romata, whom he won in the Mount, was enforced to vse these speeches. How can we sufficiently maruaile at the perfections of Palmerin: for if in power he surpasses Hercules of Libia, who overcame Tytans and Monsters at his pleasure: well may we name him an other Amphion or Orpheus of Thrace, who with their melody tamed the Fishes, Beastes and Birds. Tryncus taking the Cup, brought it to the Princesse Zephira, who dipping her handkercher therein, bathed her face therewith: the precious vertue whereof was such, as well the envenomed scarres the woomen had made, were presently washed away, and her face so delicate as euer it was be-

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

fore: whereupon the Princesse falling at Palmerins feete, joyfully thus spake. Doubtlesse my Lord, I am greatly beholding to the Prince Tryncus, who saved my life when the Traytour would have slaine me in my bedde: but I must confesse my selfe much more indebted to your worthy selfe, by whose paines the venomous putrefaction is extinguished, whereby I endured torments farre exceeding death.

Adams, answered Palmerin, your happy recovery must not be imputed to me, vnto the soberaigne Lord that so provided for you, and seeing your health is so wonderfully restored: I thinke best that we set forthward to morrow on our journey, that we may finish the Magicall conjurations of Malfada, as we have already done those at the tenne Rocks. The Princesse of Romata hearing these words, presented the answer of Zephira, and comming to Palmerin, said: I beseech you Sir Knight, in honoꝝ of that God which you reverence, that you will not deny me one demand, according to your promise made me, when you overcame my Brother and his knights in Mount. The Lady (said Palmerin) what you will, and you shall not be denied, so the matter consist in my power to performe. Well may you performe it (quoth she) and to your endlesse honoꝝ I hope. The summe of my request is, that you will not forsake the thing my Father till his warre against the Soldane of Persia be finished. And that you would entreate your friend to accompany you therein. Deny me not good Sir, for no greater shame is to a knight then breach of promise: nor will I parte from your selfe, untill you have granted what I request. In sooth Adams, answered Palmerin, although my friends and I have great affaires in our Countrey, yet (in respect of my promise) we will assist your Father: let vs in meane whiles intreate you, to be seen our returne with the Princesse Zephira, who thinks the time long before she came to Nabor. Doubtlesse

The History Of *Palmerin D'Oliua*

Palmerin having tibe the Bird to his fist with a thzed the Damsell gave him, and filling his cap with the soveraigne flowers: they came south of the Garden, and in the great Hall met them the Lord and Lady of the Castell, so old, withered and decrepit, as it seemed hardly they could sustaine themselves, casting themselves at Palmerins foete, they said.

My noble Prince flower of all chivalry, the highest God hath blessed thee from thy Cradle, and in the end shall make thee the happiest in the world, for the especiall good thou hast this day done, restoring all them to life that here slombzed, except the aged Lady my Wittnes Sister, who for these hundred yeres past hath slept in her Tombe. After many courteous speeches passed betwene them, Palmerin and Tryneus departed the Castell, and as they went towa the Rockes, Tomano and the Princesse Zephyra came to meete them, she courteously embracing him, said: How fairest my noble Lord: greatly did I despaire of your health: for this morning I heard such a fearefull cry from the Castell, as we were out of all hope to see you againe. By the aide of God, Padam, answered Palmerin, and this knight my deere friend, whom in the Shape of a Dog you brought from Malfada, I find my selfe in perfect content: and here have I brought you the soveraigne remedy for your so long and unfortunate disease. But may it be, quoth the Princesse that so faire a knight should be so transomed? No lesse do I rejoyce for his good fortune, then mine owne. So entred they the Princesse pavillion, discoursing all the marvellis they had done.

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

CHAP. LI.

How the Princesse *Zephyra* was cured of her disease, and how *Tryneus* ended the adventure of the enchanted sword in the Rocke.



After that the Princesse Zephyra had felt the sweet odours of the flowers Palmerin brought her, the embrenomed woymes which so long time had tormented her, fell from her head dead to the ground, and the lothsome smell of her Canker began to cease. Yet all the scarres on her face were not thoroughly healed: but the subdaine saie that she found by the flowers, gave her hope that in time they would weare away. Meane while the two Princes of Romania, conferred with Palmerin about the strange Bird, as also of the costly Armour they brought with them from the Castell: which being past over with no little admiration, they remembered the sword enchanted in the Rocke, whereupon the Prince Tomano entreated Tryneus, to try if that adventure were reserved for him.

May quoth Tryneus, if you have already failed, hardly may I hope of better fortune: yet can I but lose my labour as you have done, and shame were it for me to passe hence without tryall. So taking the sword by the handle, with very great ease he puld it out of the Rocke, being the goodliest sword in workmanship that ever was devised. Trust me, quoth Tryneus, he that made the weapon doubtlesse hath tried the vertue thereof. What may he, answered Palmerin, but had he likewise knowne the valour of the knight, who now is worthily become Master thereof, of greater count would he have esteemed his labour, and so

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliva*.

the perpetuall honour were friendmaist thou employ it. But now worthy Lord, seeing the Princess Zephira hath found so good sale, and my loving Brother Tryneus hath bought this sword: I thinke it best that we set forward to Romata, which (after they had seen the sumptuous buildings in the Castell, the rich Tombes, the beautifull Garden, and all the other monuments worthy blest) they did.

Being come to Romata, and there received with speciall signes of hono^r, the wise Muzabelino, caused the fairest Bird to sing of the flowers, which Palmerin hadde brought from the Castell of the seven Rocks. As soone had the Bird tasted the flowers, but presently she uttered such melodious notes, as sweeter harmony was never heard before: and during the time of her singing, fell so many drops of precious water from her beake, as before dinner time the Cuppe was well nere filled. Which when the wise Magromancer perceived, he brought a very faire Lute to Palmerin, saying, I beseech you my Lord play some exquisite piece of Musique, that the Bird liking to your melody, may cease her stonie voice: els shall we lose the soveraigne vertue contained in the Water. Palmerin taking the Lute, played thereon so artificially, that the Princess of Romata, whom he won in the Mount, was enforced to use these speeches. How can we sufficiently marvaile at the perfections of Palmerin? for if in prowess he surpasses Hercules of Libia, who overcame Wyants and Monsters at his pleasure: well may we name him an other Amphion or Orpheus of Thrace, who with their melody tamed the Fishes, Beastes and Birds. Tryneus taking the Cup, brought it to the Princess Zephira, who dipping her handkercher therein, bathed her face therewith: the precious vertue whereof was such, as well the envenomed scarres the two men had made, were presently washed away, and her face so delicate as ever it was before.

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

so: whereupon the Princess falling at Palmerins feete, joyfully thus spake. Doubtlesse my Lord, I am greatly beholding to the Prince Tryneus, who saved my life when the Traytor would have slain me in my bedde: but I must confesse my selfe much more indebted to your worthy selfe, by whose paines the venomous putrefaction is extinguished, whereby I endured torments farre exceeding death.

Adamas, answered Palmerin, your happy recovery must not be imputed to me, but to the soveraigne Lord that so provided for you, and seeing your health is so well, shily rejoys: I thinke best that we set forward to meet our journey, that we may smite the Magickall conjurations of Malfada, as we have already done those at the seven Rocks. The Princess of Romata hearing these words, presented the answer of Zephira, and coming to Palmerin, said: I beseech you for knight, in honor of that God which you reverence, that you will not deny me one demand, according to your promise made me, when you overcame my Brother and his knights in Mount. The Lady (said Palmerin) what you will, and you shall not be denied, so the matter consist in my power to performe. Well may you performe it (quoth she) and to your endlesse honor I hope. The summe of my request is, that you will not forsake the thing my Father till his warre against the Soldane of Persia be finished. And that you would entreate your friend to accompany you therein. Deny me not good Sir, for no greater shame is to a knight then breach of promise: nor will I stirre from your side, untill you have granted what I request. In sooth Adamas, answered Palmerin, although my friends and I have great affaires in our Countrey, yet (in respect of my promise) we will assist your Father: let us in meane while intreate you, to be seen our returne with the Princess Zephira, who thinks the time long before she came to Nabor. Doubtlesse

The History Of Palmerin D'Oliua

my Lord, quoth Zephyra, rather then you and my Lord Trincus, shall breake your promise to the Princeesse, in giuing succour to the King Abimar her father : I can content my selfe to stay here more willingly, then to returne to the King my Brother. *Adamo*, said Muzabelino, as for your selfe, that Palmerin is the onely meane whereby you haue attained your present felicity : and by him shall you with honour see your Countrey againe. In sooth my Lord, said the Princeesse, full well I know his owne graces and nature induceth him, first to adventure his life for the safety of my Countrey, then to passe strange Countreies with danger, onely to make you, my lastly, his rare, for came at the Castell of the tenne Rocks, from whence he brought those precious flowers, and the fatall Wyrd, whereby my long infirmity hath bene cured. To offer him honour, or all my possessions in way of recompence of so great paines, they are not comparable : for though I made him Lord of my selfe, and all those territories my father left me, yet both my conscience tell me they are too base. In briefe, I know his deserts to exceed my reach : as well may I sit downe to imagine, but neuer be able to contriue a sufficient reward. *Adamo* me *Adamo*, answered Muzabelino, you haue spoken truth, and his noble magnanimity must onely helpe my Lord : and this I assure you, that were it not the danger of his Kingly honours, and hazard of the whole Monarchie of Asia, hardly might he might be staid here, of such waight and importance as his other affaires. The calling Palmerin to him, whose inward thoughts were buſſed with the remembrance of his Lady, he said :

Let not your stay here my Lord offend you, though well I know the waste of your griefe, for that God who hath called you to this present estate, hath so appointed things that you cannot shun, in recompence whereof, before your departure from this Countrey, great & victorious honours

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

honours are appointed you. *Adamo*, for a perfect resolution your further doubts, take you no care for nourishing your Wyrd, for when your physician made her cease singing, at that instant I threwe such a charme on her, as henceforth she shall live without taking any sound. And when your turne to your City of Constantinople, let her be searched in some convenient place, in the great Hall of your Pallace and there shall she remaine as a certaine Oracle untill the day of your death, to deliver tidings of good or bad. If any Knight or Lady shall enter your Court, either with intent of Treason, or bringing ill newes, the Wyrd shall giue such fearfull shrikes, as she did at the time when you took her in the Harbour : but if the newes be of joy, and for your good, then shall she sing more sweetely, then when that she saine water fell from her booke, wherewith the Princeesse Zephyra was cured.

In briefe my Lord, at the time when you must leaue this life for the glorious habitation among the blessed, she shall foretell such strange occasions, as shall display the most resolute courage. By this meane shall you be guarded from all inconveniences, and your good fortune continued in such sort, as you shall be the most peaceable Emperour that euer liued in Greece. Certes my Lord (answered Palmerin) not by any desert in me, am I thus honoured with so high a present which I will keepe so chaste as mine owne person : but that the name of Muzabelino may for ever be imprinted in my heart, giue me some one of your names or kindred who euer more may be nearest to my person. *My Lord* (quoth Muzabelino) to you I will giue one of my Daughters, begotten by me on a Christian Lady, agreeing with you in faith and opinion : whereof I am not sorry, yet doe I feare that the King should know so much, leaſt his Religion might cause his death.

Dear Friend, said Palmerin, for Gods sake giue him me presently, and him will I love, as he were my Brother.

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

Your request (quoth he) can I not yet satiffie, butill we goe to my Castell where he is kept, which because I will not longer deferre, to Moroto will I perswade the King to journey to his great City of Grisca, there to take viewe of his Army, when I shall compasse the meane to giue him you, upon this conclusion they departed to their Chambers.

CHAP. LII.

How Muzabelino gaue *Palmerin* his Sonne Bellechino, entertaining the King and all his companie Royally at his Castell: and how the two Armyes the King of Abimar and the Soldane of Persia encountered, with the successe thereof.



Muzabelino perswading by his Arts, that the Soldane of Persia with his power, was nere at hand, thinking to raine the great City of Grisca: abhorred the King thereof, willing him with all speed to muster his Army, and prevent the Soldanes cruell determination. The King not mistaking this good aduise, set forth presently to Grisca, and by the way, at the earnest intreaty of Muzabelino, the King with all his Courtly company lay at his Castell: where many rare devices were shewne them by Enchantment, which I passe over, as matter altogether impertinent. There did the Magician giue *Palmerin* his Sonne Bellechino, one of his daughters likewise to the Quene, and another to the Princesse Zephira.

Afterward they journeyed to the City of Grisca, where all his Army was ranged in readinesse, being numbered an hundred thousand fighting men: the Vanguard he committed to the two Princes *Palmerin* and *Tryneus*, con-

ting

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2

King of twenty thousand Horsemen, his two Battell's of 10000. Archers on Horsebacke, the two Princes *Tomano* and *Drumino* had in charge, and the Mereward was governed by the two Kings of *Savata* and *Garara*. The Soldanes power being obtained in Battell-wise, within fewe dayes after the fight beganne: which continued with such danger on either side, as the victorie hung very long in suspense. In the end, after a mighty Assaulte made of the Persians, among whom was *Donadell* Prince of *Siconia* slaine, with many other great Califfes and Lords: the Soldane himselfe was taken Prisoner by *Palmerin*, and sent bound with fetters of Golde to the Princesse *Zephira*.

The Messenger coming to the Princesse Chamber, declared how *Palmerin* had sent her that Prisoner, to intreat him as her selfe best liked. In sooth (my Lord) quoth the Princesse to the Soldane, you are right welcome for his sake that sent you: here shall your entertainment be as fits your calling, and dislike not your mishap, in that the Knight who sent you hether, is wont to conquere where himselfe pleaseth. The Soldane angry at his hard fortune, yet seeing he was Prisoner to a Lady so beautifull: was immediately surprized with Love, as he was not able to answer the Princesse one word. But she perceiving he was very sore wounded, caused him to be conducted to a goodly Chamber, commanding her best Chyrurgions to attend him diligently.

At the morrow she came to see how he fared, when Love ouer-maistering all his senses, made him forget his hatred to the King *Abimar*, resolving to become his friend, by Marriage of the Princesse: and unable longer to suppress his weighty passions, which more troubled him then his dangerous wounds, in this sort he beganne. Fairer among the Daughters of men, tell me I beseech, if you be the Child of the King *Abimar*, or else of whence you are: so the end I may one day acknowledge this fable, which your kinde

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

kind and milde nature affords your Prisoner. Whereunto the Princeesse answered, how she was daughter to the King Onodius of Nabor, coupling therewith all her pained fortune, concluding in the end, that in all actions agreeing with honour, she remained his quicke Seruant. Fortune (quod he) neuer constant, but in inconstancie: once yesterday was I the greatest Prince in the World, and now none in my Kingdome so miserable as my selfe, being brought in subjection to my inferiour, and snared in Love with my bassall Daughter. Wisely said the Poet, that badly doe love and Majesty agree together. For though the height of mine estate foyleth my desired content, yet Love and mine owne liking are two such seuerie enemies, as I must not now stand to dispute the cause. Happy is the Knight in whose power remaines a Lady so excellent: but much more happy is the Lady that can commande so great a person, by whom such honours are this day afforced you faire Princeesse, as well may you vaunt to be the greatest in Persia.

If by a Knight surpassing in prowess I was conquered in battell, by one in beauty and courtesie incomparable, am I againe overmastered, so that I am enforced to present you my hart, and all the riches I possesse, to vse at your pleasure, holding (for your sake) perpetuall peace with Abimar my hatefull enemy. The Princeesse abashed at this unexpected offer, a swete blush coloured her daintie cheekes, and fearing to be imputed too indiscreet, shap'd her answer to the last point of all the Soldanes speeches, as thus, In with my Lord, well could I like, that Peace were concluded betwene the King and you, though not by any meane in me, but by the Omnipotent power of the Goddes: who letting you know the weaknesse of your owne strength, would not haue any Warre between you and the King Abimar. And if it like you so much to abase your selfe, as to like the simple Daughter of a King, who whilst he liued, was your

highnes

Emperour of Constantinople. PART 2

highnesse Subject: well may I with modesty give consent, so if my Father in all his life time obeyed you as his Lord, infinitely were disobedience in his Daughter. By the help Alcaron of Mahomet, answered the Soldane, your benigne humilitie hath more conquered me, then the proud enemy in the world could doe: doe you therefore appoint the Articles of our Peace, and I as impartiall will agree thereto.

Thus began the Peace and the promise of Marriage betwene the Soldane and the Princeesse Zephira, which being joyously agreed upon, the King Abimar, Palmerin, Trineus, and all the States subscribing thereto: the Camps on either side were discharged, and the Soldane with his great Seneschall openly in the City of Grisca, protested peace in this manner. That the Soldane should espouse Zephira, and Tomano the Princeesse Belsina the Soldanes Daughter. Besides, he renounced all pretended rights to the Realms of Grisca and Romata, nor would he demand any tribute of them afterward, or enter his Confinnes with any violence, but assist the King continually against all his Enemies.

Moreover, within two Moneths, he would deliver tenne thousand tallents of Gold, and two Millions of Scraphs, in recompence of his wrong done to the King of Abimar. All this my Lord, quoth the Soldane, will I faithfully performe, and all the things my Subjects shall subscribe thereto: on this condition, that you accompany the Princeesse to the City of Harano, there to honor with your presence our espousall, where your Sonne Tomano shall likewise match with our Daughter. To this the King willingly consented, whereupon the Soldane sent his Seneschall, to cause his army to march homewards into Persia, except sixe thousand men at Armes, to guard the Soldanes person: then openly in the field was the peace proclaimed, and the Captaines on either side friendly embracing each other.

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

other. Afterward the Soldan comming to the King Abimar and in the presence of Palmerin and Tryneus, thus spake. *Scholeke* were it now (my Lord) to remember our past displeasures, but generally to conferre of love and peace: yet heresof I can assure you, that the *Princesse Zephira*, and these two strange knights, prevailed more against me then all the rest of your Armes. But least your people should thinke, that our concluded Peace is not the more grounded, to morrowe will I be openly affianced to the *Princesse Zephira*, and afterward set forthward to Harano, that my Sisters may be present at our Nuptials: In the meane while our Wenehall and the five other noble Lords, shall remaine with you as our hostages. The's determinations fulfilled, the Soldane parted to Harano, where he heard of the death of the Prince Doudell, and the things done of Rosilia, with others other Princes of his kindred slain in the Battaille: but the heat of his new love caused him make small account thereof, preparing all things ready for the solemnity of his marriage.

CHAP. LI.

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2

CHAP. LIII.

The conference that the *Soldane of Persia* had with his Sisters, thinking by their meanes to stay *Palmerin* and *Tryneus* in his Court, and the honourable entertainment he made them at the arrivall of the *Princesse Zephira*. And how by good fortune *Palmerin* recovered his Squire *Colmelio*, from the Ambassadour *Mancito*.



Sooner was the Soldane come to Harano, but he presently dispatched messengers to his Sisters, that they might be present at his honourable Marriage: and calling for his Daughter the young *Princesse Belfina*, he thus beganne. Faire Daughter, I thinke you are not ignorant, for report flyeth quickly farre, that I have promised you in marriage to the Prince Tomano: therefore I account it very requisite, that your solemnity be on the same day, when I shall espouse the *Princesse Zephira*.

My gracious Lord and Father, quoth he, I remaine altogether at your highnesse direction, and if for conclusion of peace you match with so faire a *Princesse* as is *Zephira*, it were against reason I should refuse the worthy Prince Tomano of Romata. When he perceived the ready goodwill of his Daughter, and his two Sisters by this time were come to the Court: after he had welcommed them in most gracious manner he entered into these speeches. I thought it very expedient (faire Sisters) since you understand the peace concluded betwene the King of Grisca and my selfe, to acquaint you with other matter greatly concerning you.

There

The History of Palmerin D'Oliua.

There cometh hether in the company of the Princess Zephira, two strange knights of very rare perfection to whom I would willingly have you bestow especiall behavioir, as we might purchase the means to enjoy them continually in our Court, for no other intent I promise you, but onely that they may match with you in marriage. Your Sister Lyzanda, (quoth he to the eldest) I commit to the chiefeſt knight, the very same man that most valiantly took me prisoner in the battell: and you Aurecinda, for so was the youngest named) I bequeath to the other, who is one of the goodliest personages that ever nature framed.

Whereunto they were right soon entreated, especially Aurecinda, who though her elder Sister were grave and well advised, yet was she pleasant, quaint and so subtil, as easily could she practise the meanes to deceive the wisest man, whereof she made some experience, as you shall hereafter perceive in the Chapters following. The Soldane having sent for all the Kings, Princes and Lords his Subjects, to be present on the day of this great solemnity: the Prince Tomano, earnestly desiring to see his best beloved, desired Palmerin Tryneus and the Princess Zephira, that they might sette forthwards to Harano. But Muzibelino, who knew what troubles would succede the marriage, advised the King Abimar not to go: and counselled the two Princes Tryneus and Palmerin, to keepe themselves continually Armed, because the Soldane was a man continually subject to incertaine chaunces. So giving to each of them a Cote of Armes, of Crimson Velvet most curiously embroidered with Pearles he departed from them, returning backe againe to the City of Grisca. Now ride these Princes joyfully to Harano, where they were received by the Soldane with wonderfull pompe and honour, each one admiring the rare beauty of the Princess Zephira, who was accompanied with such a royall traine, as

was

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 7

never was the like scene before in Harano. At the City Gate the Soldane met them, and in a sumptuous Coach, accompanied them to the Pallace, where after many solemn courtships one each was delivered, and such magnificent royalty beseming the time and place, the Soldane came to his Sisters, who had not yet talked with the two strange knights, and thus spake.

Sisters, to the end that hereafter you shall not be beguiled, the knights that accompany my Lady the Princess, and whom I have so much commended to you, are Christians: notwithstanding they be such, as they twaine deserve greater honour, then I am any way able to expresse. As for their comely features, after that your eye hath conferred with your heart, I referre my opinion to your judgement, regard then that they be loved and esteemed, as their perfections doe worthily deserve. Aurecinda the youngest and most voluntary Sister, having her eye continually fixed on the Prince Tryneus, thus conferred with herselfe.

My Brother very lightly commaundeth us to love these strange knights, I know not what my Sisters opinion is: as for mine owne, the beginning already of my love is such, that if I doe not quickly obtaine my desire, I feare that my affection is rated at the price of my life. The time is passed over with many delights, and daily pastimes after the Persian manner, but all this while Lizanda and Aurecinda are tormented with love; so that all patience was utterly denied them, yet bearing this weighty burden so well as they could, at length the two Sisters came to the Princess Zephiraes Chamber, where they found Palmerin and Tryneus conferring together, feigning the cause of their coming to bid the Princess good morrow. Palmerin perceiving that Lizanda suddenly changed her colour, imagined the cause of her secret disease, and being loth to be tempted with any such occasion, dissembling that

he

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

he saw her not, took Zephira by the hand, and leading her to the window, found some cause of conference, which Lizabetha perceiving, in anger she stung forth of the Chamber, yet Aurecinda would not follow her: so she being thus wonly conquered with love, neither regarding fears, shame, or other such likely behaviour fitly in Paladins, took Trineus by the hand, and causing him to sit downe by her, thus began. I do not a little marvaile Sir Knight, that when Ladies come to see you, their entertainment is no better. It is not the manner of Gentlemen to be so solitary, without having some friend or beloved, which you shall some find in this Court of higher calling then you imagine, if Ladies may discern some signe of your favourable liking. In good faith Spadame, answered Trineus, if to you and your Sister, I have not done such duty as becometh, it proceeded by forgetfulness, or my mind carried away with other occasions, for nature made me obedient to Ladies. If these words Sir Knight (quoth she) proceed from your heart, I can assure you to be loved of such a one, who is not unworthy the like good will: and of such account is she with the Soldan, as he shall create you one of the greatest Lords in Persia, so please you to stay in his Highness Court. What may not be (quoth Trineus) for so soon as the Soldan and the Prince Tomano shall be espoused, I must needs depart with my companion, about affaires of very great importance. Palmerin who with one eare listened to the Prince Zephira, and with the other to the words of Aurecinda, after she was departed the Chamber, thus spake to Trineus.

Good friend, beware of this Lady, that she can't see you not to offend God, and violate the loyalty you owe to Spadame Agrioal. Such experience have I had in these actions, as when Ladies have enterprised their amorous suite, if they cannot compass it by the means of men, they will adventure it with bellicious Familiars, that can deceive the

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

the very wisest, especially in this wicked Countrey, where is no knowledge of God or his Lawes. Would you know, that such impudent love, cannot be carried about without such apt messengers, and from whence proceedeth many inconveniences. Brother, answered Trineus, scarce not my constancie: for my Ladies love hath taken such sure foundation, as death cannot make me false to her, yet perceived his words contrary in the end, and so for which he repented afterward.

While these delights continued, Maucetto, Ambassadour to the Soldan of Babylon arrived at the Court, where the Monarch of Persia received him very honourably: willing him to conceale the newes till the marriages were past, which on the morrow was performed with marvellous royalty. As the Prince and Lords accompanied the Soldan to the Temple, it happened that Aurecinda was conducted by the Prince Trineus: whereof she being not a little glad, by the way entered into these speeches. Ah my true friend and Lord Trineus, when will the day come that I may be thus led, to espouse the man whom I love more deere then my life? Spadame, quoth Trineus, I cannot marvell sufficiently to see you thus changed, considering the greatest Lord in the Orient may be thought too simple for such a Wife: yet did you choose one that perhaps would not espouse you, my Lord the Soldan being your Brother, may constrain him thereto. Wherein (quoth she) proceedeth my sorrow, for he whom I love, is not the Soldans Subject, nor hath any way with me in faith and opinion: he will give no eare to mine importunities, much lesse to such a one, as can make him one of the greatest Lords in Persia.

But thinke you my Lord that I can conceale, what you may plainly discern in mine eyes? You are the only man my hart hath chosen, and whom the Soldan loveth more then his Brother. Alas Spadame, quoth the Prince,

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

Wasting it is that a Knight errant, should espouse the Sisters of so great a Lord, as is the Soldane of Persia. And would his Majesty so much honour me, yet the contrariety of our faith is such an impeach, as flatly it may not be: for rather will I be toyme in pieces, then match with a Pagan, or renounce my faith for her love. No, no, my Lord, said the Princesse, I will renounce mine for your love, and worship Iesus Christ the Son of the blessed Virgin. Well worthy then were I of reproch, quoth Tryneus, if I should not requite you with love againe, considering what you adventure for my sake.

As they would have proceeded further in talke, Colmelio, Palmerins Squire, whom Maucetto had bought, standing to see the traine of Persian Lords and Ladies passe by, espied his Master and the Prince Tryneus, wherefore pressing through the Guard of Archers, he came to the Prince, and taking him by the mantle, said: How happie be this houre my noble Lord, to find you and my Master Palmerin. What fortune hath brought thee hither Colmelio, said Tryneus, hast thou yet spoken to thy Master? No my Lord, answered Colmelio, he conducteth the Prince with the Calife of Siconia, wherefore I durst not presume to trouble him.

Beloeue me, said the Prince, but thou shalt speake with him, and while the Arch. Flamin was performing the Ceremonies in the Temple, Tryneus presented him to his Master Palmerin, who was therat so joyfull, as if he had gotten the best City in Persia. He demanded by what meanes he escaped the Persians hands, the true discourse whereof Colmelio rehearsed: and how Maucetto the Ambassadour bought him, as Ptolome and he were brought to the Soldane of Babilon his Court to be sold, and there both Ptolome finde great favour as I have heard, of the faire Princesse Alchidiana the Soldans Daughter, onely for your sake. Thou tellest me wonders said Palmerin, depart not

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

not from me till after Dinner, when I will goe to thy Master Maucetto to demand thee: which I hope he will not deny, because when I was Knight to Alchidiana, he was one of my speciall good friends. After the solemnity of the marriage was ended, and Dinner ended at the Pallace for preparation of pastime: Palmerin calling Colmelio, went with him to the Ambassadour Maucetto, who not a little abashed to see him, that was generally reputed dead into the Soldans Court, came and embraced him with these speeches. My Lord Palmerin, what great God hath raised you againe? The Soldane was credibly informed, that you and Olorico were drowned in the Sea: for which both he and Madams Alchidiana more lamented, then for the losse of his whole Army before the City of Constantinople.

Palmerin dissembling as though he knew not thereof, seemed to warrell therat very much, and the better to shadow his conceit, said: that after the tempest was ceased, which cast him very farre from the Soldans Army, thinking to returne to Constantinople, he was by violent winde brought to the Isle of Mallada; where the Prince Olorico, who he is, and all the rest of my companions remaine enchanted, whom I hope to recover againe after I can get hence. Little thought I my Lord, answered Maucetto, to find you in this Countrey, but bid Madams Alchidiana know so much, her sorrow would soon be converted into joy.

But what newes with you my Lord? said Palmerin: What may be the cause of your Ambassage? I will not conceale the truth thereof from you, quoth Maucetto, I come to demande also of the Soldane of Persia, for a fresh invasion against Constantinople. I marvell, quoth Palmerin, that he will enterprize the voyage againe, which hath cost him so much, and returned so little profit: rather would I counsell him to forbear, and so will I write to his Mo-

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

jesty before your departure, as also to *Padaine*, *Alchidiana* his Daughter. But yet I would request one court, sic of you Sir *Maucetto*, that you would give me your Nabe *Colmelio*, who in time past hath bene my Squire. Him shall you have with all my heart, quoth *Maucetto*, and not onely him, but whatsoever else is mine beside; so please you to accept thereof.

I thanke you good Sir, answered *Palmerin*, and I doubt not in time to requite your gentlenesse. While they thus talked together, the *Soldano* came to *Palmerin*, saying: Will not you make one my Lord in the dance? the Ladies say they cannot have your company. In sooth my gracious Lord, answered *Palmerin*, little do I delight in any such exercises, very earnest affaires have I with the Ambassadour *Maucetto*, which crabe *Padaine* and speedy dispatch. Beside, saine would I know some tidings of him from my Lady *Alchidiana*, from whose service I have now discontinued a yere and more. The *Soldano* abashed at these words, said: I pray you tell me the truth, are not you he that slew the Prince *Amarano* of *Nigrea* in combat, and afterward too other of his Brethren, of which exploits remaine such fame through all *Turkie*? In sooth my Lord, answered *Palmerin*, being bowed to my Ladies service, I never could suffer her honor to be any way distressed, and in that duty I will continue, for the manifold caretesses I have receiued by her. By the living God, said the *Soldano*, now thinke I my selfe the happiest Prince in the world, having the man in my Court, whose very name makes the stoutest to tremble. But sith we are thus far entred, tell me: is the Princesse *Alchidiana* so beautifull as fame reports her? What is she my Lord, quoth he, and much more then fame is able to utter: beside, she is one of the most gracious and affable Princessees, that ever I beheld in any Kings Court.

Now is night come, and after the Courtly pastimes were

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

were ended, the *Widow* went to receive the honour of his Will, commanding *Palmerin* to be intreated as his owne person: which not a little contented the Princesse *Lyzanda*, thinking hereby (alas too late!) to obtaine him for her Husband, but herein she was deceived, so that her rash love procured her miserable death. *Aurecinda* likewise continually courted *Trincus*, as though she had alwayes bene trained up in his company: wherefore one day, after he had bene warned foure or fve times by *Palmerin*, he thus spake to her. *Padaine*, if your honesty and vertue hath imprinted in Noble mindes, an especiall conceit of your Continency and Chastity: I marvaile now what many will thinke, in that you should not shew any such signes of love to me, so; it seemes ye yelde the Citty before any assault be given. All these speeches could not qualifie her humour, so; love had so emboldened her with such unshamefastnesse, as she made no conscience of following the cause, giving credit to one of her Ladies persuasions: That by good pursuit, all things enjoy a happy end.

CHAP. LIV.

How *Maucetto* the Ambassador to the Monarch *Misof*, of *Babylon*, declared his Message before the *Soldano*, and all the Princes of *Persia*. And of the Combate betweene *Tryneus*, and the King *Orzadine* of *Galappa*.



After the Marriage Feast was fully ended, the *Soldano* sent for the Ambassadour *Maucetto*, who in the presence of all the Persian Lords, thus began to deliver his Message. Most high, mighty, and illustrious Monarch of *Persia*, the *Soldano* of *Babylon* my Lord, and Master, having evermore continued in faithfull alliance

The History Of *Palmerin D'Oliua*

to your Majesty: lets you know by me his great and dammageable losse, which he sustained befoze the City of Constantinople. For recovery whereof, he humbly intreateth your highnesse most favourable assistance: which well you cannot deny him, in respect of the great sway you hold in Turkie, as also for the establishment of our faith and generall destruction of the Grecian Empire. An Ambassador queth he Boldane, I will better consider hereon, and answer you accordingly. So calling all the Princes presently to counsell, diuers confused iudgements were amongst them: whereupon he sent for Palmerin, and befoze them all demanded his opinion, whereto he shap'd this answer. Might it stand with your highnes liking, and the good conceit of all these noble Princes, gladly would I be excused in this matter: wherein I may not speak without suspicion because the intent is against mine owne native country, and those whom I agree withall in faith and Religion.

But seeing your Majesty will needs know my iudgement: pardon in speaking boldly what I would be loth to dissemble. I thinke no one of you my gracious Lords, but well remembers the great warres against King of Grilca: since which time the Souldiours are hardly recovered, and extremity were it to endanger the liues of wounded men. Moreover, if the Boldan of Babilon who now demandeth succour, sending his Army into Greece, where raignes a Prince so mighty and puissant, as well could repulse them with shamefull confusion. Forwade your selves as yet there is no other, but he that triumphed in conquest befoze, I feare can doe the like againe, and thus my Lords is mine opinion.

Well haue you answered, quoth the Boldane, and this peaceable conclusion liketh me best, so arising from counsell, they went into the great Hall: where befoze their coming, as the Princes Zephyra was debasing with many Lords & Ladies, entred an Armed Knight, accompanied with

Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

with six other in Armour, and twelue Squires, who seeing the Boldane not in his Chayze of Estate, demanded of the Quene where he was? Knight (quoth she) he is in conference with the Princes and Lords of his Realme, and long it will not be befoze he come: in mean while you may passe the time in conference with the Ladies. Adam (said Tryneus, to the Quene, I thinke he scant knoweth how to conferre with Ladies, for his indiscreet behaviour sheweth him to be the worst nurtured Knight that euer I sawe: How you not (quoth she to the Princesse Zephyra) how unmannerly he take downe, without bring any Reuerence to your Majesty.

The Knight sitting fronting in a Chayze, and having unclasped his Helmet (said to the Quene) I pray you tell me Adam, are these two strange Knights in this Court, that were against your Husbando in the Battell and took him? They be Sir Knight (quoth she) well and in good disposition thanks to the Sovereigne Creator. I aske not of their health (quod he) What are they called? The one (said the Quene) is named Palmerin, the other Tryneus. And I (quoth he) in Ozodine King of Galappa, to whom fortune hath bene more favourable in Love, then in Riches: making me friende to the faire Oronia, Daughter to the Califfe of Siconia, and Sister to the Prince Donadel, who was slaine in the Battell against the King Abimar, the in my iudgement, not having her second in Beauty, at whose request I have travelled the greatest part of Asia, to spread her fame, and honorable reputation, which I have done to her perpetuall fame: and returning to her when my Labours were finished, in stead of joy and pleasure, I found her sad and peniue for the death of her Brother. These newes were more to me then death, and to comfort her, I promised to revenge her Brothers misfortune: and this is the enely cause of my coming, for having combatted with him that slew the Prince, her Love to me will be the grea-

for, and mine honour shall be spread with moze advantage. I believe well (quoth the Dame,) if you escape with life from the Combat: but tell me Sir Knight, why beare you such ill will to him that slew the Prince: considering that it was done in plaine Battell, and he is enemy who would have done as much to him if he could. Not for this cause alone will I enter the Combat, said Orzodine, but for I am desirous to let him know that I am moze fauoured in Love then he: and as I am one of the most happy Lovers, so am I the best Knight in the world, which I will maintaine against any that dare gaue say it. Happy lover, Dieu vous guard, said Tryneus. If the Deities had hitherto spared the description of Cupid, Sonne to the Goddess of Love, now might they iustly have set him downe for blinde: yet is he most worthy to be condemned, that he would vouchsafe any fauour to the most foolish among men, he hauing Dedicated me to the service of a Lady, to whom your gentle Irenia, Oronia I should say, doth not deserue the name of her Seruant.

For the rest, whereas you haunt your selfe to be the best Knight in the world, your great folly is too apparant, for there are many knights Errant in the world, who can giue you a byake Canbyado at the Lance: and after they haue soyled you in the Houll, bestow a little paines to take your greene head from off your grosse shoulders. My selfe that slew the Brother to your Goddess of Beauty, will do you so much pleasure as to heale the incurable disease wherewith you are Day and Night tormented. O diuine spirits, cryed the Pagan, saue me so much, that this Knight may but dare to enter the field with me. Yes I dare (sayde Tryneus) and before we part, I doubt not but to make thee quiet enough.

Orzodine presently threwe his Cammet as his Wage, and Tryneus a Golden Bracelet, which Aurecinda had giuen him, entreating Zephyra to keepe them, which she refused

saled to bee, fearing the danger of the Prince Trineus. Whereupon the Soldane entred the Hall, leauing Palmerin by the hand, but when they saw the Armed Knight thus to contend with Trineus, they marbailed greatly what might be the occasion thereof. When Orzodine saw the Soldane was set, he entred into these speeches. Soldane I am come hither to accuse thee, of a villanous Act which thou hast committed. Harbouring in thy Court, the man that slew the ballant Donadell, whose murder thou canst not so cunningly cover, but that thy treachery will be openly discovered.

What art thou (said the Soldane) that darrest speake thus presumptuously in our presence? Orzodine King of Galappa (quoth he) of whom thou hast heard heretofore, and now have I presented my Wage against this Knight, which I will maintaine in despite of the proudest. The Soldane abashed at this Chent, sought to dissuade them from the Combat, because he had heard great speeches of the Kings Brother, but all was in vaine: for Orzodine was so obstinate, and Trineus so earnest, to reuenge the Turkes proud blasphemy against his Lady, as they would not be pacified till the field was granted them. Let vs haue Iudges presently (quoth Orzodine) and the field assured for our Combat, that I may discipline this glorious stranger.

Take not such haile (sayd Trineus) for I feare thou wilt thinke thy coming too soone. Immediately were the two Combatants armed, the Iudges placed in their Tent, when the Soldane and Palmerin with many other Princes, went to behold this exploit. But such a mighty man was the King of Galappa, as Palmerin feared his Friends successe. The Trumpets sounding, the Knights byake their Lances byakely, and met together so furiously with their bodies, as they were both throwne out of their Saddles: but they quickly recovering themselves againe, drew their

Swords,

Sworbes, and marched against each other with like courage, as old Achilles against noble Hector. Long continued the fight with danger on either side, but the King of Galappa strooke such lucigoty strokes, being a man of equal stature with a Giant, as he wounded Trineus in many places: and such was his ill fortune: after long travelling about, he let his foot be vaulted on the transverse of a Lance, whereby he fell downe backwards to the ground. Orzodine taking advantage of this fall, set his foot on the Princes brest, striding to pull his helmet from his head: but God knows in what agony Palmerin was now, when he breath forth those speeches to himselfe. Ah Heavens (quoth he) have I taken such paine and travail to find my friend, and must he now be among his enemies? Aurecinda, likewise, ready to perish with griefe, seeing Palmerin ready to swoone as he said. Alas (quoth she) is it not enough that my friend must die, but his Noble Companion will leave him company? While this doubtfull scene was among the Courtiers, Tryneus had so well scuffled with Orzodine, as he lay along by him likewise, when drawing a Pocket-dagger, he stabb'd it through his helmet, into one of his eyes, so that he layed his head to the ground. Orzodine seeing himselfe wounded to the death, gave a boie to cry: when Tryneus having gotten his helmet off, presently smote his head from his shoulders. If the Knights of Galappa were now dismayd, and the Soldane, Palmerin, Zephyra, Tomano, and all the rest joyfull, I leave to your judgments: especially Palmerin, who rejoicing that Tryneus had thus conquered his enemy, entered the City, and embraced him, and bringing him forth the field, he was welcomed to the Pallace, with wonderful honour.

The Body of the dead King was delivered to them that came with him, with marvellous reprehension of their most audacious Challenge: and so with great heaviness

ness they returned home againe. For would the Soldane longer stay in his Court the Allyrian Embassador. But excused himselfe to the Babylonian Mylos, that he could not give him any assistance, rebearing this answer under his unfortunate Battaille against the King Abimar, Maucetto seeing that to stay longer would not availe him, took his leave of the Soldane, saying. Albeit my Lord you cannot give my Master any assistance: yet let Palmerin returne to him at his departure from your Court. What I can doe herein, answered the Soldane, your Lord shall be assured to finde, although I thinke his minde be otherwise addicted: but you were best to know his minde your selfe, because I heard him say he would write to Madame Alchidiana.

Maucetto departing to Palmerins Lodging, the Soldane went to see his Sisters, of whom he demanded, if they had as yet said any thing with the Knights. My Lord, answered Aurecinda, who in all things was more prompt then the Elder Sister, I have fixed my love on the Knight Trineus, with full resolution never to love any other: but he doth not intend to stay here in your Court, much lesse I feare to make me his wife. As for my Sister, she cannot compasse the meanes, how to impart her love to Mr Palmerin. Right strange is it, quoth the Soldane, that the promises you have made them, and so apparent signes of Ardent affection, cannot dissuade them to make choise of you: Doubtless they be some great Princesses, who to see the fashions of the World have thus disguised themselves. Continue your love as you have begun: and if by other meanes you cannot stay them, adventure your honours as a meane to entrap them. And now both occasion well serve you Sister Aurecinda, for by curious intreating Trineus now he is wounded, you may more profit in one houre, then you have done during this tedious pursuit.

Proceed.

Whilſte was it ſo; the Soldane thut to perſwade her, in that ſhe laboured ſo; no other matter, keeping Trineus compaite both day and night: but Palmerin offended the ſeat, ſecretly thus rebuked the Prince. What means you my Lord? If you mend not this order I muſt be angry with you. You ſee this Princeſſe exceeds in her deſire, and you give her occaſion to continue it: I know not what will happen hereon, but my minde perſwades me that you will hardly depart hence with honour. He adviſed I deſire you and take this of me: that if the wiſeſt man will lend his eares to looſe perſons, and followe their affections: he ſhall become moze unreaſonable then a brute Beaſt, regarding nothing but what is object to his eyes, and what the fleſh, (the onely mortall enemy to the ſpirit) ſhall ſooneſt perſwade him.

CHAP. LV.

How *Aurecinda* Siſter to the Soldane of *Perſia*, purſued the Prince *Trineus* ſo neare, as in the end, ſhe had her deſire, and what followed.



DAlmerin having thus ſchooled the Prince Trineus, that he ſhould give no eare to the enticements of *Aurecinda*: *Lizanda* came to his Chamber, and ſeigning urgent buſineſſe with him, took him aſide, delivering her affections in this manner. Right happy would I thinke my ſelfe Sir Palmerin, ſo you would deigne to continue in the Soldans Court: who doubtleſſe would advance you to the higheſt ſtep of honoz, and give me to you in Marriage that am his Siſter, and a Lady wor- thy ſome reckoning.

Palmerin offered to depart the Chamber, but *Lizanda* ſtayed

ſtayed him, proceeding thus. Alas my Lord, will you never bouchſafe to ſpeake to me? Now I ſee well that you are the moſt diſloyall Knight in the world. Whadam, answered Palmerin, rather will I die then one ſote of diſloyalty ſhall be found in me: nor can I graunt your impoſſible requests, without committing noxious treaſon to my Lable, and offending my God, whom ſcooliſh love ſhall never make me to diſpleaſe. So without any further ſpeeches, he went to the Prince *Tomano*, leaving the poore Lady well neare dead with this unkinde reſuſall, who going to her owne Cabinet, thus began to breathe ſorrow her ſorrowes.

Oh Love, the moſt cruell paſſion that ever entered the heart of any Lady, how great and marvellous is thy power? Some thou enſorcelleſt to deſire and inſtead, without being heard or regarded: others thou cauſeſt to be happily favoured, eſtimated of their Friends, Servants and Lovers. Unhappy that I am, but much more unhappy Mother, accuſed be the houre when thou diddeſt command me to love the moſt cruell and unkinde among men. Can there be any Lady in the world moze diſgraced then I am? Had I not revealed my love to him, ſome comfort I might thereby enjoy among my ſorrowes: but his frozen minde knowing my love hath hold me in the greater contempt. My Siſter told me, that by too long concealment of love, many have loſt them they moſt eſteemed: but I (alas) doe finde it cleane contrary. Now was *Aurecinda* (by chance) in the Chamber next her Siſters Chamber, and hearing her thus ſorrowfully complaine: ſhe came to her, and thus ſpoke.

Good Siſter diſcomſort not your ſelfe by your friends reſuſall: I ſhould not thinke my ſelfe worthy the name of a woman, if I could not take you the man that thus torments you. As for me, I have found the means to compaſſe mine owne deſire. Yet could not all theſe ſpeeches appeaſe her,

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

her, wherefore she left her, and understanding by one of her Ladies, Tryneus should this Night Suppe in the Solitane Chamber: whereupon she went to the Ladies house, and there prepared his Bed, and such sweet delicate Bathes, as might move the spirits of a very aged Gentleman. At his house, she came to one of the Pages of honour, who her to the Lady she most of all trusted: saying.

I pray thee good Page, goe to the Prince Tryneus his Chamber, and there attend till he come forth: then feigning that some one hath done thee iniurie, thou shalt entreat him to helpe thee against him that abused thee. If he do descend, as doubtlesse he will: bring him to the bath, where I will stay his coming with my Sister, and so soon as he is entered, make fall the doore on him, and get thee gone, but in any case be secret herein, and I will recompence thee to the utmost content. The Page was so well instructed in his art, as he failed not in any one point of his charge. But as the Prince Tryneus came alone from his Chamber, fell on his knees before him, saying. My Lord, if ever you pitied a Gentleman abused, let me intreate you to revenge my cause, on a Villaine that hath too much wronged me.

Tryneus, who had often seen the Page in his Chamber with Aurecinda, answered; Believe me Page, it were pittie to deny thy request, considering thou dost demand it so caringly: shall I need to be better provided then I am? So my Lord, quoth he, your sword is sufficient. So was he conducted by the Page, along the Gallery, and being come to the appointed place, he opened the doore thus speaking to the Prince My Lord, the partie you must deale withall is in his Chamber, accompanied but with one Lady, wherefore you may enter secure from danger. He was no sooner in, but the Page clapt to the doore and departed. Now was Tryneus not a little amazed, when he saw

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2

no body but the Princess with her Lady, she being come thither to bathe her selfe, and lay in her Bed: but in such surpassing beauty, as Jupiter with his Lightning, Neptune with his trident soaked Ape, and Pluto with his Cerberus, would stand and wonder thereat. So finely had she dressed the golden tresses of her haire, and her head attyre embellished with such goodly Orientall Pearles, as made her seeme a beautifull Angell, being covered with a gorgeous Canopie, resembling the Sunne under a faire Cloud. Between her bare Breasts hung a precious Carbuncle, which supplied the office of Venus her Breasband: when she saw Tryneus stand so agast, she sayd. Why? my Lord, are you more afraid of a naked Lady, then of the most puissant Bulght in Persia, armed cap a pe? I can judge no less, seeing you dare approach no nearer. In which my Lady, quoth the Pages Sister, you may take your selfe happy to be desired of such a Lady, whom mighty Kings and Princes have earnestly sought, and would gladly have had the least favour she bestowed on them. So taking him by the hand, she caused him to sit downe in a Chaire by the window, and giving her hand to her Ward, she departed leaving them together. At Page (quoth Tryneus) how hast thou deceived me? What? Sayd the Princess, you forget where you are, you must at this time somewhat pittie my sorrowes, and here are a Dittie which I have made for your sake. When taking her Ward, she thus began to sing as followeth.

The

The History of Palmerin D'Oliua.



The Dittie sung by Aurecinda to the Prince Tryneus.

THe God of Warre, fierce, sterne and rigorous,
When he beheld faire Venus heavenly beauty,
Made small account of her disloyalty,
But suddenly became full amorous.

Beautie had then her power vigorous,
Changing rough lookes to sweetest secrecie.
But he I love incens'd with cruelty,
Doth not regard my torments languorous.
Why should I then pursue that stubborne minde,
That with excuses kills my hope out-right?
Yet if he helpe not, death must me acquite,
Ah mighty love in nature most unkinde,
Thou dost constrain me to affect the man,
That neither favour, love, nor kindnesse can.

What have I said? The Knight of my desire,
Is meeke divine, and furthest from compare:
Whose Eagles eyes can well discerne my care,
And with sweet pitties drops allay this fire.

The little God hath made him gracious,
His Mother milde, turns the Ladies smart:
That shines his lovely Image in her heart,
Then to despair becomes no vertue.

Requie sweet Friend the passions of thy Friend,
Whom God and nature hath appointed thine:
Give love his due, and then thou shalt be mine,
So shall I no sorrow have a happie end.

The Persian Myd, say boldly thou hast wonne;
That Monarchs, Kings, and Princes, ne're could done.

221b

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

With excellent cunning old she handle her instrument,
but with far better grace and affection belibered her ditty,
gracing it with such sad countenance, mournfull lookes,
and renting sighes, as it forced the Prince Tryneus to be-
come exceeding amorous. And burning in this new fierie
impression, beheld the singular beauty of Aurecinda, which
ravished his senses in such sort, as (trembling like the As-
pen leafe) he sat bowne by her on the beddes side. The
Prince laying her Harpe from her, embraced him very
lovingly with these speeches. Alas my Lord, will you still
continue in this rigour and cruell inhumanity? your hart
is more hard then Adamant, that will not be mollified
with so many intreaties: I sweare to you by the Sunne
that lightens the world, vntill you graunt me one re-
quest, before your face will I presently lay my selfe. Shall
well doe I perceiue, quoth Tryneus, that hardly can I es-
cape misfortune: the Seruant hath bewitched me, and
now the Mistresse seeks my death. Ah Adamant, quoth he,
how can I graunt your request, considering mine offence
to God, and yet that loveth me loyally? Either be as good as
the word, or else stand to the danger that may befall thee.

Why? Sir Knight, is my beauty of so tender account,
as I am not worthy to be held betwixt your armes?
Will thou suffer me to consume in this violent flame, which
thou maist with such ease and honoz extinguish? hadst thou
rather see a lady spile her hart before thee, then thou wilt
vouchsafe to preserve her life? Come, come sweet Friend,
see how love and his Mother hath made way for thee, re-
fuse not opportunity so favourably offered. What ble-
mish is on this body, that should deserve disdaine? If the
King of Gods would think himself honozed with this con-
quest: much more estimation shouldest thou make hereof.
In briefe, she was so perfect in her subtilty, and knew so
well how to inbeigle the Prince with quaint speeches and
sweet embracings: that she made him forget God, his La-

I

or,

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

his loyalty, and himselfe, so that of a Maiden, he made her the fairest woman in Persia. When the time came that he should depart, the Princeesse said to him; yet hadst thou a further request, my Lord, you must promise to make me in this place at times convenient, and endeavour with your companion, that he may likewise love my Sister. Trineus made promise he would, but rather he desired to stab himselfe with his weapon: then that Palmerin should know this great abuse, so heinous did his offence seeme to himselfe.

Aurecinda perswaded her Sister, still to pursue Palmerin with her love, and what had passed betweene her and the Prince Tryneus, she declared: whereupon her Sorrow grew the greater, yet all was in vaine, for Palmerin would give no eare to her complaints, which was the cause of this mishap following. Lyzanda advertised by her Sister, that Tryneus still thus used her company in the Bath: envious of her Sisters benefit, and despitefull of Palmerins obstinate refusal, she went to the Solane, and with many teares thus bewailed her grieve. Ah my Lord, how much better had it bene, that we had never knowne these cruell Chyistian Knights: whose ingratitude will be the cause of my death: for the younger of them is marvellously beloved of my Sister, who forgetting her faith, honesty, and her obedience to your Majesty, hath dishonoured both herselfe and you, onely to make proofe of the other Knights cruelty to me. The Solane admiring his Sisters report, answered.

I will not will my Sister to abuse her selfe, without promise of marriage: but seeing it hath so fallen out, by my fault, should they both repent it. Durst the Traytour abuse me so much in mine own Court? Why? my Lord, quoth Lyzanda, you are the onely cause thereof, and therefore you must be angry with no body but your selfe. Let me not live as howlers in the Solane, if I be not sufficiently revenged on him: Sister, be you but secret, and re-

serve

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

serve the rest to my direction. When calling for the Captaine of his Guard, willing him to take fifty Knights, and when his Majesty was at supper, they should goe take his Sister and the Knight with her in the Bath, and afterwards carry them to a strong prison. But let it be secret, quoth he, for if his companion know thereof, it may give to further inconvenience. And because Palmerin should not misdoubt this treason, all supper time the Solane held him in familiar talk: he hoping by this fetch, to keep them still in his Court, but it fell out afterwards to be the cause, that many of his best and chiefest Knights were slaine.

Not long had the Ambushed Knights waited where they were appointed, but the Princeesse Aurecinda opened the doore, and came forth with her friend as she was accustomed: where they were suddenly taken, Tryneus not having the leisure to draw his Sword, so was he carried prisoner to one of the strongest Towers in the Palace, and Aurecinda at the same time to another. Tryneus seeing himselfe thus betrayed, fell into these lamentable discourses. Wofull wretch that I am, have I so lately escaped by my friend, the cruell enchantments of the hellish Malfada, when I endured so many paines and torments, and am now come to the place where they shall be revenged?

Ah Palmerin my good Brother and companion, what wilt thou say when thou hearest of my taking: but most of all when thou understandest the cause thereof? Miserable wretch, how often did my friend warn me of this inconvenience, yet had not I the grace to credit his counsell: doubting my very conceit of chame, when thou shalt be acquainted with my foule offence, wilt be more grievous to me than death. What dishonour, paine, torment and punishment, shall be sufficient for my misdoings? For so long and despised a life, could not the feare of God, which hath hitherto,

hitherto so graciously protected thee, nor the loyalty of Agriola, who forsooke Parents, Friends, and all for thee: have kept thee from this monstrous act: O eternall God, the man that forsaketh thee is vile and abominable. When I had thy tears before mine eyes, I was at rest and quiet in conscience, esteemed and beloved of all men: but when thou gavest me raines of liberty, I became dissolute and forgetfull of thee, as also of them that honored me so much. Ah miserable occasion, and those deceits, entisements, and subtill perswasions: how mighty are they in operation? neither men nor diuels could bring me into such danger, as you have plunged me in by to the eares. Ah villainous Page that first brought me thither, and thou the fairest Lady in the world art cause of my ehill. How are they to be accused but my wretched selfe, who seeking mine owne hurt, found it, and having found it, continued in it. Thus sorrowfully wailed Tryneus, where on the contrary Aurecinda rejoyced: for when she considered the estate of her friend, she perswaded her selfe by this meane, that the Soldane her Brother would enforce him to marry her, which hope made her as joyfull, as Tryneus was sad and peniſe.

When the Captaine had imprisoned Tryneus & Aurecinda, he came to the Soldane sitting at the Table, saying: Will your Majesty command me any further service? I have enclosed the knight Tryneus in one Tower, and your Sister Aurecinda in another. Why? quoth the Soldane, did you find them together? I did my Lord, quoth the Captaine, your Sister leading him by the hand out of the Ladies hot house. By Mahomet, quoth the Soldane, but that you speake it, hardly could I beleue it, what shamefull villainy is this committed in our Palace: by the greatest God, the fact shall be so worthily punished, as it shall remaine for a perpetuall memoꝝ. At these speeches Palmerin was not a little amazed, and dissembling his anger so well

as he could, said to the Soldane. I cannot be perswaded my Lord, that Trineus would commit so vile an act, without entisement thereto by your Sisters treason: she being (under your Majesties correction) the most shameles Wile that ever I saw, for twenty and twenty times have I seen her follow him, with gestures farre triffling one of her calling. When starting from the Table, quoth he: Consider what he is, and what thou intendest against him, for never was imprisonment so dearly bought as this will be, and before thou puttest him to death, it shall cost me my life, and the lives of an hundred thousand knights beside, in revenge of his wrong. Being thus enflamed with fire, he could not so give over, but thus began againe. My Good Soldane, thy treason is so manifest, as thou canst not hide it, full well doe I understand thy flatteries, whereby thou hopest to keep us in thy service, but farre art thou from thy reckoning, for rather will I be taken in a thousand pieces, then endure the reproch of such a mans service, who under colour of friendship imprisoneth his knights, and afterward threateneth them with death. Tomano Drumino, Corax, and many other knights belonging to the King Ahimar seeing Palmerin in such a rage, as it seemed the fire did sparkle from his eyes: endeavored to perswade him, and Tomano thus spake to the Soldane. My Lord, under my safe conduct, and your faith promised, are these two knights come with us to your Courte, and you have now imprisoned one of them, advise your selfe of speedy justice: for this shame done him is against all right, and so ever shall you be noted with breach of faith: beside, I repute this injurie as done to my selfe. The Soldane seeing the pincers thus moved, although himselfe procured those fittie Armed knights to take Trineus, yet with smooth countenance he thus answered. Content your selves my Friends Trineus in right shall be defended: and if I find my Sister culpable, she shall be punished as she were a stranger.

The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Woe I demand not, said Palmerin, so I am assured, that by her flatteries Tryneus hath been seduced. So departing to his Chamber, he met his two Squires, Bellechino and Colmelio, of whom he demanded, if they at any time perceived the love between Tryneus and the Princess Aurecinda.

They answered that they did perceive it, and others nights they saw him go to the Princess's Chamber. And why did you not reveale it to me? quoth he, worthily have you deserved death, in concealing the shame of your Masters Friends, wherein my selfe cannot escape untouched. Whereupon he Armed himselfe, and sending for the Prince Tomano, said to him.

I thinke it best my Lord, that you keepe your ordinary garde about your person, till we know how the Soldans will deale with Tryneus. As for my selfe, I intend (if your Mother Drumino and the Prince Corax will joine with me) to keepe the field with the thousand knights that came hither with us, that none may enter into the City without our licence. In meane while, you may send a Courtier to the King your Father, that he presently send us what helpe he may. Sir Palmerin, answered Tomano, not onely my knights shall enter the field for you, but my selfe likewise, so please you to command me, and what you thinke best for the deliverance of your friend Tryneus, I will be willing to accomplish to my uttermost. Presently will I send a Messenger to Grisca, and conferre with my Mother Drumino, that his knights and Gentlemen may be Armed that came from Savara, as also they that came with my Nephew Corax from Garara, which will be in number a thousand more: your selfe in meane time may get forth your necessities.

Who then had some the knights Arming, the Horses providing, the bag and baggage carrying, would have said, that Palmerin was as much feared and beloved in a strange Countrey,

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

Countrey, as in his owne. Such was the diligence of the Nobles and Souldiers of Grisca, Savara and Garara, as they were right soon before the Palace attending for Palmerin, who commanded Tryneus his Horses and rich Armour should be brought forth by his Squires, leaning in his Chamber all the riches and treasure, that the Soldans and the Princess Zephyra had given him, and mounting on his owne Courser, he came and embraced the Prince Carax, saying: Let us depart (my Lord) from these ingratitude people that never know how to entertaine Strangers: well may the Soldans thank the Princess Zephyra his wife, else I had smitten his head from off his shoulders. Where the Cuck goes displayed, the Drummers and Trumpets sounding cheerfully, as the noise was heard through all the City,

And in this manner went Palmerin to the field, which raised such a tumult among the people, and such sedition amongst the Nobles of Persia, as they boldly told the Soldans, that most unadvisedly he had imprisoned the strange knight and the Princess his sister, and thus ought otherwise be defended for a stranger. The Soldans perceived his fault well enough, but as the man delighting in his evil, without altering his humour, regarded not their speeches: commanding that they should all Arme themselves, and charging each one expressly not to speake to Tryneus without leave. Why? (quoth he) the fiend that is gone, too much abused me in my Palace: by my Crowne, I will punish both his pride and his companions, amongst all them that dare say the contrary. And so he flew from them into his Chamber.

The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

CHAP. LVI.

How the Soldane seeing hee could not perswade Trynens to marrye his Sister, condemned him to death, and what followe afterwards.



Omano, who by the good counsell and assistance of Palmerin remained in the City, with two hundred knights for the defence and safeguard of his person: fought by all the best meanes he possibly could for the deliverance of Prince Trynens, and coming to the Queene Zephyra, thus spake: Madam, seeing men can no way perswade the Soldane, try what the pleasing speeches of Ladies will do: who (in my judgement) cannot come from him, without obtaining theyr request.

The Soldane having forgotten the especiall favour, which heretofore he receyved by Say Palmerin, for whose safety he gave both faith and promise: at the simple report of Madam Lizanda, hath this night past committed Sir Trynens Prisoner in the strongest Tower, saying he was found in the Baths with Aurecinda. And so earnestly dothe he prosecute the matter, as that notwithstanding the great intreaty of all the Princes and my selfe, he will not discharge him, but hath sworn that in despite of us all he shall be punished. What? (quoth the Queene) with my Lord so much forgot himselfe: that he will take his harme who hath done him such honour? Believe me Madam, (answered the Prince) I have told ye the truth: therefore when you shall walke to his Chamber, which is the place where all demands are granted to Ladies, you may put him in remembrance of the Prince, and to give some good

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

words for him, that so willingly advertised his life for you. My my Lord (saie Zephira) I feare the Soldane will hardly heare me: for when such mighty persons are in anger, little account make they of Lobs or vertue, yet will I willingly doe what lyeth in me.

So bidding the Prince good night, she went weeping to the Soldanes Chamber: which his Majesty perceiving, came and embraced her, demanding who had any way offended her? Then you my Lord (quoth she) and in such sort, as if presently you doe not helpe it, I doubt the danger will be very great. I understand you have sent Trynens to Prison, and withall sworne that he shall dye: if you suffer such an infamous death, thinks not but that my life will speedily follow him. Madam (answered the Soldane) what I have done is to no other end, but to chastise him and his company in my Courts, because they renowned is so famous in Turkie. With this excuse he so qualified the Queene, that she durst not move any further questions.

The next day he sent for the Prince Tomano, and with many other great Lords went to see his Sister Aurecinda, framing his speeches to her in this manner.

Forsooth you have shewed your selfe of good government, and great estimation made you of hono and vertue, in daring to thinke so foule a thought as you have committed in me. Didst thou not consider the place of Honour in my Courts: what shame hath thou done to the house of Persia, which hitherto never sustained blemish: and now is soyled by thy immodeest dealing with a stranger. So much doth the heynous fault offends me, that if he make thee not his wife, thou shalt dye the death as the Law hath ordained.

Soldane (answered the Princesse fiercely) in doing so, keest thou to recall the Act committed. Dost thou thinke my fault so offensive, which first was perpetrated by thy persuasion? As Lobs a Gentleman, faire, well spoken, comely, stout, gracious, and benigne, and who is of high

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

e it desert among all other: is it a matter deserving death: chiefly to a Princess, whose youth may well excuse her trespass? If it be worthy the name of a crime, it is more to that, then me: for then with first intreats, persuasions, and commendments to Love him: yea, then without intent the means how to winne him.

Why the devils first did I make proffer of that, which is the only smart collace in Love. If thou therefore wilt put me to death, my care is the less, seeing that with the most perfect among men I have obtained my desires. And so; the fault shall not be layd on the best knight in the world, my self provoked him thereto, I called him, I deceived him: and in these, more by force then Love I constrained him to yield, to ease those passions that hourly tormented me.

When the Soldans beheld the impudence of his sister, he thus replied. Very true it is, that I commanded thee to Love him, but not in this sort: whereof I can request no better proofe then thine owne shamelesse speeches, which I will severely correct before it be night. So departing from her, he went to Tryneus with those words. My knight, I did never thinke that a man wise and valiant, as thou hast bene esteemed, having done and frequented many Princesses Courtes, could imagine an net so subtle and deceitfull, in his Pallace that hath so highly honoured thee. It behoveth thee therefore to take thy chaunce of these things: either to amende thy fault by espousing my sister, whom I frankly give thee, and therewithall to renounce thy Whoredome, or suffer cruel death in reward of thine offence. Soldans answered Tryneus, thou abusest thy selfe in thinking to beguile me.

My C. D. D. first arme me with patience to the death, rather then for riches and honours momentarie, I should forsake my faith to my Saviour, by whom I hope to enjoy everlasting happiness. He for the last thou thoughtest me withall, well may it be excused: for I have neither ravished

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2

or violated, but by force of Love erred, with her that threatened her owne Death before my face, except I consented to her desire: yet in respect of mine Honour, much better had it bene to have suffered her rage: but to shunne the reproach of too lecherous and inhumane Nature, I yielded to her Amorous petitions. Notwithstanding, if thou therefore wilt put me to death, thou canst not doe me so much shame as thou imaginest, but shalt cause me to performe the Debt we all owe to Nature, and so; which we enjoy our Birth in this world.

To conclude, the flatteries and menaces cannot make me thinke, much less pers, that hath so falsely deceived me. By the Soldans (quoth the Soldans) the audacious behaviour of these knights maketh me to wonder: the one hath villainously injured me in the presence of my Warons, and the other (so; nothing I can say) will exchange his opinion, which he shall full soon and sorely repent. So causing the Tower to be fast locked, he went to the great Hall, and there before all his knights, said, You have heard my Lordes, the confession of them both, and withall have seene their great obstinacy: therefore by sentence irrevocable I condemn them to death, and this day shall they be burned in the place accustomed, none of you all move me to the contrary, so; I will not be otherwise perswaded. By heaven, said the Prince Tomano, unhappy should I be to stay with you any longer, wherefore at this instant I forsake your alliance, and henceforth will shew my selfe your most fall enemy. Alas my Lord quoth the young Princess Belina, will ye so soon abandon my company? Follow me then answered Tomano, where I goe: for no more will I be seene in this tyrannous Court, where nothing but dishonour and cruelty is used.

Presently the Princess and he mounted on Horses backe, and with their traine came to Palmerins Campe: who having heard the Soldans sentence, was ready to have

have slaine himselfe, but that he hoped to save the life of Tryneus at the fatal houre. Alas my friends, quoth he, to his company, this day must you assist me, to deliver the most gentle Knight that ever bare armes. Set forthward courageously against the Tyrant, whom with the ayde of my God, we shall easily vanquish. Zephyra hearing that Tomaso and Bellina were gone, and how the Soldane had judged Tryneus and Aurecinda to death: entered into mer- vailous regrets and acclamations, whereat the Soldane was so enraged, as he commaunded that Tryneus and his Sister, should presently be ledde to the place of execution, and under the charge of five thousand Souldiers, they were brought on horsebacke forth of the Citty: but when Aurecinda saw her selfe so hardly used, twining her handes, and renting her comely locks of hayre, she brake forth into these pittifull speeches.

Alas Gentlemen, why are you the instruments to execute a Tyrants will? What recompence can you expect at his handes, that for greedy desire of my patrimonie, sendeth me to death? So piercing were these wordes in the eares of the Souldiers, as they very much lamented her case: but Tryneus, never changed colour, ryding on with resolute constance, not once listning to the moanes of the Princesse.

When they were come within sight of Palmerins power, they ranged themselves in battell array, committing Tryneus and Aurecinda, to fifty Knights, who should conduct them to the Furnace where their death was appointed, which was a good quarter of a league from the Citty. Tryneus now seeing death before his eyes, and no succour nere to rescue him: prepared himselfe to the latest extremity, and with many sorrowfull lachrymes to Agriola and Palmerin was fully perswaded to endure the torment. Palmerin knowing which way his friend should be led to death, with a sufficient traine lay secretly ambushed, and espying

espying opportunity, gave the summons to his men, whereupon they all issued forth very courageously. But as they rushed out from their secret ambushment, the ayre was suddenly obscure, and such thunder, hayle and raine fell, as never was the like heard or seen before: the Soldanes Squadron seemed to be all in a flaming fire. The poore Persians thinking the end of the world was come upon them, fled towards the Citty: but notwithstanding all their haste, the greatest part of them remained dead in the field. As the naturall fire (prepared for Tryneus) made him fearful, doubtlesse this fire raised by conjuration made him much more affrighted, but suddenly came to him an armed Knight with his sword drawn, and mounted on a horse of mighty bignesse, who took the horse of Tryneus by the bridle, saying.

Come Sir Tryneus, in despite of the Tyrant, thou shalt not die. At these wordes arrived Palmerin, embracing Tryneus, said. Ah my deere friend and Brother, what villanous mindes beare they that would doe you this outrage? Alight, and put on your Armour which my Squire hath brought hither, that we may with honour revenge this shame. As they thought to goe let on the enemy, the Armed Knight, which was Muzabelino, thus spake. My Lord, let us not tarry trying time here, but summon your people together, and set forthward to Cilica, where you shall find better succour then in this place. The desolate Tryneus, what with his former feare, and present joy to behold his friend, was not able to speake one word, but Palmerin having well noted the Armed Knight, at length knew him to be Muzabelino, wherefore embracing him, said;

Ah my Lord, so ever be the King of things prayed, in granting me to have knowledge of you, let me be worthily condemned of ingratitude, if I doe not acknowledge this great labour to my friend: which I account as deere as

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

as done to my selfe. After many curious salutations passed on all sides, they sette forthward to Grisca with their men and provision: where we will leave them, to shew what afterwards befell to the Soloman and his people. After a long and very dangerous tempest, with whirle-windes, lightnings, and strange apparitions, to the great discomfort of all the Persians, one of the Princes came to the Soloman, saying.

My Lord, the Lightning hath fallen so terribly in the Court, as all the Ladies of honour are slain therewith. Another brought newes, that three parts of the Soldiers which conducted Trincus and Aurecinda forth of the Citie, lay all slain in the rough tempest. While these strange mishaps were discouraging, Aurecinda entered the Chamber, saying. Now Solomane mayst thou behold thy sin: know thou not that the celestiall spirits, have recharged our wrong with the death of thy people: and for my escape I render thanks to the highest, not to thee that gave my life to the fire, yet much better would my death have contented me, then to live without him whose absence is my torment: and did not the hope of his life give me some comfort, thou shouldst perceibe how little I esteem of my life. Then entered the Queene Zephira, and she falling at the Solomans feet, thus began. Ah my Lord, the dishonour you have this day done me is unspeakable. What my deserts have so simple in your eyes, that I might not intreate the liberty of one Knight, who this day (I feare) hath perished by your ingratitude? Shall I see those noble Knights againe, whose lives have bene endangered for my welfare. Ah my Lord, if you looke into the twight of your offence, you shall perceibe my teares are not shed without great reason.

Madam, quoth the Solomane, and you faire Sister, at this time excuse my fault committed, and patiently heare what hath happened: for I bow to you by the faith of a Prince.

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2

Prince, that I will make sufficient amends for my trespass. When he now thought to be no further troubled, his Sister Lizanda entered mad and raging, and snatching his Hatchet from his side, said. O villain, for what happest thou by thy commandment, one of thy Sisters to forever defamed, and the other will presently end her life before thee. Wherewith she stab'd the weapon to her heart, and fell downe dead at the Solomans feet, to the no little sorrow of his Majesty, and all that were present: but Zephira considering the body to be taken away, the Solomane commanded she should be honourably buried, and erected a goodly Tomb of Marble over her grave, causing the manner of her death to be thereon described. Afterward, by the counsell of the Lords of Persia, he sent the Prince Tomiano, and the strange Knights, all the riches and treasure they had left behinde them. The Princesse Aurecinda remained in continuall heaviness, and within short time she felt her selfe to be conceived with Child. Herein she somewhat comforted herselfe, though Fortune would not suffer her to enjoy the company of her friend, yet one day she hoped to see his lively image: which at the time appointed by Nature she did, being delivered of the goodliest male Child that ever was borne in Persia, naming him Rysarano, who carried the beautifull complexion of his Mother, as he did the hardnesse and magnanimity of his Father.

The History of Palmerin D'Oliua.

CHAP. LVII.

How Palmerin and Trincus having sojourned a while at Grisca with the King Abimar, departed to the Isle of Malpada, where by the meanes of Dulacco and Palmerin, all the Enchantments were finished.



By the way as the Princes did ride towards Grisca, Palmerin used these speeches to Trincus. How happy is the Prince that gives credit to good counsell, and will not be led by flatteries, or subject himselfe to his owne passions? and how unfortunate are they that fall into the contrary? Can ye have a better example hereof than the trayterous Soldane? Who first (causticke) disquieted the good King Abimar, and afterward at his Sisters motion imprisoned his friend: for your good successe here, in my Lord, you must thank Muzabelino, and the Prince Tomano, whose power was so ready to defend you. Tryneus remembryng his follies past, was still so ashamed thereof, as he coult make no answer, wherefore Palmerin thus spake againe.

Why? My Lord, hath the imprisonment for faire Aurecinda stricken you dumbe: leave this bashfulness to Women, and remember your former courage. Stent Hercules, whose honours are yet so rise in memory, did not be for the love of Iole, wear feminine garments, and spin among women? Did not Achilles the like, when he was with his faire friend in the Court of King Lycomedes? Make Anthony the Romane Emperour, did not he follow Cleopatra before Octavius, although his Armie on the Sea, was two-fold the number of his enemies? And you, for a little familiar love to a yong Princesse, who conquere

red

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

red you only by impotunate sute, remaine thus condemned. Doe you imagine your selfe to excell in strength, prowess and knowledge, Hercules, Achilles, and the Emperour Antonie.

Alas where Brother answered Trincus, well may you boast of your speciall graces being able to triumph over concupiscence: but so pkesome is my offence in mine own conceit, as I thinke my selfe unworthy to be seene among men of vertue. What shall I say to my Agriola, when she shall understand my heinous offence? how shall I dare to present my selfe before her? for that, said Palmerin, we shall doe well enough: but I would it were so well come to passe, that we were with her to abide her censure. Continuing these speeches, they arrived at Grisca, where the King being advertised of their coming, came to meete them, using these gracious words at their entertainment. Right welcome are ye my Noble Friends, no marvell though the Soldane sought to wrong you, remembryng how for my sake you bled him in the battell. In sooth my Lord answered Palmerin, well both your nobility deserbe our service, and his injurious dealing charge revenge, which haply hereafter he may sale to his cost, using strangers so uncharitably: but here we present your Daughter Belsina to your Majesty, after whose marriage all these troubles began.

Right welcome faire Daughter, said the King, much better then my Sonne hath bene to your Fathers Court. When my Father, quoth the Princesse, hath considered his sorie, doubtlesse he will be hartly sorry therefor, and make satisfaction for anything misdone: till then I beseech your highnesse to conceale the best. And according as the Princesse had spoken, it came to passe, for within thre daies after, the Soldane sent Ambassadors to the King Abimar, to crave the imprisonment of Tryneus, and the sentence of death he gave against him: sending to him and Palmerin

p

all

all their treasure, and sumptuous presents in signe of satisfaction, and to his Daughter *Belsina* and the Prince *Tomano*, he sent five Camels laden with gold, as the dowry of their marriage.

Now are *Palmerin* and *Tryneus* weary of their so long stay from their friends, wherefore they desired leave of the King to depart. Who seeing he could not well intreate their longer abode, right thankfully yielded to their request, giving them all things needfull for their journey, as Horses, Armour, men, money, and divers other gifts of inestimable value. For which kindness they humbly thanked his Majesty, refusing to trouble themselves with such riches in their travaille, nor would they take that the *Soldans* sent them, or what they brought from the ten Rocks: except the Bird and the two Crownes, giving all the rest to *Muzabelino*, desiring him to continue them in remembrance. My Lord, quoth he, no service can be lost that is done to such liberall Princes, as now you give me good occasion to confesse: and though both I and mine would spend all our following daies in your service, yet can we not recompence the very least of your courtesies, recommending my Sonne *Bellechino* once more to you my Lord, in hope he will prove a loyall and faithfull servant, otherwise I could part his head from his shoulders in your presence.

And because the way you brought *Madame Zephyra*, is very long, troublesome and dangerous: I have prepared a Shippe for you, which without any perill shall speedily carry you to *Malfada*, and a young Knight my Brother have I appointed Pilot therein, who shall direct you how to finish all the enchantments in the Isle, and afterwards I desire you so to order the matter with the King *Maulerino*, that my Brother may have the government thereof after your departure. Behold me noble friend, answered *Palmerin*, your Sonne will I intreate as well becomes

besides him, and your Brother shall not onely have the charge of the Isle, which I will freely give him: but I will so work with the Brother to *Zephyra*, that he shall endow him with greater possessions. So taking their leave of all the Courtiers, *Muzabelino* brought him to the Shippe: wherein they were no sooner entred, but it presently cut through the waters with such violence, as they were very quickly come to *Malfada*. They going on shore, *Dulacco* Brother to *Muzabelino* demanded of the Prince *Tryneus*, if he had the King he found in the Cup at the Castell of the tenne Rocks. I have it on my finger Sir, answered *Tryneus*. Let us then enter the Isle, said *Dulacco*, as for you *Bellechino* and *Colmelio*, stay you in the Ship till you heare the sound of a Coznet, and then may you safely venture on the land.

Dyardo standing in one of the Turrets in the Castell, saw when the Ship came and cast Anchor, wherefore he expected if any bark come south thereof on the Shore, and so amazed he was that the three Knights were not transforned, as till *Palmerin* spake to him, he knew not what to imagine, but afterward he made hast downe, and letting downe the Bridge, came and embraced him, saying: Wel come is my noble Lord to *Malfada*: have you learned or brought any remedy with you, whereby to recover your friends here enchanted? In happy houre did you bestow your labour, if so it came to passe, but what may these two Knights be that came in your company? The one is the Prince *Tryneus*, quoth *Palmerin*, whom I so long time sought for, and the other is the man that must give us assistance.

After many friendly embracings, *Palmerin* demanded what was become of the two Damosells he left there. My Lord, said *Dyardo*, they remaine prisoners to our penance for the hard speeches they gave you. So went they all to the prison, where *Palmerin* demanded which of the

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

had the key of the enchanted Tower: but they continuing in their former obstinacie and mallice, would not answer one word. *False harlots, quoth Palmerin, why speake ye not? if you give me not the key quickly, all your sorceries shall not save your lives. They being fearefull of death,* presently fell on their knees, and one of them taking the key out of her pocket, opened the doore of the Tower, saying:

Enter Knight, I hope thou wilt repent thy hardness. Palmerin and his three companions went in, where they beheld a huge Bell of Copper, having a Bolt with an arrow ready to shoot: by him hung a goodly Coznet of Iron, and on the other side were three Books. By those said Dulacco, we must have both the Coznet and the books: and if you faile in getting them, no one alive can save the enchantments. By God will strengthen me, said Palmerin, so breaking his sword, and covering himselfe with his shield, he boldly went to the Forge. And in despite of the hammers that fiercely strooke at him, he pulled the Bolt violently from him: when suddenly such a sorefull cry was heard through the Castell, as made them all to shake and tremble. The Bookes and Coznet he easily reached, and bringing them to Dulacco, willed him to finish the rest. What will I, quoth he, but you must be ready to assist me: let us now goe forth and you shall see marvailles: when I am reading the first leafe of the Book, see you sound the Coznet so loud as you can possibly. Palmerin did as he was commanded, and by the reading of Dulacco: and the sound of the Coznet, all that were enchanted in the Forge came running thither: being so many as Palmerin was amazed thereat.

Dulacco having ended his Lecture, they all returned to their former shapes, the first were the courageous Frycoll, the King of Sparta, the Duke of Pontus, the Prince of Mecena, the Prince Olorico, Laurana and Agriola, whom Trineus

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

Tryneus ranne and embraced, seeing her so perfect in beauty as ever he was.

Now the remembrance of his offence with Aurecinda, stopped the passage of his speech, and her labours shewed to the great Earle, made her likewise ashamed: yet kisses and embracings with teares and sighes, delibered there inward joy for this happy meeting. Here must we imagine the comfort of the other fine Princes and Laurana, then which doubtlesse could be no greater, seeing their noble friend that had delibered them, and beholding each other in good disposition. Now are all those which were enchanted, brought to their former shape, as well Turks as Christians, and their ships by Dulacco restored them againe: chiefly they that belonged to the Merchant Estebon and his Donnes, to whom Palmerin gave such abundance of treasure, as after ward they had no cause of want, discharging each one to their owne countie, who departed thence to their no little contentation. Agriola, Laurana and the other Princes, being altogether conferring of their good fortune, Palmerin commeth cheerfully among them, and discoursed what had happened since the separation, wherein he revealed all that you have heard already, which to repeat againe would be but troublesome: it sufficeth you to conceive, that all the friends being met together, are so well acquainted with each others mishapps, as now they joyfully rejoyce in this happy success. The next morning, Palmerin called Bellechino his Squire, saying to him.

Thou must presently passe to Elaine to the King Maullerino, and having saluted him on my behalfe: deliver him these Letters, wherein his Majesty shall bee acquainted with all that hath happened, but make all possible speede thou canst, because at thy returne we will sette to Sea presently. The Squire being gone. Palmerin gave in charge to Dulacco, to let his ships be victualled and provided, and that withall which Muzabelino had given him.

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

Afterward he went to his Agriola and Laurana good moztow, and then coming to Fryroll the King of Sparta, and Olorico, who were all pleasantly discoursing together in their Chamber, he said to them. Assuredly my good friends, if fortune had been so adverse to me, that I could not have found Tryneus, or the means to deliver you from the enchantment: I had given my farewell to Times, riches and honour, and would have haunted those paths where never man treads. For with what face could I approach the presence of my Sister and Aunt, having lost them whom they live onely to love. And you noble Prince Olorico, have just occasion to complain on me, that have caused you to endure such paine and trouble: but in recompence of this ever great wrong, I will cause you to enjoy her, whom you have so long faithfully loved, and so soon as I am arrived at Constantinople, I will send Ambassadors to my Lord the Solon, that he may accept you as his Son in my stead.

My Lord, answered Olorico, the honour you have done me in accepting my company, I account to exceed all other courtesies, and though for a time I have been unfortunate. I take it patiently, assuring you by the word of a Prince, that I imagine the man not worthy to taste the sweets, who cannot abide to feel the soler. By this time are Palmerins Letters come to the King Maulerino, who having understood their content, joyfull of Palmerins returne, and of his good fortune in finishing the enchantments: he came presently with his traine to Malfada: where so discourse the pleasure on each side conceived, the honourable and gracious courtesies bestowed, with all the speciall favours becoming a King and so worthy personages, is sure beyond my capacity, and therefore I referre it to your gentle consideration. But at Palmerins insteaty Dulacco was made Lord and chiefe Governour of Malfada, and divers other territories were adjoining: which

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

which moved Palmerin thus to thanke the King. Seeing your Majesty for my sake, hath bestowed this Island on my worthy good friend, to the end that the name of wicked Malfada may be utterly rased forth: let me intreate that it may henceforth be called the Isle of the two Lovers, because therein was enchanted two, the most loyall Servants that ever Love had, having endured wonderfull and variable fortunes, and yet here met in the end to their no little comfort.

Let it be, quoth the King, as you have appointed, and whosoever henceforth calleth it otherwise, shall be held enough as an open blasphemer. Afterward the King accompanied Palmerin and his friends to their Shippes, and there committed them to their prosperous voyage, so Palmerin, his seven companions, the two Princesses, with his squires Bellechino and Colmelio, entered the Shippe that Muzabelino gave him: & an hundred knights which the King Maulerino had given him, were embarked in another Shippe well appointed, so hoysing saile, with a mercurie gale of winde they launced into the Sea, and the King with his traine returned into the Courte, leaving Dulacco quietly possessor of the Island of the two Lovers.

CHAP. LVIII.

How *Palmerin* and his companions sayling on the Sea, met with *Ptolome*: and of the honorable entertainment the Emperour, *Florendos*, and the Ladies made them, when they arrived at Constantinople.



As they sayled our Knights with-
out any strange Adventure, and on
the fourth, as *Phoebus* gains enter his
Chariot, to displaye his radiant golden
beames on his Ankle *Neptunes* Re-
gions: *Palmerin* standing aloft on the
Decke, espied a great Carriek, which
with full Saile made haste towardes

them, and by the Banners he discerned that it was of Tur-
kie, whereto he cryed aloud to his Companions to arme
themselves.

Suddenly were they all come aloft on the Deck armed,
and the hundred Knights in the other Shippe were like-
wise in readynesse: when the Carriek being come nere
them, they might behold the Turkes strongly provided, and
Ptolome their Captaine brauely encouraging them. At
length they buckled together, and a dangerous fight be-
gan ne betwene them, so that seven of the King *Mauleri-
nos* Knights were slaine, the King of *Sparta* soe wounded
by *Ptolome*, and *Dyardo* in great perill of his life. When
Palmerin saw the King of *Sparta* fall, and that the *Proces*
had dangerously hurt diuers of his Friends, fearing the
King was slaine, he came to *Ptolome*, and after many
sharpe strokes on either side, at last gotte him downe, when
pulling his Helmet furiously from him, thinking to haue
smitten off his head, *Ptolome* cried: Kill me not Sir knight,
for I yield my selfe to thee. *Palmerin* knowing his friend,
said

said to his companions and the rest. Give ober my friends
and fight no longer, for false Fortune hath too much delu-
ded vs.

As though *Ptolome*, why haue I dealt so hardly with
thee? Is it possible that any man may be likened to me in
misshap? No sooner am I out of one, but presently I fall in-
to another: By Heauen (beare friend) if I had slaine thee,
right soone would I haue bene reuenged on my selfe. For
then sweet *Ptolome*, how *Palmerin* grieues for his offence,
more then if he had lost the best limme on his body. When
Ptolome beheld his friend *Palmerin*, and by him the no-
ble Prince *Trineus*, embracing them, he said. O Sabour
of the World, how highly hast thou this day fauoured me,
permitting me to slay my dearest friends? When they
brought him to the Princesse *Agriola* in her Cabin, who
was not a litle glad to beholde the man, that endured with
her some part of misery, and *Colmelio* was ioyfull to be-
holde *Ptolome*, in that their hap was to be parted when
they were led to be sold as slaves: but *Agriola* would needs
heare the discourse of all his fortunes, Once y first time of
the separation, which he and *Colmelio* truely recounted.
Believe me *Ptolome* said *Palmerin*, I see we haue had our
shares in aduersity, and hardly can we iudge whose wrong
hath bene greatest: But how came you thus to be Cap-
taine among the Turkes? By Lord (quoth he) the Prin-
cesse *Alchidiana* bought me, and charged me to seeke you,
as well by Sea as by Land: and for my defence gaue me for-
ty knights, of whom there now remaines but tenn alive.
What Lady am I highly beholding to (said *Palmerin*) and
for the wrong I haue done her by the death of her knights.
I will excuse my selfe by an honorable Embassage, when I
shall send the Prince *Olorico* to her againe. And that thou
Ptolome maist know some of my good happe, vnderstande
that I haue found my father and Mother, who are *Flo-
rendos* the King of *Macedon*, and *Griana* the Daughter
and

The History of *Palmerin D'Oltra*.

and they to the Emperour of Greece. I did ever perswade my selfe (quoth Prolome) that your Discent was of Royall lineage: But I intreate you for my sake, that these knights which your men have taken, may be gently used, and enjoy theyr Liberty. Palmerin calling them to him, said. For Prolome his sake that was your Captaine, and her Love who commanded you to travell with him, I will to you as to my selfe: yet shall you all goe with me to Constantinople, that you may helpe to conduct the Prince Olorico backe againe, whom I meane to lend with you unto your Mistress.

We abide say Lord (quoth they) at your Direction, and willingly obey your command, in that we have knowne how dearly the Soldane loved you, and better Fortune could not have befallen us, then so luckily to meete with you and the Prince Olorico: as for your Companions that are slaine there is no remedy, for such mishappes are common, where Fortune frowneeth. So sayed they on friendly together, and on the Sea we will leave them, to tell you of the returne of the Ambassadour Maucetto to the Soldane of Babylon, who hearing that the Persian had refused to assist him, was somewhat offended thereat: But when he saw what Palmerin had written, he pacified himselfe, saying: Ah gentle Palmerin hast thou bene in the Battell at Constantinople, I had not adred to demand help of him whom I iudge my friend: but seeing Fortune hath shewne herselfe in contrary I will not attempt anything, from which thou didst waite me.

Maucetto declared, that Palmerin had likewise sent a Letter to the Princesse Alchidiana, which he commanded him presently to carry her: So soone had she read the Letter, and thereby understanding his knightly deeds of Chivalry, but embracing the Ambassadour, she thus spake: Maucetto, never couldst thou have brought me better newes, then of the man whose name flourisheth in all places.

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2

res. Ah sweet Letter, written by the hand of the most perfect knight livingfull of charity, and choisely will I keepe thee. Ah Prolome, whom my Noble friend loves so dearly, thou have I sent in dangerous hazard of thy life: but may I once see thee againe, thou shalt perceive my Love for Palmerins sake.

Happy art thou Princesse Zephira, having with thee the mirror of Chastitie. My Lord (quoth she) as though Palmerin had bene present) wilt thou wrong thy selfe so much as to carry with her? Dare the Soldanes Sisters want that they love thee? Wher be faire, as I understand, but yet not so faire that thou shouldst refuse me for them. What have I said? Doubtlesse matter to mine owne reproach, for if thou wouldst, the thingly offers of my Father, and my importunate intreaties could no way move thee: hardly may the Persians pae with thee, especially in such a weighty cause as Love is. Maucetto, what sayest thou? As Lord Palmerin like to stay long in Persia with the Soldans Sisters? No Zephira (quoth he) I heard him say very often, that he would depart thence before a Moneth was expired.

In these and such like speeches they continued, wherein the purpose to leave them: For by this time is Palmerin and his friends arrived in the haven of Constantinople, and Colmelio is sent before to the Palace, to advertise the Emperour of these most joyfull tydings. As Colmelio entered into the great Hall, the first man he met was his Father Gerrard, who was newly made Lord Chamberlaine to the King Florendos: wherefore falling on his knee before him, he said: Father, little did I thinke to find you raised to such honour, happy was the day when you found Prince Palmerin: and much more happiness is this day, in that I bring the most joyfull newes that ever span did to this Court. Old Gerrard was exceeding glad to behold his son, catching him in his arms, said. Welcome Colmelio to the
aged

aged Father: hast thou heard any tidings of thy Lord and Master? Goe with me Father, answered Colmelio, and you shall heare matter of meruaile. At that instant came the Emperour with the King Florendos into the Hall, and all the Ladies going to heare musicke service, wherefore Gerard thus spake to his highnesse: My Lord, for here my Sonne Colmelio, who long time hath travailed in search of Prince Palmerin, he hath some message of importance to deliver to your Majesty: Right welcome is he, quoth the Emperour, for what thou wilt my friend thou hast free liberty.

Right Emperour, said Colmelio, your Son Prince Palmerin is arrived in the Haven, and with him the young Prince Tryneus, Sonne to the Emperour of Allemaigne, the good Knight Sir Ptolome, the fine Princes which went with him from Macedon, the two Princes of England and Durace, with divers other unknowne to me: and saluting your Majesty with his humble, but intreateth that Joyes may be sent for them and the Ladies that he and they may come to kisse your highnes hand. The Emperour, Florendos and the Ladies, were ready to shonne with joy at these tidings, and having embraced the Messenger, commanded a royall frigate to goe to meete his Sonne, and goodly Pallaces to bring them to the Pallace, some ranne on foote to the Doore, other on horsebacke, so that before the Emperours traine came, such shoore of Gentlemen and Merchants were there to receive them, as hardly they could stand one by another. After they were all mounted on horsebacke, with great joy and triumph they rode towards the Pallace, where Tryneus falling on his knee before the Emperour, said.

Long live your Majesty in health and happines, here may you behold the man, for whom my Lord Palmerin your Sonne, hath endured such paine and travaile. The Emperour perceiving by his speeches that he was Tryneus

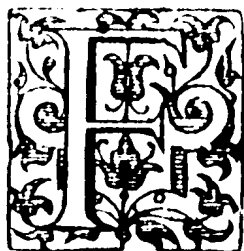
us the Prince of Allemaigne, thus answered. I hope my Lord that you will beare with mine age and weakenesse, which hinders me from entertaining you as faine I would, but I beseech you to arise, for it ill becometh so great a Prince, to humble himselfe in such sort. Florendos & Grian (in this time) welcomed their Sonne, Arismena the King of Sparta, Armida her Frysell, and the old Emperour and Empresse graciously entertained Agriola and Laurana, each absent friend so embraced and welcomed, as all the day was spent onely in these ceremonies. The next morning Palmerin dispatched his Dwarfes Urbanillo to the Emperour of Allemaigne, that he and Polynarda might understand these long expected newes: and afterwards coming to Sir Frysell, he said to him; Brother, our Father hath enriched us with a Sister since our departure, and my Sister Armidame with two Nephewes, I pray you let us goe for them.

Hereupon the Purves brought the young Princes, the eldest of them being named Dytrius, and the youngest Aelcar, the young Princess, Daughter to Florendos and Grian, was called Denila: so faire and comely were the Infants, as if Nature had studied to make them most exquisite. Behold me Sir Frysell, quoth Palmerin, if my Sister continue as she begins, the Realme of Hungaria shall hardly want betres: what? two at a blow, Sir Lady it is a signe of good fertility. And when you are entered the estate of wedlocke, answered Frysell, if your Image increase according to the greatnesse of desire: Madam Polynarda shall be as well sped as her neighbours. Thus sisted the Princes together, attending newes of the Courtier, that went with Urbanillo to the Emperour of Allemaigne, who at that time was at Vienna.

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

CHAP. LVII.

How the Duke of Mensa and the Count of Redona conducted the Prince *Olorico* into *Assiria*, where he was espoused to the Princessse *Alchidiana*.



During the space of a Moneth and moze, *Palmerin*, *Tryneus* and *Agriola* sojourned at *Constantinople*, till all things were prepared for them to travell towards *Allemaigne*: during which time *Palmerin* shewed such signes of love to the Prince *Olorico*, as he would not come without his company. And seeing that moze and moze his amorous passions increased, he said: Dearly friend *Olorico*, although I am no way able to recompence your long continued kindness, or remunerate the paine and trouble you have suffered in my company: yet have I determined (so you like thereof) to send you to *Assiria*, and with you the Duke of *Mensa*, and the Count of *Redona*, as Ambassadors to my Lord the *Solthane*, with such an honourable traine befitte, as *Mylos* shall have no occasion to complaine.

For doe I this (wrote Prince) as envious of your company, or that I stand in feare of the *Solthane*: but only to keepe my promise, which was, that I would aide you to my uttermost, to accomplish the marriage betwene you and Madame *Alchidiana*, for whom I see your mind is incessantly troubled. My Lord, answered *Olorico*, if ever perfect love might be discerned in a Princes heart, doubtlesse it is most amply deciphered in yours. Where can you find in any history, semblable affection? or that a Christian would so favour his enemy, that is contrary to him in Law and profession: there is the humanity, that so great a Prince

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2

a Prince would so much abate himselfe, to accept as his companion in Armes, the poore Sonne to the King of *Atabia*: praisling for his good, not the surety alone of the Christians, but the assistance of the greatest Lord in *Asia*. Wherefore my noble Lord, since of your accustomed good nature you have made me this offer, of simple judgement should I shew myselfe to refuse it. I accept your gracious kindness, and assure your selfe of his ready service, whom your precious vertues hath so bound to you, as for ever I will name my selfe the servant to the Prince of Greece. Whereupon *Palmerin* wrote to the *Solthane* of *Babylon* in forme as followeth.

The Letter of Prince *Palmerin*, to the great Sultane of *Babylon*

Right puissant Lord of *Assiria*, if the obedience we owe to Parents and Countrey, are causes sufficient to call you a knight errant, with refusal of all strange friendships and assistance: I hope your Highnes will not mislike of my retaine from *Persia* to *Constantinople*. And because I was there advertised by your highnes Ambassador *Mincetto*, how you have resolved to be at open hostility: I will now reveale unto you, that by the grace and favour of the highest God, since my departure from your Courte, I have obtained knowledge of my Parents who are such, as if you take the wacke of *Constantinople*: you goe about to destroy that *Palmerin*, whom heretofore you have so dearly loved, and is now become the onely heire to that Empire. Wherefore my Lord, if for my sake you will grant so much, as to forget revenge for your deceased Brother *Gamezio*: both we and all ours shall continually name our selves, your friends and assistants against all your enemies. Contrariwise, if you will follow

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

follow your former opinion, we must defend our selves so well as we may. And so I am no more (with credit) for sake my Countrey, Parents and Friends, to returne againe to your service: I send you the Prince Olorico, a knight both valiant and hardy as any in all Turkie, without exception of your Court, the great Turkes, or the Soldane of Persia, and he to serve you in my stead. Desiring your highnesse by that affection which you beare me, when the Prince Amarano was slain in your presence: that you accept him as your son, and give him in marriage to your daughter Alchidiana, as the man that hath best deserved her, if ever Prince might merit a Ladies Love by bounty and chaste chivalry. So shall you performe an action of mickle honor, and binde me continually to acknowledge this kindnesse.

Yours Palmerin d'Oliua.

An other letter he wrote to the Princesse Alchidiana, the tenure whereof was thus,

The Letter of *Palmerin*, to the Princesse of *Assiria*.

ADON Madame Alchidiana, daughter to the great Solban of Babilon: Palmerin d'Oliua your knight, sendeth health condigne to your magnificence Madame, sending to your father the Duke of Mensa, and the Countie of Redova our Ambassadors, to intreate of perpetuall peace & alliance betwixen his Majesty and us, whereto may it please you to give favourable assistance, I thought good by them likewise to write to your excellencie, with earnest intreaty to receiue as yours, the Prince Olorico, heire to the Crowne of Arabia. You know faire Madame, that never had he come to your fathers Court, had not the per-

rillous

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

rillous battell against the proud Moethen of Amaranos provoked him, nor would he have adventured the dangers of the Sea, but in hope (at length) to purchase your gracious love. For these considerations, good Madame, entertaine him into your sober thoughts, who hath no more feared to spend his blood for your sake, and thrust his life into infinite dangers, then I have done to set my hand and pen to this paper. I know that your grace, beauty and great dowry, commandeth the chiefest Prince on the earth for your Husband, and (to sheld my selfe from blame) I know that I promised you my service, when I should returne from Constantinople: but how hath it fallen out: your Palmerin is knowne by them that have like authority over him, as your love hath on the Prince Olorico. I am a Christian, a Stranger, Sonne to the simple King of Macedonia, and Daughter to the Emperour of Greece, beleeve, of very little or no desert at all. He is of your Law, your Neighbour, Sonne to the rich King of Arabia, & a Prince of as high vertue as ever was in my company: witnesse whereof he made on the Phrygians, and in an hundred places since in my presence. Wherefore Madame, if noblenesse of hart, and loyal love deserve so great an alliance, I know no Prince this day living more worthy then he. Desiring you withall, that more gladly would I die the death, then sollicite the cause of him, whom I should but imagine unworthy your person.

Your Knight, *Palmerin D'Oliua*

When he had sealed their Letters, he gave them to the Ambassadors, who accompanied with fifty Grecian knights, went to the Haven where there Schips was prepared: after them followed the King Maulerino hundred knights, the number being supplied with other, in stead of them that were slain, and after them went the

Z knights

knights that came with Ptolome: then came the Prince Olorico and Palmerin, debiting by the way on many several businesses.

My Lord (quoth Palmerin) I imagine you now remember our taking by the Armyall Olimaell, and feare that like mishap may againe befall you: I therefore (as your Courte) give you the hundredth knights I had of the King Maulerino, and fifty other knights naturall bozne in Greece, as able in Armes as any other whatsoeuer, intreating you to hold me excused if I give you not such estate becomes your Nobility. Wherby Palmerin (answered the Prince) the greatest Lord that is might well content himselfe with the Honourable company you have given me.

And had not extreme passions over-ruled me, and cald me hence to her service whom I have onely chosen: I would forsake Arabia, and the Law of Mahomet, onely to live in your company. But in what place my Fortune guides me hereafter, neither Parents or Friends shall hinder me to say that I am your beloved and affectionate Servant. The like also doe you receive of me (saith Palmerin.) So with smiles they left each other, Olorico and all his company being aboyd, such favourable wind and weather they had, as without any danger they safely arrived where the Soldane lay: and first the tenne knights went on horse, they that were left of the company which the Princesse Alchidiana gave to Ptolome, and coming befoze the Princesse, said:

Madame, your Knight Sir Ptolome humble saluteth, you by us, sending your excellencie this Letter. Wherby there is now arrived at the porte, the Prince Olorico, and certaine Ambassadors from the valiant Palmerin, Prince of Greece and Macedon, who come on his behalfe to kisse your hand. The Princesse having heard these newes, and read the Letter which Ptolome sent, containing the great good fortunes of Palmerin, was inwardly so ravished with delight

delight, as a long space she remained silent, but at length brake forth into these speeches. Ah Fortune, how well thou knowest to change matters which way thou pleasest, not according to the will & desire of passionate minde, but on the behalfe of the highest in perfections. Ah Palmerin the man whom my heart shall ever love, how may faire Polynarda justly tearme her selfe happy, having thee for her Lord and love: considering that the beauty and graces of so many Ladies conquered with thy deserts, not the sumptuous riches continually offered thee, could once divert thee from thy first affection. Ah Alchidiana, that which hath made so many Ladies and knights fortunate, in compassing the onely issue of their desires, both now remaine for thy torment alone, making thee the most unhappy creature under the Sun. Agriola, Grian, Arimena, Armida, and Zephyra, are they (sweet Knight) by thy meanes in assurance of their loves? Tryneus, Frycoll, the King of Sparta, Maulerino, Abimar, Tomano, and others other: are their Realms quieted, and their Ladies triumphing in their joyes, onely by the price of thy blood, and danger of thy life? And must I alone remaine disgraced, so ever consumed, having lost the Knight I loved as my soule? While the Princesse continued these complaints, the Prince Olorico and the Ambassadors were come befoze the Soldane, and being entertained by him with very gracious countenance, they presented the Letters from Palmerin, which being read in the presence of all his Lords, the Soldane thus answered.

My friends, I will impart these newes to my Counsell and my Daughter, and afterwarde make you answer as I may. Herupon the Duke of Mensa, the Countie of Redora, and the Prince Olorico with others themselves, and some after the Soldane sent for his Daughter, thus speaking to her; Daughter, our Princes thinke good, and have counselled me to make peace with Palmerin, who at this

The History of Palmerin D'Oliua.

this present is heire of Grece : and requirith in witnesse of our trace, that I should giue you in marriage to the renowned Prince Olorico. Woulde your selfe hereon, for Palmerin hath earnestly intreated it by wyting, and here I haue a letter for you, I thinke to the same effect. The Princeesse having read the Letter, returned this answer. It is very true my Lord, his request to me is for the selfe same cause : seeing therfore it liketh you, and the Princes of our Realme think it convenient, in respect of the common profit and good may ensue thereby : it is not for me to make deniall.

Right glad was the Soldane of this answer, wherefore he said. Doe then faire Daughter and decke your selfe accordingly, for after Dinner in the Presence of the Ambassadors, you shall be affianced to the Prince. Olorico since his arrivall had talked but little with his Lady, wherefore he now determined to goe see her : and meeting her as she returned from the Soldane, he saluted her with great reverence, but the Princeesse feigning that she knew nothing yet of their marriage, thus spake to him. I understand my Lord, that your companion Palmerin hath altogether forsaken vs. Madame, quoth the Prince, if he haue abandoned your company, it is onely by the fauour of fortune ; who hath bene a greater friend to him then any man besides : yet cannot the great honours and possessions he now enioyeth, make him forget you, in that at my departure he said, soeuer he would liue and die your Knight. God keepe him, said the Princeesse, where ever he is, for still is my hart helved to his remembrance : and gladly can I doe as much for him as for my Brother, though his present advancement hinder him from my service. Such is his trust Madame, quoth he, in your fauour. that you will not refuse any honest request he makes to your excellencie, in which respect he hath sent me to intreate you, that you will be assistant to the peace he desireth with your Father, and

Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

and that you would boursafe me so much money, as in his need to entertaine me into your service, which to begin, I present you my heart, that neuer since the day of my departure from Constantinople, hath entred any rest, being absent from the onely meane of my comfort. If then I haue liued all this while in some hope, by remembrance of your exceeding graces and courtesies : beyond all other should I account my selfe in happinesse, if now at length you receive me as your Seruant. I receive you, said the Princeesse for Palmerins sake, and for your owne deserts. which haue bene so worthy : requiting you with equall affection, so that you deny me not one request. Nothing shall you be denied (said the Princeesse, quoth he) if by my life it may be compassed.

For will I demaunde anything of so great value (said she) this is the fauour you shall grant me : hereafter when time shall serue, that you will conduct me to Constantinople, there to behold the faire Princeesse Polynarda, and the magnificent Courte of Noble Palmerin, in recompence whereof, I giue my selfe to be your Wife, and accept you as my Lord and Husband. If Olorico was now well pleased, I referre to your iudgements, wherefore confirming their promises, by kisses and embracings, with solemn protestations and irrevocable vowes, they departed thence to their Chambers.

After Dinner, the Princeesse Attired in most sumptuous Garments, came into the Hall with her waiting Ladies, when the Soldane sent for the Ambassadors, and thus spake to them. My friends, I now perceiue the man to be other foolish that trusteth in himselfe, I thought by my power to destroy Grece, where on the contrary my people are destroyed. I thought to continue unquenchable hatred toward your Father, and now I am constrained to grant him Peace : yet not constrained, but by the worke of the greatest God. I am moved to doo, which in the presence of all my Lordes I protest, and with as good a will as he

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

so to demonstrate it. So then the power of that Majesty, which can subdue and conquer where he list: and I swear to you by my Crowne, that the good Fortune of Palmerin, contenteth me as well, as if he were mine owne Sonne. Right so Ibane, answered the Duke of Mensa, if you resolve to love the Prince Palmerin, both he and his will not faile to performe & like unto you: and on his behalfe we most faithfully promise, that against all your enemies (Christendoms excepted) you shall be assured of his succour assistance.

I request no better assistance (quoth the Duke) then this that he hath sent, and that you may witness I am his faithfull friend: at this instant shall the pence be ratified by all the Lords and Princes here present, and to seal the same, as he requested, I give my Daughter to the worthy Prince Olorico. Great joy was generally made for this good agreement, and the two Lovers were espoused together within some dayes after: and the time being come for the Embassadors returne to Constantinople, Alchydianna sent divers rich gifts to Palmerin and Polynarda, the like did the Duke and the Prince Olorico.

CHAP. LX.

How *Palmerin*, *Tryneus*, and *Agriola*, accompanied with many great Lords and Princes, went to the Emperour of Allemaigne at *Vienna*, where great triumphs were made, at the celebrating of the Marriage between *Tryneus*, and the Princesse *Agriola*.

Not long after the Prince Olorico, and the Embassadors of Greece were gone towards Assiria, Palmerin (although the Aged Emperour very much dissuaded him) made provision, for his speedy voyage to Allemaigne: and having already conducted the King of Sparta.

and

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

and his Aunt *Arismena* some part of their way homeward: at his returne to the City of Constantinople, came to the Duke of Pontus, saying: I remember the time when you did cut off the great Turkes head, an act deserving good and especiall recompence, and that you thereby delivered us, and performed it at the motion of the Princeesse *Laurana*: her hath you loved ever since both on land and sea, and her Countrey is not farre hence, will ye now make her your Lady and Wife: I promise you my assistance so farre as I can.

My Lord, answered the Duke, fearing to offend you, I will deferred to morrow you in this cause: but seeing we are now so happily fallen into these tearmes, I will not conceale the truth from you. In sooth my Lord, when first I saw her, I loved her, and have ever since continued in this hope, that time at length would favour my intent. It sufficeth, said Palmerin, and presently he acquainted the Emperour therewith, who thinking the match very meete and convenient: they were the next day married by the Archbishop of Constantinople, and in short time after went to take possession of their Duchy of Durace, where they were received very honourably, and the whole State yielded up into the Dukes hand.

When Palmerin saw that the most parte of his companions were departed, at the earnest intreatance of the Prince *Tryneus* and *Agriola*, he set forward to Allemaigne, accompanied with *Fryfoll* and *Armida*, whom he conducted into the Realme of Hungaria, where *Fryfoll* was crowned King by reason of his fathers decease, there went with him likewise *Diardo* of Bohemia, the Prince *Eustace*, *Prolome* & other Lords of great account. Such good space they made in their journey, as in short time they arrived at *Vienna*, where the Emperour being advertised of their coming by the Dwarfes, came with his courtly traine to meete them, and taking his Sonne *Tryneus* in his armes,

And: I see it is the will of God my Son, that hereafter I shall have as great joy by thee, as in thy long absence I have had griefe and sorrow, all which I patiently put up, for the love of thy Brother, the Noble Prince Palmerin, and faire Agriola of England, that well deserves it. But in good sooth my Children, had you not come in so happy time, I should have bene driven to marvellous feare. For the King of France perceiving, that I would not give my only Daughter in marriage to his eldest Sonne, demanded the King Reine of Spayne his Daughter, who granted his request: so that they twaine, with the ayde of the King of England, have leaved such an Army on the Sea, as never was the like sene to passe the Rhine. But seeing you returned in good disposition, the lesse account I make of their angry menaces: yet are they the three principall things of Christendome.

My Lorde (answered Palmerin) be not you dismayd at their Enterprise, for ere many dayes be expyred: I have to see all matters quietly pacified, and that without any effusion of Blood. The lesse is my doubt (quoth the Emperour) in that with such good fortune you have finished your intentions, for nothing you begin, but comes to lucky end.

Whilmes hereof appeareth in the search of my Sonne Trineus, whom the best knights of Christendome have laboured to find: but all their travel I see hath bene spent in vaine. By this time they were come to the Wallace, where they were graciously receivd by the Ladies. Alas my friends, said the Emperesse, which of you shall I first embrace?

Oh my Son Trineus, how sorrowfull hast thou made me since thy departure from England? What cause hast thou to thank the Heavens, who protected thee still in so many dangers, and forgot not thy Brother Palmerin, who hath endured such trouble for thy sake. Faire Daughter (quoth she to the Princesse Agriola, welcome are you indeed. God send you better fortune hereafter, then you have hadde already,

ready, which yet hath bene a Touchstone of your loyalty. But while these speeches continued, how the other two Lovers with piercing regard beheld each other, and how many gracious signes passed as secreete Embassadors betwene them. Polynarda was clad in such costly Accoutrements, for the pleasure she conceived the Emperours arrival at the Court: as she seemed another Juno, when she stood to advise the Arbitrement of Paris, or like Voluptas, following her Mother.

But fearing least this Amiable encounter, should decypher some parte of her former courtships to her friends, which as yet was unknowne to any by Bryonella: she locked up all secrets with so sweete a keie, as would have contented the rudest of the Gods, had it bene Vulcane or Neptune themselves. And coming to salute the Princesse Agriola, said. As marvell (faire Sister,) if your Love wrought wonders in my Brothers minde, for unfainedly I speake it, your exquisite Graces deserve the greatest service in the world. Alas Madame, answered Agriola, if Nature, or they that had the charge of me in my youth, could have painted me with such Beauty, as I see in you, or enriched me with Wisedome, able to devise with my Lorde when he came to see me: then could I have said somewhat of the paines he hath taken for me, but I know my selfe so full of imperfections, as the Love he beares me proceedeth of his owne good Nature, not by any merite he can beholde in me. When Palmerin kneeling before the Emperour, said. I beseech you my Lorde graunt me one request, which shall be no way prejudiciall to your Majesty. Arise Sir Palmerin (quoth the Emperour) aske what thou wilt, and thou shalt have it,

My Lorde Tryneus and the Princesse Agriola, said Palmerin, are religiously married betwene themselves, let me intreate your Highnes to confirme it with open solemnization, before the Duke of Mecena here present: whom I meane

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

mean to send into England, that he may resolve the King how himselfe was an eye witness of their Marriage. The Emperour liked so well of Palmerins motion as soon after the wedding was solemnized: and he coming to Brionnella, courteously taking her by the hand, said. My good friend Bryonnella: I am now to be discharged of the promise I made at my last being here: in witness whereof I have brought your knight my Ptolome, and him I commend to your further labour. So highly am I beholding unto your my Lord (quoth she) as never shall I be able to returne sufficient recompence: but were we equal in joy with the Prince Trineus and faire Agriola, then would I thinke no Rome can wrong us.

Palmerin at these wordes presently left her, and perswaded the Emperour so well: as Ptolome and Bryonnella were likewise espoused together: when Palmerin conferring with the Prince Agriola, thus spake to her.

Now may you judge whether I deceybed ye or no: and if the Estate of my Lord Tryneus be any lesse then I tolde ye. Had I not given faithfull credite to your speeches (answered Agriola) I would not have forsaken my Parents and friends so rashly: but I hope they will pardon me, in that I have done nothing but to their honour.

On the Morrow with exceeding joy and rare triumphs, were Palmerin and Polynarda married together: And thus was long and faithfull Love worthily requited. Ptolome was now Created Duke of Saxony, and Dyardo tooke his leave to goe for his wife Cordonya, whom he had not heard any tidings of, since he was first taken by the Pirates.

CHAP.

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2

CHAP. LXI.

How Palmerin sent Ptolome Duke of Saxon (as his Embassadour) to the King of France, and the Duke Enflace of Meccana, to the King of England, to treat of the peace betweene them,



Certaine dayes before the departure of Dyardo towards Bohemia, palmerin in the presence of the Emperour and all the Princes, gave the charge of his Embassage to the Duke Ptolome: which he should deliver, not onely to the most Christian King of France himselfe, but also to his youngest Sonne who now had espoused the Duchesse of Burgundy.

So departed Ptolome from Vienna, accompanied with many worthy Lordes and knights, and at length arrived at Digcon, where the Prince Lewes (being made acquainted with the cause of his coming, thus answered the Embassadour.

My Lord, sometimes I had acquaintance in France, with the most renowned Palmerin, and because he is the onely man of the World, to whom I owe all friendly affection: I will perswade my father to joyne in peace with him. Now was Ptolome in good hope that his travell would soone to successe ende, wherefore they presently journeyed to the King, who as then was with his Estates at Paris: and having heard Palmerins request, who now was wedded to the Princeesse Polynarda, and therefore his intended warre to the Emperour, would extend to the hurt of the man he loved, thus answered. Duke of Saxon, I am sufficiently acquainted with the bounty of the Emperor, and very well I do remember, that at his being in France

The History of Palmerin D'Oliua.

France he combated for his Lady Polynarda, yet was I ignorant till now of that hath happened. But least he should conceive, that I seek to make a commotion in Christendome: let him enjoy his Lady and Wife in peace, although he was sometime promised to mine eldest Sonne, respecting these conditions of our amity, that our first Nephewes and Nieces may match together in marriage, thereby to continue the honour of their predecessors. As for the Kings of Spaine and England, who moved me to give them assistance: on their behalfe I can make you no certaine answer, untill my Messengers be returned home againe. Gracious Lord, quoth Prolome, I dare assure you in the name of my Father, that he hath evermore esteemed your honour among the best Christian Princes, and will not rescule the marriage betweene your Chisden hereafter. And this conjunction of your amity, will cause, that neither the Kings of Spaine or England will seeke to molest him: but with your highnesse tope in love and friendship. With this answer Prolome returned to Vienna, where the Emperour and Palmerin welcomed him with exceeding honour: and by this time had the Duke Eustace taken landing in England, where delibering the summe of his charge to the King, his highnesse returned him this answer. Although my Lord Ambassadour, both your Father and the Prince Tryneus did me manifest honour, yet not to withstand peace, which still ought to be preferred before warre, I grant his request, and will presently call home my Garrison, making hands with him in honorable concord. As for the wrong done to my Daughter, I am content to excuse it, believing that she was not carried hence, but with her will: thanking the Prince for the honour he hath done her, saying she would leave her Parents and friends solightly. I thinke my gracious Lord answered the Duke, that when you consider what your Daughter hath done, you will not touch her with want of wit or judgement: for

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2

in respect of the long enmity betweene the Emperour and you, we desired that her marriage might sorte to this happy ende. For would she have departed hence with the Prince Tryneus, without a faithfull and resolved promise of marriage: which is performed, with as great honour as ever was done to the Daughter of a King. I thinke you, quoth the King, that had not the great friendship of Tryneus, (when against his Fathers will he came with Palmerin to assist me) qualified the weight of mine anger against him: I referre his service, to the judgements of my Lords of England, who perswaded me to revenge, which you well perceiue as yet I have not done.

Prince Palmerin, quoth the Duke, is so vertuous, as rather would he have runne on a thousand deathes, then your Daughters honour should any way have bene impeached: but being assured of this fortunate issue, both he and Tryneus adventured as they did. And sorry am not I, said the King, that all things are come so well to passe, but saying we are entred thus farre in speech: tell me (I pray you) how Palmerin came to the knowledge of his Parents and how he finished the adventures at the Castell of the tenne Rocks, and the dangerous Isle of Maltada, which never any knight could compasse before.

When the Duke rehearsed every accident, how amongst the great Earles was on the Prince Agriola, and each severall occasion as they fell out: at which report the Quene with her Ladies were present, who hearing the discourse of so strange and variable fortunes, said.

I thought my Daughter had learned more modestie, then leaving her Fathers Court, to follow a knight unknowne to her in strange Countries: but seeing the ends hath fallen out so well, henceforth I shall remaine in better contentment, seeing a Prince of so great renowne hath now espoused her.

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

While this conference endured, the Duke earnestly beheld the Princess Sabinda, Daughter to the Prince of Sanfuega, and niece to the Queen: and of such excellent grace and beauty he esteemed her, as forgetting the death of his father, who deceased since his departure from Allemaigne he became enamoured of her, that he demanded of the Queen if she were her Daughter. She is not my daughter, quoth the Queen, but the daughter of my Brother, the Prince of Sanfuega.

Right glad was the Duke thereof, and resolved to request her of the King in marriage: who knowing the honourable place he held among the Princes of Greece; and what account Palmerin made of him: consented thereto, so that within few daies after they were espoused together. Whereupon, to accompany the Princess, and to confirm the peace, the King sent the Duke of Gaule, and another great Lord with them into Allemaigne, the Queen likewise sent twelve English Ladies to attend on her Daughter.

Thus returned the Duke of Mecena to Vienna, where he was worthily welcomed by the Emperour Palmerin and Tryneus, especially the young Duchesse, and the Ambassadors of England, by whom the peace was faithfully ratified and confirmed.

C H A P.

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2

C H A P. LXII.

How *Palmerin* and *Polynarda* departed from *Vienna* toward *Constantinople*, where after the decease of the aged Emperour *Remicus*: *Palmerin* was crowned Emperour of Greece, and what joy was made at the birth of *Polynarda* her first Sonne.



After the Ambassadors of England were returned home, Palmerin perceiving the Empire of Allemaigne was in quiet: took his leave of the Emperour, minding to conduct his Polynarda to Constantinople, not without many sorrowfull lamentations of the Mother to forgoe her daughter, and faire Agriola her now acquainted Sister, yet the Emperour pacified them well enough, by shewing what benefit this contract would be to Christendome, and so proceeded to his Daughter in this manner.

Then goest Polynarda to the tents of a great Empire: but more pleaseth me the peregrine name of Palmerin d'Oliua thy Husband, then the regiment of such a mighty Monarch. Farewell faire Daughter, continue in faithfull love and obedience, remembering the reuerend honour a Wife oweth to her Husband. Polynarda hearing with what earnest affection her father spake, was so overcome with modest duty of a Child to her father, as she was not able to answer one word: which Palmerin beholding, kissed the Emperours hande, embraced Trineus, and took a courteous farewell of all the Ladies, commanding the Pages presently to bring away the Princesses Litter, saying to her: Madam, the longer you stay here, the greater will be your conceits of sorrow, by absence & griefe will be forgotten: Let vs then merrily journey to the Citie

the

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

tic of Constantinople, where they that neuer saw you, will rejoyce more at your coming, then all the Allemaignes can sorrow for your departure. With like comfortable speeches Palmerin frequented his way by the way, untill at length they entered the Kingdome of Hungaria, where Frytoll with his chiefest Lordes attending they, coming, to whom Palmerin in jesting, said:

Brother, I have aduentured to bring your Sister Polynarda into your Kingdome, take heed if you lay charge to her now as sometimes you did: because that I am ready to defend her against whomsoever dare. I perceiue my good Lord (quoth Frytoll) that you will have my folly generally knowne, I pray you let no such youthfull pranks be now remembred: for as you are the chiefest in Chivalry, so have the besties given you a Lady, whom no one in the whole world may Paragon. Well may it be said that God and Nature forepointed this match: nothing inferiour unto lovely Paris, and faire Helena, or puissant Hector and wise Andromacha.

Frytoll accompanied them so farre as Alba, where most courtoously parting from each other, Frytoll returned to his Kingdome, and Palmerin soon after came to Constantinople, where no little joy was made for his safe arrivall, especially for the Princess Polynarda, who was a right welcome Lady into Greece, the olde Emperour providing such rare devices and Triumphs as the Chronicles to this day recorde the memoory thereof. About tenne or twelue Moneths after, Polynarda was delivered of a goodly Sonne, who was named Prymaleon, whereat the good olde Emperour so inwardly rejoyced, as his spirit onely comforted in the good fortune of his Sonne, and fearing afterwards to see any sinister chance befall them, departed this fragile and transitory life, whose Death was signified thre dayes before by the Chanted Wynd. His Funerall was performed as becometh so greate an Estate: and saine would Pal-

merin

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

merin have had his Father the King Florendos Crowned Emperour, earnestly labouring the Princess in that cause: But he desiring them to haue him excused, returned them this answer.

Great offence were it to God (my Friends) that the Honour due to him, who gave me liberty, defended my renowne and saved my life, should be taken from him, and given to me: For if Vertue, Authority, and good Fortune, are the properties whereby to make choise of an Emperour Palmerin is very many degrees before me. As for his Generosity, it is so well known to you, as that it were but lost labour to make reporte thereof. For his Authority, the barbarous Nations, among whom he hath lived, and conqueringly controlled, deliver sufficient testimony. And for his high good Fortune in all his Enterprises, where is the man that may be equalled with him? Or what hath he at any time attempted, but he hath finished the same with wonderfull Honour: I could name things and Places, that raighe onely by his meanes. To speake of the Victories he hath obtained, either in Battell or single Combat, your eyes have beheld, and the whole world apparently witnessed. This dare I boldly say, and some of you doe know it better then I, that his onely Name will be more feared in Greece, then all your soe passed Emperours have bene by their greatest puissance.

So well did the people like what the King Florendos had said, as immediately was the Prince Palmerin proclaimed Emperour of Constantinople, and the next day he was Crowned according to the accustomed rites and Ceremonies. Not long afterwards did the King Florendos depart with his Sonne, but returned with his Daughter into Macedon, where he governed in love and justice among his Subjects, daily sending Messengers to Constantinople, as well to understand the health of the Emperour and Empire, as also of young Prymaleon, who daily increased in strength and Beauty.

A A

CHAP.

CHAP. L XIII.

Now the Prince *Olorico* and *Alchidiana* pretending to travell to Constantinople to, visit the Emperour *Palmerin*, and the Empreſſe *Polynarda*, ſtrayed on the Seas : and what ſorrowfull moane ſhe made, and how ſhe was found by *Palmerin*.



BEſe in one of the Chapters you have heard mentioned, how *Olorico* promiſed the Princeſſe *Alchidiana*, that he would bring her to the Emperour *Palmerins* Court, which ſhe kept ſupplied to deep in her fancy, as but ſo the common ſhallable, incident to young Ladies, which is, to become great ſoone after they are ſpouſed, ſhe would have betaken her ſelfe to Travell, within thre Moneths after her Marriage. Notwithſtanding, within thre time after that trouble was paſt, ſhe came to begge a Wonne of the *Solane*, which he not denyed her, thinking ſhe would demand no matter of weight. Father (quoth ſhe) you muſt needs give leave to the Prince *Olorico*, that he may guide me, and accompany me to Constantinople, ſo that I am deſirous to ſee the Emperour *Palmerin*.

Daughter (ſaid the *Solane*, the travell on the Seas is very perillous, and oftentimes great ſtates periſh by ſhipwacks; but ſeing you are ſo deſirous, and I undoubtedly have paſt my promiſe, you ſhall not in ought be hindered, by me. Whereupon was preſently prepared ſeven ſhippes and Gallies, the greater part whereof was laden with great Hoſtes, rich Taptiry, and other things of much value, which would be given to *Palmerin* and his *Polynarda*. In the reſt were Embarked choſen Knights for her

deſence

deſence, with Ladies and Gentlewomen to attend on her and neceſſaries : thinking to ſhew her ſumptuous ſpagnifcence in the Emperours Court, which in concluſion ſell out otherwiſe. For Fortune who is evermoze variable and never permanent, at the inſtant, when *Olorico* and *Alchidiana*, building moſt on her ſabor, and were come within tenne dayes ſailing of Constantinople : ſhe altered their opinions in moſt doubtfull manner, as they expected nothing but the end of their lives. The winds now ariſeth contrary to them, a ſudden ſtorme and terrible Tempeſt overtaketh them, and with ſuch rough Willows their ſhippes were beaten, as in their ſight ſix of their Gallies were drowned, the reſidue were very ſarre ſcattered from them, and the great Carricks wherein themſelves were, againſt a Roke, was ſplit in the middeſt. Now are they left to the mercy of the Waters, and *Alchidiana* waſting on a Plancke ſo ſafegard of her life : and had not one of the Pyrates by ſwimming recovered a little ſquidde, where with he preſently made to her and gotte her in, otherwiſe there had the Princeſſe unhappily periſhed. This Pilote was ſo expert and cunning, as cutting through the innerciſfull waves, he gained landing at a port diſtant from Constantinople about thirty miles : the Inhabitants where they came on ſhoze, wondered to ſee her ſo gorgeouſly Attired, and had not the Pilote friendly perſwaded them, that ſhe was a Princeſſe travelling to the Emperours Court, and by miſhap had loſt all her company on the Seas, they would have dealt with her very hardly. But when they underſtoode the cauſe of her coming, they entertained her with ſabor and civility, cauſing her to be lodged at a very welthy Parchants houſe, where ſhe wanted nothing ſhe could deſire. *Alchidiana* ſeing ſhe had eſcaped the danger of the Sea and was now in better aſſurance then beſore, comforted her ſelfe with this good fortune : but when ſhe remembred her loſſe, into what want & poverty ſhe was now brought,

and that though her foolish desire, her Husband was drow-
ned, (as she thought) she was overcome with griefe that
neither her owne noble mind, nor the daily presence of the
Greeks that came to see her, could disengage her from cease-
lesse lamentations.

Alas wretch that I am, quoth she, how well have I deser-
ved this wretched adventure? Alas ill advised Alchidia-
na, what motives hadst thou to cross the Seas? if not insat-
iable desire to see him, of whom thou must expect no com-
pense for thy sorrow: or else to see her that is Mistress of his
heart, and so make thine own conceits more languishing?
My Lord and Husband Olorico, I am the unhappy cause
of thy death, thy love hath ever bene to me sound and
perfect: why should it not then make thee forget the man,
who alwaies disdained my passions, and never loved me
but with dissimulation. If thou escape death as I have
done: just cause hast thou to hate me continually. Could
not I remember, how thy people spent their blood for me,
only to witness thy never dimmed affection? and I have
requited thy love with monstrous ingratitude. Why then
did not our Gods make me alone to suffer the desert of my
folly, but take revenge on them that never offended? Alas no-
ble Ladies, how hard is your recompence in my service,
that your tender and delicate bodies should be sold for the
fishes? And you worthy Knights and Gentlemen, instead
of purchasing honour and renowne with your Swords, you
are lost for ever, to my no little griefe and vexation. The
Merchant in whose house she was lodged, hearing her
heavy and lamentable complaints, thus comforted her.
Be of good chere Madame, your Husband (by the grace of
God) will well enough escape this danger. As for your
treasure, it is a matter soon gotten and soon lost: and to
mourn for your Ladies and Gentlemen, it is to no pur-
pose, because it can no way benefit them. When the poore
men lose our goods wives and Children, we must with pa-
tience

tience, please our selves: you then having knowledge re-
serves, and that we are all subject to the transitory chan-
ges of the world, to despair is farre unbecomely your
state

My Lord the Emperour is beautifull and liberall, and
the most vertuous Prince that ever reigned in Greece: he
will so well recompence your losse, as you shall not com-
plaine of your coming. With the perswasion, she was
somewhat pacified, and having staid there nine or tenne
daies, to see if any other of the Gallies would arrive there.
Seeing none came: she sold others of her precious Jewels
that was about her, for halfe the value they were worth,
and provided her selfe of five Horses for her selfe, her Ho-
stesse and her two Daughters, the Pilot that had saved her
from drowning, and one of the Merchants servants, with
which company she rode toward Constantinople, having
changed her rich attire into mourning robes. As they
were in a great Forrest five miles from the City, the
Princesse calling to remembrance, how poore and simple
she should come before the Emperour, having bene one of
the wealthiest Ladies in the world: was so overcome with
this conceit, as hardly could her Hostesse keep her from
swooning, wherefore seeing they were nere a goodly foun-
taine, there they alighted to rest her a little. And after she
had walked in the cool shadows of the Trees, she found her
selfe in better disposition, preparing to mount on horsebacke
again: but it so came to passe, that the Emperour *Palme-
rin* having bene Hunting in that Forrest, and by earnest
pursuit of the Game, lost all his company, so that at length
he came to the fountaine where Alchidiana walked. His
arrival greatly amazed the Women, and before he would
demand what they were, he alighted and drinke of the
fountaine water. Alchidiana earnestly beholding him,
and seeing inwardly a strange alteration, presently
swooned againe in her Hostesse armes. Alas, said the Em-
perour

The History of *Palmerin D'Oltra*.

perour, hath I so offended the Lady, that the sight of me should endanger her life? tell me my friend, quoth he to the Pilot, dost thou know of whence she is? So my Lord, answered the Pilot, but I understand she is a noble Princess, who consenting to see the Emperour, hath left her people and goods in the Sea. He thinks I have seen her here tofore, said Palmerin, but I cannot remember the place where. When beholding her more advisedly, he said: Is not this the Princess Alchidiana? that cannot be: my Ambassadors told me, that she was married to the Prince Olorico.

By this time she was a little recovered, and seeing how he held her in his arms, thus spake. Ah Sir Palmerin, why doe you hinder the departure of miserable Alchidiana? I thinke you she cannot live in better time and place, then in this Countrey, and betwixt his armes whom she loved as her life, yet never received comforte by him till this instant. Ah my Lord, here maist thou beholde the foolish and indiscrete Alchidiana, who for she hath lost her Husband Olorico that looves her dearly: Knights, Ladies, and inestimable treasure hath she likewise lost, all which she maketh no account of, but of her beloved, whom she shall never recover. What may it be Spadame, quoth the Emperour, that you are under the Princess Alchidiana, Daughter to the King of Babilon, the flower of all the Ladies in Turkie? The same am I, said she, who loved thee so unrepentably, and the loyalty of marriage, feare of dangers of the Sea, nor thy too rigorous refusal, both in my presence, and by thy messengers, could not drive me from this shame, onely to see thy Court, and the beauty of Polynarda. And that at length I might purchase my desire, I brought my Husband with me, who I feare the cruell waters have swallowed, and as brave Ladies as ever were seen, with riches that well might decoy an Emperour, to heaven. Spadame, quoth Palmerin, if the Prince

hath

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

hath lost his life in this adventure, never will my heart be merry againe. Now see I the unspeakable love you have me, which I have in some part requited toward your Olorico: yet dismay not (sweete Lady, nor feare his death nor feare further tryall, for by mine honour I sweare, no sooner shall I come to Constantinople, but I will cause his search presently to be followed, not doubting but he may be found againe.

And now faire Princess, tell what vertue or defect you have in me, that might bring the least paine you have endured: committing your gracious person to so many doubtfull hazards of feares, afflictions, perturbations, heats and colds, which your chaste nature could hardly budge in trauell: but quoth she, I the name of a man, if now I should not pity you. And I sweare to you by the living God, that if your mishap seg to an spill end, never will I weare my Diademe longer. Alas Spadame, if heretofore I have beloved you, consider it was a Lepers secret: that has biquenched his hart to such a Lady. And loves you as if you were her sister. But hath you, quoth she, among your amorous delights, acquainted her with my basely boldnesse? what may she then conceiue of me, but as of a idle glibbe to lose and easily appease. The love of her blocke faire Princess, said Palmerin, cannot make me disclose her secret, that honoured me so much: let it suffice you, that for the labour I obtained when you found me in like place, she remaineth to recompence you with all possible kindness. Let us then depart hence toward Constantinople, that you may be blessed as becometh your high calling. More despitous that I am, quoth the Princess, had I entred into conceit of your former illusions, never had I fallen into so great danger: but as for matters past, either of your rigour or disdaine, your present necessities compells me to forget, set on then when you please, and I will beare your company.

The Pilote, the Merchants Wife, and her Daughter, on they knes desired the Emperour to excuse them, in that they hadde not reverence his Majesty as they ought. Wholy Penant I expect not (said the Emperour), come on and goe with me, that I may recompence your paines taken for this worthy Princeesse. So rode they forward, and as they issued south of the Forrest, there stayed the Knights and Hunters attending the Emperours coming, they all marvelling at the great courtesie he shewed to the Lady: then his Majesty calling the Duke Rustace to him, said. Thou must presently with thy companions, goe Arme ye, and travel to find the Prince Olorico, whom the tempestuous Seas hath separated from his Lady. Who brought these heavy tidings to your Highnes (said the Duke.) This Lady, who is his Wife (quoth he) having miraculously escaped shipwracke by the meanes of this Barriner. When they were come to the Pallace, the Duke of Saxon came to hold the Emperours Horse while he alighted. Prolome said Palmerin, know you no better your mistresse Alchydiana? you must now remember her past labours, when she rescued you from base servitude. And that shall not I say, get my Lord (quoth the Duke) while I have a day to live; I cannot thinke that this Lady is she. It is even she with, out farther question (said the Emperour) see you and the Duke of Mecena halpe her from her Horse, and conduct her into the Pallace. while I in meane time goe to ad, vertise the Emperesse.

Padame (quoth Prolome) yet can I not be thought resolved. In with Prolome, (said he) I am Alchydiana, who to accomplish what thou and thy companions could not, am come hither in this poverty: discovering my want of knowledge by an unconceivable losse, except you my good Lords take the greater pittie on me. Thinke you Padame, quoth Prolome, that my Lord Olorico is lost? noher feare it I beleve ye, but thinke you shall finde as great favour in this

this Court, as it were with the Soldane your Father. (Palmerin coming to the Emperesse, said) Padame, as I was hunting this day, I found in our Forrest the Princeesse Alchydiana, of whom I have so often told ye, she bring wife to the Prince Olorico, that named himself my Masteres Brother, when I was last with you at Gaunt, I desire ye to intreat her, as her calling describeth, because I am not a little beholding to her. So taking her by the hand, they came and met the Princeesse, and Palmerin taking her courteously in his armes, delivered her to the Emperesse, saying.

Faire Princeesse, you shall remaine with my Lady, till our Knights have found your Lord and Husband. You will requite your kindnesse to a distressed Lady, said Alchydiana, although I feare for my offences his Fortune will be much the worse. Padame (quoth the Emperesse) so Noble and debonaire is your Lord and Husband, as no danger can any way prejudice his life, but thinke him as safe as if he were here present with you, which doubtlesse will be right soon and in good time: therefore let me intreat you to be of good chere, as if you were now in Affrica. And though we cannot compare with the Court of Babylon, yet here shall you be attended as becomes so great a Princeesse.

I doubt not thereof good Padame, said Alchydiana, (he more am I indebted to the Emperour and you: yet can I not forget the absence of my Lord, being separated from him in a place so uncouth. He that is the defender of the just (quoth the Emperesse) will send ye more againe in place more comfortable, and in that hope I pray ye to perswade your selfe: laying aside these mourning garments, the very sight whereof cannot but offend ye. These gracious speeches somewhat contented her, and expelled all private conceits of sorrow: yet would she not change her habit, till she had either good or bad newes of the Prince Olorico.

The History of *Palmerin D'Oloro*.

CHAP. LXIII.

How the Prince *Olorico* was rescued from the Moors, by the young Knights that the Emperour *Palmerin* sent in his search: and what joy was made at Constantinople at his arrivall.



Upon the Emperours resolution for the search of *Olorico*, the Dukes of *Meccena*, and *Saxon*, with each of them fifty knights, were prepared to *see* with two great Gallies well appointed: and *Colmelio*, *Bellechino*, *Sergillo*, *Donno* to *Cardino*, and the Merchant *Estebons* two *Donnes* whom, the Emperour had but lately knighted, with thirty hardy and valiant *Soldours* departed in another. Eight other *Messengers* were sent on the Coast of *Propontida* and the *Bosphore*, to seek the Prince.

It came to passe, that the same day *Alchidiana* was preferred to *showning*, *Alibarbanco* a Pirate was sailing towards *Natolia*, and passed very nare where the *Princesse* *Carriack* was *spie*, and him did he espye floating on a *Chesse*, which was filled with *Mariners*, being then with fifty men to behold him in such danger, he caused his men to take him into the *Shippe*, who ready to yield to his ghost he was bound with colles. When *Alibarbanco* saw him so richly apparelled, and the *Chesse* well stuffed with things of such value: he imagined him presently to be some great Lord, for whom he should have some large *Ransom*, wherefore he used him very courteously. *Olorico* seeing he was so happily escaped, lifting his eyes to Heaven, said. Great is thy mercy O God, that so favourably vouchsafed to regard thy poor creature, nor

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2

were my loss more reckoning, so my Lady *Alchidiana* were safe in *Assiria*. When angry Planet rained upon two betwixt, our selves to *see*: what answer shall I make to the *Soldans* your father, that gave me such charge of your person at my departure: hardly may I dare to come before him any more.

Alibarbanco hearing these complaints, rejoiced thereat. By *Mahomet* (quoth he to himselfe) nor shall thou see him any more, if I can hinder it, for I will present thee to the great Turke, his most all enemy: and for thy *Ransom* I shall receive a bountifull recompence. So thinking to strike towards *Natolia*, he hapned among the Emperours young knights ere he was a ware: wherefore he thought to take them *Whippes* likewise, yet therein he found himselfe very much deceived. For *Bellechino* warning them to be Turke by these *Pirates*, said to his companions. We are now in the danger of Turkish *Pirates*: let us therefore with courage winne our deliverance. Whereupon they fiercely assailed *Alibarbanco*, and killed in slay, that in the end they bound him, making such slaughter among his men, and shooting him likewise down into the sea, that none were left to resist their further entrance, where they found the Prince *Olorico*, and being not a little gladd of this their good success, they each one embraced him with gracious courtesie. Alas my friends (quoth the Prince) how knew you my being here: who gave you in charge to take me forth: who hath bene the Messenger of my misfortune: By Lord the Emperour *Palmerin*, (answered *Colmelio*,) understood thereof by your Lady *Alchidiana*, whom he found by good happe as he rode on Hunting.

But may I give credite to your words (said the Prince) is my Lady with his Majesty at the Court: she is in truth my Lord (said *Bellechino*) and the *Parriner* likewise that saved her life. Whom the Emperour hath highly

The History of Palmerin D'Oloroa.

highly recompenced for his faithful service. I beseech you quoth Olorico, let us holle sail presently toward Constantinople, for my heart cannot be perswaded till I have seen her, so great is my doubt, considering our unfortunate separation.

Be her may I beare Armes in Knight hood, said Bellectino, lift my sword in honourable Chivalry, if Alchidiana be not at Constantinople, where I both saw her and spake to her before our departure. So taking the bridle that belonged to the Pirate Alibarbanco with them, in short time after they arrived at Constantinople, where their cheerefull sounding of Drums, Trumpets, and Clarions at their landing, belihed testimonie of their good successe. At the Emperour was glad for the recovery of his friends, the Princesse Alchydiana of her Husband, and every one generally for the man lost by such mishap, I leave to your judgements, that can censure the rare toyes of love and friendship. What Triumphes, Tournaments, bonfires, Maskes, Pyromeries, and other delightfull exercises were perfozmed, I say of the Prince Olorico's safety whom the Emperour made account of, as you have heard before: it would demand a larger volume to set downe, you must therefore here imagine, that you behold his Majesty highly contented, Alchydiana thozowly satisfied, and the whole Court well pleased by this happy event, giving themselves to expresse the same in open and want, set signes, bestowing so great estates to prosecute, & therefore of as great honour as may be devised.

The young knights are especially welcomed for their worthy service, The Dukes of Saxon and Mecana likewise, though they failed of bringing the Prince, yet they brought two Foystes, belonging to the Prince Alibarbanco, richly laden with many welthy spoiles, which were given among the young knights in recompence of their pynes. During the time of these surpassing pleasures and

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2

and delights, there entered the Haven of Constantinople three Ships, laden with marvellous sumptuous gifts and presents, from the Quene Zephira, and her Brother the King Maulerino, being sent to the Emperour Palmerin and his Empresse Polynarda, by two great Lords Ambassadors from Persia, to request familiar love and alliance with the Emperour, the Holone confessing his injury to Tryneus while he was in his Court. When the persians came before the Emperour, who was honorably accompanied with Kings, Dukes, Princes, Counties, and many brave Ladies: they were greatly abashed, yet thinking on the argument of their Embassage, one of them began in this manner.

It is no marvell, renowned Emperour and Monarch of Greece, if thy Subjects both love thee and bidst thee, when thy behavon: hath conquered the mindes of sozaine Potentates: who to enter amity and peace with thee, some have left their Countreys to send their Ambassadors hither, other have not stirre, or assemble their men in warlike manner, so is the name of Palmerin feared throze all Asia. Peares of beare witness the great Turke, the Califfe of Siconia, and the heyes to the Prince Amarano of Nigrea: not much inferiour in this condition, is the Holone of Babilon, whose Daughter with her Husband I here behold. The victorious Abimar, King of Romata and Grisca, the worthy Maulerino, and the puissant Holone of Persia my Master, Husband to the vertuous Quene Zephira: who with their Brother have sent your highnes three Shippes, laden with the most welthy riches their Countreys can yeld. My Lord and they humbly kisse your Majesty hand, desiring you to forget his discourtesie to the gentle knight Tryneus, when he became enamoured on the Princesse Auroinda. But if their love then sozted to a philosophicall trobt or figure, it hath thence proved effectuall in procreation, to the no little joy of my Lord and Master.

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

The Princeſſe was belibered of a goodly ſon, growing in ſuch exquisite ſoſme and feature: as it is expected he will one day reſemble his Father in chivalry, as he doth already his Mother in amiable perfection.

Ambaſſadour, quoth the Emperour, for the great vertue and nobility I haue ſound, as well in the Princeſſe Zephyra, as alſo her noble Brother: I grant the friendly alliance thou demaundeſt. Yet hereof am I ſorry, that the ſonne to the Prince Tryneus, ſhould be nourished and ſpend his youth among Mahumetiſts, without knowledge of his God and Redeemer: for in ſuch ſorte ſhould he be inſtructed, after he is come to the yeres of underſtanding, that all the Alchoran is tales and fables, and doubtleſſe God will ſo deale with him in time, as he ſhall imitate the happes of his Noble Father. As for the preſents ſent to by the King Maulerino, the Soldans, and his Queens Zephyra, we accept them as from our friends, and will returne them ſome remembrance of our thankſaſneſſe. His Maieſty commanded the Perſians to be lodged in his Palace, and continued till their former joyes and triumphes: but to alter thoſe Courtly paſtimes and delights, this miſfortune happened which hereafter ſhall ſhew.

CHAP.

Emperour of Conſtantinople. PART. 2

CHAP. LXV.

How the great Turke reſuſed to aſſiſt Lycado, Nephew to the Admirall *Olimacell* againſt the Emperour *Palmerin*: and what trouble happened in Conſtantinople, by the Traytour *Nardides* Nephew to the King *Tariſius*, *Lycado*, *Menodeno* and their Father.



Such was the humanity and pity of Palmerin, when he ſinced the enchantments of the Iſle of Maltada, as he gave liberty to all the Turkes and Chriſtians, which were beſore tranſported, as you haue heard: among whom was Lycado, Nephew to the Admirall *Olimacell*, he that at the taking of Agriola, had the Prince Tryneus for his priſoner. This Lycado, ſaving himſelfe in his owne Countrey and out of danger, where he heard how the great Turke was ſaine and his Uncle likewise: he came beſore the Sultans that then reigned, ſaying: *Worthy Lord*, as men are naturally inclined to beſeeme their loſſes, ſo are Subjects bound to aduertise their Sovereignes, of any ſhame or injury done to their Maieſties. This ſpoke my Lord, becauſe you haue not as yet reuenged the death of your beſeſed Brother, now ſleeping in the armes of Mahomet, albeit traiterouſly ſlain by Palmerin and his companions: at which time my noble Uncle was likewiſe murdered, with many knights of chiefe and ſpeciall account. And leaſt you ſhould be ignorant in the truth of the matter, and who alſo caried hence the Princeſſe Agriola, I haue credibly underſtood, that Palmerin is Nephew to the Emperour of Greece: one of his companions is the Counteſſe Sonne of Allemaigne, and all the reſt were Princes and

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

and Lords of Greece, onely sent as Spyes into Turkie. Wherefore, seeing you now hold the state in such peace and quietnes, it were necessary you shuld leaue a mighty Army: and please you to commit the charge thereof to me, I will loose my life, or make an absolute destruction of all Greece. I remember (said the great Turke, that your Uncle made like entrance into my deceased Brothers Courte, as you by your speeches now labour to doe: but I will so warily looke to such intrusions, as no Traytors shall rest here if I can hinder them. Your Uncle versed the Christians, what followed thereon: the death of his Father, and dangerous confusion. By you likewise may ensue as bad fortune, depart you therefore from our Court: and but that we are loath to be noted with Tyranny, thou shouldest presently be beaten in pieces with hoxles. False Traytour, thou that comest to counsell vs in a matter, wherein we cannot misdoe but with great dishonour: it behoues thee first to regard the end of thy intent, and what he is that governe in Greece. See Eullaine gon, and on perill of thy life neuer presume before vs againe.

Lycado was greatly astonished at this sharpe answer, and seeing he could haue no better successe, he went to his Father the Brother to Olimell, being one of the chiefest Magicians in all Turkie: to him he made his complaint, saying, he would die in that resolution, but he would cause the Turke to know that he was no Traytour, and this (quoth he) shall be the meane whereby I will compasse it. I meane to disguise my selfe, and Travell to the City of Constantinople, where privately I will murder the Emperour Palmerin: So shall my Lord the great Turke touch me with no further suspicion, but will reward me with greater benefices then euer my Uncle had. My Sonne (answered his Father) thinkest thou that thy devise will soe to effect: thy Brother Menadeno would helpe thee herein, but he is too young: yet when time serbeth for thy departure, I will

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

not onely tell thee, but conduct thee my selfe. I beseech you good Father (said Lycado) further me in what you may, for neuer will my hart be at rest, till I haue payd Palmerin with the selfe same coyns the great Turke won. In meane while doe you study, and search all your Bookes of Astrologie, Divination, Magicke, and Sorcery, as Zebulus, Orpheus, Hermes, Zoroastres, Circes, Medea, Alphonsus, Bacon, Apponius, and all the rest that wrote of the Blacke Superlatius: reade them over againe and againe, devise such Spells, Incantations, and Conjurations, as the very spirits may speake of the good I will make at the City of Constantinople.

Whereupon, the Duke made him his owne Menadeno knight, and with Lycado both committed to Sea, saying, my Sonnes, I will bring you to Constantinople, where (by better shewing of the) we will strike before you be able to spyre: remember your Uncle's word, and beate your selfe in such sort, as you may be able to doe. The time will come when you shall see Nardides, and therein shall you be assisted by a Christian Knight, whom we shall send ready armed there for the same purpose.

Thus, Nardides having beene launched into the Sea, and out through the water with such violence, as if the bell himselfe were in the Sea: so that they for the Landing at the selfe same houre, as Nardides arrived at Constantinople. To declare what this Nardides was, you remember the two Traytors Promptaleon and Oudin, Prophets to the King Tarisius of Hungaria, whom Palmerin and Fryoli slew at Constantinople: he was their Brother, and came to the Duchesse of Ormeda. Shee understanding the death of her two Sonnes, could not conceale it from the Duke her Husband, who presently dyed with very conceite of griefe: Whereupon, she to revenge this mishap caused by her report, as also the death of her two Sonnes, made promise to Nardides, (then being eightene

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

years old) that so soon as he was knighted, he should go to Constantinople, and there (if it were possible) to murder the Emperor and Fryzell. All this he vowed to performe, and about some two or three years after, having married the Kings Daughter of Polonia, he Embarked himselfe with forty knights, determining by a Combat for Treason, to compass his intent.

These joyfull nyers at Sebenge, landed all at one instant at Constantinople, when the old Spagittian calling to Nardydes: said he would gladly speake with him in secrete, as concerning matters greatly for his avayle. Whereupon they went all closely together, into the Masters Cabin, and the Old man entred into these speeches.

My Nardydes, needsesse it is for you to hide your affaires from me, for I know that you departed from Polonia with forty knights disguised like Merchants, onely with this determination, to destroy the Emperor, in revenge of certaine injuries done to your Mother. But if you will give credits to me, and go to worke in such sort as I shall advise ye, ye shall happily obtaine the end of your desire. My God (said Nardydes) you tell me wonders there is not one in the Shippe that knowes mine intent: yet have you said the truth. Whether I cannot marvell sufficiently. Seeing then you know so much, it were but follie to dissemble, say then your mind, and I will heare ye. This night (said the old man) the Emperor will suppe in the great Hall, with the Prince Olorico, and the Princesse Alchidians friends, the King of Sparta, and his Queene, with many other great Princes and Lordes: so that such sorte of people are in the Pallace, as little regard will be had of Strangers or Manshold servants.

Then then with my Sonne Menadewo, being Armed as becometh a carle so weighty, shall suddenly enter, and kill the Emperor: my Sonne Lycado and I, will stay your returne here, and I that can command the winde and

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

and weather will carry ye hence without danger of following. And true it is, that there is a Bird pented in the Hall, which the wise Mazabelino hath so Charmed, as neither good nor ill things can come to the Emperor, but she betwixes the same by her Song as fearefull crye: yet doubt not you thereof, Strike boldly, there shall be none Armed, and so shall you depart againe at your owne pleasure. My friend (said Nardydes, happy be the good hours I mette with thee, assure thy selfe, that if I can kill the Emperor, and thou afterward deliver me safely: such recompence will I bestow on thee, as both thou and thine shall say ever remember me.

Other recompence I demand not (said the Old man) then the death of the Emperor: Prepare thy selfe there, soe to follow this intent. The Night being come, these Traytors Armed themselves, and taking their Spardes, about them, entred the Pallace, where among the Pages and Servants, without suspicion they came into the Hall: leaving Lycado and his Father at the West. Where he threw abroad such Charments, that all such as came south of their Houses, presently fell downe asleepe in the Streets. As soone were the Traytors entred the Hall, but the Wyd gave a horrible and fearefull crye, beating her Breast against her Breast with such fury, as though she would have rent south her heart. My God (said the Emperor) in mercy behold me: For the crye of this Wyd hath sootell great misfortune. Look about my friends (quoth he to his Guard) and see if any stranger or unknowne body is entred our Presence. Nardydes by these speeches, well knew he was the Emperor, wherefore drawing his Sword, he thought to have cleaved his head: yet he stayed of his intent, for the Emperor seeing the blow coming, with a great Golden Cuppe awarded it indifferently, notwithstanding, the Sword in slipping from the Cnp, gave him a soe wound bypon the head. Olorico sitting on the other

ther side of the Table, ranne at the Traytour, but the Emperour, had received two strokes more ere he could come at him, so that his Majesty fell from his Chaire as he had bene dead.

As the Prince Olorico held the Traytour Nardides by the armes, Menadeno strooke at him so rigorously, as if Proleme had not bozne of the blowes with a great silver plate, Olorico there had lost his life. Duke Eustace seeing this shamefull outrage, being the Sonne out of Nardides hand, and gave him such a round stroke therewith on the head, as made him tumble his armes upstake and by the helpe of Bellechino, who found the meanes wher off his Helmet, he smote his head from his shoulders. Bellechino who had bene newly baptised, loved the Emperour as he had bene his father, and coming to Menadeno whom Duke Proleme strongly held in his armes; gave him so many cuts on his throat, that he likewise fell downe at his side. The Emperours seeing her Lord so wounded, rent her garments, toze her comely locks of haire, & smote her face with mercurious violence. Ah my Lord, quoth she, thou art not wounded alone: so if thou die, as God forbid, right soon will my ghost follow thee. Cease you your complaints, said the Emperour, and comfort your selfe so well as you may, for this is the houre wherein I must leade you: I have lost such abundance of my blood, as longer may I not lye with you: O my God forgive my sinnes, and receive my soule. In uttering these wordes he swooned againe, and the Emperour with him for company, to the no little amazement of all the Lords and Ladies, who were well nere at their wits end to behold this unexpected alteration. Alchidiana likewise was in wonderfull perplexity, fearing also that her Lord was wounded to the death: but to comfort this sorrowfull and desolate Court, good Fortune sent this helpe ensuing.

CHAP. LXVI.

Now the wise Muzabelino knowing by his art, the cruell treason done to the Emperour: came to succour him, and of that which followed.



Muzabelino the Magician, of whom we have already spoken, by chance this day was turning over his Booke, and found the dangerous stratagems devised by these Traytors, and calling his familiars together, demanded the danger that would ensue by this treason: whereto one of them replied, that if he went not speedily to Constantinople, the Emperour, the Prince Olorico, and their Ladies would hardly escape that day with life. When Armed he himselfe, in like same manner as he was when he succored the Prince Trineus, and calling two spirits of the ayre resembling Giants, their faces so ugly and fearfull as no human creature durst behold them, them he commanded to carry him to Constantinople, and with a great flaming sword in his hand, he cut through the ayre with such horrible thunder, as each one thought the world had bin ended. When he beheld the old man that defended the post, he said to him, false and disloyall Traitor, warrst thou metals with the man whom thou knowest to be in my guard? take him to ye (quoth he to his two spirits) and convey him to your Court, and there keepe him alive for me, for I will give him a paine a thousand times worse then death: you know how to do my gentle guest, let him be dealt withall as his behaviour hath deserved. The miserable old man stoned herent, and thinking to helpe himselfe by his spagique, was presently transformed into a Serpent. Now thou shalt perceive, said Muzabelino, that

that I am greater in power than thou art. So taking two great Golden chains, he tied the Serpent about the necks therewith and his Sonns together: setting such a conjunction on them, as he should never be changed to his former shape.

Then came he to the Pallace, where taking off his Helmet, he entered the Hall, saying to the Knights. My dear friends, the Dragon that thus hath molested you is taken, rejoice therefore and be of good cheer, your Lord is not dead, he lieth, he must live, and in despite of enmity shall flourish more than ever he did. The Princes & Knights hearing him speak so friendly, and yet know not what he was, notwithstanding his promises they were greatly amazed: but when he saw Bellechino and Colmelio so reverently embraced him, they began to conceive better opinion of him. Alas my Lord and father, said Bellechino, in a happy hour came you hither, and your presence puts us out of all further feare, doubtless to succeed the Emperesse Polynarda, so pittie it is to see her thus changed. Whereupon Muzabelino embraced the Emperesse, whose face was cold, pale and wan. Why Madam? quoth he, where is your former wisdom and discretion? leave those false countenances to common people: your Lord is in no danger, but within three daies he shall be well againe. Convey her hence, said he to the Ladies, I am assured to see you folly, suffering her to lie in this sort, and no one helpe her. Then was she conducted to her Chamber, and Muzabelino with the ayde of his Son and Duke Eustace, carried the Emperour to his bed, where touching his two indoes with a precious Ointment: Muzabelino gave him some of the water to drink, which before had healed the Princesse Zephira, and which he had brought with him in a little viall of Chyall, when the Emperour being somewhat better recovered, lifting his eyes to heaven, said. How great art thou in mercy my Sovereign Goddamer, sending

ving Muzabelino from the furthest regions to helpe me in so great necessity? Ah my noble friend, what have I done at any time so far, that might induce thee to labour me so much? My Lord answered Muzabelino, so precious are your merits in mine eyes, as I can see no lesse, except I should be accounted the most ingratefull among men. So bathing his wounds with the joyce of certaintie bestowed hearbes, he willed all that were present to depart the chamber, and on the morrow they should see their Lord in better estate. So left they the Emperour to his rest, & all the Princes, Knights and Ladies, came to welcome Muzabelino, who comforted the Princesse Alchydia, assuring her that the Prince Olorico, should see wel enough, so he had like, while he bathed his wounds, and left him in his Chamber quietly sleeping. On the morrow he commanded the bodies of Nardydes and Menadeno to be buried, afterwards he rescued Lycado from his father, causing him to be put in prison till the Emperour were recovered: and taking the Serpent by the chain, he brought him by the help of his two spirits into the great Court, where by his cunning he erected a goodly Marble pillar, and on the top thereof a strong Cage of yron, saying to the old man transformed. Accursed creature, to the end thy paine may be the greater during the Emperours life, thou shalt remaine in this monstrous shape and die thou shalt not, till the Son of heaven call him hence whose death thou diddest contrive. Instantly the spirits thrust the Serpent into the Cage: and afterwards banished away, leaving the monster casting fearful flames of fire out at his mouth, and howling with strange and pittifull cries. When went Muzabelino to the Emperesse, who still remained sad and penur, and bringing her to the Emperour, said. O Madam, am I not so good as my hope, your Lord is well and perfectly recovered, he is now pleasant and mourne no longer. Not a little joyful was she at this sight, embracing his highnes with such affection, as though

He had bin absent from him a long time: but when the Emperour saw her face so murthered with lamenting, and her sweet countenance so much altered. *Alas Spadame*, quoth he, why doe you offend that seat of heavenly beauty, which God ordained to excell all Ladies living: albeit I had died, yet should not you have bin such tyrants on your selfe. If such a weakefull chance had happened, answered the Emperesse, some had my ghost followed my Lord. For my heart hath no comfort but onely in you, and that once lost, farewell life and all. When must you both, said *Muzabelino*, consider the mighty might of God, especially you my Lord, who as you are loved of many, so are you hated likewise of a number: you must therefore hereafter stand upon your guard, putting before your eyes, that the more renowned emperors, the more both spightfull and like to deface it. *Alexander the great*, and *Julius Caesar* are examples thereof. You *Spadame* must wash your face with the water in this vial, which will restore your former beauty, as sometime it did to the *Princessesse Zephira*. Within few daies after, the Emperour shewed himselfe to his Subjects, who were merveilous joyfull to see him so well recovered, the Prince *Olorico* likewise was perfectly cured, and all things so well as if this had not happened. When was *Lycado* delivered to the people, who in recompence of his treason, haled him into the market place, and there binding him in an yron chayne, made a small fire under him, and so by little and little boyled him to death.

CHAP. LXVII.

How the Soldane of Babilon sent for the Prince *Olorico*, and his Daughter *Alchidiana*, and of the sorrow the Emperour and Emperesse made for their departure.



The report of this mishap at Constantinople was so spread abroad, as the King *Florendos* of Macedon, and the Duke *Griana* hearing thereof, presently posted to Constantinople, where by the good meanes of *Muzabelino*, they found their friends in very sound estate of health, for which they highly thanked the wise *Spadame*, giving him many rich and honourable rewards. And *Muzabelino* seeing all matters quieted, that the Persian Ambassadors were likewise ready to returne to the Soldane, not a little contented with the league of peace, he took his leave of the Emperour and sailed home with them to the King *Abimar* of Grisca, who he certified of all things that happened, and how fortunately the danger was prevented. *Frycoll* the King of Hungaria, came with his Duke *Armida* to Constantinople, a Messenger likewise came from the Emperour of Allemaigne and Tunes, to berder and the health of the Emperour such was the joy of this fortunate mischance. While all these Princes remained there at the Court, the Princessesse *Alchidiana* was betrothed of a faire Daughter, who at the Emperour *Palmerins* request was betrothed, and named *Philochrista*, and not many daies after, the Emperesse had a Daughter likewise, named *Belliza*, and the Duke of Hungaria had another, called *Melicia*: no little joy being made at the birth of these children. But now the Soldane of Babilon seeing his Son and Daughter returned not all this while, sent the young King

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

King of Balisarca to enquire of them, and no sooner was he entered the Haven of Constantinople, but news of his arrival was brought to Alchydiana and Olorico, who to honour the King, went and met him at the Port. The King being lanced, seeing himselfe wounded, and remembering the death of his father before that City, with the tears in his eyes, said: Wretched that I am, must I venture thus nakedly on the shore, where my father, brother, and dearest friends were slaine? Ah Constantinople, the enemy to our Lawe and Religion, dost thou flourish by the blood of the greatest Lords in Turkie? a day will come to abate thy pride and insolency. I hope King of Balisarca, said Olorico if thy father and brother were slaine, it was like worthy Princes in their Masters service, whose death if thou remember, and (withall) the valour of them that slew them: thou must thinke how Fortune favours the Grecian success in the Empire. Well, thou comest now in peace, but ill becomes it thee then to remember past troubles: say thy message to the Emperour that thou comest so, and thinke not on such painful matters. By this time they were come into his Majesties presence, when the King began in this manner. Mighty and renowned Emperour, the Soldan of Babilon my Master, perceiving that age hasteneth on his death, sendeth to intreat your highnes, that his son and daughter may returne home to him, that while he lieth he may intreat them in the Kingdome, to behold some part of their worthy government. I thinke their absence, said the Emperour, is no trouble to him, as it is pleasing and contented to me, nor will I withhold them contrary to his liking: bestowing you good Princes to hold me excused, if I have not used you as your vertues worthily merit. Alchydiana hearing her fathers request, brake forth into tears, and though nature made her desire to see the place of her birth, and to behold her parents and kindred: yet piercing affection which conquereth all things, ojecth backe her mind

Emperour of Constantinople. PART 2.

mind in such sort, as she could more willingly have stayed in the Emperours Court. But beholding the mutuall love betwene Palmerin and Polynarda, was resolved to be the like to her husband, and forget the folly that too much conquered her appetite. When the day was come of their departure, marvellous was the sorrow at this friendly parting: yet seeing there was no remedy, she kissed her daughter Philocrissa, and courteously bidding the Emperour and Emperesse farewell, with her Lord Olorico, who was as loth to leave his noble friend, went aboard, and hoisting saile attained safe arrivall at the Solonnes Court. Great joy was made for their returne, the Pilot that saved the Princesses life, the Solonnes made chiefe Captain of his Guard: and he dying, Olorico was created Soldane, whereof some after he advertised the Emperour, sending to him and the Emperesse many precious jewels, not forgetting somewhat to his daughter Philocrissa. When Olorico, and Alchydiana sailed from Constantinople, the King of Sparta and his Queene Arismena, the Duke Eustace and the Duchesse Sabinda, with divers other Princes returned to their countries. The like would the King Florendos, Griana, Ptolome and Bryonnilla have done: but that the Emperour intreated their longer stay. Griana gave her Dwarfes Amc-nada after to Urbanillo, to the young Princess Belliza, and the Emperour gave his Dwarfes such worthy possessions, as he married with a rich Gentlewoman of the City, by whom he had a sonne of the stature of the Pygmies, named Rildeno, who afterward was given to wait on the young Prince Primaleon. Now the Emperour calling to mind, his former pains and travell in search of adventures, so loved and honored knights errant: as from each place in the world they came to his Court, as wel to behold his magnificence, as the young Princesses, Philocrissa, Beliza, & Melicia whose beauties were renowned farre and nere. Great Feasts and Triumphes were daily made in hono of them, where,

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

wherein Belcar, sonne to King Fryfoll, and Florendos son to Duke Eustace of Mecena, hauing receiued the order of Knighthood, shewed themselves both forward and valiant. Daily came such Hoys of Knights to Constantinople from Allemaigne, Italie, France, and Spaine, as they exceeded the number of them in King Arthurs time, when he made the great Tourney beside the Castell of Ladies. And one evening as the Emperour was debating with the Princes, to confute of them that had best deserved: suddenly entered the Hall a Lady richly attired, who without saluting or speaking a word to any body, a good while stood blessing the Emperour and his Knights. At length making as though she would returne againe, she thus spake. Noble Emperour Palmerin, I haue more delighted to behold thy Chivalry, then any of the Princes on the earth: but a time shall come, that the renowne of them and thee, shall be utterly abolished by strangers, chiefly by one, whose vertue and beauty shall be such as thy selfe shalt account him the best that euer bare Armes. So departing, she mounted on her Palfrey, and rode away in exceeding great hast. The Emperour marvelling at these words, said. All aduised was I, in not demanding of the Lady the Knights name, which shall surpassse all other in prowesse, gladly would I knowe his name, of whom she made such a glorious report. These speeches so enflamed the minds of the Knights present, as many of them secretly Armed themselves, and rode after the Lady, among whom was Cardyno and Colmelio, whom we will leaue in their journey till they find her: and here conclude our Discourse, till time bring on the following booke of Primalcon and Palmendos, desiring your favourable acceptations for these two parts, the better affection I shall haue to prosecute in the other.

FINIS.

MY promise performed, and *Palmerins* famous History finished: for my long labour, Gentlemen, I request but your friendly speeches, an easie matter to be given by you, yet nothing can be more welcome to me. If I may speed in so small a request, *Palmendos* will leave his Mother the Queene of *Tharsus*, and *Primalcon* hasten his order of Knight-hood, that you may bee acquainted with their rare adventures: In meane while, the famous *Palladine* of *England* is arrived, and to feede you with variety of delights, his History by Easter terme next will be with ye: till when, vse such favour to *Palmerin*, as Prince *Palladine* be not hindered.

F/NIS.

not yett printed

16 - 400

TO
THE VVORSHIPFULL,
M. FRANCIS YONG, of Brent-
Pallam, in the County of Hærford Esquire,
and to Mistresse SUSAN YONG his wife,
and my most kind Mistresse, health, and
their hearts contentment, con-
nually wished.



Being indebted to you both for your ma-
nifold kindnesses, I am bold so conti-
nue my labour began, concerning the
course of *unpromised Histories*, this
being the first part of PALMERIN D'
OLIVA, a ring leader to all the rest, and
therefore the Originall from whence they which follow
have been derived. Though in my translating they came last
they should have been first, now I have good hope, that by
the reprinting they will come over againe, as length they will
come to a good order, and each have his place as their course
describeth. The Second part of this will shortly follow, it being
the Third and last that I am now in hand withall, which

The Epistle Dedicatorie.

concluding with PALMERIN of England, and PRY-
MALION of Greeco; their severall last Parts, will
perfect the whole Historie, and make it compleat in eve-
ry Part. As therfore, so I commend this to your Worship-
full protection, remaining always yours with my utter-
most endeavours, and praying that your Prosperity may
never faile

Your poore well-willer
till death,

A. M.



10 CENTIMETRES



To the Reader.



When I finished my second Part
of *Palmerin of England*, I
promised this worke of *Pal-
merin D'Olin*, because it de-
pended so especially on the o-
ther: to discharge that debt,
for promise is no lesse accoun-
ted, with the new yeere I send
him abroad, a friendly com-
panion for the long evenings,

and a fit recreation for other vacant times.

But because some (perhaps) will make exceptions a-
gainst me, that being but one Booke in other languages,
I now devide it twaine: my answer is, That to glut men
with delight, may make them surfeit, and so in expecting
thanks for my paines, I should remaine condemned by
generall misliking. Beside, a Booke growing too bigge
in quantitie, is Profitable neither to the minde nor the
purse: for that men are now so wise and the world so hard,
as they love not to buy pleasure at unreasonable price. And
yet the first Part will entice them to have the second, when
(it may be alledged) the cost is as great, though it had come
altogether: yet I am of the minde, that a man grutched
not so much at a little money, payd at severall times, as hee
doth at once, for this advantage he hath, in meane time he
may imploy halfe his money on more needfull occasions,
and raise some benefit toward buying the second part. A-
gaine, the other part will be new at the comming forth,

To the Reader.

where now it would be stale : For such are Affections now a dayes, that a Booke a sennight old, is scant worth the reading. Thus no injury is offered by dividing my Booke, but profit both to you and mee : Yours I have rehearsed, and mine is, that a little pause doth well in so long a labour; beside, this advantage would I take, that if my first Part deserved no liking, you should never be offended by me with the Second.

Yet herein I am encouraged, that what hath past with so great applyance in divers Languages, can hardly merite to be despised in *England*, being matter altogether of delight, and no way offensive : For Noble and Gentle minds, are farre from iniuring the Historie, that hath so highly pleased the Emperours, Kings, and mighty Potentates, it then the Inferiour sort mislike, it is because they are not capable of so speciall deservings.

And yet I am perswaded, that both one and other will friendly entertaine *Palmerin D'Oliua*; because his History is so plentifully stored with choyse conceit, variety of matter and exquisite conveyance : as nothing can bee re-proved but my simple Translation, yet that I hope will be pardoned too, in that to translate, allowes little occasion of fine Pen worke.

THE



THE FIRST PART
OF THE ANCIENT

and honourable Historie of the
valiant Prince *Palmerin D'Oliua*,
Emperour of *Constantinople*;

Sonne to King *FLORENDOS* of *Macedonia*,
and the Faire *GRIANA*, Daughter to *Remigius*,
Emperour of *Constantinople* :
a History full of singular and
Courtly recreation.

CHAP. I.

Of the secret Love that the Prince *Tarissius* bare to the
young Princesse *Griana*, and the arrivall of the Prince
Florendos of *Constantinople*.



he ancient Histories of the famous Empe-
rours of *Constantinople* doe record, that the
eighth Emperour succeeding *Coastantine*,
the founder of that ancient and famous Ci-
tie, was named *Remigius*, who gouerned so
lustily, and with such exceeding honour, as not onely his Sub-
jects intirely loved him, but of the Kingdomes about him

he was so feared and reuerenced, that his Empire increased more large then in the time of his Predecessors. This Remicus was of such a Princely and munificent mind that no knight whatseuer came into his Court, without very honourable respect and bountifull rewards: expressing the good nature of a vertuous Prince, whose deeds were held of no small reckoning amongst his very Enemies. He married with the King of Hungarias Daughter, a Princess for wit and Beauty, equall with any of her time, which caused her to be so especially loued of her Lord the Emperour, as he altogether gaue ouer the exercise of Armes: notwithstanding, his Court did not diminish one tote of the former glory for good and hardy knights, but daily increased in such sort, as that he took great delight to haue young Princes, knights and Gentlemen, nurtered and educated from their Infancie in his Wallace, especially after the Emperesse had brought him a Sonne, which was named Caniano, at whose Birth was no little reioycing through the whole Empire.

Within two yeares after, she was likewise deliuered of a goodly Daughter named Giana, who growing to foureteene yeares of age, was of such rare beauty and singular good grace, as those that beheld her, esteemed her for the chiefest piece of workmanship that euer Nature framed.

Hereupon it chanced, that Tarisius Sonne to the King of Hungaria (who had bene brought vp in company with the young Prince Caniano) fell into such amorous conceit of the young Princess, as he deuoted himselfe onely to her seruice, being unable to conceale the object of his affections, but that time made her acquainted with the cause of his alteration. Many meanes he found to entise her good opinion towards him, but she carrying a religious zeale to loue in some other Climate, made no reckoning of his importunate and diligent seruice, which drew a hell of tormenting thoughts vpon Tarisius, seeing his lute and seruice so deeply despised.

Peruerthelesse (to compasse his intent) he desired his Cousin Caniano, to cause a Triumph be published whereunto all knights might be summoned, as well Strangers as others: not doubting, but he should spend so well in deeds of Armes, as thereby he might deserue the loue of the sayze Giana, and so afterwards make meanes by the Emperesse to demand her in Marriage, all which he concealed from his Cousin Caniano: who very gladly did consent to what Tarisius had requested, watching opportunity to finde the Emperour his Father at leisure, when he made his highnesse acquainted with the whole enterprize, of himselfe and his Cousin Tarisius, desiring him that all knights might haue warning for preparation, against a day the next Moneth appointed for the purpose. The Emperour was very well pleased with his Sonnes request, accounting himselfe highly honoured by his demand: whereupon he caused Heraulds of Armes presently to be dispatched, to signifie his intended Tournament throughout all Countreies farre and nere.

In the meane while Tarisius could not rest day nor night, but still endeoured to doe what he iudged might please the Princess Giana, to whom as yet had not uttered the effect of his longing desires, albeit, by exterior actions he daily made shew sufficient of his tormenting passions. But it so fell out not long after, that one day in her walking he had sorted her alone from all the other Ladies and Gentlewomen, in a place commodious for a Louers discourse, where falling from one argument to another, the fury of his oppressions imbolued him so farre, that at length he brake with her in manner following:

Madame, you are not ignorant of the honourable assembly, that is appointed at the Feast ensuing, when I hope to reueue the order of Knighthood, and if it shall like you to thinke so well of me, as to grant me our request, easie enough for you to afford me, perswade your selfe that I shall imagine

Imagine my fortune equall with the happiest knights that euer lived, in that it may be the onely meane, whereby I shall enjoy the prize and honour of the *Triumph*.

Griana knowing assuredly that *Tarilius* bore her great affection, as I haue before rehearsed, returned him this answer. In sooth Cousin, it would please mee marvellous well to be the meanes of so good fortune as you promise your selfe: Neuerthelesse, I haue not learned so little modesty, as to grant any thing before I know what is desired.

When *Tarilius* understood her modest excuse, he perswaded himselfe that he should obtaine that of her, whereof vntill that instant he had liued in despair: whereupon the teares standing in his eyes, he began in this manner. I humbly beseech you good Madame, to take in worth what I am to acquaint you with: for when I determined to knowther my griefe in secret, the extremities of my affection grew to such a surplusage, as it brake the strings of my thoughts, almost bowed for euer silent, to reueale that to you which my selfe dare but reuerently thinke, such is my feare to displease you, otherwise, I know no meane can warrant me from sodaine and cruell death: so settled is the vnspeotted Love I beare you, which when I strive to overcome and my selfe also, the more I would decrease it, the more it augmenteth, and that so strongly, as while you are in presence, my spirit forsaketh euery part of me, to lue in you onely. For which cause I haue determined (if you thinke it good) to request you of the Emperour your Father for my Wife, and if he regard me with so much honour, the Realme of *Hungaria* may well challenge, and my selfe likewise, the highest room in earthly felicity, hauing a Mistress of such unspeakable quality. In the meane time, if you please to bestow on me any Iewel or fauour, commanding me to weare it as your knight and seruant: you shall well perceiue how aduenturous Love will be in defence of my right, by the advantage I will receiue in the vertue of a giift so acceptable.

Griana,

Griana, who made but slender account of his passions, and being not well pleased that he held her with such vaine discourses: modestly returned him this answer. If you had such regard of me as I well deserue, you would not attempt me with speeches so vnbefitting my hearing: for if your desire be such as you giue me to vnderstand, you ought to make it knowne to the Emperour or Emperesse, who haue greater authority ouer me then I haue my selfe. Wherefore I desire you henceforth not to aduenture the like on perill of your life, otherwise I shall let you know how highly you offend me: on which condition I am content for this time to pardon your want of discretion, in that I perceiue my selfe to be the onely cause thereof, granting you time and leysure thus priuately to assaile me, for which oversight, I repent me at the very heart. With which words shee flung away and left him alone, declaring by her Countenance to be offended with his request in that she desired rather to dye then accept him for her husband, or to allow him the name of a friend.

If then *Tarilius* was diuened into a quandarie, we need not maruaile: wherefore troubled as he was, and not caring greatly whither he went, he entred the Emperesse chamber, where she and her Sonne *Camano* stood conferring together: without saluting the one or other, he sat downe in a Chaire, and gaue such bitter sighes, as the Emperesse hearing, was somewhat moued therewith, doubting he had either receiued some great iniury, or else could not prouide himselfe so sufficiently as hee would for the *Triumph*, whereupon she left her Sonne, and calling *Tarilius* aside, thus began with him:

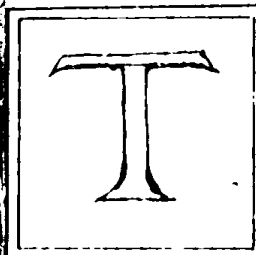
Nephew, I see you very melancholy, which makes me to iudge, that you want some needful thing for the Tournament, which my Sonne hath caused to be published. With which words she beheld *Tarilius* more wisely then she had done before, and perceiued the teares to trickle downe his cheekes,

cheekes, which made her more desirous to know the cause of his griefe, but his heart was so confounded and shut vp in anguish, as he could not speake one word vnto her. Neuer thelesse, the Emperesse who loued him as her owne Sonne, found so many meanes to perswade him, as in the end hee disclosed the loue he bore to *Griana*, and the answer likewise which she made him: wherely I am assured (quoth he) that nothing but death can reach my toyments. The Emperesse who of her selfe had many times determined to make that marriage, (perceiuing now how fitly the occasion offered it selfe) began to resolve on the confirmation therof: and to content her Nephew, in excusing the Princess *Griana*, spake as followeth. Doe you Nephew mislike the answer of my Daughter? Belieue me, therein she did but her duty: for she cannot dispose of her selfe, being young, and vnder controll, but by consent of the Emperour and I, whom you ought first to make acquainted with your request. But since I perceiue how you are affected, I promise you I will conferre with my Lord the Emperour: and hope to preuaile so well in the cause, as you shall speed of that you most desire.

As they continued these discourses, they were giuen to vnderstand by a Messenger, that the Prince *Florendos* the Kings sonne of *Macedon*, was newly arrived with a braue company of knights. But his coming to the Emperour was not as his Vassalle or Subject, because the Kingdome of *Macedon* was at that time no way beholding to the Empire, but onely to see the faire young Princess *Griana*; the renowne of whose Beauty and vertues had so pierced his thoughts, as before he saw her, he loued and honoured her, so that for this cause onely he journeyed to *Constantinople*, where he was very honourably entertained, both of the Emperour and his Sonne *Carliano* as also of the Emperesse and faire *Griana*, who oftentimes heard him reckoned and esteemed amongst the most honourable and gracious Princes, that liued at that day,

CHAP. II.

How the Emperesse conferred with the Emperour, as concerning the Marriage of their Daughter *Griana* with *Tarilius*, Sonne to the King of *Hungaria*; whereof they both determined, and of that which happened in the meane time.



The Emperesse was not forgetfull of her promise made to her Nephew *Tarilius*, but endeauoured by all meanes possible to finde the Emperour at such leysure, as she might impart the whole vnto him: and because she had so hardly taken the matter vpon her, shee would gladly it should sort to effect, as commonly Women are covetous of their owne desires: Therefore no maruell if she were earnest in following her intent.

Soone after, walking alone with the Emperour, and smoothly couering the baite she was desirous she should swallow, shee desired him to grant her one request, wherof she would not willingly be denyed. The Emperour neuer before hearing her so importunate, contented at the first to whatsoeuer she demanded: Now perswading her selfe, to speed, thus she began.

My Lord, hauing often considered with my selfe, that our Daughter *Griana* is of yeares and discretion able for a Husband, I am the more desirous to see her honourably bestowed. And for that the young Prince *Tarilius* hath bene trained vp in your Court, and (which I little thought) some good will appeareth too bet weene them: I should thinke it not amisse to unite them in Marriage together: for hardly shall wee finde (in mine opinion) a Lord of greater blood and birth then hee, being heere apparant to the Crowne and King-

Kingdome of Hungaria: besides, they haue beene so long time conuersant together in their young yeares, will enter taine a more speciall regard of loue betweene them then can be in any other that may moue the question to her. Ma-
dame, answered the Emperour, shee is your Child, and I doe not thinke but you would her good; therefore I like the motion well, soz that indeed I esteeme so well of Tarsius, as of mine owne Sonne, and since we haue so happily fallen into these discourses, we will sozthwith certifieth King his father by our Ambassadors that we may understand his opinion herein. The Emperesse gratified her Lord with very hearty thanks, being not a little glad she had so well prevailed, wherefore shee immediately aduertised Tarsius. But soz Giana, her affection was else where, soz she bare a certaine secret good liking to Florendos, so soone as she beheld him, fearing so great report of his Knightly bounty and prowesse, so that beholding them together, and their eyes deliuering the good content of each other, one might easily iudge, that Loue had so mightily mastered her thoughtes, as if hee consented, shee had set downe her rest for her choyse, and he on the other side was drawne into the same compasse, notwithstanding each of them (for the time) concealed what they rather desired should be knowne betweene them. Yet this hidden fire stroue to gaue place of illue; soz diuers times the Princesse Giana being amongst her Ladies, talking of such Knights as would shew them selues at the Tournament, the Prince Florendos was commonly first spoken of, and so highly would the Ladies commend him beyond all the other, as Giana could not re-
fraine from changing colour, so that the alteration hee found in her Spirit might be euidently perceiued, howbeit none of the Ladies as then noted it: and thus she continued till the feast of Saint Marcell Augista, which was the Day appointed for the Tournament, on which day the Empe-
rour Knighted his Sonne Canano, and Tarsius, Rephe w to
the

the Emperesse, In honour whereof, hee held a greater and more magnificent Court, then befoze times he had done: soz he suffered the Ladies to accompany the Knights at the Table: Albeit they were not wont to bee so often till that time, yet full well it pleased the Prince Florendos, who late oppo-
site to the Princesse Giana; During which time of dinner, though many piercing Lookes, and smothered sighes were sent from each other, as messengers of their semblable opini-
ons, yet cunningly they shadowed all from being discovered, and after the Tables were withdrawn, and each one prepa-
ring for the Journey, Florendos so well behabed himselfe, as hee found the meanes to speake privately with his new Friend: and thus he began:

Madame, the Heavens haue not a little laboured mee, in sozting vs so commodiously together: What I may shew befoze I enter the Lefts Royall, the occasion why I left the Realme of Macedon, to visite my Lord the Emperour. I sweare to you vpon my Knightly faith, that your Gracious selfe was the onely cause of my Journey: and while I live, I shall euermore aduenture my selfe, in ought that may stand with your favour and liking; And the first argument of my happinesse, I should account, if you would Command me this day to Arme my selfe for your Knight: Otherwise, I must be content to absent my selfe, being assured, that with-
out your regard, it is impossible for me to doe any thing that can returne me estimation and Honour. And albeit I haue not as yet done any service to you, whereby I should deserue to be accepted: Yet such is the hope I repose in your vertuous nature, as you will not refuse my honest request, being the first I ever desired of you, and not the last (I trust) shall doe your Honour. Now as you haue heard befoze, Giana earnestly affected Florendos: Wherefores, as a modest and well advised Princesse, doubting least he feigned those speeches of course, dissembling her selfe to be somewhat dis-
pleased, returned this Answer:

I did not thinke my Lord Florendos, that you would so faine forget your selfe, to hold me with speeches not becoming the Daughter of so great an Emperour as I am; for verily lesse, knowing you are a Stranger, and Ignorant (it may be) of the modestie which should becom Knights, being with Ladies, I will not be such rigour towards you as I ought, yet must I tell you, that I finde my selfe offended. You desire that as my Knight you may enter the Tourney: for that I grant you, to the end I may perceiue the effect of the Holwell, which each one so much commendeth in you, the rest. It is my pleasure that you forbear.

Madame (quoth he) if I haue vied any such speeches as agree not with your patience, for Gods sake (in my excuse) accuse my small compasse of libertie, which remaineth enely at your disposition. What quoth she, thinke you, that I will love any but he that must and ought to be my Husband? Ah sweet Lady, said Florendos, that is it that I so earnestly desire: and thinke not that I sollicite you with any other kind of love, but onely to make you the Mistress of my selfe, and altogether to dispose of me and mine: for those whereof I will hereafter imploy my selfe in the Emperours service, in such sort (as if you like it) I hope to purchase his consent. Truly Sir, quoth she, that onely appertaines to the Emperour and not to me, to whom you are to make knowne what you intend: For he hath Authority to command, and I am bound by duty to obey. At which wordes the Emperesse called her away; when Florendos making her courteous reverence, departed to his Chamber to Attire himselfe, for many knights were entered the Lyces, and he in short space came thither for company: where he behaued himselfe with such Valour, as he not onely got the Honour of the first day, but of the foure dayes following, while the Tourney endured, and wonne the Prize, which Caniano had prepared for him that best deserved it, which made him be greatly esteemed of the Emperour, and of the whole Court in generall, especially

especially of the sayre Grian, whose heart by little and little, was brought in subjection, to the no small content of Florendos, which doubtlesse had the Prince Tarisius beheld, I imagine he would haue hardly liked it.

But now during the time of these great feasts and triumphes, Fortune the sworne Enemy to all quietnesse, presented the Emperour with other occasions, to cut off these pastimes and Courtly deuises: For after many of the knights assembled at his Court, had taken leaue to returne into their Countreys, Gamezio Sonne to the Soldane of Babylon, who was on the Seas with a mighty Armie, intending to conquer Alexandria, was by extremitie of winde and weather, driven into the Straights before Constantinople. Which when the Pilots and Partners perceiued, not one amongst them but greatly rejoyced at this great good fortune, but chiefly Gamezio, who perswaded himselfe that his Gods had sent him thither, that the most Noble and flourishing Citie of the world might fall into his hands: Whereupon the windes somewhat appeased, and the Seas calmed, he assembled the chiefe and principall Captaines of his Armie, and thus he began to speake:

O my good friends, I beleeue assuredly, that our great gods would not suffer vs to arrive in Alexandria, because wee went against them of our owne Law and Religion, but rather it liked them better, that we should addresse our selves to this Countrey of Christians, eyther to ruinate it altogether, or at least to bring it vnder our Obedysance. Therefore I am determined at this time, to deferre the reuenge of the injuries, which the King Calameno did to the Soldane, and as much as in me lyes, imploy my Forces in Conquest of this Countrey: For which cause, I desire that each of you would particularly incourage your people, assuring them (if wee can conquer this Citie) the Riches thereof will counterballe their paines and travaile.

The Captaines failed not to accomplish their Charge to
B 2 the

the bittermost, summoning ebery one presently to Armes : So providing their Shipe, their Ensignes, and all things else needfull for their defence, they hoysed their sayles, making towards the Shoare, where with such provision as they had they took Landing, making such a noise with their Drums, Trumpets, and clamours, as was heard with no small feare in ebery part of the Citie. Rebertbelles, they were received with better resistance then they looked for, as following the Discourse, you shall at large understand.

CHAP. III.

Of the Battell fought before the Citie of *Constantinople*, betweene the Emperours power, and the Armie of *Gamezio*.



Asone as this huge Armie on the Sea was discovered by the Sentinels of the Citie of *Constantinople*, the rumour arose so great, as the people ranne on heapes to defend the Haven, where the Moores thought to have made their first entry. In the meane while, *Canniano*, *Tarissius*, and the other principall Knights with their men at Armes, put themselves in Equipage, ordaining their Army in such warlike manner, as now they marched south of the Citie, to succour those places where the Moores gaue most eager Assault. The Prince *Florendos* being left behind, made no little hast to gather his Company : And as he galloped with them by the Emperours Wallace, he espied the Princesse *Griana*, standing at her Chamber window, casting many a ruefull look towards the Gates of the Citie, which so deeply pierced the gentle Princes heart, as immediately he said within himselfe. By Heaben (sweet Lady) either will I dye this day

day, or remove the griefe that seemeth so neare to touch you. And with this resolution he putting spurres to his horse ; it was not very long before he got among the thickest of the Moores, where he beheld the Enemy so strong, and the Christians so weake, as the day was like to prove dangerous and dismall. For the Prince *Gamezio* was esteemed one of the best Knights through all Asia, and that day he behaved himselfe so roughly amongst the Christians, as sooth to say, they were enforced to retire towards the Citie.

Which when the Emperour beheld, who remained with no great strength to defend the City, he was not a little grieved to see his men turne their backs on their Enemies, and dispose themselves in such fearefull and dismayng sort. But *Florendos* and the Prince *Canniano* used such meanes, as they got them some in Aray againe, and returned on the Enemy with a fresh and hardy charge. *Tarissius* showed himselfe very valliant, and adventures, striking by all the meanes he could to equall the Prince *Florendos*, who that day gaue testimony of most rare exploits : So these two noble Gentlemen past from rank to rank, sending all to the earth that durst withstand them. *Gamezio* seeing his men so bloody slaughtered on euery side, meeting with *Tarissius*, would take revenge on him, deliuering him such a cruell stroke on the head with his sword, as downe he fell to the ground so astonished, as his Enemy might euen then haue slaine him : and so he had done but for the Prince *Florendos*, who seeing the Moore aduancing himselfe on his knees, to reach a fall stroke at *Tarissius* on the ground, lifted him quite out of his saddle with his lance, and bare him so rudely therewith to the Earth, as breaking his neck with the fall, he gaue by the ghost.

When the Moores beheld *Gamezio* their Generall slaine, and the Christians make such hauock of them, their hearts failing them to make further resist, and so fast as they could towards

towards their Ships, when had not the night too soon presented them, not one had escaped death or taken Prisoner, notwithstanding, the greatest part were put to the sword, others making hast to get away by Boates, were drowned in the Sea, and many of chiefe account brought backe Prisoners; Thus with Victorie returned the Emperours power backe to the Citie.

So many of the Moores as escaped to their Ships, being not a little glad they were so farre from their Enemies: set saile and returned towards the Soldane, to whom they declared the summe of their Misfortune, as also the Death of his sonne Gamezio; which tydings made him wel-nile man with rage and anger. But being old and crazed with sickness, he could not goe in person to reuenge his death, which made him bove and sweare, that in soone as his other Son came to yeares to beare Arms, he would send him with such a puissant strength, as easily he should destroy the Emperour and his Countrey: in the meane time he sent the Ransome to redeme them that were taken prisoners: where we will leaue the Soldane, and returne to Caniano, and the other Princes, who being now come againe to the Citie, the Emperour hauing heard the worthy seruice Florendos had done that same day (and how he had receiued some few dangerous wounds in the Battell) sent for him in all hast that might be to his Wallace, because his owne Chyrurgions and Physicians should haue care of him. So was Florendos brought very honourably to the Wallace, and conducted to a Chamber becoming his estate, where the Emperesse and Griana came presently to visite him: to whom the Prince Caniano did declare, how Tarisus had bene slaine by Gamezio, but that Florendos stepped betwene his death and him, but (quoth he) the Moore excused Tarisus; for in my presence hee gave his last farewell to this world, so that now we may say the Victorie is ours, albeit before it hung in hard suspense.

While

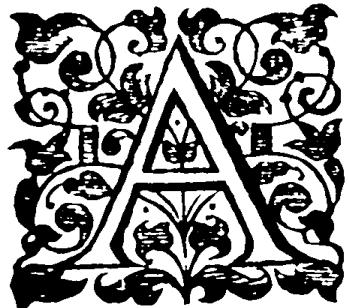
While Caniano continued these and such like Speeches, Griana cast many a stout looke on the Prince Florendos, and he answered his object with the selfe-same messengers of his heart. Thus contented they their severall passions with modest and vertuous regard, as none present could suspect their secret meaning. The Emperesse and her Daughter courtously taking their leaue, Florendos and his Chyrurgians we leaue a while together, they to apply medicines to his wounds, and he the remembrance of his Distresse to his heart. On the morrow, the Emperour with his Nobility rode forth of the Citie, to see the slaughtered bodyes, among whom they found Gamezio, who was easily knowne by the richnesse of his Armour, which Caniano caused to be taken from the dead Body, and brought to Florendos, as the desert of his travell; when the Emperour himselfe (the more to honour him) made present thereof to Florendos at his returne, with these Speeches:

My noble Cousin, by your Valour and Knightly prowess, have I had the upperhand of mine Enemies: may I but live to requite thy good deserts, I shall account my selfe happie and fortunate: Notwithstanding, account of mee as thy Kinsman and continuall Friend, and bee there ought in my power shall like thee to demand, on the faith of a King I vow to give it thee.

Florendos most humbly thanked the Emperour, as well for the great Honour hee did him, as also for his large and bountifull promise, whereon he builded so assuredly, as he almost accounted saye Griana for his owne: who with the Emperesse her Mother, came daily to visite him, by which meanes their mutuall Love increased more and more, and Florendos recovered his health in the shorter time, which when he had obtained, he solicited the Emperour with this late following.

CHAP. IIII.

✚ How *Florendos* intreated the Emperour, to give him in Marriage his Daughter *Griana*, and what answer the Emperour made him.



fter that *Florendos* was thought to be healed of his wounds which he had received in fight against the Moors: finding the Emperour one day at leisure, and alone in his Chamber, he began to salute him, as hereafter followeth:

Most dread and soveraigne Lord, so Princely and gracious have your favours been towards mee, since first I entred your royall Court, as the King my Father and I shall never answer such exceeding courtesie. And to the end this kindnesse may rather increase then any way diminish, I beseech your Highnesse not to deny me one request, which among the infinite number of your Princely graces towards mee, I shall account it to exceed all other. In brieft, it is the Princessse *Griana* your Daughter, whose love and honourable Fame, made me forsake the Realme of *Macedon*, onely to desire her in Marriage, if either any desert in mee, or your owne Princely good conceit, might repute me worthy of so high a favour. And for I would not your Highnesse should any way misconceive of me, as that the motion proceedeth from a youthfull and unadvised head, or that I have enterprized it without the good liking of the King my Father: I humbly desire your Majesty to rest satisfied, both in these and all other opinions, in that my Fathers consent, brought me with no little speed hither, and the hope of yours during my abode here,

heere, hath taught me to place my Love with discretion, and continue it with honorable loyalty. With this addition (under your Highnesse correction) that were three mine, as I am wholly hers, the faithfull service of a thankfull Son, would answer the gentlenesse of so good a Father, and the irrevocable vowes of holy Love, assure *Griana* of her *Florendos*.

Right dearly did the Emperour love the Prince *Florendos*, as had hee been his owne Sonne *Caniano*: his knightly valour and manifold other Vertues justly inducing him thereto: and gladly he would have consented to his Request if his promise made unto *Tarissus* did not binde him to the contrary, whereupon he returned him this answer.

Believe me good Cousen, I am not a little a-grieved, that I cannot satisfie your gentle Request, for that *Tarissus*, Nephew to the Emperesse hath already prevented mee: to him have I past my promise for my Daughter, and daily I expect the Ambassadors coming from *Hungaria*, to finish the Marriage, so that I had rather loose the best of my Cities, then it should be said I falsified my word. Notwithstanding, of one thing I can assure you, that you are farre higher in my grace and favour then hee: yet necessity is without Law, and the regard of mine Honour must intreat you to hold me excused.

Greatly abashed was the Prince *Florendos*, seeing in one instant that hope stricken dead, that had maintained his life, since his coming to Constantinople: and so nipt in the head was he with the Emperours answer, as he stood a good while in a dudge, not speaking one word; at last he began thus. God forbid, that so great a Prince should break his promise by my occasion: Nevertheless, my truth and loyalty to your Highnesse shall not any way diminish, but I shall remaine the most forward in Duty, of any that owe Service or Allegiance to your Majesty. Neither will I (said the Emperour) imagine the words of you, but love

long you rather better then I do befoze. When entred others Noblemen and Gentlemen, which made them breake off from further speeches, and Florendos taking his leave, went to his Chamber, so full of griefe and extreme heaviness, as easily he could haue bene induced to commit some violence vpon himselfe: but casting himselfe vpon his bed, he thus began to breath forth the furie of his passions, to ease the heauie burthen of his oppressed spirit:

Unhappie wretch that I am beyond all other, what hope of life canst thou flatter thy selfe withall, seeing the man that should maintaine the continuance thereof, forbids thee (sord man) to hope any longer. What angry Planet governed thy Nature, that he to whom thou gapest life, should this day be the cause to end thine owne. Well woe me Tarisius, had I made trall of this inconvenience befoze, hardly should I haue put my person in such danger amongst the Moores, to hold my life: but in defending the sword out of thy throte, I haue deservedly thynke it in mine owne, so that by lengthning thy dayes, I haue expired mine owne hate, and that with a death so miserable and cruel, as no Enemy whatsoever would wish to another. But were it not that my Duty to the good Emperour countermandeth me, thou couldest not with such ease either out-braue me in my Loue, or thus vsurpe the gracions sobour of my Sister Giana, were affection ballanced with desert, or ioue measured by vertue, as it is by opinion. Notwithstanding, to doe for her Loue I shall account my selfe happie, in that she cannot but pittie my vnluckie death, and my spirit should passe with greater quiet to his end, if she knew with what content I take my destinie: but saye Giana, would God I had either not seene thee at all, or Fortune had bene favourable to me in chosse. At which words, the extremitie of his passions tooke away the liberty of his speech, so that he could not finish what he would gladly haue spoken, but falling from his Bed to the ground in a swoone,

amazed

amazed one of his Esquires that was in the next Chamber, who hearing the fall, ranne in immediatly, where seeing his Master lying dead (in his judgement) ranne and called Frenato, who was Cousin to Florendos, and one that knew most of his priuate affaires, notwithstanding, he was ignorant in the cause of this accident, who taking him by in his armes, with cold water and Vinegar cast in his face, at length he got life into him againe: when Florendos opening his Eyes, and seeing his Cousin so busie about him, breathing forth two or three bitter sighes, said:

My deere friend and Cousin, I beseech you hinder not the end and issue of my life, for being out of all hope to recover my Lady Giana, there is no meane left to maintaine my life. When Frenato heard these words, he doubted that the Prince had receiued some contrary answer from the Emperour, as concerning the Marriage betwene him and his Daughter, for whose Love onely hee left the Kingdome of Macedon: Wherefore, he perceiving that she must be the onely meane to ease his torment, he began thus roundly to answer the Prince. And what of this? Must you therefore dispaire? Alas said Florendos, what would ye haue me doe? The Emperour hath long since past his promise for her to Tarisius, as his Highness assured me by his owne words. Very well Sir (answered Frenato) but doe you know if she haue given her consent? I promise you I am perswaded that she loves him not, but that her favourable regard is much more towards you then him: and for you say so much, to morrow will I sound the bottome of this matter, so that (if I can) I will frustrate the Emperours intent towards Tarisius. Doe you in the meane time but learne to dissemble your griefe, and hide not your selfe male-content for any thing that hath bene said: but be of good cheere, and referre your fortune in this case to the successe of mine endeavours. These and such like perswasions Frenato vied to the Prince, whom he thus left in his Chamber, and returned to the Palace as was his manner.

All

All this while the Emperour besthought himselfe on the speeches that had passed betwix him and Florendos, which made him the night following to discourse thereon with the Emperesse, perswading her, that he could moze willingly accept of him for his Sonne then Tarisius. But she who highly fauoured her Nephew, reprooued his opinion with many answers, so that by impozunate intreaties, teares, and other subtill fetches, which Women are wont to vse to accomplish their desires, she so farre dissuaded the Emperour, as he promised her againe not to giue her to any other, then to him to whom he first past his word. Of which words, the Emperesse was not a little glad, and therefore all that night she deuised, by what means she might from that time forward so much as in her lay, to binder Florendos from speaking to her Daughter: whereupon she daily kept her Chamber of presence, and held a moze strict looke on Griana then before she had done: which greatly increased the passions of Florendos, and brought him into so weak estate, as the learned Physicians could not deliuer the cause of his Sicknesse, to the no small grieve of the Emperour, but especially of Caniano his Sonne.

Yet for all this, would not the Emperesse at any time visite him; because she would binder the occasion of her Daughters seeing him, remembering what speeches had past betwix him and the Emperour. And albeit, Griana made no outward shew thereof, yet in her heart she was greatly displeased at her Mothers dealings, so that one day when her Brother Caniano came to see her, to recount vnto her in what extremity he had left his friendly company, and what grieve it would be to him if he dyed, as he greatly doubted: What my Lord (quoth she) it is not so I hope: Yea certaine (quoth he) and I feare he will very hardly escape this day. At which words the water stood in her eyes, yet so well as she could she dissembled her Passions: nevertheless, she could not hold it in, but said, I meruaile much

much that the Emperesse my Mother makes so tender account of him, as since his Sicknesse she would not touch him once to visite him: I feare she hath forgotten what good hee did for vs, that day when he valiantly slew the Turke Gamezio. Helpe me (my good Lord and Brother) I am heartily sorrie for his Sicknesse, for if he dye (as God forbid, quoth she secretly) the Emperour my Father shall loose moze then he thinketh on: the great service he hath done for him already, may giue instance of my words, and he being the Sonne of so great a Prince as hee is. By this time had such extreame grieue overburthened her heart, as she was constrained (feigning to goe to the Emperesse Chamber) to leaue her Brother, that she might alone by her selfe be-moane her Friends hard Fortune.

CHAP. V.

How *Griana* sent a Ring to the Prince *Florendos*, by *Cardina* her Mayd, desiring him (as he loved her) to comfort himselfe; And of the Answer hee sent her.



*G*riana thus leauing her Brother, went vnto her Chamber, where moze and moze she lamented for the Sicknesse of Florendos, and with her teares she coupled these discourses. May it be, that any liuing Creature can deserve so grieuous punishment as I doe, that endangers the Life of the worthiest Knight in the world? Unhappy that I am, that I looe, yea, the love he beares to me, should bring so brave a Gentleman to so hard an exigent: But if hee dye, such iust vengeance will I take vpon my selfe, as that I will not remaine one houre alive after him, and let our Ghosts seek their owne quiet in Death, that Fortune would not afford vs in Life. Yet will I thus farre run adventure, and that before any sleepe enter these Eyes of mine, try if it can be

in my power to ease his extremity, that buyes my Loue at too deere a price. And in anguish of minde, he called one of her Damoysels, the Daughter of her Nurse Cardina, whom above the rest he trusted most, and to her he began to speak in manner following :

Cardina, thou knowest the love I allwayes bare thy Mother, and for her sake how well I have thought of thee, I have knowne thee a long time a true and faithfull Servant : but now Cardina, is a time beyond all other, to make tryall of thy truth, and to witnesse thy loyaltie to mee, onely as thou art sure, so to be secret, and so secret as I must put my Life and Honour into thy secrecie. Cardina, who was wise, and of good government, hearing Griana these such earnest speeches, imagined that he would commit no common matter to her with such Conjuratioun, whereupon she modestly returned this answer : Madame, rather had I be toyne pence-meale in sundry, then any thing you command for secret, should by me be revealed without your licence : and so assure your selfe, that while I live, you shall finde me as faithfull in deed, as I promise in word. I never hitherto (quoth the Princesse) had any other opinion of thee : listen now therefore what I shall command thee.

I have understood for certaine Cardina, that the grievous sicknesse of the Prince Florendos, is caused by very earnest Loue which he beares to mee, and for I account it great pitee to lose so good a Knight ; doe so much as take the paines to goe to him from mee : and say, I desire him to be of good chere, and if there be any thing in my power may doe him good, I will gladly accomplish it, as he that loves him as her owne selfe, and to assure him thereof, say, I send him this Ring, which I will him to keepe as a pledge of my Loue.

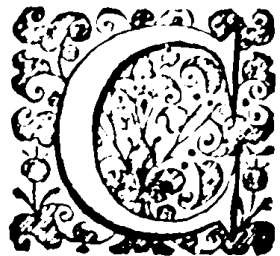
Madame, answered Cardina, Fortune spake me so well, as my paines may give ease to both your passions : and might my sentence like you Madame, I know no might so worthy of your Loue as Florendos. Was then, said Griana, and re-
turne

turne againe so soone as thou canst. So went Cardina straight to the lodging of the Prince Florendos, at the entrance she met the Prince Caniano so heauble and penfull as might be, because he perceived his friend to consume away euery day more and more. But Cardina, who had well learned her lesson, kept aside, and would not be seene of Caniano : who being gone, she went vp to the Chamber, where when she was ready to enter, she heard the Prince complain in this sort. Ah poore wretch, must thou needs dye without any hope of remedy ? And as he would haue proceeded on, Cardina stepped to him, and after she had saluted him, said to him secretly, What the Princesse Griana had sent her to him, to vnderstand of his health : And be la be me good Prince quoth she, I neuer saw Lady so sorrowfull for your sicknesse as she is. She commendeth her selfe to your Honour most heartily, and hath sent you this Ring, as an earnest of the Love she beares you, desiring you to be of good chere and comfort your selfe, because she desires to see you, to conferre with you of matters that concerne you both nercely. These wordes so ravished the spirit of Florendos, as a good while he doubted, whether he dreamed, or that he might give credit to what he heard : for albeit he knew the Messenger so well as any in the Court, yet could hee not perswade himselfe that he was so fortunat. At length, betwene hope and dispaire hee took the Ring, which hee entertained with many devout kisses, and embracing Cardina so well as hee could, thus answered : Alas my sweet friend, may it be possible that my Lady hath such regard of him, who neuer was able to doe her any service ; Doubt not therefore my Lord, answered Cardina, and if you will declare your Love answerable to hers in vertue, you must give testimony thereof, by comforting your person, that she may see you so soone as may be. Ah sayze Elgin, quoth he, let my whole life be employed, in what shall like her diuine nature to command me : and I assure you, that these tidings hath bene-
then

thed such new life into my very soule, as already I finde my selfe wonderfully changed, yea, and that in such sort, as before thre dayes be past, I shall attend her Gracions with seruicible diligence. In the meane while, I shall desire you faire Friends, to let my soveraigne Mistresse vnderstand, that I kisse her Highnesse hand in humble dutye, and had ere this given Farewell to this Life, had not her sweet regard called me againe from Death. Thus parted Cardina from the Prince, taking her way speedily towards Grian, who longed not a little to heare from Florendos, whom she had made Lord of her gentle affections.

CHAP. VI.

How Cardina recited to the Princesse *Griana*, what Speeches had passed betweene her and *Florendos*; And of the Counsell shee gave her Mistresse, to conferre with him in the Garden, so soone as hee was recovered.



Cardina thus dispatched from Florendos, made no little hast towards the Princesse, who remained all this while silent in her Chamber: and no sooner perceived Cardina to enter, but she demanded if Florendos receiued her Token in good part or no. Welcome me Madam, answered Cardina, I thinke you neuer did any thing in all your life, where by you could obtaine more Honour and applause, then by that you vouchsafed to doe at this instant; for in my judgement you haue performed a miracle, in giuing him Life that was in the very shadowes of Death. When from point to point she recounted the talks passed betweene them: First, how she found him in the middes of his regrets; and lastly, what Message he had sent her.

Thus while Cardina continued her discourse, euery word

tooke hold on the gentle heart of the Princesse, and wounded her with such pittifull regard of the Prince his torments: as what she desired inwardly, she shadowed with modestie, as loath to receiue shame in her Love, having carried her selfe with such Honour all her life, quoth she to Cardina. How might I (good Seruant) ease this weightie oppression? Very well (said Cardina) when Fortune alloweth opportunity. But thou knowest (quoth Grian) a Princesse as I am, to be seene secret with so brave a Gallant, doth greatly hazard my Life and Honour. As for that Madam, (said Cardina) my Sister can better advise you then I, or any that I know: By her meanes may you speake with your Knight, the bravest Gentleman in the world, and one whom I know is so farre devoted yours, as he will rather loose his life, then impeach your Honour any way: and otherwise then in loyalty to make you his Lady and Wife, I am well assured he loveth not, which loue (Madam) you may well entertaine. Returne then Cardina (quoth the Princesse) to my Lord Florendos, and assure him that so soone as he is recovered, I will come and speake with him, in such a place where he may well adventure: And desire him as he loveth me, that it may be with all convenient speed.

Cardina without any further delay, went with this Message to the Prince Florendos: Who heartened himselfe so well upon these speeches, as within five dayes he found himselfe thoroughly amended, whereof the Emperour and Caniano his Sonne, was not a little glad: But Tarisius was scant well pleased thereat, for he had conceived a secret jealousy, because he was so earnest in affection towards Grian, who by her Mayd Cardina had warned Florendos, that the Night following he should come into the Garden, where into her Chamber had a secret entrance, and there would he and she conferre of their Love, without suspicion of any.

Florendos seeing these affaires sort to so good an end, purposed what euer happened, not to faile the time and place:

which made him think this day a year in length, so long he looked and desired for the night. But now the wished is come, when Florendos with his Cousin Frenato (who was privie to the Prince's secret love) departed from their Lodgings, and coming to the Garden, they saw the wall was very high and hard to climb, notwithstanding, greater things are possible to Lovers, chiefly when a cause of such weight is in hand, so that in short time Florendos had got to the top of the Wall, and afterward went to the place where Grianina layed his coming, who had no body with her but Lerina, Sister to Cardina, to whom likewise he thoroughly bewayed her secrets. He having slipped them, came and fell on his knee before the Prince's, but she took him by the armes, embracing him so sweetly: as Lerina withjoyed her selfe amongst the Trees, not with any intent of fears to displease them, but with a certaine kinde of griefe which overcame her, that she wanted a Friend to participate with her in Love, as her Mistress had, before whom Florendos being on his knee, said: Madame, by vertue of your commandment, I am thus bold to enter your presence, yielding my whole ability to you, as to the divine Goddess that hath preserved me from Death, which Grace being your Princely nature hath afforded me, my Life for ever hereafter remains at your Sovereigne pleasure: The unfeigned promise whereof, I binde to you by irrevocable vov'es, but especially by my Faith, the onely ornament of a true knight, that I desire no longer to breath this ayre, then to Honour your Name with my continuall service, for life without your grace and favour, is more p'kesome to me then a thousand deaths. But by your favour my Lord (answered Grianina) how or from whence hath this hot Love sprung, let me know I desire you? Madame (quoth he) as I have heretofore, so at this time I assure you, that in my native Country of Macedon, I heard the renowne of your excellling Beauty, at which very instant I dedicated my selfe onely yours:

and

and ever since continuing in this religious service, I have so confidently set downe my rest, in gracious regard of your sweet selfe, as being yours in service, I live: If otherwise, I dye. In sooth saith the Prince's, I see then you have given your selfe wholly mine, and so I am well contented to accept you. Then Madame (quoth he) to seal the assurance of this divine labour you have done me, let me intreat to kisse those sweet Lippes that delivered the sentence I have long looked for. Which to grant, though for modestie sake, at first she seemed dainty, yet at length Love had to surprized her, as he needed not strike when no resistance was offered. Whas with fears and solemn kisses, they breathed into each others soule the mute arguments of their Love, and faire Cynthia, amably favouring this delicate encounter, added such courage to the minde of this lovely Champion, as breaking his Lance in the face of Venus, he bequeathed the successe of his devolre to the gracious Aspect of that Planet. And among a number of soft and sweet love Speeches, he discoursed to her his talke with the Emperour her Father, how he had requested her in Marriage, and how he obtained his consent, by the promise he had made before to Tarisius, though the daily and earnest perswasions of the Emperesse. Notwithstanding (quoth he) in respect you have not consented therunto, I hope they shall finde themselves farre beyond their reckoning. Now for the Prince's, she never knew that Tarisius had laboured to have her to his Wife, because she made so light account of him, as she would rather dye then consent thereto: Whereupon she returned Florendos this answer. The Emperour my Father hath reason to thinke hardly of my Mother, and great discredit will it be to her, to procure my Marriage against my will, for never shall I consent thereto: and therefore my Lord I desire your advice, how I may prevent this ensuing danger? Madame, answered Florendos, my service is layd already, so please you to accept thereof, I will convey you hence secretly

cretly, and before the Emperour or any one know of it, into my Countrey of Macedon, where I and mine shall entertaine you with great reverence and Honour, and you shall be our gracious Lady and Princesse. Welcome me, said she, it is doubtfull in such a Journey what dangers may happen, notwithstanding, having valued my selfe onely yours, be it to the liking or disliking of my Father and Mother, I had rather breake through the straightes of a greater hazard, then be forced to marrie him, whom while I live I cannot like: Therefore doe you expect the advantage of the time, and I will adventure with you whither you please. *Spadame* (answered *Florendos*) continue you this resolution, and referre the rest to my charge, which you shall see effected ere thre dayes be past: In the meane while I intend to take my leave of the Emperour your Father, with this excuse, that the King my Father commandeth my returne home: for which cause I will send my trayne before, reserving onely but tenne of my best knights to accompany mee. For that (quoth *Griana*) doe what you thinke best, and without any further expecting me in this place, certifieme how things happen, by your Cousin *Frenato*, or my *Wyd Cardina*. But now you see the day begins to breake, wherefore let me desire you to depart, that no scandall or suspition arise of our meeting. *Florendos* kissed the Princesse hand, though longer hee would have stayed, humbly tooke his leave, and by the helpe of *Lerina*, he got over the wall againe, where *Frenato* stayed his coming, to whom when he was entred his Lodging, he imparted the appointment betwene him and the Princesse, desiring him to discharge his trayne, except ten of his best approved knights, to helpe him if any hinderance prevented his intent: As for the rest, they should be going on before, and stay his coming at an appointed place, thre dayes journey from Constantinople.

In the Mornning he awaited the Emperours coming abroad, to whom he said, that he had received Letters from the

the King his Father, with expresse commandment to make speedy returne home: Therefore my good Lord (said he) I desire to depart with your favourable liking, and in respect I may not contrarie where I am bound to obey, I intend to morrow to set forward on my journey: assuring your Highnesse, that in what place I shall chance to come, I am yours in loyall and faithfull Service. My good Cousin (answered the Emperour) I give you thanks with all my heart, for the honour you have done me with your gentle presence: and if you have occasion to be in need in ought, you shall perceive how highly I love and esteeme of you. My Lord (said *Florendos*) I desire to deserve the great kindnesse I have found already: So taking his leave, the Emperour embraced him, and as he issued forth to his chamber, he met the Prince *Caniano*, of whom he tooke his leave likewise, who desired him to stay thre or foure dayes longer.

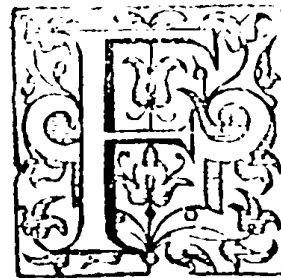
In which time, there came to the Court certaine Ambassadors, which the King of Hungaria had sent to the Emperour, to conclude the Mariage betwene his Sonne *Tarissius*, and the Princesse *Griana*, the Duke of Gramay being the chiefe of this Embassage: Who was accompanied with many knights and Gentlemen of name and account, to whom the Emperesse gave very gracious welcome, in that shee had privately procured this their coming. As these Ambassadors entred the great Chamber, *Caniano* and *Tarissius* who accompanied them, perceived *Griana* to withhold herselfe aside, very sad and melancholy: Whereupon *Caniano* came unto her (greatly abashed at her angry countenance) and thus he began: Faire Sister, now at this time when you ought to shew the most cheerefull Countenance, you are more sad then of long time I have seen you: Where thinks you have good occasion to be merry, seeing the Emperour my Father hath provided you so brave and worthy a Husband, as is my Cousin the Prince *Tarissius*, who I am sure loves you as his owne life. Ah Brother (quoth shee)

I know not what should move him so to doe, seeing I never thought so well of him: and more gladly could I entertaine mine owne Death, then be constrained to Love where I cannot. These words did Tarisius easily understand: notwithstanding he made shew as though he did not: but going to the Emperesse he desired her to stay there with the Emperour, seeing the Ambassadors were come from the King his Father, that what was begun as concerning him and Grian, might now be finished according to his promise.

Upon this occasion, the Emperesse called Grian aside, and with smooth and sweet speeches began to breake with her, how for her good she had induced the Emperour, to give her in marriage to her Cousin Tarisius, and what honourable advantage she should receive thereby: Wherefore saying Daughter (said she) resolve your selfe with Child-like obedience, to thinke well of that your Parents have determined. All these perswasions could not draw one pleasing word from the Princesse, but she excused herselfe still, by the desire shee had to remaine as she was, and rather then to Marrie she would take a Religious life upon her: With which words she brake into such teares, as the Emperesse was constrained to leave her alone, not doubting to finde her the next time in better tune. Grian then considering with her selfe, how she should at length be enforced to yield, whether she would or no, if Florendos did not the sooner accomplish his enterprise: called Cardina unto her, and sent her with this Charge to Florendos, that that present Night he should not faile to meete her in the Garden, where she would be ready to depart with him, otherwise she should never gaine the like opportunity: With which message Cardina departed.

CHAP. VII.

How *Florendos* came that Night to the Garden, to conclude what hee and *Grian* had intended, and what happened to them.



Florendos understanding the will of his Mistresse, with great diligence laboured to execute what they had intended, and taking his leave at the Court, saying he would returne no more, but take his way straight towards Macedon. Tarisius, whose jealousy increased every day more and more, set privie Spyes to watch every Night, who went in and out at the Princesse Chamber, and albeit of long time his labours were frustrate, yet at length he and his spyes perceived, how he whom he most envied, mounted the Garden wall where the Princesse lay: For Florendos having left his company without the Citie, accompanied with Frenato, and both of them well armed, he privily returned againe to the Pallace, thinking about Midnight to carry her away, for whose Love hee had thrust himselfe into this dangerous hazard.

Thus having left their Wives without the Citie with their Pages, and being come to the Garden wall, Frenato helping the Prince to get up; Tarisius and his men, who unhappily lay there in ambush, ran violently upon him, crying all aloud, kill, kill these Villaines, that would dishonour the Emperours Pallace. At which words, Florendos and Frenato seeing themselves discovered, presently drew their Swords, and began to lay about them very valiantly: Florendos giving Tarisius so great a blow on the head, that he fell downe to ground as he had been dead, and two or three of his company with him: which when the rest beheld, they got over the

the Wall, and running with great clamour into the Citie, cried, helpe, helpe, Tullia, whom Florendos (seeking to rob the Emperours Palace) hath cruelly murdered.

This noise was heard by Griana, Lerina, and Cardina: who were in the Garden slaying ~~for~~ Florendos: Which did so amaze the hardest of the three, as they knew not well what countenance to set on the matter: especially Griana: Whom this leane had stricken in a dead Traunce, but Lerina, and her Sister, taking her up in their armes, conveyed her into her Chamber, and sence after into her Bed, when recovering herselfe, in extreme weeping, thus spake. Alas miserable wretch that I am, both Fortune imploie all means we can for thy destruction: Well, let her doe the bittermost spight she can: For I am well assured before it be long, that Death shall triumph above all her discourtesies. Cardina seeing her so weape, and laying her hands, and as it were ready to fall into Despaire, began to persuade her in this sort: Madame, it is no time now to use these extremities: for Gods sake learne to cower your Passions, to the end the Emperour may not detect vs, being assured, that as yet wee were not perceived: And if you can but content your selfe, all this tumult will soone be overcome. I pray thee (quoth Griana) leaue me alone, and goe see (if thou canst,) what is become of Florendos: that I may know whether hee be taken or slaine. So went Cardina, and standing amongst others, as one that knew nothing, beheld all. During this hote Tumult, Frenato seeing troubles increasing more and more, followed the matter with such diligence, as hee got Florendos out of the throng, and the darkness of the Night was such, as they easily compassed to get out of the Citie, where their Pages stayed with their Horses, whereon they mounted, and set on away. But the Prince Florendos would many times have returned backe againe, so leath was he to leaue her whom he loved so dearely: for being out of all hope to see her againe, he esteemed his life of no value or account.

In which impatience, he rent his comely Locks of haire, and baled his flesh with great violence, whereupon Frenato thus spake vnto him: Why hold you my Lord: will you in seeking Honour wound your selfe with Shame: or in arguing your Love to your Lady, endanger her Life: Would you to loose your selfe, and her also for her: Welcome Cousin, this very hardly besemes you, that the subtil dealing of a cowardly Knight, should make you thus to forget your selfe. No no, good Cousin, it is now no time to declare these Helmes: Let vs therefore make speed to our Company, and if you thinke good, we will send one secretly backe to the Citie, to vnderstand the end of this troublesome voyage, and we in the meane time may set forward towards Macedon. Ah sweet Cousin (quoth Florendos) you speake as the man that cannot comprehend my torments: Thinke you it possible for me to live, leauing that rare Creature in such perill, for whose Love a Hell of griefes hath martyred my soule: By my knightly faith I sweare, that Death is a thousand times more welcome to me, then to be mastered by this one conceit, that I should live an houre out of her Gracious service. Well, will Sir (said Frenato) what you may not see now, referre till better conuenience, and let vs set on before the Day-light descrie vs: Otherwise, in seeking to defend Griana, your selfe shall be witness of her reproach and condemnation. Florendos perceiving his Cousin did advise him for the best, was well contented to be ruled by him: So giving the spurs to their Horses, stayed not till they overtooke the rest of their Company: when he dispatched an Equire presently backe to the Citie, commanding him straightly to direct soone to the King his Fathers Court, the successe of every thing that happened in his absence.

But now to returne where before wee left, Griana had not long stayed in this hurly burly, but she perceived the Emperour was risen, who in all hast caused his Guard to arme themselves to helpe Tarisius: For by this time had the

that thought which escaped, advertised it in the Court, that they took Florendos as he was climbing the Garden wall, to goe to dishonour the Princesse Griana. At which report the Emperour was so moued, as that he went in great sorie to his Daughters Chamber, whom he found in her Bed, more likely to dye then liue: but necessity (whereof many doe often make a vertue) made her cover her weaknes with a faile shew of courage, so that when she saw him enter, she clapped her selfe in her Night mantle, and came before him, to whom he began in this manner:

When lewd Gypsies first then conceiue the thought to doe me this dishonour? By my Crowne, say this thy presumption, I shall make thee such an Example to all other, as thy head from thy shoulders will scant quit thy fault.

Griana hearing him speake so roughly, answered him againe thus mildly: O Lord and Father, I beseech you to pardon me, you accuse me, and I know not whereof: If I haue done euill, it is in you to chastise me as you shall please: and if I be innocent, bountifull good Father not to condemne me. My barlet (quoth he) this excuse shall little profite thee. So taking her very rudely, he locked her in a strong Tower, whereof he carried the Key himselfe: When went he to Tarisius his Lodging, to see how he did, for it was told him, that he was in danger of his Life: Where he found the Emperesse heauily weeping, but he caused her to goe to her Chamber, and commanded his Chyrurgions to looke diligently to his Nephew, and not to spare any cost to purchase his health. Now because they which searched for Florendos, could not finde him, the bzuit and rumour was qualified, and the Emperour went againe to his Chamber till the Morning, when the Emperesse hearing that her Daughter was in Prison, took it very heauily, and kneeling before the Emperour, desiring him that she might fetch her forth: But he was so angry, as her words could doe nothing with him, yet he granted that she should goe for her,

and took with her the Key: When she entring the Tower, found her sitting on the ground so blubbered with teares, as was lamentable to behold: But when she beheld her Mother, she arose, and doing her reverence, could not speake, her teares so overcame her. The Emperesse that loved her dearely, seeing her in this grieuous estate, had much ado to dissemble what she thought, how be it, after a few light words passed betwene them, she said. I am sorry Daughter, that you haue so lightly, throwne your affection vpon a Stranger, and that you forget your Dutie, in not following your Fathers counsell and mine, who well knew the Loue Tarisius beares you, and no otherwise Daughter, then to take you to his Wife. But you (are carried away with that loosenesse, which ill agrees with your credit and calling) haue rather thought best, to grant Florendos entrance by your Garden, at such a suspected houre, as while you liue, your Honour will be hardly thought on: For two of Tarisius his Knights, who thought to take the Traytor, are slaine, and my Nephew himselfe dangerously escaped. Griana hearing him called Traytor, whom she so highly loved, and that she her selfe was accused, by that which ought to excuse her, answered: Madame, and my gracious Mother, as yet I am ignorant of the Cause, that hath moued the Emperour in such choller against me: and be it for this you speake of, in sooth I am offered very great iniurie, for I know not whither Florendos, or any other haue entred my Garden: Well I am assured he came not to where I was. These are strange newes to me Madama, I would rather haue thought him on his way towards Macedon, in respect of the solemn leaue hee took in the Court. For my part, I would that the Traytor which was the cause hereof, had long since bene buried in the bottome of the Sea, then he should abuse the Honour of Florendos, with a matter of such villany, wherein I cannot iudge him faultie: but were it Madame, I am at a point, let him dye the Death

as he hath well described, for my duty to you my Parents hath taught me better nurture, and Love can be no privilege to me to flend. When my Mother, twit not me with impeach of Honour in so innocent a cause, for defence whereof, were the Death present before mine eyes, I haue resolved as much as I would, and am more ready to embrace it than live in suspect. So shall my Father and you be eased of providing me a Husband. As for the Prison wherein I am, I will not deny his favour when it shall please him to deliver me: But I could take it farre more contentedly, to spend the remainder of my following dayes thus Solitarie, then to live abroad misformed on by any. Faire Daughter (said the Emperesse) doe not discomfort your selfe in this sort, the Emperour had some reason (in regard of the love hee beares you, and the outrageous tumult which happened) to doe as he hath done: but I hope in the end all will sort to the best, and that you your selfe shall remaine contented. Many other Speeches passed betwixne them, till at length the Emperesse left her and departed, for she thought long till she was with the Emperour, to let him know the talke betwixne her and Giana: which she did without omitting any thing, notwithstanding he was more severe to his Daughter every day after. Then sent hee for the Ambassadors and thus he began with them.

My Word, at this time I am advised, that you shall returne to your King my Brother, for in respect of the accidents which you have seene to happen, I will crave pardon for this time, referring matters over till some other time, when thing shall fall in better disposition.

The Ambassadors understanding the Emperours pleasure, the next day took their leave toward the King their Master, to whom they declared the whole in generall: whereat hee conceived such displeasure, as he presently sent for his Sonne Tarisius, who had not as yet recovered his health. But hee was so enamoured on the young Princeesse,

as he would not obey his Fathers command: but so soon as he was indifferently amended, he intreated the Emperour to pardon his Daughter, accusing his owne men, who indiscreetly had raised this false rumour of her and Florendos. By this meanes, the Emperesse and her Ladies obtained liberty daily to accompany Giana; but all the night-time he caused her to be locked up as closely as before, committing her to the charge of an aged Gentlewoman named Tolomestra, whom hee commanded upon paine of Death, not to be a minute of an houre without of her company.

CHAP. VIII.

How *Florendos* arriving on the Frontiers of *Macedon*, made many sorrowfull Complaints, for not bringing away *Giana*, according to his Enterprize.



Sooner had *Florendos* and *Frenato* overtaken their Company, but they ridd on in such haste (fearing to be followed) as at length they got the Frontiers of *Macedon*. And because *Florendos* imagined himselfe without life, not hearing any tydings from his Mistresse *Giana*, he concluded to rest at the first Towne he came unto, there to expect the returne of the Esquire he sent to Constantinople: who returned towards his Master sooner then he looked for, by reason of the little noise he made in the Emperours Court; For he stayed not when he heard that *Giana* was imprisoned, and that *Tarisius* was not slaine, as his Master was perswaded. These newes did wonderfully afflict the Prince, as well for the hard blage of his sweet friend, as that he had failed in killing him, by whose Death he well hoped to recover his love: all the whole day would he receive no satisfaction, but locked himselfe close in his Chamber, and tumbled on his Bed as a man halfe desperate. But *Frenato*, who

who would not be long absent from him, fearing least his Father would cause him waite some violence on himselfe, made such meanes that he got into the Chamber, at what time the Prince was thus lamenting.

Alas sweet Madame, was I borne in such an unhappie houre, that without desert you must endure imprisonment for me? What satisfaction may your Florendos liue to make, in requitall of this iniurie? When did you euer meet to be so hardly intreated for him? Beloebe me, could you be discharged so soone as I could wish it, Bolts, Lockes, no; Walles, could hold you a thought while: yet wishing is not action, eberything is contrary to me, all helps refuse me, and death likewise denyes me: but by my Sword (and therewith he started up) in spight of whatsoeuer, I will beloebe you. Frenato seeing him rise in such a furie, came and tooke him by the arme, demanding what he would haue. Death (quod he) if I could, for it grieues me to liue any longer. You speak very wisely (quoth he in mockage) all this is for the imprisonment of Griana: Is it not better she should be there, then in the custodie of Tarisius? Her Captiuitie you know cannot long endure, but were she married, she could neuer be recovered. Therefore, let good hope perswade you, and now send another Messenger, with speed to Constantinople, to know what accidents haue happened since, and to practise the meanes to speake with Cardina, who will certifie you from Griana, what is or may be done in these affaires. This Councell liked well Florendos, whereupon he presently dispatched a Gentleman of trust, who with all diligence did execute the command of his Master, for in good time he arrived at Constantinople, when Griana had liberty to speake with her Gentlewomen: which when he heard, he was not a little glad: whereupon he searched earnestly, till he had found Cardina, and by him he deliuered his Masters minde, as also in what sad and heauie plight he left him, desiring her with all speed to certifi-

As the Princesse thereof, and what service she would command him to his Master. Cardina knowing how glad the Princesse would be, to heare these tydings from Florendos, went to seeke her Sister Lerina, to whom she imparted what you haue heard, and she, well aduised of the time and place, discoursed the same to the Princesse, basely, and not suspected of old Tolomestra. How joyfull she was of this message, I cannot write, nor you conceiue, but she was resolved, neuer to haue any Husband but Florendos: And therefore to comfort him, she desired to write vnto him: that he might hope as well as she did; But well she knew not how to accomplish her intent, by reason she wanted Penne, Inke, and Paper, and she was forbidden to haue any. Notwithstanding, she so well perswaded her woman Tolomestra, (as feigning to write to the Emperour her Father) she recovered the meanes to execute her desire. When withholuing her selfe apart, first she wrote a letter to the Emperour, and afterwards one to Florendos, wherein she desired him not to be offended, albeit things fell not out to his liking: for (with the fauours of Fortune) the end would be as pleasant to him, as the beginning had bene unhappie to them both: withall, that as he desired to prolong her life, he should doe nothing to the prejudice of his owne person.

These two Letters thus written and sealed, she called Tolomestra, and gaue her that she had written to the Emperour, desiring her to carry it presently to his Majesty: by whose departing, she had opportunity to conferre with Lerina: In briefe, she desired her to goe seeke the Esquire, that he might returne to his Master, with the Letter she sent him: which she did effectually, and the gentle Esquire made no little hast to his Master. Who receiuing the Letter from his Mistress Griana, was not content alone to reade it, but kiss, and rekick it a hundred times, saying: Ah sweet Letter, written with the hand of the onely fairest Princesse this

this day living : And (for her sake will I keepe thee) as the best token a true Knight can receive from his Mistress.

CHAP. IX.

How the Emperour promised *Tarifi*us that hee should Marry *Griana*, whether shee would or no : and how shee was delivered of a faire Sonne, without the knowledge of any, but old *Tolomestra*, who had her in guard.



When the Emperour had received the Letter, which *Tolomestra* presented him from his Daughter, although hee found nothing therein might provoke him to anger, saying that she earnestly desired him to pittie her estate, being innocent of anything was layd to her charge : yet he shewed himselfe more discontented then before, sending *Tolomestra* backe with this answer :

Say to *Griana*, that seeing she was so adventurous to incur my displeasure, she shall well know, that I will not spare to punish her offence : And let her assure her selfe, that I will never looke on her while I live, if she match not with *Tarifi*us, to whom I have given her. All this *Tolomestra* told to *Griana* : which rather then to obey, she desired to dye.

Wherefore when any came to visite her, she would shew her selfe more pleasant in their company then she had done, in respect of unexpected heavinesse that secretly touched her, feeling her selfe so farre conceived with Child, as she knew no meanes to save it and her Honour, if it should happen to be perceived. One onely helpe shee had in this extremity, that being so weake and sickly, the Physicians could not discerne his disease ; but reputed her likely to dye, which she with all her heart desired, yet doe what injure to her selfe she

shee could, she had better health then she desired to have. In the end feeling her selfe to growe and unwele, she durst not leave her bed, but kept it dayly, till her time drew very neere at hand, when the Emperour (by the earnest importunity of the Emperesse) happened to come and see her, bringing with him the Prince *Tarifi*us : who being thus entred the Tower, they found her in such grievous and dangerous estate, as for all the anger the Emperour had against her, it moved the teares to stand in his eyes, which he shadowed so well as hee could, framing his speeches to her in this sort. Well daughter, it likes you to contrary me, in that which concernes your Honor and profite, and without any feare (as is thy duty) thou hast boldly refused the Husband which I have appointed thee : but (by mine honour) I will cause thee know that thou hast displeased mee, for wilt thou or not (before I leave thee) I will give thee to him whom I have promised. Then taking her by the hand, and causing *Tarifi*us to come neere, hee said. My Sonne, in regard of my word, which I will keepe inviolably, I give thee here *Griana*, from henceforth account of her as thy wife : And hold thee, here is the key of the Tower, keepe her in thine owne custody, and hereafter think of her as thou findest occasion. Well saw *Griana* that perforce shee must obey her Fathers will : wherefore with great wisdoms couering her secret thoughts, with extreme teares belivered this answer. Alas, my good Lord and Father, I never thought that your highnesse would use such cruelty towards me : as to enforce mee take a Husband contrary to my liking, not (my good Lord) but that *Tarifi*us hath much better deserved : but that which toucheth me most in opinion is, that our neere alliance in kindred, is sufficient to continue the love betwene the King his Father and you, without any such needlesse seeking of new uniting. And moreover, good Father, his education in your Court with my Brother *Canino* and mee, since our very

youngest yeues to this present, had bene of such equall and familiar condition: as it seemed to mee impossible to reuerence him with that intire duety, which women must and ought vse to their Husbands. Wherefore my good Lord and Father, I perswade my selfe (under your correction) that you should support me in this just request: the rather in respect of my present state, which may moue you somewhat to conceiue, that the obsequies of my buriall is moze likely to be solemnized, then those holy ceremonies that should be vsed at my marriage. And with these wordes shee poynted forth such abundance of teares, as the Emperour knew not what to answer: but overcome with pittie, withholde himselfe, leauing Tarisius with her: who hoping to haue better wordes of her, said Madame, I beseech you not to offend your selfe for any thing the Emperour hath said concerning me, for I will not doe any thing to your discontent, and rather would I suffer all my life, then canse the least doubt to incurre your dislike, hoping that in time to come, you will take such pittie on mee, as being perswaded of the loue I beare you, and the reuerent desire I haue to doe you service, you will grant that with good will, which the Emperour desires to gaine perforce, assuring you that nothing can be moze grievous to me, then the hard dealing which hitherto hath bene vsed towards you. And to the end you may resolve your selfe of that I say, your Father hauing deliuered mee the Key of your Prison, and the guard of your person, I here commit both to your gentle pleasure. So kissing the Key, he laid it by her, and without expecting any answer, with great reuerence hee departed, leauing her with Tolomestra, so rapt into a Rumber or trance as her Keeper would not for pittie trouble her. The Princesse in this silent passion, thought that shee saw a fierce Lyon beseege her, with open throte to deuoure her, and neere at hand she espied an armed Knight, to whom shee laboured for defence, crying, that for Gods sake he would sheeld her from

from the beast: but the Knight with sterne and angry countenance, thus answered. I will not defend thee, but with my sword will take thy life from thee. Thou hast so much offended the heavenly powers in disobedience to thy Father, as I ought rather to blinde thy heade from thy shoulders, then to hinder this beast from deuouring thee. Thinkest thou to contrary their diuine pleasures? Sufficeth not the fault thou hast committed with Florendos? content thee, and withold thy shame, in regards of the fruite in thy wombe, whose worthinesse thou shalt know moze of hereafter. If thou dost not, thou dyest an curllasting death, from which thou canst haue no meanes to defend thee. The Knight did so affright Grian, as shee promised him to accomplish the Emperours commandement without faile: whereupon the Knight and the Lyon vanished away, leauing her (as shee thought) by a fayre fountaine, enuironed with Trees and diuersity of flowers, the sweet sent whereof was so pleasant and odoriferous, as made the cheerefull blood to reuiue againe in the Princesse, and with breathing forth a vehement sigh shee awaked, inuocating on the powers to pardon her transgressions, and promising to obey the will of her Father, albeit shee could hardly forget Florendos so soone. Within two or thre dayes after, the Prince Tarisius came to visite her, to whom shee shewed better countenance then shee had done: and as they were dealing together in amorous talke, shee said. Beleeue me Sir Tarisius, you haue vsed such honest and gentle courtship towards mee, as henceforth I will glue my selfe wholly yours: therefore being soye for my long disobedience to my Parents and you: triumph now Tarisius in the honour of my loue. These wordes pleased Tarisius, it is not to be doubted: for joy whereof hee went presently to the Emperour, and made him acquainted with these happy tidings: so that (to make short) after many promises and solemne oathes to the Princesse, not onely to accept her as his spouse

and wife, but as his Soueraigne Lady and Mistress, he brought her with him to the Emperour, who hearing the resolution of his Daughter, embraced her and took her in to as good conceit as ever he did.

Notwithstanding, Tolomestra was commanded to attend on her still: wherefore Grima knowing her time to draw nēre, and hardly could she conceale her sorrow: after many difficult doubts and fears debated in her thoughts, at last she imparted the whole to Tolomestra. The old Gentlewoman after many motherly rebukes, for the fault committed, as the danger eminent, thought better yet to cover this misadventure, then to publish that which would displease many, and profit none: so leaving to remember when care and comfort was more required, at that instant, the Princeesse was delivered of a goodly man child. Thus in the ninth moneth, after the returne of Florendos towards Macedon, on Sunday at night about eight of the clocke, the Princeesse had her houre of deliverance: When Tolomestra receiving the Child, saw it so beautifull and well formed, as it grieved her meruailously to thinke what hard fortune it brought with the birth. For the honour of the Mother could not be defended, but by the price of the infants life: wherefore having wrapped it in swaddling clothes which the Princeesse had prepared of some value, she brought it to the sorrowfull Mother, saying. Trust me Madam, it much displeaseth me that we must thus lose this lovely child, whom I could haue esteemed happy, and the mother likewise, if it might live without displeasure: but he sweet babe must suffer the punishment for the offence, whereof he is not any way culpable.

Alas (said the Princeesse) what shall we doe: Would God it were dead, or out of danger: then taking it in her armes, and washing his face with floods of teares, after many sweet kisses, thus said: Ah my little dainty, and most I needs leane thee: But the safety of thy life remains in the mercy of a

Strange

Strange woman, who not knowing thy Parents: may deale with thee discourteously: Well, if thou ore, thy Mother will not be long after thee. And as she thus mourned over her Infant, she perceived on his right cheek a little marke in likeness of a Crosse: which made her call her still in remembrance, and the words of the Knight, that promised good fortune to the Child: which made her conceive a comfortable hope, whereupon, about his necke she tyed a faire Crucifixe of Gold. Now was the night very late spent, and Tolomestra feared they should be prevented, wherefore (quoth she) Madame it is time to determine of some thing, leave missing I pray you any longer on the Child, and let me goe carry it to Cardina to be bozne forth of the Court. The weeping Mother seeing she counselled for the best, for her last adone sealed many sweet kisses on the face of the Infant, and so in great griefe delibered it to Tolomestra, who went and found Cardina, to whom she gaue it, and she without any tardiance mounted on Horsebacke, and not knowing what way she tooke, rode on which way fortune guided her. Very doubtful was she how to be discharged of her carriage, for she feared to let any woman in the neighbour Villages haue it, lest so the Princeesse might be discovered: For that it was commonly blazed through the Empire, that the Princeesse was imprisoned for the loue of Florendos. At length the day began to appeare, when she perceived her selfe on a high Mountaine, which was very thicke set with Palme and Oliue trees: When she alighted from her Horse, and made a little bed of sweet Herbes, wherein she layd the Child, hoping some body would passe by, that would take some compassion on it. So committing the tender Infant to the protection of the powers aboue, she returned to the Citie in very good time.

CHAP. X.

How *Gerrard* passing where *Cardina* had left the Childe heard it cry, and so brought it home with him to his Wife to nourish it.



The Mountaine where *Cardina* had left the Princesse young *Sonne*, was about a dayes journey from *Constantinople*, and was commonly called the Mount of *Oliues*, where nere at hand dwelt a wealthy farmer, who having the occupation of the ground, grew very rich by gathering the fruits of the *Palme*, *Olue*, *Date*, and other Trees, and like a good Husband he daily followed his affaires, being named *Gerrard*. His Wife the same Morning likewise was delivered of a Man-childe, which being dead bozne, caused this good man to walke forth into his Crouds in great heaviness, for he had but one Daughter aged thre yeares, and his *Sonne* would haue bene a great comfort to him. In these Melancholy passions, as he went nere the Tree, where *Cardina* had left the silly Infant, he heard it cry: Whereat he greatly marveling, approached nether, and saw the sweet Babe pitifully mourning, wanting the nurture that should comfort it.

He took it very tenderly in his armes, and seeing it so sweet and lovely, was perswaded that God had sent it him, in recompence of his owne that was dead bozne: and so joyfully went home with it to his Wife, who was named *Marcella*: and to her he beginneth in this manner: Behold sweet Wife, in the place of your young dead *Sonne*, God hath this day sent vs another, which I haue brought you home. Then recounted he to her, how he found it on the Mountaine vnder an *Oliue Tree*: And therefore (quoth he) I pray thee nourish

nourish it in stead of thine owne, for a goodlier Childe did I neuer behold. The good Woman took it, and unwrapping the swaddling clothes, saw they were rich and of good value, but chiefly the Crucifixe which hung about his neck: whereupon she iudged it of some noble house, and minded with pity, thus sayd. I beleue sweet Infant, that thy mother is in no small griefe for the losse of thee, but seeing thy fortune hath brought thee to mee, I will foster thee as thou were mine owne *Sonne*. And from thence forward she vsed it so louingly, as every one thought it to bee *Gerrards* owne childe: and bringing it to Baptisme, because he found it so among the *Palme Trees*, she caused the Childe to bee named *Palmerin*, who grew on in yeares, both in comely feature and gentle behaviour. Not long after *Marcella* brought her husband another son whose name was *Colmelio*, and him did *Palmerin* loue as his owne brother, and companion, as hereafter you shall more at large vnderstand: but here I will craue leave to pause for a while, and following the intent of the *Historie*, you shall vnderstand how *Griana* gouerned her selfe, after shee had escaped this hard aduenture.

So soone as *Cardina* was returned to the Court, *Griana* sent for her, to know what shee had done with the Infant: to whom shee discoursed in what sort shee had left it: which grieved her asmuch as the weight of her offence.

Notwithstanding, considering how happily she had escaped Shame and disgrace, from thence forward shee disciplined her passions better, and shewed her selfe so well rejoyced, as the Emperesse much rejoyced thereat, hoping now to end the matter for her Nephew *Tarinius*: whereupon one day finding her Daughter alone, shee took occasion to conferre with her thus. Daughter will you now accomplish that, which your Father and I haue long bene importunate for, I pray you hold of no longer, leaue you vnto him into anger againe, which can no way returne you benefite.

When Grianā heard her Mother speake so gently, and knowing well, (that whether he would or no) it must lozt to that conclusion, she answered: *Madame, haue you thought good (will I, will I) that I should match with your Nephew Tarilius, I must then by force doe that which willingly I cannot, no while I liue shall I conceiue better opinion: If then (Mother) hereafter our fortunes fall out so contrary, that any misadventure happen by this your wilfulness, you need not complaine but of your selfe, being the inuenter and procurer thereof.*

All these speeches of Grianā could not alter her opinion, but without regard of any danger, she went presently to the Emperour, desiring him (seeing Grianā was recovered) to end the Marriage betwene her Nephew and her: *Wherefore to he gaue such sodaine consent, as befoze a Scutch might was finished, Tarilius and she were married together, to her great griefe, as her Countenance declared; for when every one were at their Feasting, Dancing, and other delights, the wooll Princesse thought on the great iniurie she had done to Florendos, accounting her selfe the most vnhappie on the Earth, and to her selfe thus sorrowed:*

Oh my deare friend, what wilt thou say, when thou hearest these tydings, that I am become so false and disloyall to thee? What excuse may plead for me to thee? By good reason may I for euer be excluded from their company who haue kept their Faith inuolable to their friends, and continue in possession of their vnhangeable affections: for neuer did Woman commit such treason as this that I haue done: and yet (my Lord) altogether against my will, as my wooll Heart may giue eident witnesse, which shall be thine while it remaines in this miserable Body, which Tarilius must now haue, though in justice it be thine. And in this lozt continued her dolorous complaints till night approached, when she must yeld that honour to Tarilius, which with better will she could haue affoorded Florendos.

After

After the feasts and triumphes of the Marriage were finished, Grianā desirous to absent her selfe from her fathers Court, because the remembrance of Florendos passions was so grieuous to her: Desired Tarilius to make short his day, and set forward to Hungaria, whither the Emperour her father caused her to be so honourably conueyed, as becommed the Daughter of so great a Prince. But as she was taking her leaue among the Ladies, the Emperesse came to her secretly weeping: *Which when Grianā beheld, she said: Madame, I am abashed to see what heaviness you shew for the departure of your Daughter, to whom you alone haue bene so cruell, as by your meanes she is banished forever from you and your Countrey: Why lament you then, seeing it is your pleasure to make her vnhappie while she liues? I heartily desire the Heavens to pardon you, and that the first newes, hereafter you shall heare of me, may be the true report of my Death.* This said, she mounted on horsebacke, and without any shew of discontent took her leaue of her father: So being honourably accompanied, in short time she arrived in Hungaria with Tarilius, whose love to her so vehemently increased, as he reputed himselfe the most fortunate Prince in Europe, hauing gained the Paragon among all Ladies.

Soone after the aged King dyed, by which meanes Tarilius came to the Crowne. Grianā highly esteeming all such as she had brought with her from Constantinople, to wit, Lerina and Cardina, but especially Tolomestra, to whom she very often imparted the whole secrets of her minde, leading so strict and constant a Life, as all the Court did wonder at her. But the remorse of Conscience, which daily touched her for the losse of her Sonne, caused her to spend day and night in deuout Prayers, that the heavens would forget her heinous offence.

CHAP. XI.

How *Florendos* understood by the Eſquire hee ſent to *Conſtantinople*, the Marriage of *Griana* and *Tariſius*: Whereat hee conceived ſuch inward griefe, as he had like to have dyed with extreame ſorrow.



AL this while continued *Florendos* on the frontiers between *Constantinople* and *Macedon*, till at length he heard, that *Griana* was releaſed of her impriſonment: whereof he was ſo glad, as now he thought to deale moze ſurely then he did befoze: Whereupon he diſpatched *Lyomenus* one of his Eſquires

towards her, with a Letter of earneſt and intire affection, wherein he deſired to know, if he might compaſſe the meane to come and ſee her, and he doubted not to bring her ſo ſecretly on her journey, and with ſo good pꝛouiſion, as befoze they ſhould be againe diſcouered, they would be ſafely arrived in *Macedon*. But this hope was ſone fruſtrate, ſoꝛ *Lyomenus*, being come to *Constantinople*, found the Marriage betweene *Tariſius* and *Griana* conſummed: which hee tooke ſo diſpleaſantly, as without giving the Letter, oꝛ ſpeaking to the Princeſſe, he returned haſtily againe to his Lord and Maſter. Who being advertiſed of his coming, ſent ſoꝛ him immediately by into his Chamber, at whoſe entrance, the Prince diſcerned the newes by his countenance: whereupon he demanded, if *Griana* were ſicke, oꝛ how ſhe ſared? My Lord (qd. he) happy had ſhee bene, if ſhe had dyed tenne yeares ſince: ſoꝛ I doubt (vntleſſe you arme your ſelfe with wonderfull patience) that what is done will highly endanger your perſon. Why (quoth *Florendos*) what is happened? Traſt me my Lord (qd. he) the very moſt that can

can be ſoꝛ you, *Tariſius* hath eſpoſed her, and (deſpight of her) the Emperour cauſed it to be done. So ſooner had *Lyomenus* ſpoken the word, but *Florendos* caſt himſelfe cruelly againſt the ground, ſaying. O my God, take pittie on my ſoule, ſoꝛ my body muſt needs ſuffer miſfortune. At which word he fell in a ſwoone, when *Lyomenus* thinking him dead, ran haſtily and called *Frenato*: who knowing well the cauſe of his paſſion, laboured by all meanes he might to perſwade him, but notwithstanding all the intreaties he vſed, in foure and twentie houres hee could not get one word of him, whereupon hee ſent ſoꝛ an auncient Hermit neere at hand, whom *Florendos* made very much account of: who being come, and applying diuers ſoueraigne Herbes to his temples, whereof the old Father knew well the vertue, at length *Florendos* recouered his ſences, and opening his eyes, beheld the old Hermit, to whom with very feeble voice hee ſaid. Ah good Father, I ſtand ſoꝛ me, ſoꝛ I feele my end nigh at hand. Yet ſo my ſonne, ſayd the Hermit, what? are you ſo vnꝛouided of diuine perſwaſion, as you will loſe both body and ſoule ſoꝛ a matter of ſo meane conſequence? Haſt thou liued ſo long, and yet ignorant of the inſtancy of *Extonen* which is no other then thou beholdeſt in *Griana*? knoweſt thou not, that as the ſayle of the Ship is ſubiet to all windeſ, ſo are their affections to continuall mutability? And knoweſt thou not, that what they purpoſe to execute irrevocably, in one moment they are ſuddenly diſſwaded from? My ſonne, beleeue my counſell, and with as much pleaſure learne to ſoꝛget this ſolly, as with extreame paine thou doeſt firſt imprint it in thy thoughts. Ah Father (quoth *Florendos*) neuer ſeek in this ſoꝛt to perſwade me, being aſſured if you knew how things haue paſt, you would not thus in teares diſgrace my Lady: ſoꝛ ſhee is mine, and *Tariſius* hath no right to her, to whom the Emperour hath married her perforce, els would ſhe neuer haue broken her faith to me: and

while

while I live father, none but she can be called the Wife o
Florendos, Sonne to the mighty King of Macedon. The
wise old father seeing him in Choller, and being loth like
wise to offend the Prince, would no longer cresse him in
speeches, but fearing to moue him too much, mildly thus
spake: May be (my Sonne) she hath bene deare to you,
and I would your consent in loue had answered your liking:
But thus to dispute, and indanger your olone life, trust me
it is not well done; therefore I desire you to perswade your
selfe, and by your Constancie condemne her lightnesse, ta
king patiently what hath happened. These and such like
good words pleased the old father, but Florendos would take
no sustenance, neither be removed from his opinion, for five
dayes while the Old man stayed with him: Neither would
he take charefully as he was wont, but continued euermore
sad and melancholique, nor could the King his father cause
him like of any Wife, but onely Giana, for whom continu
ally he neuer left mourning.

CHAP. XII.

How young *Palmerin* sleeping, had a strange Vision, which
provoked him to know whole Sonne hee was: and
of the talke which passed betwene him and *Dyosena*,
the Daughter of *Gerrard*.



Yong *Palmerin* being now come to the
age of fifteene yeares, nourished in the
Fontaine as the Child of *Gerrard* his
supposed father, well beloved of him
and *Marcella* his Wife, as their olone
Sonne: grew in stature so tall, comely,
and well nurtured, as well might he
be knowne of noble Parentage. For albeit he companied
with *Gerrard's* Children, who used him after their rusticall
capaci.

capacities: yet he desired more to passe the Fontaines
with his long Bowe, to chase the Beares and Bores tho
rowe thicke and thinne, and to keepe Halkes and Dogges,
rather then Sheep and Cattell as the other Children did.
In these sports hee had such wonderfull delight, as often
times he would come home very late and soze wearied: but
one time among the rest, he came home so enervated, as
he was glad to lay him downe to rest, and he was no sooner
fallen a sleepe, but he was solicited with a maruailous visi
on, the effect whereof thus followeth. He thought (as he
was pursuing a goodly Hart thow a Forrest) hee met
with the fayrest Lady that euer eye beheld, who sat on the
sloe of a goodly Fontaine, and called him unto her say
ing?

We not abashed *Palmerin*, though I am come from the fur
thest parts to finde thee in this Country, for I am well assured
that ere many dayes be past thy bounty and provelse shall
make thee renowned thzough the world, for one of the hardiest
Knights that euer liued. Leaueth therefore this obscure & rusti
call kind of life, and henceforth list thy mind to high occasions
which are offered thee: and hereof beloue me, as she that
loueth thee as her olon life, being deuoted onely thine at all
times as nature may witness who hath marked me with the
like Character. Then shewing her arme, she said. Behold
in this hand, and on this side of my heart, one like & selfe same
marke, as thou broughtest on thy face from the Mothers
wombe. To which words *Palmerin* would haue answered,
but the Lady vanished away so sodainly, as he could not per
ceiue what was become of her. Whereupon raising himself,
and maruailing from whence this occasion should proceed, he
admired the beauty of the Lady he saw in his sleepe, which
was so liuely in his remembrance, as he judged her present
before his eyes. But perswading himselfe that such appariti
ons happened by idle thoughts, or by some vapour of no ef
fect: made no account thereof, whereupon, the next night
following

following the same Lady that appeared to him in the forest, presented her selfe to him againe, holding in her hands a sumptuous Crowne of Gold, and thus spake. See here (my Lord) the honour which I hold, being given me onely for the loue of you.

In this sort continued this vision for seuerall dayes following, till at length the Lady shewed her selfe very angry, saying. I am ashamed Palmerin, that you deferre so long to seeke me out: doo you thinke the promises I haue made you are fruitlesse? No, no, the time and trauaile thou takest (if thou giuest credit to my wordes) shal make thee know that thou art the Son of a King, and not of the Countrey swaine that hath fostered thee. From henceforth therefore expect me no more in this Mountaine, but if my beauty haue found place in thy heart, seeke then to conquer me, that thou mayst be the Lord and possessor of mee. Thus departed the Lady, leauing a desire (more then accustomed) in the heart of Palmerin, who till that time made little reckoning of so high matters, for the pastozall life hee led with Gerrard and his family, seemed the most happie to him in all the world, not hauing seene any person of greater calling then he. But now new affections so elenated his minde, as hee intended to go seeke her, whom in sleepe he had beheld so often: For (quoth he) if shee assure mee to descend of a royall linage, I may well presume she knowes me better then my Father Gerrard, else would she not so often induce me to follow my fortune, and the good that is provided for me: well might I be accounted a foole, if I would not adventure on so especiall an occasion, therefore happen what will, I meane to search throught the whole world till I haue found her, and none but shee shall euer be my Mistresse. But how can it be that I am descended from so high a place, seeing my Father is such a simple Countryman? Hath my Mother, bene forgot, full of her reputation, that some Prince or great Lord hath so become my Father? Well, I will know of her (if I can) before

before I depart, and if she will not tell me, I will search for her that shall assure me. Thus was Palmerin confounded with remembrance of his Mistresse, as from that time he became marvailous pensie and solitarie: then bethought he, how he might know of his Mother Marcella, the end of his desire, whereof Dyofena (who loved him dearly) partly aduertised him.

You haue heard heretofore, how when Gerrard found Palmerin among the Olmes trees, he had a Daughter three yeares old, named Dyofena, indifferent sayre, who as she increased in yeares, became so amorous of her supposed brother, that hardly she could dissemble her affection: notwithstanding, shame and regard locked vp her Lippes, but she durst not speake what she gladly would, but seeing Palmerin in like sadnesse as he was, she imagined that one stroke had stricken them both. Wherefore calling many doubts as she lay in her Bed, in the same Chamber her Parents did, she heard them enter into this discourse. Haue you not seene Palmerin (quoth he) how heauie and sadde he hath bene a long time? Wea truly haue I (quoth she) it may be that some haue told him he is not your Sonne: so falling out of one matter into another, Dyofena heard them report the manner how they found him, which she desired to let Palmerin vnderstand, arose earely the next Morning, and coming to Palmerin, thus conferred with him. Brother, if you knew so much as I doe, peradventure you would be not a little abashed?

Why good Sister (quoth he) I pray you let me vnderstand the matter. In sooth (quoth she) I euer thought till this time, that you had bin mine owne naturall Brother, but by chance hearing some talke betwene my Father and Mother this last Night, I am no other then your friend, and she that I loue you dearly: which I haue euermore hitherto feared to let you know, doubting the nearnesse of our Consanguinitie, which I now perceine cannot hinder our Marriage, if you will

will request me of my father, who I am sure will not deny you. And so he rehearsed the manner of his finding which so well liked Palmerin, as he gave the more credit to the visions he had seen, notwithstanding, he thus dallyed with Dyofena. It may be so, say, you misheard and our Parents, my selfe will demand the truth of our Mother, if she assure me as you haue done, then will I talke with them concerning our marriage. So shall you doe well (said Dyofena) to be thoroughly assured, yet now you not repents to haue informed you, least thereby you bring me into my Parents displeasure. Palmerin thus leaving Dyofena, chanced to finde his Mother Marcella alone, to whom he said: Mother, I beseech you grant me one request that I shall demand of you. What will I my Sonne (quoth she) if it be in my power to doe. Understand then good Mother (quoth he) what I haue oftentimes dreamed how I am not your Son, so that I know not what to say, vntill you please to assure me better. When Marcella heard these words, she was stricken in a stude: but Palmerin was still so importunate, as at last she thus answered: In good faith (saide friend) I neuer knew thine owne naturall Parents, yet haue I loued thee as if thou wert mine owne Sonne: And so what words Dyofena had before reported, Marcella confirmed, taking him with her into her Chamber, where she shewed him the costly Swabling-clothes that he was found in, and the Crucifere likewise that hang about his necke, which he intreated her to bestow vpon him, to the end (quoth he) that for your sake I may keepe it while I liue. Marcella would not deny his request, but put it about his necke her selfe.

From which time forward, Palmerin shewed himselfe of more cherefull disposition, beeing how he might compass the meane to goe seeke his fortune, whereto his sundry apparitions had so often incited him. And as none can shew what is ordained him by Diuine providence, not many dayes after, as he was walking alone vpon the Mountaine, he heard

heard a voice cry very pitifully for helpe and succour: whereupon Palmerin ranne that way which he heard the voyce, where he beheld a Lyon roaring vnderneath a Doore. Palmerin having no weapon to defend himselfe withall but a Staffe, very hartly began to beat the Lyon with such a stroke betwene the eyes, that he fell downe head to the ground, then comming to him, he began to say plain, saie: I haue my friend in some great danger, and he long. Alas, Sir (quoth he) and how can I helpe, my hand has perished, for as I trauidled on my journey, this Lyon suddenly set vpon me to deuoure me: when I saw that my company perishing, I like themselves to fight, I charged him as you haue me. The best is, (saide Palmerin) that you haue escaped with life, and if you please to goe with me, we will farre hence where I haue bene nourished, you shall haue the best entertainment that I can make you. My friend (quoth the Stranger) you haue already done so much for me, as if you will goe with me into the Country where I dwell, I haue wherewithall to reward your thankfull industry. Is it farre hence Sir (saide Palmerin?) In the City of Hermida (quoth he) in the Realme of Macedon I dwell, from whence I departed a moneth since with my merchandise, which I haue left at Constantinople: from whence returning homeward, this vnlooked for mischance befell me, which had made an end of me without your resistance. As they were thus conferring together, one of the Strangers seruants came to looke him, and finding him so happily escaped, was not a little ioyfull, reporting that he had left his companions not far off. Returne then (saide the Master) and will them to come to me to the next village, where I mean to haue my wound healed, which the seruant performed immediately, and all this while stood Palmerin in debating with himselfe, if he should thus leaue his father Gerrard or not: at length, (after many opinions) fearing if he returned home againe not to finde the like opportunity, concluded

to depart with the Stranger. So was he set on a very good palfrey, and setting forward to Mucedon, that night they were entertained in a very good lodging, where the Stranger caused his wounds to be searched, reporting to every one how by the ayde of Palmerin his life was preserved, for which cause he accounted of him as his chiefe Sonne. All this while Gerrard and his wife little thought of this mishap, but expected Palmerins returne till darke night, and seeing he came not as he was wont, both he and his wife the next day searched the Mountaines, but they could not finde him, which made Gerrard to question in himself, what cull he had offered him, that should make him thus depart. Now durst not his wife Marcella tell him, the talke betwene her and Palmerin, but accompanied her husband in sorrow for their losse: especially Dyofena and her brother Colmelio were most sorry, Dyofena for losse (as she thought) of her husband, and Colmelio for the company of his supposed Brother, whose absence went so nere his heart, as he intended neuer to give over search till he had found him.

CHAP. XIII.

Now *Palmerin* went with this Merchant named *Estebon* to the Citie of *Hermida*, who afterward gave him Horse and Armour to be made Knight.



Estebon the Merchant thus conducting Palmerin on his way, at length arrived in the Citie of *Hermida*, where he was lovingly welcomed home by his wife, both young and beautifull as any in that Countrey, to whom he reported his dangerous assault by the Lyon, and without Palmerins helpe he had bin deuoured: but (quoth he) good fortune sent him at the very instant that

shew

shew him, for which I shall be beholding to him while I haue a day to liue, therefore good wife entertaine him in the best sort you can deuise, for he hath well deserved it. This speech had the Merchant with his faire wife, who embracing Palmerin, sayd: What nature had omitted nothing in her womaniship, making him so nimble, and full of hardinesse. Palmerin seeing himselfe so saoured of so beautifull a fellow, man, hauing before spent his time among Shepheards, Swineheards, and loathly Swaines of the Countrey, with modesty began to blush, and was so well fixed with civility to make her this answer. I desire Mistress that my behaviour may be such, as may continue my Masters good liking and yours towards me. So from that time he followed Merchandize, and profited so well in the course of traffique: as Estebon committed all his affayres to Palmerins trust who rather gave his mind to partiall exercises, and followed knightly dispositions so much, as very nature declared the noblenesse of his mind, for he delighted to manage great weapons, to fight at all manner of weapons, to see dangerous Combates, to frequent the assembly of Knights, to talke of Armes and honourable exploits, and in briebe, to exercise all the bazeries of a noble Courtier.

Whereat Estebon marvelled so much, as falling in talke with him, he sayd. He thinks it is strange Palmerin, that thou being the Sonne of a Judge, and nourished on the Mountaine of *Oliua* (as thy selfe hath often told me) disdainest the life of a Merchant, frequenting the company of hardy Knights, as though thou couldest take Lance and shield to enter the combate. Syr (sayd Palmerin) I know not if my Father be such as I haue told you, but I wot well my heart so serues me, as I can thinke of nothing but actions of Honour and Knighthood. The Merchant was contented to heare Palmerin in these tearmes, because he perceived that his wife saoured him greatly, whereat he became a little jealous, and gladly would remove the occasi-

on, he refers to the same saying it is so Palmerin, that thou
be a woman to follow mine Alaynes, I am well content
that thou shalt ever be Chivalrie, being the thing thou naturally
lovest, and whereby thou mayest attaine credit and ac-
complish. For in the same part, because I will not tiner to
be a woman, thou shalt have of me thine own, Wofe, and
I shall not let thee myself go to Macedon to the King, where,
in the request of the Prince Florendos his Sonne, he will
not refuse to give thee thy Order. Palmerin returned him
very hearty thanks, and having provided all things exped-
ient for his journey, took his leave of the Merchant Elichon
and his Wife, hoping to speed well in his adventurous en-
terprize.

CHAP. XIII.

When Palmerin arrived at the Court of *Macedon*, hoping
to receive the Order of Knighthood, at the hand of
the Prince *Florendos*, Sonne to the aged King *Primalcon*,
by the favour of the Lady *Arismena*.



Being departed from the Merchant, Pal-
merin made such speed, that on the fourth
day following, riding by a River Side, he
found a Dwarf sitting heavily weeping,
of whom he demanded the cause of his
mourning. Alas sir (said the Dwarf)
as I was riding by the commandement
of my Master, to a Lady whom he dearly loveth, a knight
then now take my horse from me, and very villanously of-
fended me out-rage, which yet both not so much grieves me,
(as being thus on foot) I know not how to get ever the
River. Mount up behind me (said Palmerin) and at the
first Colone we come unto, I will provide thee of another
Wofe.

When

Then mounted the Dwarf up behind him, and having past
the river, desired to know of Palmerin whether he trauel-
led: for (quoth he) I neuer saw man whom I had greater
desire to serue then you. Dwarf (said Palmerin) I now
journey toward the Court of Macedon to the King, where
I hope to finde the Prince Florendos, who is accounted one
of the worthiest knights in the world, and by his hand I
desire to be knighted, if I may. And after you have receiued
your order (said the Dwarf) I hope you will not be so un-
wise to hazard the aduenture wherein so many have perished
and lost their lives. What aduenture is that, quoth Palme-
rin? To goe to the Mountaine Artifaria (said the Dwarf)
in hope to kill the Serpent, which hath bene the death of so
many valiant knights. And what occasion (said Palmerin)
moued them to fight with the Serpent? What I wil tell you
answered the Dwarf. The King Primalcon Father to
Prince Florendos whom you seek, thre yeares since fell
into a very strange Disease, for which no remedy can yet
be found, notwithstanding, the diligent endeouours of the
Duchesse and Lady Arismena her Daughter, one of the fair-
rest and most vertuous Princesses that euer was heard of,
who seeing her Father in such dangerous estate, hath of-
ten assembled the best Physicians in the whole world, who
hane practised all possible meanes to recover his health:
yet hitherto all hath bene to no purpose. Whereupon she
sent to an ancient knight, the most skillfullest in the Art of
Nigromancy this day living, who returned this answer:
That he should neuer be healed, except he be first washed
with the water of a fountaine, which standeth on the top
of the Mountaine Artifaria, whither sonre times a yeare
resort thre Wizards, Magicians of the Isle Cardenia, to ga-
ther vertuous Herbes which there they wash, and where
of they frame all their enchauntments. This place is de-
fended by the Monster, wherof I tolde you, that no man as
yet durst approach it. Which newes when the Princessse

known Courtesie as carried the curious counterfeit of the Duchesse, so perfectly set forth, and with such perfection of Art as though it had been the Duchesse herselfe.

After fell two gayner Lewes, in rich and glorious gowne, and all over graced with most artificiall flowers, he mounted on a courser of spades, chained one of the best manes of Europe, which came way with ease and safety without, as though he delight the beholders: and in the chiefe point of the Count bearing his Helmet, and in the third his Shield, and the fourth his Gantlets and Lance: and coming to the monument appointed for strange Ladies, caused the portrait of his Lady to be placed thereon: then coming to the Palaces Tent, said. I know not how Lewes, if ever come with glorie, presumption of your strength, or overweening your selfe, you have made this large entrance, to Combat with the best approved knights in the whole world, in judging no fairer Lady, to be this day lining then your owne: for mine owne part, I am not troubled in conceit as you are, to quarrell for such a fabulous matter, yet dare I tell you that my Lady is much more beautifull then yours, which if you will deny, I am ready by the strength of mine arme to make you confesse it. Lewes falling himselfe grieved with these insurient speeches of the Count, answered. Proud knight, I am ashamed to heare thy judgement so simple, as to thinke I am come hither for a matter of so light moment, as though I would not justifie against thee and all other what I have promised: but let that passe, before we depart he will cause thee know thy folly, by that time thy pate and thy body is thoroughly humbled, looke to thy selfe, for I intend to doe it. So mounting on horsebacke, and prepared as it had been to a warre mortall, encountered each other with such fury, as their Lances flying in shivers by into the ayre, they met together so terribly with their bodies, their Shields, their Horses and their heads, as they were both dismounted to the ground. But earnest desire to vanquish, they being beside, strong

By Sonne this day and all the other following, for some space he so toill, as thou mayst imagine the bettering heart both with thee. Myselfe have, I answered the Palmerin hope before thy hand, as thou sayest, to accomplish your office of a day, I must have the that may command me. So having the thing, he came to the place appointed for the Combat, the Ladies placing themselves where they should, and the Prince himselfe in his Tent, where having his picture picture set on the appointed place, he commanded the trumpets to sound, and a Herald to proclaime, that no knight bearing Armes, should be so hardy as to enter his Tent, except he first granted his Lady to be the most fairest creature in all the world: and if any were so stubborn not to confesse it, by knightly prowess he would force him to doe it.

The Herald having done his charge, and the Judges called the Conditions to be openly read, and the people dispersed themselves in convenient places, and the Lords, Ladies, and

Gentle

Gentlewomen betook them to their Tents and Scaffolds. The first that entred the field against the Prince, was the Count Durcell of Arragon, his four Squires attending before him in a great gorgeous Litter, the statue of his Mistress Daughter to the King of Arragon, the fairest Lady in all Spayne, and for whose Beauty he took in hand this quarrell. After him came four other Squires, the foremost leading his Courser, the second bearing his Helmet, the third his Shield, and the fourth his Gantlets and Lance: and coming to the monument appointed for strange Ladies, caused the portrait of his Lady to be placed thereon: then coming to the Palaces Tent, said. I know not how Lewes, if ever come with glorie, presumption of your strength, or overweening your selfe, you have made this large entrance, to Combat with the best approved knights in the whole world, in judging no fairer Lady, to be this day lining then your owne: for mine owne part, I am not troubled in conceit as you are, to quarrell for such a fabulous matter, yet dare I tell you that my Lady is much more beautifull then yours, which if you will deny, I am ready by the strength of mine arme to make you confesse it. Lewes falling himselfe grieved with these insurient speeches of the Count, answered. Proud knight, I am ashamed to heare thy judgement so simple, as to thinke I am come hither for a matter of so light moment, as though I would not justifie against thee and all other what I have promised: but let that passe, before we depart he will cause thee know thy folly, by that time thy pate and thy body is thoroughly humbled, looke to thy selfe, for I intend to doe it. So mounting on horsebacke, and prepared as it had been to a warre mortall, encountered each other with such fury, as their Lances flying in shivers by into the ayre, they met together so terribly with their bodies, their Shields, their Horses and their heads, as they were both dismounted to the ground. But earnest desire to vanquish, they being beside, strong

and

and

and well disposed Knights, made them begin quickly the second assault with their Swords, which was so dangerous, and handled with such dexterity, as it was hard to judge who should have the honour of the Combat. But Lewes, holding the representation of his Lady, and considering her so excellent and favourable to him, took heart afresh, and (as it were inspired with new vigour) so laid on the Count Durcell, as in short time he brought him under the mercy of his Sword, when holding it against his throat, he said, Peremptory Knight, if now thou confessest not my Lady to excel thine in beauty, thy undisciplined head shall ransom thee folly. The Count (for all this) would not answer the word, by reason of the debility he felt himself in, having lost so much of his blood, as for the griefe he conceived to be thus vanquished: whereat Prince Lewes not content, would have taken his head from his shoulders, but the Judges of the field came to him, saying. My Lord, you ought to forbear, having brought your enemy beyond his own defence, your victory being sufficient to content you, forbids his death. The Prince persuaded, entered his Pavilion, and full of his conquest, commanded two Carriers of the field to take the figure of the Princess of Arragon, and place it at the feet of the Duchesse counterfeit: which was done immediately, and the Count Durcell brought into his own Tent, where the Chirurgions took diligent care for the curing of his woundes. Some after came a Knight of Myllaine, who giving such defiance as the other did, was in the end constrained with great shame, to confesse under the conquering Sword of Lewes, the imperfections of his Lady, and her stature placid by the Princess of Arragon. The same day were the great Lords of Italy brought in like subjection, and so the triumph ended all the next day, when the first that came into the field was a brave Gallant of Spaine, a Knight of good estimation, and specially reputed, who after a brave glorious oration made

(as

(as the nature of the people is that way affected) put his fortune to the trial of his Lance: where he sped so ill, as he was unhorsed, and in the following Combat likewise received the soyle. After him seaven other Knights of Castile proved as unfortunate, their Ladies Pictures all ruining the Duchesse, who being not a little proud of her Knight, and the memorable renowne he witnessed of her beauty, I leave to your considerations, both for her conceit that way, as also in love towards the Prince, who seeing no more ready to enter the quarrell, returned thence to the Pallace, to conferre with his sweet Sisters of his high good fortunes.

CHAP. XXXV.

Of the Combat betweene Prince *Lewes* of *France*, and *Crenus* the Duke of *Gaule*.



Great pleasure did the King conceive, and all the Nobility of the Court, at the gotten victories of Prince Lewes, against so many worthy Knights, so that they altogether accounted him most fortunate. And now the third day when he was entered his Tent, an English Knight (no lesse brave in termes then the other) defied the Prince, and betweene them beganne a dangerous conflict, in the midst whereof, the King with many Princes, Barons, and Lords, as also the Queen and the Duchesse of Burgundy, came to their standing, and unhappily beheld the soyle of the English Knight, the Duchesse hearing him confesse her beauty, and behold his Ladies portrait placed under hers. But now the courageous Duke of Gaule named Crenus, came bravely mounted into the field, doing his duty to the King, Queen, and Ladies,

who

who not knowing him, by his Armour judged him some
great Lord, in that no Knight before caused to good opinion
generally, nor came forth bolder countenance into the field,
he being under a Prince of wonderful possessions, and a
Knight at Armes worthily praised. The Duke (as all
the other had done) caused his Ledges countesse to be
placed where it ought by his Squares, to the no little admi-
ration of all the beholders, noting what rare and excellent
beauty it was adorned withall, the workman having per-
fumed such exquisite perfections, as it had bene the Lady
her selfe naturally living: while the Squares were thus
placing it on the monument, the Duke advanced himselfe
to Lewes, in this manner. The overmuch selfe conceit
(Lord Lewes) of mindes but easily acquainted with mat-
ters of difficulty, hath often bene, and yet is the cause to
plucke great personages more low then they expect: is
that men have seene them declined of their intents, and re-
warded with ridiculous shame and confusion. This speak
I to you, having bene begun a business, the end wherof
will be more hard to you, then as yet the beginning hath
bene: for Europe is sufficiently storied with hardy Knights
to assuage your presumptuous opinion, and Ladies much
more sayre and excellent, then she whom you contend for.
And this (by the favour of Fortune, gracious regard of my
Lady and Mistresse, and helpe of my good Sword) will I
enforce you to confesse, that incomparable Agriola, daugh-
ter to the King of England, for vertue, for beauty, and all di-
vine perfections, exceedeth yours whatsoever she be. Before
such a leading (quoth the Prince) shall passe the lippes of a
Gonne of France, either will I consent to be peaceably
toyne in sunder, and before sayre Phoebus have paced one
hundred journey, I doubt not to make thee repent thy pride
and arrogancy. By the soule of King Arthur, said the Duke,
look thou guard thy selfe well, for I have (with my courtes-
ie, abated the pride of a better man then thyselfe, and ere

we two part, I meane to try if I can doe it againe, there-
fore resolve thy selfe to thy best defence, for (by my life)
I will not favour thee. Without any further speeches they
encountred with such violence together, as Prince Lewes
was throwne betwene his hostes feete, and he for England
lost his stirrups, but recovered himselfe well enough by the
mane of his Horse: then he seeing his enemy got up a-
gaine: cast himselfe out of the Saddle to have taken his ad-
vantage, but Lewes prevented him, and came marching a-
gainst the Duke with his Sword drawn, who stayed him
thus. He thinks Prince of France before any worse be-
fall thee, thou wert best to yield thy selfe, and remember
that our Combat begins for the excellency of Beauty.
By God man of England, answered Lewes, thou canst not
perswade me to a thing so farre from my thought, therefore
goe too, and he that hath the fyerest Friend shall soon be
knowne. In this great choller he reached the Duke such a
stroke on the head, as made him set one knee to the ground,
but recovering himselfe quickly, and both thoroely angry,
they laydon each other so cruelly, as the very hardiest of the
beholders feared the successe. Thus fought they for mat-
ter of speciall value, the defence of their owne reputations,
and honour of their Ledges, whose love was more precious
in their hearts then their owne lives. So long these eager
charges continued on both sides, as Prince Lewes having
received more then twenty wounds on his body, feeling
himselfe faint, fell downe before his enemy, saying. O
noble heart of France, the true succeder of thy famous
predecessors. The victorious Englishman setting his foot
upon him, said; Lord Lewes, if now thou declare not my
Lady to excell thine in beauty, it costs thee thy life, a mat-
ter nothing pleasing to me, in respect of the chivalry and An-
gular prowess I have found in thee, as also this magnani-
mous enterprise of thine, which in despite of thy foyle, and
death it selfe, shall make thee live forever. But Lewes made

no answer, either for his weaknesse, or sorrowfull conceit of his misfortune, wherefore the Judges came, who granting the Duke victory, desired him to proceed no further, which he honourably granting, was as full of the conquest, as the Duchesse sad and pursue, thinking Prince Lewes had bene slaine outright: wherefore she sung away to her lodging, not tarrying for the King or any of the Ladies, who likewise departed the field in marvellous sorrow, seeing their Son so pittifully wounded: but above all, the Duchesse made more lamentation, then she would haue done for the death of her husband, yet fearing what she thought secretly, should by her griefe be openly suspected, comforted her selfe so well as she could: and being by her selfe, with one of her trusty Gentlewomen, she thus began the sixth her moanes. Ah trecherous Fortune, enemy to all actions of regard, why hast thou suffered the man that I most fauoured, thus to be vanquished? and (which is most to be pittied) without hope of life? Ah deceitfull tromperesse, seeing thou hast offered him so much wrong, doe me the honour to beare him company in death, that liued and dyed so honourably for my loue. Ah death, let it suffice thee that thou hast wounded him, and make not thou experient of thine inextinguishable stroke, vnlesse thou wilt doe as much for me. Ah false and flattering Sonnes of Venus, is this the garden thou rewardest them withall that serue thee faithfully? For ceasing her complaint a while, in great impatience she thus began againe. Alas, neither the one nor other are cause hereof, but my most unhappy selfe, when (provoked by my beauty) he took in hand this enterprise, but if it be so (deere friend) that envious fate deale so hard with thee, how mayest thou be reuenged on her that caused it. And with these wordes she fell betweene the armes of one of her Ladies present, whom she specially trusted, who thus spake to her. Why now Madame? will you perswade your selfe no otherwise? believe me there is no remedy but you

must change your conceit. What will you forget your selfe: it is no time if you remember your selfe well, for if he whom you loue and endure those paines for, should understand hereof, in stead of seeking his health, you will shorten his dayes, if (as you say) he liue not without your wellfare. More requisite is it that you go comfort him with your cherefull presence, then thus to be the argument of both your deaths. Well Madame, if my Lord surliue, as no doubt he shall, what may he presume? trust me matter sufficient (if you gouerne not your selfe better) that you sake to discomer, what most of all becomes you to conceale. Alas (my friend) answered the Duchesse, I know you speake the truth: but how is it possible for me to content my selfe, seeing what estate he is in, onely for my love? But if he dye, small reckoning will I make of my life: for let my honour be blamed or otherwise, let all aduersities and misfortunes go together. Yet will I somewhat be advised by thee, and I will goe see if my presence will any thing comfort him. To breake off this talke, came an Esquire from the Quene, to intreate her come to her Majesty: which she did, and went with the Quene to the Princes Lodging, who beholding the Duchesse so pale and full of griefe: and with this conceit his wounds opened and bled afresh, for which cause the Chirurgions, who imagined the occasion to proceed by shame the Prince conceived, that any one should see what wounds he took by the Duke of Gaule, wherefore they forbade any to enter his Chamber, untill the perill of death were better passed over, which was within short time, when the Duchesse by her often visiting him, comforted his sorowes into many sorrowfull conceits. But because our history appertaines not onely to his vices, or the loue of the Duchesse, we will returne to the Duke of Gaule, who after he had thus conquered Prince Lewes, followed the conditions of the field, taking the portrait of his Lady Agriola, and placed it where the Duchesse picture stood, setting

setting it among the other conquered Ladies. That day others other Knights came on behalfe of their Ladies, whom the valiant Englishman entertained with such valour, as all his paines turned to the honour of his Mistress Agriola, who now was seated as paragon of the field.

CHAP. XXXVI.

Of the Combat betweene *Palmerin* and the Duke of *Gaule*, and of the successe thereof.



At the same day that the Prince of France was vanquished by the Duke of *Gaule*, and their traine, but the Combat was first ended, wherefore they commanded their Squires to prepare their Tent. *Palmerin* understanding that the Duke was conquered, grieved not a little, in that he came no sooner to win the honour of the Prince: yet knowing, if now he could conquer the Duke, more honour should arise to him then by the Prince *Lewes*, he contented himselfe, passing that night in his Tent with the Prince *Trincus*, in divers arguments of the Combat betweene *Lewes* of France and the Duke: yet was *Lewes* highly commended of *Palmerin* though he were overcome, because he had so bravely done the two former daies against all the Knights that came. All this night could not *Palmerin* sleep, thinking on the day ensuing, but rising early in the morning, and commending himselfe to God in his prayers, he put on the Coate of Armes his Lady *Polinarda* gave him before his departure, and took the counterseit of his Lady in his armes, not thinking any of his Knights or Squires worthy to beare it, and thus accompanied with *Trincus* and other *Allmaigne* Lords, entered the Lists with so brave

a gesture and countenance, as every man commended him for a good Knight. And having placed the Picture on the accustomed Monument, as it had bene to the lively creature her selfe, he thus began. Ah perfect mixture of all beauty, vertue, and excellency, resolve thy selfe this day, to beare the Palme of honour from all Ladies in the World, in that your Knight craves a thousand deaths, before he gives consent to the contrary: and perswades himselfe so assuredly of your present favour, as he durst venture on a whole Army, to keep his religion in your divine service. These words were spoken so lowd, as the Duke of *Gaul* heard him, where with not contented, he answered. What now Knight, demandest thou (conge) of a Lady to defend her Beauty? Ill canst thou performe what thou speakest, if thou be no better provided. For all that Sir, said *Palmerin*, I hope to make you grant what I say, and that there is not a fairer Lady living, then the whose figure thou here beholdest, otherwise I shall constrain thee to bestie it, whether thou wilt or no.

What shall we soon see (quoth the Duke:) So departing into their Tents to be armed, and ready to fight, they met so valiantly together as both of them brake their lances bravely without moving each other, and taking new Staves, encountered againe, where the Duke was unhorsed, and *Palmerin* very sore wounded: So betaking them to their good Swords, continued a dangerous and doubtfull Combat, till in the end *Palmerin* overcame the Duke, and holding his Sword ready to cut off his head, said, thou art dead, if thou grant not my Lady to excell thee in beauty. Ah Sir, (saith the Duke) unhappy be the houre that you took in hand this voyage, to deprive us of that which made me the most happy Knight of the World, with what countenance may I present my selfe before her, saying fortune hath been so adverse to me? Thus filling the ayre with his regrets, the Judges came desiring *Palmerin* to save his life, where to he consented: which words were more bitter to the Duke then death

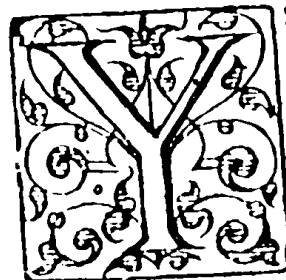
death, who in these complaints was led into his Tent by his Squires. Palmerin not forgetting the honour to do to his Lady, took down the Image of Agriola, and set his Ladies in the room, saying: Now are you in the place you deserve, which is your owne by right. This victory was not a little pleasant to y^e French-men, but especially to the Prince Lewes, when he heard thereof: who the better to make his joy knowne to Palmerin, sent him two of the best Horses in his Stable, as glad of the revenge on the Duke, as that Palmerin remained Conqueror. Palmerin sent hearty thanks to the Prince, as well for the present as his good will, and so continued in his deuotion to his Ladies beauty, as that day he honoured her with the conquest of foure French Knights, and the submission of their Ladies portraictures: yet above all, Palmerin commended to Trineus, the valour of the Englishman, conferring the Duke for a chosen Knight at Arms, and neither French-men, Italian, Spanyard, English man, Romaine, or Greeke, that attempted against Palmerin, in the following dayes: but still he bare away the victory, and Polinardes Picture their Ladies obsequance: The last of the eighth dayes, came into the field the Lord of Albert, greatly esteemed for Worthesse and Chialty, and hee would defend the Beauty of his French Lady: but Palmerin after a long and tedious fight, brought him and his Mistresse among the vanquished, and so concluded the French Princes enterpryse, to his owne immortall honour. Afterwards came the King Agariel, with the Princes and Lords of his Court to Palmerins Tent, making him the greatest entertainment could be deuised, whereof Trineus, and the other Allmaigne Lords were highly contented, and after his Wounds were healed, caused him and his company to be lodged in his owne Palace, where the Quene and her Ladies would often visite him, and the Prince Lewes likewise, who by many intreaties with Trineus, understood her Name for whom Palmerin thus aduentured. But when the King understood, that

Trineus

Trineus was the Emperour of Allmaignes Sonne, and all this honourable Company came from his Fathers Court, their Welcome cannot be sufficiently set downe, nor Palmerins praises effectually rehearsed: whom the Prince Lewes thus entertained. In good sooth Sir Palmerin, the Prince may imagine himselfe happy, that is honoured with your Knightly seruice, above all, the Noble Emperour of Allmaigne. My Lord (quod Palmerin) it likes you to speak your pleasure of me, yet did I neuer knowe Knights more worthy in fight then your Countrey-men, among whom your deserts may not escape vnreposed, no more then the dares of Scipio can among the Romanes. Many other honourable and familiar speeches passed betwene the Prince and Palmerin, about the Ladies Figures, that we brought to the Iusts. Polinarda, onely triumphing beyond all the rest, having no second but faire Agriola of England, the gettelle and Mistresse of the Duke of Gaule.

CHAP. XXXVII.

Of the Combate which the Dukes of *Savoy* and *Lorrayne* had together, for the beauty of their Ladies: and what was the issue thereof.



Ye haue here before heard, the Enterpryse of the Duke of Savoy, for the beauty of his Lady, and how after Prince Lewes his dayes of Combat were finished, he should maintaine nine others in the like quarrell: Therefore the day after Palmerins victory, he put himselfe in order as the time required, and hauing in the field erected two Willars of Poppyre, displacing them that belenged to the Prince Lewes, his Tent was there set up all of Cinnamon helmet, very curiously embrodered with Gold and pearle, and

and round about with in, were Inscriptions of many brave sentences of Love, extracted from *Hystoriographers* and *Poets*, as well in *Greek*, as in *Latine*, in praise of the *Glories* of his debated affections. In the morning he went to give the good morrow to the *Princesse Lucemania*, Daughter to the King of France, whom he had chosen for his Spouse and Wife. After many solemn courties passed betwene them, fearing the Queen should finde them together, he took his leave of her, she giving him from her arme a sumptuous Bracelet, garnished with five great Diamonds, and five faire Rubies: which gift much encouraged him to follow his Enterprize. Being come into the Field the Judges appointed were the eldest Sonne of France, and the Count of Armignac: wise Princes and valiant Knights at Armes, and standing in the Gate of the Tent barked, because he saw none ready to offer him Battell, the Duke of Lorraine at length entered the Field, attended on by a brave company of Knights and Squires, who brought the portraite of his Lady, being a figure of great Beauty, and having a Crowne on her head, where over was written in great Letters of Gold, This is *Polinarda*, exceeding in Beauty all Ladyes in the world: Which was read by many, who could not satisfie their eyes in beholding so brave a spectacle, and being late on the Pillar appointed, he came to the Duke of Savoy, saying: Blasphemous Knight, detractor of the Beauty of Ladyes, here may thine own eyes witness how thou hast belied Beauty, in presuming to thinke any more faire then is incomparable Creature, to whom thy Lady may not worthily be hand maid. And if thou wilt not presently confesse what I command thee, I will thy head from my Weapon, which I meane to knock well for thy great indiscretion. The Duke of Savoy enraged with these words, Armed himselfe presently without any answer, and mounting on Horseback, with a strong Lance in his hand, encountered his enemy so couragiously, as breaking both their

Staves

Staves bravely in shivers, to their very Cannisters, passed on without any further harme. The Duke of Savoy angry that he had not dismounted his enemy, with his Sword braved him furiously upon him, and laid on such strokes as the fire sparkled from his Helmet: yet the Duke of Lorraine, like a good and hardy Knight, defended himselfe most valiantly, and reached the Duke of Savoy many shrewd wounds, so that both of them (being thoroughly nettled) rent each others Armes, in such sort with their Swords, and mangled their flesh so unmercifully, as the Judges could not imagine who had the better vantage. The Duke of Savoy wondering to see the Duke of Lorraine hold out so long, began to storne more like a fiend then a man, railing on fortune, that (in respect of his Ladies beauty) she assisted him no better, and being at the very point of despair, took heart afresh, and redoubling his strokes upon his adversary, at length slew his horse under him, who falling downe, and his spallier with him, by reason that he was so wearyed, and bruised, and besides, had broken his thigh in the fall, could not recover himselfe, before the Duke of Savoy (being alighted) set foot upon him, and in fury would have parted his head from off his shoulders, but only that the Judges ranne quickly and stayed him. When was the Duke of Lorraine halfe dead carryed into his Tent, and the Duke of Savoy caused *Polinardes* Picture to be set at *Lucemania*s feet: a thing very strange in respect of their great difference. Afterwards he was barked to have his Wounds bound by: which were so dangerous, as gladly he would have bene excused from the Combat with any other Knight for that day, without shame, and the Law he had made himselfe provoke him to the contrary. But within an houre after, was desired by a Knight of *Scicilia*, who would Combate on foote, with the battell-Are, in which conflict the Duke was very nere overcome, he had lost so much blood before: but yet in these, the

Scicili-

The History of Palmerin D'Oliua,

Scitilian Knight lost the day, his Ladies Picture was robbed conquered, and the Duke of Savoy went to rest him in his Tent.

C H A P. XXXVIII.

How the Duke of Savoy entered the Combat against Pro-
lome, and how he sped.



DAlmerin not as yet in perfect health, was advertised how the Duke of Savoy had conquered the Duke of Lorraine fighting for the Beauty of the Princess Polinarda, the conceit whereof so grieved him as nothing could more, to see her honour so badly defended whom above all other he esteemed dearest, which made him in great choller, say before the Prince Trineus. *W. God (my Lord) I have made a slender choice of the Duke of Lorraine for his Match, and Madame Polinarda seemed to be scant wife to chide him for her Champion, in respect of the excellent Beauty Nature hath bestowed on her. And yet it could not be imagined, how the Duke of Lorraine should gain the victory without shame, in seeking honour beyond his desert, because he is unworthy of such extraordinary favour, which makes me repute it rather of a faint heart, than any want of just quarrell.* Trineus hearing Palmerin so affectionate in his speeches, in a merry laughter, said. *In good sooth Sir Palmerin, the Duke of Lorraine was but ill counselled, to enter the Combat for my Sisters beauty without her licence, in that hee once learned how you could defend it much better then hee.* Palmerin fearing he had spoken more then he might, because he trusted his Love too openly, excused the matter thus. *If it were so (my Lord) that I doubt to offer wrong to a Lady, on whom dependeth my*

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

life, and whom I love more deare then my selfe: I would cause the Frenchman well to understand, how Madame Polinarda your Sister, surpasseth in all perfections, either of grace or beauty, all the Ladies of the Countrey: yea, I dare say of the whole World: therefore one may easily conclude, that the Duke of Lorraine in the Combat, had his mind fixed on baser occasions. When Trineus smiling to see Palmerin so diligent to shadow his love, said: *It is no strange matter (gentle Palmerin) to see presuming mindes payd with selfe-same Coyne, as the Duke is: and yet I cannot marvel enough, that my Sister Polinarda would not commit this matter to my charge, she having had so good knowledge of your Valour and Prowesse.* These speeches pleased not Palmerin a little: and did in such sort encourage him, as for the injury done his Lady by the Duke of Savoy, in setting her figure at the feet of Lucemania, had not Trineus perswaded him with faire speeches, all sick and sore as he was, he would have gone to revenge this dishonour. Notwithstanding, he called Prolome secretly, saying: *Thou knowest (my deere friend) what shame is offered her, to whom I was destinated before my birth, by the presumption of an overbold Knight, and what griefe it is to me, that I cannot at this present revenge the wrong my selfe. I pray thee therefore supply my insufficiency, and enter the Combat with that haire glorious Duke, of whom thou mayest gaine honour and give me content, in giving ease to my affliction, which are insupportable.* I promise you (my Lord) answered Prolome, before you made the motion I intended it, and I will accomplish it with such good will, as I make no doubt to overcome the Duke of Savoy. And for my Mistress Brunella, will I enter the field, whose beauty is sufficient to entice me with the victory, so surely in my conceit, she farre surpasseth Lucemania. Wherefore my Lord let me request one courtesie, which I am loath you should deny me: that if you shall be able to morrow but to accom-

accompany me with your presence in the field. If the Ay will suffer me, (saith Palmerin) I will, in meane while I will pray, that the Fortune may fall out to my hartes desire.

Thus Trineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome, were passing the time, conferring with other Noblemen, of the valour of the Duke of Savoy, against all strange Knights: & how he had spoiled the Duke of Lorraine, had not his woe's falne on him, and maid him: otherwise, he brought the Combat to a good Judgement, as he had wonne the honoz of the field. Whereat Palmerin was more offended then before, because himselfe was not able to revenge this misfortune: Here withall he conceived a kinde of Jealousie of the Duke of Lorraine, because he had chosen his Lady Polynarda for his Mistresse, and on her behalfe he had entred the Combat, and how he durst place her Picture on the Pillar with her name, without he had receiv'd some commandement from her: Which conceit so grieved him, as his wounds began to be as dangerous as at the first, continually labouring in his thoughts; Now with the lightnesse, then againe with the incensuray of Women, nevertheless he could not judge, (affording earnestly the vertues of his Lady) that she would be of such a double liking: and in this doubtfull estate, sayd.

Oh God, I see that Women win lightly, and lose againe more easly. When repenting his wordes, follows on thus: O heavens, and what shall I say? It is impossible that she (meaning Polynarda) should be so forgetfull, and never will I beleve, that a Princesse so wise and vertuous would reward me with such Treason, which may not, nay I dare sweare cannot once enter her thoughts. Yet would not all opinions serve to allay this new Jealousie, but still it had power to confound reason: and all the night continued he in this variable conceit, till the next morning, when Ptolome (as soone as the Sun arose) accompanied with Trineus, went to his Tent, where being armed, all saving his Helmet,

having

having his Lance and Shield, he came to the Duke, saying. Thou knowest being it the cause of my coming. Stand upon the guard, for I fight for beauty. The Duke subdule at these words mounted on horseback, and ranne against him with such strength, as Ptolome cast the Duke forth of his Saddle. and suddenly alighted with his sword drawn: but the Duke recovering himselfe, entertained him in sharper sort then he expected. Now began betwixt them a cruell and pitious Combat, as their Armour, Shields and Swords, flew about in pieces, and the blood trickling downe their bodies in many places, so that it was generally reported, how the fight could not end without the loss of both their lives. Yet in the end, the Duke being of stronger constitution then Ptolome, and greedy of victory over his enemy, ran so violently upon him as he got him on the ground, and he being hypermost, offered to take the advantage of his life: but the Judges forbidding it, caused Ptolome to be carried into his Tent, where the Prince Trineus staid, not a little; sorry for this great misfortune. The Duke likewise soe wounded was carried into his Pavilion, but first he saw the portraict of Brionella set in the rank of the conquered. The same day did the Duke fight with a Knight of Scotland at the space, who was not nimble enough in using that weapon, in the end had the foyle, and thence her Knights afterwards at severall weapons, so that it was admirable to behold the exploits of Armes the Duke did, in that no Knight as yet medled with him, but departed with shame, and their Ladies pictures placed as vanquish'd. And now was Palmerins Combat against the Duke of Gaule not talked on: for the Duke of Savoy was accomted the onely Knight in the world, to the no small joy of the Princesse Lucemania, who perswaded herselfe now, that her beauty was most excellent. But she was not so pleasant as Palmerin was pensive, and enraged out of measure: notwithstanding his weaknesse, and the of-

¶

ten

ten intreaties of *Trineus*, he would needs to the field, saying, God my Lord perswade me not, for I reckon not my life, so I may take vengeance of the dishonour done to my Lady your Mother, the manifold countesses of the Emperour your Father, have so bound me to her and you, as exceed my life faire, and therefore I beseech you not to hinder me. *Trineus* yet obtaine him by perorations, assuring him to have time sufficient for his revenge, whereat greatly displeased, he sought a while to be a while slower than he was inward, for the great desire he had to do with the Duke. And Prince *Lewes* angry, to see the Duke hold the field longer than he did, not able to be overcome by any knight, came to *Palmerin*, saying. I know not my Lord, whether you understand the Duke of Savoyes victories against so many hardy knights, but belike his strength is much better then mine was, or Fortune allows him more favour then she did to me. In my next, if you enter not the Combat, you doo me wrong and your selfe too: and if he depart hence with victory, then shall I have cause to complaine of you: in that his successe hath made him so brave and presumptuous, as though no knight is able to answer him in the field: let me intreate you Sir *Palmerin* to abate his pride, and (as well he deserves) make him know his folly. *Palmerin* having greater desire to execute this matter, then thus to be intreated, returned the Prince this answer, My Lord, God gives honour and victory to whom he pleaseth, without either regard of the cause or the persons. According to bounty or nobility of minde he distributed such gifts, then had you been among the better sort, as furnished sufficiently with valour and magnanimity: yet if your enterprise have not suited to your desire, account this for certaine, that it is for your good; and for other reasons then are to you known, for such matters are his secrets, and he doth ballance them by his divine wisdom. Notwithstanding, as well to satisfy your request, as ease mine

owne

owne minde, to morrow morning will I enter my Tent, albeit my present estate would have me stay a while: there will I Combat with the Duke, not certaine how fortune meanes to deale with mee. But happen what shall, I go with a minde to conquer, and doubt not but the issue will be such, as shall give you content, and me the victory: so shall your sadness and mine be converted into pleasure. With this answer the Prince satisfied departed, yet was he ignorant of *Palmerin*'s intent, which was far other wise then he imagined: but pleased as he was, he went into the presence Chamber, where many knights were conferring of battles of Armes past, to whom he opened the fantasy of *Palmerin*, which caused a generall doubting of the Duke, setting him downe for vanquished, except *Palmerin*'s weaknesse were his greater friend.

CHAP. XXXIX.

Of the perillous Combat betweene *Palmerin* and the Duke of Savoy, and the issue thereof.



It dayes together had the Duke of Savoy maintained this quarrell, for the beauty of his Laoy *Lucemania*, and no knight as yet could get any advantage of him, untill the seventh day, when *Palmerin* prepared himselfe to the field, and entered his Tent, accompanied with Prince *Lewes* of France, *Trineus*, and many other Princes. The King with all his traine taking their standing to behold the Combat, *Palmerin* came armed forth of his Tent, saving his Helmet, which was carried before him by two Squires with his shield and pace, and next to them came two Princes, who bare the portraiture of his

his Lady Polinarda, which being set on the Pillar, had clasped on his Helmet, and taking his Space in his hand, marched to the Dukes Tent, and thus summoned him. Knight, thou hast long enough defended the field, and to my great griefe that it hath been so long, my turne is now to come, and it is good reason I should keep it the rest of the time: for the Lady whom I love, is not onely much more beautifull then thine, but better, then all other whatsoever, and if thou wilt not confesse the same, I will not leave thee with this Space till I haue forced thee to do it. I know not said the Duke, what thou canst do, but I am of the minde, that I shall soon quallifie thy overbold Lying.

At these words the Duke taking his Space, bestowed Palmerin so sound a blow on the head, as made him to stagger, but Palmerin requited him well againe for it, and long had they fought together, and batted each other very pitifully, till at length Palmerin gaue the Duke such a cruel blow betwixt the head and the shoulders, as he fell to the ground cleane bereft of sence: when Palmerin taking off his Helmet, would not offer him any further violence, but setting his Sword against his breast, sayd. Now am I sufficiently reuenged on him, that so ill intreated the figure of the most fayrest among Ladies. The Judges of the field, thinking Palmerin would haue slaine the Duke, came running to him with these words. Content you Sir, he is vanquished, and hath no power to defend himselfe. Whereupon Palmerin put by his Sword againe, and leaving the Duke, went presently to the Pillar where his Ladyes waited. Hee embraced in his armes, he placed highest, and Lucemania at her side, saying. I beseech you Madam to pardon your Knight, in that he did no sooner repell the famous injury offered you, and impute it not to feare, or want of courage, but debility of body, which once a little recovered, I came to maintaine your honour, and here commend you for the most beautifull Lady living. With Palmerin

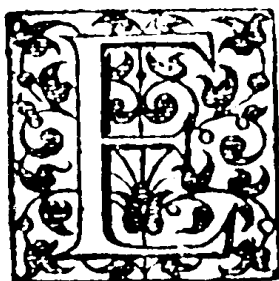
merin thus contemplated his Distresse figure, the Judges commanded the Duke to be carried into his Pavilion, where, with soveraigne Drinke life was got into him again, but when he knew himselfe to be vanquished, and that in one houre he lost the greatest honour of all his life time, very conceit of griefe had well-nere slaine him. Soles was the sorow of Madame Lucemania, but she and her Knight were got so much discontented, as Palmerin, Trieneus, and Ptolome were foyfull: but above all other, Prince Lewes of France, more pleasant then if himselfe had triumphed in victorie, thinking he could not sufficiently extoll the renowne of Palmerin, calling him the onely puller downe of the proud. That day did Palmerin encounter with seauen other Knights, and in his conquests shewed himselfe not onely magnanimous, but mercifull, saving their lives, and honouring his Distresse with the humilitie of theirs. The next day likewise after many brave exploits, being ready to leave the field because none came to resist him, on a sudden there entered a Knight in black Armour, striped all over with Gold, and bearing in his Shield of Azure the Golden Sunne, whose brave order of entrance declared him to be a hardy Knight at Armes, who advancing himselfe to Palmerin, said. My intent of coming hither (Sir Knight) is to let thee understand, that I am the Seruant and beloved of a Lady, who may not be equalled with any other, because I am ensozmed, that thou maintainest thy friend, to excell all Ladies whatsoever, I offer to prove the contrary, and will make thee confesse it. I neuer spake words more true, answered Palmerin, and here abide to justifie them: but this place is ordained to no other end, then to make thee and thy like know, what vnaudised enterprises you take in hand. And one thing is required of thee, that before you begin the Combat, thou set upon this Pillar the counterfeitt of her, whom thou perswadest thy selfe to excell my Lady in beauty, according to the conditions of

this first published through all Europe. What cannot I do, answered the Knight of the Sunne, for I haue no other picture of her then is imprinted in my heart, where loue hath so lively figured her person, as she is dayly presented to me by her incomparable beauty, which cannot be taken from me but onely by death. And if loue follow the soule, (as diuers hold opinion) whole worlds cannot separate me from her. And thereto are all men unworthy to receive fruition (by their rega) of a thing so precious, which makes me imagine, none but my selfe worthy to take on her blisse figure. Prepare thee therefore to the Horse, and defend thy selfe. Palmerin desired to know the name of this faire Lady, said I see Sir Knight that thou art maruellous proud and surly, which makes me rather desire to Combat with thee then any other to abate this hot humour: albeit this is contrary to his conditions, who was the principall Author of this enterprise: which is, that thou shouldst set on this Pillar her portrait whom thou so desirest: yet this exception shall be granted thee, for the desire I haue to know what thou canst do, as also her name, if thou darrest reueale it. To tell thee her name (answered the Knight of the Sunne) I will not sticke with thee, and because in concealing it, I shall offer her wrong, nature hauing in her set downe the onely work of beauty: know therefore that her name is Polinda, Daughter to the mighty Emperour of Allmaigne. These words were so pleasant to Palmerin, and troubled his thought in such sort, that he knew not readily what to answer: notwithstanding in midst of his choller, thus spake. My Good Knight, thou hast made a good choice, for against her beauty will not I contend, hauing in it greater estimation & reuerence then thou canst haue: but I am ready to proue, that thou deseruest not to be named her Knight, no not so much as her meaneſt ſeruant. What shall we try, said the Knight of the Sunne, before we part: and albeit her excellency deserue farre greater

service then mine, yet so it is, that for the loue I beare her, and the affection I haue to obey her by some agreement seruice. I may by good reason name my selfe hers. At this speech Palmerin conceiued such jealousy, as without attending any further matter, mounted in great anger on horseback, and met the Knight of the Sunne so forcibly, as both of them were sent to the ground: whereupon they drew their Swords, and charged each other with such fury, as their Armour and Shields were backed in pieces, and the ground coloured with their expence of blood. No permission of breathing was suffered between them, but blood and death earnestly desired on either part, so that the King, the Lords and the Judges, reputed this for the strangest Combat that euer they saw, nor could they say who was likeliest to winne the field, but if the one dyed, the other could not escape, so that the King moued with compassion, caused them to be seuered, and commanded them to enter their Tents. Which motion liked well the Knight of the Sunne, for long he perswaded himselfe he could not hold out, wherefore he mounted on horseback so well as he could and withdrew himselfe. Palmerin being wonderfully displeased, that he could not obtaine the victory of this Knight. Some after, the King and the Prince Lewes came into his Tent, and seeing him very sore wounded, would not let him stay there, but said, Belieue me (Sir Palmerin) you haue great need of rest, and your wounds I see are very dangerous, you shall therefore be conueyed to my Pallace, where all helps that may be deuised shall be giuen, assuring you, that greater honour could neuer Knight purchase, then you haue done. And though the last Combat were not ended, you need not be displeased, the issue thereof importeth the death of the one or the other, and perhaps of both, which I would not haue seene for time of the best Monarches in my Realme. And now think you would content your selfe, hauing received before such honour ouer so many Ladies and Knights of

CHAP. LXI.

Now *Palmerin* promised the *Princesse Agriola*, to convey her out of *England*, with his friends, which he performed to the special content of the Prince *Trincus*.



Early on the next morning, *Palmerin* arose, and wrote a letter to his Lady *Polinarda* wherein he secretly put a ring, which she gave him when he departed from her. Straightly commanding *Urbanillo* that he should diligently attend on the *Princesse* till he came, which should be with all the speed he could possibly.

Ptolome likewise wrote to his Lady *Brionella*, and these Letters dispatched, the Messengers immediately set forward on their journey. From this time *Colmelio* was *Palmerin's* Squire, which pleased him very well, because he knew that *Palmerin* was nobly borne, so that by his means in time he should rise to preferment.

This day the King would ride abroad a Hunting, which gave *Palmerin* occasion to see the *Falcon* fly, being reputed by the King and all his train, to be the best that ever flew. In this time of recreation, *Hermes* reported to the King, that the Knight so long absent was named *Palmerin*, and the same Knight that wonne so much honour in France: which so well contented the King, as he more and more desired his company: summoning all his Barons and Lords to his Court, where he made such feasts, triumphs, and other sports, for the honour of the noble *Palmerin* and his

companions as the like had not bin of long time before.

At night, when the Maskers, *Summers* and *Possees* were in presence, that *Palmerin* espied convenient time to talk with the *Princesse*, he took her aside to a Window, and thus began. Madame, before I begin what I have to acquaint you withall, I must give you this ring, as I was commanded by the Lady of the Castle in the Lake: the singular vertues thereof are such, as I intreat you to keep it continually on your finger: which *Agriola* receiving, with a courteous reverence, faithfully promised to performe his request: then *Palmerin*, with earnest affection on his friends behalf, thus continued his discourse. I cannot but marvel, faire *Princesse*, you being a Lady of so speciall quality, renowned among the most vertuous creatures in the world, for your rare integrity and profound judgement, that you will be governed by the unadvised persuasions of other: which I would not believe, had not the Prince *Trincus* certainly assured me, how since my departure, in stead of favourable countenance, and the intreatance becoming so great a Lord, he can have nothing but frownes, disdain, and coy regard, which is as easie for him to endure, as a thousand deaths one after another.

Assure your selfe so farre begailed, as your cancellers dissuade you from your chiefest good, desirous to withhold you from the height of hono^r, whereof you cannot saye being matched in Marriage with the most vertuous and worthy Prince *Trincus*. Make you no small account, that he being one of the most Noble States on the earth, hath left his Parents, his Friends, and Country, hath past so many solitary, strange, and uncount Regions, hath adventured the injury of the Seas, beaten with so many bitter blasts, and raging billowes, every minute in danger of shipwack, and all for your Love? Thinkie you that he being Sonne to the Emperour of *Allmaigne*, attending every day the rule and government of his Empire, that he came hither to you in hope of your rich dowry? Fortrust me, Madame, and I think

your own conscience both so resolve you, that neerer home he could haue found other, endued with larger possessions then this Realme affords you. But hearing the fame of your manifold vertues, rare life, choysse beauty, and all other good gifts, he was willing without any regard of his owne estate, to thrust himselfe in danger, yea, to forget himselfe for your love, which hitherto he hath with religious service intreated, and except you entertaine him with more gracious favour, he is in danger of life. Which if it should happen by your occasion, for ever you shall be noted of monstrous ingratitude, and Chastendome should sustaine a losse unrecoverable. How farre such a thought ought to be from you, I leave to your owne consideration.

If hitherto you haue knowne me, a Knight ready to support the causes of Ladies far beneath your bright, think you I haue not greater reason to honour you? yea not to move you with any request, but what may every way aduance your credit. And though my Lord Trincus were not of the blood imperiall, yet might his gentle heart, vnsuited love, and surpassing humanity, cause you to make choise of him, above all other whatsoever they be. But seeing it so falls out, that you will not regard good counsell, following rather the persuasion of meane capacities, whose judgements may not reach to so high occasions, continue in your obstinacy, and mark the end of such vndiscreet censures.

I see that our company is vnkome to you, therefore (sooner then you imagine) we will remove that occasion. I know well enough, that you intend to match with the Duke of Gaule, who is but your fathers Subject: so refusing the degree of an Emperour, you shall tarry in England and be a Duchesse. Think you, that if my Lord matched not with you, the greatest Princeesse in Europe, would not triumph in his love? Yes certainly Madame, when you may at leisure sit downe and account your losse, which you sustained by flatterers and parasites. Think what will be the danger after in

departure, the Emperour his Father, not minding to pocket the losse of his late Army, will send such a puissant strength into England, as the King your father, nor the Duke your husband that must be, will scant excuse the whole ruine of this country. The means to prevent this mishap, and assure your continuall tranquillity, is in entertaining the counsell I haue giuen you: where otherwise your selfe conceit, makes way to manifold misfortunes & dangers. Thus concluding his speeches, in great heavinesse he turned from her, whereat the Princeesse now inwardly grieved, for the King which he had giuen her was of such vertue, that after she had put it on her finger, she was wonderfully affected toward Trincus, as she could not think on any other: wherefore in this sudden change, and trembling with the doubtfull conceit of her owne spirit, she called Palmerin to her, thus answering. Alas my Lord, and only comfort in these heavy passions, what feare hath these hard and rigorous speeches brought me into? It is very true that following the counsell of young Ladies like my selfe, haue bene perswaded to cast off the Princes Loue, accounting him but a simple Knight errant: but now being assured of his nobility, loyalty, and great gentlenesse, and that he would not request (as I hope) any thing contrary to vertue and honour, I beleue what you haue said, and submit my selfe to your discretion, as willing to obey any thing you shall command me. Yet this I must request that above all things mine honor may be defended, for rather would I suffer mine owne losse for ever, then this famous Realme of my Father should be any way endangered.

Believe me Lady (quoth Palmerin) if thus you continue, you may well venture to gaine this genera benefit, for henceforth there will none be so hardy, as to molest your Father with warre, hauing matched his Daughter with the great Emperours Sonne of Allmaine. To confirme this promise, you shall giue me this sweet hand which I kisse, as

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

the hand of the soveraigne Lady and Emperesse of high Al-
maigne, that you will not shrink hereafter from this honora-
ble determination; but for your owne regard, you must con-
ceale this contract from your most trusty friends, and dispose
in such sort of your selfe: for I hope to compasse the means
and opportunity, that you shall leave England, and go to the
noble regions of your most worthy Lord and Husband.

What I have promised (sayd Agriola) I will performe,
and with what speed you shall think convenient: albeit I re-
pose such trust in you, that having bin so fortunate hitherto
in your Enterprises, you will be most careful in accompli-
shing these dangerous intentions.

Thus befoze they departed, the marriage of Trineus and
Agriola was concluded, and because they would not as then
be suspected, they went into the Dance, next the young Prince,
shewing very amiable and pleasant gestures: which Trineus
(in his often turning) diligently noted: imagining that Pal-
merin had not so long conferred with his Lady, but some as-
sured resolution was determined, yet he dissembled his in-
ward joyes so cunningly as he could. Each eye was fixed on
these two brave Knights, the Ladies and Gentlewomen
perswading themselves, that they never beheld more noble
personages: deserving like estimation for their speciall Chi-
valry, as also for their Bounty and Courteous Civility.

Thus passed the Feast in all kinde of pleasures, and these
two knights withdrawing themselves into their Chamber,
Palmerin discoursed to Trineus his talke with Agriola, and
how he had with such cunning pursued the matter, that in the
end he had obtained what he demanded, reporting the sequel
of the gentle conclusion he made with the Princess.

Whose joyfull newes gave the Prince into such a quanda-
ry, as he could not expresse his secret content, wherefoze
Palmerin awaking him out of his musing, sayd: As I am a
true knight, I never thought that a man of your estate could
be of so tender courage. What countenance would you be

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

in a matter of secrecy, when such dauntly tydings make you so
effeminate? Be of good cheere man: Agriola is your owne,
and none but Trineus must be her onely Lord and Husband.
I must confesse my Lord, (sayd Trineus) that my behavi-
our, but little becomes my calling: but that canse thereof is,
that I know no desert in my selfe that may be rewarded with
the least favour of my Lady. Well, these newes brought
me such speciall contentment, as I am no longer mine own,
but in her onely I live, and she holds the ballance of my
happynesse or felicity, in that I was bound to be her servant.
But now I desire you my Lord, seeing the occasion offer-
eth it selfe, we hinder it not by any negligence: for if now
we lose the favour of the time, we never (I feare) shall re-
cover the like, therefore let us so soon as we can, provide
all things ready for our departure. Referre that to me, quoth
Palmerin, as you are ready as I shall make provision. The
next day he went to the Master of a Ship, to knowe when
time would serve for their secret departure, who answer-
ed him, that the time was then very convenient, the
winds serving prosperously, and the Sea calme and navi-
gable, and he would furnish him with all necessaries for
his passage. Quoth Palmerin, let that your men and all
things be in readiness, that we may launch away upon halfe
an houre warning. So departed the Master about his
business, and Palmerin to the Prince Trineus, whom he in-
formed with these glad tydings, now nothing remaining
but to know the Princes pleasure, he being likewise as
ready to depart as the most forward. But (quoth Palmerin)
how shall we safely get you forth of the Court? I will,
sayd the Princess, this night feigne my selfe sick, and for
my greater quiet, cause my Ladies to absent my Cham-
ber, and so secretly will I escape disguised to the backe gate
of the Palace, which is not farre from my lodging, where-
to I may passe unseen of any, and from thence goe with
you safely to the Haven. This practise was faithfully con-
cluded.

clad betwene them and Agriola with her selfe cloisely to her Chamber, where at night she began her counterfeit Ache, commanding her Ladies to leaue her alone, because she would see if she could scape a little. Her Ladies little thinking of her secret deceit, went to their own lodgings very penſiue and sorrowfull, which Agriola perceiving, covered her selfe with her night mantle, and came to the place where the Knights stayed her coming, Palmerin taking her vnder his arme, conueyed her in that manner to the Princes Chamber, where they altogether layd downe the order for their embarking, Trineus extolling his happy fortune, seeing his Lady so ready to accomplish his desire. They arming themselves, and taking with them the Princes costly Jewels, whereof she had plentifully stored her selfe, they came to the Haven, where they found the ship and mariners ready, and getting all aboard, the time seruing for their abayle, they set saile, and before day they got farre enough from London.

CHAP. LXII.

How the King of *England* and the Queene were advertised, how their daughter *Agriola* was conueyed away, and of their sorrow for her departure.



A The Duke of *Gaules* Daughter, who continually was bedfellow to the Princesse, abſenting her selfe very long from bed, fearing to diſquiet her Lady, being ſick as ſhe ſuppoſed: but coming at length to ſee how ſhe fared, finding the Bedde empty, and Agriola gone, ſhe preſently made a great outcrye, whereat the other Ladies came, and altogether

amazed

amazed at this ſudden aduenture, went to the Queenes Chamber, where they reported how the Princesse was gone, but how, or when, they knew not. The Queene at theſe ſpydings ſuddenly aroſe, and coming to her daughters Chamber found it too true, which made her fall into ſuch pittifull acclamations, farre ſurpaſſing thoſe of *Maguelona*, when ſhe loſt her friend *Peter of Province* in the wood.

In theſe lamentings ſhe returned to the King, whoſe heauineſſe excused judgement, for the loſſe of his daughter, and then came diuers Lords and Gentlemen, who declared that the ſtrange Knights were likewiſe departed. Which raiſed ſuch a rumour through all the Citie, that they had ſollen away the Princesse. The King vnderſtanding the generall ſorrow for his daughters abſence, ſaid. In ſooth my friends, if theſe Knights haue done ſuch ſervice for me, they haue ſufficiently recompenced themſelues, in doing me the greateſt diſhonour they could deuife: yet will I not condemne them ſo much as my Daughter, ſo that I am perſwaded ſhe procured this miſchance. But now I will perceiue what credit a man may reſole in his enemy: ſo *Palmerin* ſuermore ſerued the Emperour of *Allemaigne*, then hardly could hee be true to mee. Yet is it in daime for me to blame him, or his companions, if they took the aduantage of their owne intents. But now there is no remedy, my daughter is in the company of moſt choſen Knights: if ſhe haue done well, or ill, hereafter her deſerts will anſwer her miſdeemeanour. Thus the King would not ſuffer any purſute after them, though the Queene and her Ladies earneſtly intreated him: he anſwering that no ſuch mone ſhould be made, ſo a Child ſo vngatefull and diſobedient, but hauing committed an action ſo vile and enormous, ſhe ſhould no more account of her as her child. And well may we (quoth he) ſo reſuſe her, in that ſhe would leaue her Parents, and depart with ſtrangers: happie

might we haue accounted our selues, if we had lost her in her Infancie. The Quene seeing her Loys so impatient, appeased his displeasure so well as she could, because she would not inuade him so much. Within few daies after the Duke of Gaule arrived at the Court, who most of all grieved at these vnthappy tydings, wherefoze he perswaded the King to proclaim open warre against the Emperour of Allemagne, assuring him, that the Knight which most commonly accompanied Palmerin, was Trineus the Emperours sonne. When the King heard the Dukes speeches, forgetting his anger, he rejoyced, esteeming himselfe happy, and his Daughter wise, in matching her selfe with such a Husband: and if she had made her choyse among all the Princes of the world, she could not haue choosed out one comparable in honour. In briefe answered the Duke, that for a Daughter so lost, he would not take the death of his louers and Subjects: but being one of Fortunes changes, he could not withstand it, and thus the King wisely and presently indured his griefe.

CHAP. LXIII.

How *Vrbaniſſo* and the Prince *Trineus* Esquire, arrived at the Emperours Court, and what great joy their coming procured.



Our Historie in this place taketh occasion to speake, how the King of France daily expected newes from Palmerin, as concerning his intent of Marriage, betwene his Daughter and the Prince Trineus: but seeing he heard no tydings at all, he determined to send his Ambassadors to the Emperour, electing for chiefe in this

embassage

embassage the Count of Armignac, to whom he gaue full power and authoritie to conclude the Marriage betwene Trineus and his Daughter Lucimania, as also of the Princess Polinarda with his Sonne and heire. The King dispatching all things for his Ambassage, sent many Barons and knights of name to accompany the Count, to countenance the matter with moze royaltie and magnificence, and in this manner they came to Gaunt, where the Emperour being advertised of their arrivall, made no great account thereof, such was his griefe for his Sonnes absence and Palmerins, of whom he could not heare any tydings, as also for the losse his Army sustained in England. But while the messenger from the Ambassadors of France stayed with the Emperour, *Vrbaniſſo* and the Princes Esquire entered the Hall, whose presence highly contented the Emperour, embracing them very lovingly, he demanded for Palmerin and his Sonne Trineus, when they delivering their Letters, and the Emperour perswaded thereby of their speedy returne, was greatly contented, saying to the Ambassadors messenger. My friend, seeing I haue heard such long looked for tydings of my Sonne, you may returne to the Count your Master, desiring him to come when he thinks convenient, and he shall be heartily welcome to me: with this answer the messenger departed. When the Emperour taking *Vrbaniſſo* by the hand, said: Tell me now I pray thee, how fares thy Master? Where is he? Is my Son with him? My gracious Lord anoth the Dwarfie, where your noble Sonne abideth, there is my Master, both of them in good disposition, and highly honoured. And hereof I can assure your Majesty, that you haue a Son, who good reason ought to be numberd among the best knights living, for such honourable experience hath hee made of his worthinesse, that perpetual memorie will record his deeds of Chivalrie: what else remaineth you shall know at their coming, which will be so soone as they can possibly. I neuer perswa-

bed my selfe, said the Emperour, that in the company of so good a knight as Palmerin, my sonne could not but purchase credit and honour: Wherefore seeing they haue such prosperitie of health, I care the lesse for their stay, but welcome are they whensoever they come.

By this time Polynarda heard of the Dwarfses arrivall, which greatly pleasing her, she said to Brionella; I pray thee sweet friend goe speedily and seeke the Dwarfse, that we may know what is become of our Lords and my brother Trineus. Brionella, who longed to heare of her loue Sir Ptolome, whom well she knew to be one of the company, with all speed accomplished the Princesse commandment, and found the joyfull messenger with the Emperour, who tooke great delight in the Dwarfses reports: but his Paillie perceiving with what chearefull countenance she came to bring Virbanillo to her Lady the Princesse, bad him goe with her, hoping by his meanes his Daughters extreme sadnesse would be comforted. Brionella being forth of the Emperours presence, embraced him many times to know his tidings, when the Dwarfse not ignorant of the Ladies passions, deliuered Ptolomes letter to cheere her: but when the Princesse saw Virbanillo coming, with the teares in her eyes she ranne apace to meet him, and casting her armes about his necke, embraced him very often, saying: Tell me Virbanillo, tell me, how fares my Brother and thy Master Palmerin? Madame, quoth the Dwarfse, so well as your own heart can wish, and will ere long be here with you. When deliuered he the Letter from Trineus, which certified her of his sooyt returne, and that he would bring with him the thing she most esteemed. But the long knowing she expected other matters, and that her Brothers medicine was not sufficient for her cure, he gaue her his Masters letter, when she hastily breaking open the seale, found the King which her loyall friend had sent her, and after she had welcommed it with many deuout kisses, she put it on her

finger

finger, with these words. I charge thee keepe this token safely, in witness of the Knights gentlenesse that sent it, whom my heart hath made speciall choyse of aboue all other. When reading the Letter, and discreetly considering (not without great effuse of teares) the sweet words, humble supplications, entyre promises, and extreme passions, that her friend continually suffered for her loue, deliuered many bitter sighes, she said: Ah my true and loyall friend, I beleue well, and take in good part your cause of absence, being assured, that if possibly you could returne sooner, nothing should stay you from the place, where the chiefe remedy of your dolorous griefes abideth. But seeing for my loue you may not forsake my Brother, I pray you for your continual safety, and speedy conduction to your longing desires, that mine eyes euer watched with tedious expectation, and my heart nere tyed with bootlesse wishings, may by your presence be thoywly comforted. Afterward Virbanillo briefly reported to her the noble actions of his Lord and Master, the loue of Trineus to the Princesse Agriola, describing her beauty and rare perfections, whereupon Polynarda thus answered:

Welcue me Virbanillo, if the Princesse be so faire as thou sayest she is, her great vertues and firme loyalty like vnto comparable, enuy and false report shal not impeach her, she reckoned amongst the most happy Ladies of the world, and her desires will be as honorably effected, as with verities thoughts she first began them. The like (I doubt not) will happen to thy Master, for fortune hath euermore so specially fauoured him, as now it were against reason she should alter her countenance. So departed the Dwarfse from the Princesse, returning to the Emperour, who by no meanes could get any other tidings of his Son then what you haue heard, which made him doubt the Dwarfse ingled with him. The next day the Emperour sent his chiefest Lords and Barons, to conduct the French Ambassadors to Court, which

was

was sumptuously hang'd with Tapistry, especially the great Hall, which was adorned with costly cloth of gold and rich Purple, as it had bene the Pallace of Salomon. The Ambassadors entertained with marvellous Regality, and having delivered the summe of their Ambassage, the Emperour answered, that he would conferre thereon with his Councell in meane while they might returne to their lodgings. After they were departed the Hall, the Emperour demanded of the Princes, Cardinals, and the rest of his Nobilitie, if these marriages of his Sonne and daughter with the heire and Princesse of France, might not be granted as well for the utility and honour of the Empire, as for the generall benefit of Christendome, commanding them to speake their judgements without feare. The Lords altogether answered, that the motion was so good and the alliance so honourable, as it was no way to be disliked. I will then (quoth he) talke with the Emperesse, that she may understand her Daughters opinion, and then my Lords of France shall be answered. So leaving them he went into the Emperesse Chamber, to whom he reported his agreement with his Councell, which pleased her likewise marvellous well: but when she had a little considered on the matter, she answered, that but little could be sayd before Trincus returned home againe. You reason well, quoth the Emperour, but in meane time I pray you sound your Daughters judgement, that we may returne our brother of France some certaine answer. Which she promised to doe, and so departing from her Lord, she went to her Daughters chamber, where having commanded her Ladies afor, she thus began. Faire daughter, it is the Emperours pleasure and mine, that you marry with the eldest Sonne and heire of France, and your Brother Trincus with his Sister, for he is one of the most renowned Kings in Europe, and his Son reckoned among the best Knights of the world: for which good fortune you may thanke the heavens, that so great a Prince offers his Sonne

The Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*,

Sonne to be your Husband. Advise your selfe of your answer: for by your opinion must the Ambassadors be dispatched hence, who came to the Court for nothing else but to conclude these honorable marriages. Polinarda hearing the words of her mother, was surpris'd with such sudden heaviness, as she could not tell what to answer: but fearing the Emperesse should perceive that her Love was already determined, with a sad countenance, thus reply'd.

Madam, you know what promise I made my brother, the day when he departed from the Court, in the presence of you, and all the Nobility, that I would not marry before his returne: and me thinks I were greatly to be blamed, and well worthy grievous reprehension, if I should so falsifie my word, which I cannot doe, without impeaching of mine Honour,

And herein shall I follow the laudable vertue of the Emperour my Father, who evermore esteem'd his promise above all earthly possessions. Beside, I can assure you that my brother will never marry with the Princesse Luccania: for her Love is one many degrees beyond her, and (may I speak it without offence) one of the most beautifull Ladies that ever Nature framed. Thus Madame, my Father and you have excuses sufficient and available, wherewith to answer the King of France. It may be (quoth the Emperesse) that your Brother loves else, where: but I can tell ye, that neither he nor you shall doe any thing, contrary to the Emperours commandement. Polinarda, seeing her Mother persist in her opinion, bit in her sorrowes with many secret sighes: yet knew she so well how to dissemble her passions, as the Emperesse could not discern her private meaning. So returned she to the Emperour, adverting him of her Daughters answer: whereat he was so offended, as in great anger he came himselfe to his daughter, saying: Why, how now daughter? Are you so bold to disobey my commandement? Dare you repugne against my will? All is consent that you have doubled with your Mother: for (will ye or no) it shall

be as I have appointed. I know right well bread and Father, (quoth she) that I ought no way to deny your good pleasure: But yet rather will I dye a thousand deaths, then consent to match with the Son of France, considering what promise I have made unto my deere Brother: and if I would but once so farre dishonour my selfe, as not to regard what I have promised, I should think my selfe unworthy hereafter to be called your Daughter. Thus stood she resolute in her answer, and therewith shed such abundance of teares, as the Emperour was constrained to tell the Ambassadors, that the marriages could not be concluded till the returne of Trincus, notwithstanding he granted all the articles of their Embassage. The Princesse qualifying her griefe so well as she could, sent for the Dwarf, and taking him by the hand, sayd. Alas my friend, I am now in the greatest perplexity in the world, nevertheless, one thing comforts me: that thou beholdest the true love and loyalty I beare thy master, which never shall be broken, what ever become of me. And would to God he were now here, then would I speak it openly without feare of any, that I am his, and he mine. Madam (quoth the Dwarf) if you continue faithfull to my Master, perswade your selfe of his assurance, for he building on your constancy, takes such continuall pleasure in remembering you, that it is the only meane that preserves his life: and you may be bold to credit me, that if your Brothers love did not withhold him, he would have bin here long ere this, but he will come soon enough (I hope) to end this doubt.

As for me, I am of the opinion that heaven will not suffer so good a Knight to dye, but first will permit him to see his mistress. Die: quoth the Princesse, sooner let all the Knights in the world end their dayes, and the eldest Sonne of France likewise, though he love me so dearely, so might I be rid of these importunate Ambassadors. The Emperour seeing he could get no other answer of his Daughter, conclu-

ded with the French Ambassadors, that so soon as his Son was returned, he should be advertised, and so for that time they might depart: but the Emperour and he first bestowed on them many rich presents, and so in short time they arrived againe in France, where great joy was made in hope of these Marriages, albeit they little thought the Prince Trincus would tarry so long. Above all other, the French Prince was most joyfull, hearing the Countie of Armignac report the wonderfull beauty of Polinarda: but the good Lady was of another minde, for she had rather be, take her selfe to a Cloyster, then to break her faith to Palmerin, whom she loved so constantly. Thus leave we her conferring with Urbanillo, returning to Palmerin, and the Prince Trincus.

CHAP. LXIII.

How *Palmerin* being thus on the Sea, caused *Trincus* there to marry the Princesse *Agriola*.



His noble company being thus on the Sea, having wind at will, sayled with such expedition, as in foure dayes they had gotten farre enough from England, and the Prince seeing the Princesse *Agriola* very penfull and sad, comforting her with many sweete welcomes and kisses, and taking her by the hand, thus spake.

O Generaigne Creatour, how shall I render sufficient thanks and prayse to thee, in granting me the onely thing I desire? Ah sweete Madam, and my onely deare Mistress *Agriola*, how much is your Servant indebted to you? With any Knight more cause to honour and extoll his Lady then I:

Behold me faire Princeſſe, ſuch are the rare effects of your gracious Nature, and ſo topfull of my happy Fortune, as neither friend or Father ſhall fetch you againe from me. If my life might endure the length of ten men, and every day I ſhould accompliſh wonders in your good Service, yet could I not remunerate the leaſt part of your Princely deſerts. But if your Love be ſuch to me, as I am right well aſſured it is, let me intreat you to forbear this beaunitie, and baniſh from your thoughts your melancholy humors: for ſeing you ſo ſadde and penſive, I ſuffer a torment worſe then death it ſelfe. For let me perceine (how little ſoever it be) that my preſence may be to your liking, and our preſent Enterpriſe ſomewhat more pleaſing: I ſive to the Heavens with conſent of my ſpirits, and value my fortune above the reach of humane capacity. In ſtead of teares, let vs be ſo quaint tearmes, and ſo theſe dumps, pleaſant imaginattons: perſwade your ſelfe Madame, you are now in his cuſtody that honours you for your virtues, reuerenceth you for your diuine perfections, extolleth you for incomparable merites, and ſteth for you, with his very bittermoſt endeauours. Thinke not Madame, though you haue left your Parents, the fault is not pardonable: For the new alliance wherein you haue combined your ſelfe, ſhall one day gladd you with your ſpeciall content: that what you doe imagine now a dangerous offence, will be imputed an act of prouident and Princely diſcretion. When ſhall you finde it true, what Palmerin hath ſpoken, and his promiſes of preferment, and Imperiall dignity, ſhall be both rightly and ſufficiently perſormed. Let theſe perſuaſions, if not my intreaties, excell theſe paſſions, and procure better comfort. Madame (quoth Palmerin) though you haue left your native Countrey, conſider the occaſion, the love of a mighty Prince, and the heavenly appointment, that your noble virtues ſhould be coupled together, hath brought you from England, to ſit on the Imperiall ſeat in Allemaigne.

Now careſſall we haue bene of your honour, your ſelfe can

Palmerin D'oliva.
THE SECOND PART:
OF THE HONOURABLE
HISTORIE OF PALMERIN
D'OLIVA.

Continuing his rare fortunes, Knightly
deeds of Chiuallry, happy ſucceſſe in love,
and how he was crowned Emperour of
Conſtansinople.

Herein is likewiſe concluded the variable troubles
of the Prince Trineus, and faire Agriola the
Kings daughter of England: with their
fortunate Marriage.

Translated by A. M. one of the Meſſengers of
her Majesties Chamber.

Patere aut abſtine.



LONDON.

Printed for B. Alsop and T. Fawcett dwelling in

a precious Jewell you receiue of them in requitall of your Service, or acceptance of any amorous contentment.

When wonder not (gentle Knight) if to see you, I haue left my Country: for be lieue your great valour, bound y, and loyalty, which neuer can be sufficiently commended by our beauty, affabilitie, and most rare perfections, deserue not onely the Love of the greatest Lady and Princesses, but their continual service likewise, if they but consider these alone qualities. If than your betimes and gifts of nature are of such value and merit, what may the imagine of her selfe, who is your onely Lady and Mistress, and aboue all other is honoured with your fastest service, as well records the memory of the beauty, *Quene*? *Palmerin* hearing himselfe so commended by such an excellent *Quene*, blushed with bashfulness, and humbly shap'd this answer. *Adam*, so farre unable am I, to deserue the Love and good will you beare me, as neuer will fortune labour me sufficiently, to recompence the least part of this princely kindness. Yet hereof (faire *Quene*) you may assure your selfe, that you haue a Knight so forward in your service, as nothing shall withhold him from it, saving your commandement, though the penalty of my life were enioyned thereon.

Trust me (quoth the *Quene*) your behabour promisseth no less then you speake of, and if I haue taken any paines for you, I thinke my selfe not so thoroughly satisfied: let it suffice you to see, that I account my fortune not the least, having gain'd such place in your good opinion. These and such like speeches passed betwene them, till they came to *Alfaron* a Pallace, where they spent the rest of the Day in diuerse pleasures: the *Quene* entreating *Palmerin* and *Oliuo* the next day to dine with her in her Lodging, where they had used honourably to feast them. The next day at ten of the clocke, these two young Princes came to see her, finding her in a costly chaire, which was richly hang'd with Cloths of Gold, and therein stood a faire Cupboard, garnished with

with the most costly plate that euer was seen: for the basest piece was cleane Gold, embelished with precious stones, beside others other inestimable strange Cups and Glasses of *Agatha*. What their Service at dinner was, I leaue to the judgment of Ladies desirous of labour. Yet this I dare well say, that the Dishes were so rare and exquisite, and abounding in such plenty, as though she had them daily at her command. The Tables withdrawne, the *Quene* took each of the Princes by the hand, and sitting betwene them, with a sweet smiling countenance she began thus.

I pray you (gentle Knights) to tell me, which of you is most affected to the service of Love, and follows it with greatest endeavour? Gladly would I be resolved by you, altho I know the certainty as well as your selves?

Adam (quoth *Palmerin*) if you haue such knowledge of our affections, well may our answer be excused. Very true (saide the *Quene*) especially you, of whose loyalty the Prince *Almice* is so notable a witness. Both I standing, which of you both most mistrust the attainment of her grace, to whom he is most devoted in Love, let him not give over the pursuit of his desire: but rather let me intreat you continue your Love with much more serour, as to those renowned Ladies, who by their virtues and graces, bee bravely challenging you from all others: for I dare assure you such a successive end of your Love, as with special contentment shall fulfill your affectionate desire. If they were so full of this assurance, it is no question to be demanded that *Almice*, who till then despaired: but now so happily resolved, should place to *Palmerin*, who is as desirous to continue his path with the *Quene*: their joint meanes may be directed by another Lady, and *Palmerin* having the occasion so fit, began his tale in this manner. I cannot forget (faire *Quene*) when you sent your Kettle to me at the Soldans Court: that after her message delivered, she

The History of *Palmerin D'Oliua.*

said to me, that you were acquainted with farther secrets, concerning my estate. For this cause I intreat your highness, if you doe not imagine me too importunate: that it might please you to acquaint me with my father and mother, for that above all other things I most desire. The Quene amazed at this demand, thus answered. Know (gentle Knight) that what the Lady in this matter said to you, is also what my selfe euen now promised you: come thither not from me, for one of my knights acquainted me therewith, he being the most skilfull in the Magickall sciences, that is in all Turkie. And now he is returned into his owne Country, and no other answer could I get of him: but that you are the Sonne of the most loyall, redoubted, and valiant Prince in the world, whom before you have any farther knowledge of, you shall deliver from death, and that very shortly. Beside, you shall be a Lady, who in all perfect ornaments, fortune or spirit, hath not her equall.

In last (quoth Palmerin) I shall account my selfe right happy, to deliver my father from such danger, and heauen I beseech that it may so be. On these termes came Alarano, and the dancing began, which constrained them to bryake off talke, and step into the dauce, in which delight they spent the time till Supper was summoned, till which advertisement, they were as well, as was Ogyer the Dane in Baria. For never was Dido such an affectionate audience of Affairs, recounting the ruine of the Trojans, then to the Quene of Thartus to Palmerin: towards whom her heart was southerled, and with secret fire so inflamed and consumed, as both the Cellars before the fire. When set at the Banquet, Palmerin and Olorico on the one side, and the Quene and Alarano on the other, the waiters attending on them were two Ladies, who had in charge to give the one, the sleeping and dangerous drinke, and to the other, the amorous and delicate, yet in effect to provoke forgetfulness: so well did the Ladies discharge their office,

Emperour of *Constantinople.* PART. 2.

office, and the Princes took this mixed drinke so substantially, as they could hardly beare sleeping at the Table: wherefore every one arising, the Quene gave the good night to Alarano, who presently went to his lodging. When were these two sleepe Princes conducted to their Chamber, where being in Bed, they slept soundly, and the Quene coming to them, accompanied with those trustie Ladies that waited at Supper: took the Prince Olorico, conveying him to another Bed, for he was so charmed as he could not awake.

Afterwards the Ladies departed, and the Quene went to Bed to Palmerin, whom she attended at her owne pleasure. A matter not to be esteemed fabulous, in that other have bene brought into the like case, as well may witnesse Brangiena, who endured these sweet skirmishes, till she would not manifest the history of Yficul her Mistress, and Tristram. The Quene having satisfied her unchaste desire, caused Olorico to be brought into his place again, and then returned to her owne Chamber.

But now this Enchantment losing his operation, a faun- he appeared to Palmerin, resembling his Lady Polynarda, who said. Ah Palmerin, disloyall Traytor and Adulterer, how much are they deceived, that repute thee a loyall and faithfull Lover? Ah wretch, unworthy of so good a name, having so intariously forgotten me. Dost thou not consider thy great offence, committed against the God of Heauen: in killing rather a German more brute then beautifullnesse it selfe, and thy disloyall treason against my selfe? Be assured, that if thou presently forsake not her company: I will never forget thy fault, but chastise thee continually, as a dissembling concubine. So she departed, Palmerin intreating her to pardon this injury, which she would not heare, but flung away in great anger: and he awaking, brake forth into these speeches.

Ah unhappy wretch that I am, thus to lose the gracious

his favour of my Distresse. These words awoke the Prince Olorico, who embracing him in his arms, demanded the cause of his sorrow: but Palmerin was so surprised with grief, as he would make no answer, but fell headlong in a swoone. Olorico fearing he was dead, cried out for help, whereat the Duane arose, and casting her mantle about her, came to know the occasion of this clamour: and finding Palmerin breathlesse, she called for so many present remedies, as extinguished the passionate fit. Palmerin being the Duane so neere him, clothed himselfe immediately, and departed the Chamber, commanding all his people to prepare themselves, for he would depart towarde within an haires space. Yet he could the earnest intreaties of his Duane, nor any tedious perswasions of Alia, nor cause he was dead till a longer time: but his Carriages being sent for, and all men attending him, he came to take his leave of the Duane, who being sorrowful for this strange accident, was to him as his picture:

Moste Sir Palmerin, my heart is full of both such afflictive griefe, as the world is full of both sorrow and joy: I am grieved further to see you, who are professed of such a holy departure, yet so much to tarry. I pray you, if you will, to let me know the cause of my fate, which I am sure, if I am longer to be thus, will be like a death. (Palmerin) Answered, my love, to remember to the Queen, that I have done her, which I have done for all Kings, that I may the rather, and the more, be afflicted, and be more than ready to pay what I owe. Good night, and farewell to thee. The Duane, who was a very good hearted woman, and a very good friend, and a very good companion, as well as a very good wife, and a very good mother.

Palmerin, who was a very good hearted man, and a very good friend, and a very good companion, as well as a very good wife, and a very good mother, was to him as his picture:

led great light. The Duane likewise, after she had given great Riches to the Admirall, returned to her owne Citty, leading thenceforwards a very Chaste and Continent life, onely for his sake, by whom in (short time) she found herselfe conceived with child. And at the time appointed by nature, she was delivered of a g. dly Sonne, resembling his Father in brave countenance: whom the Mother caused to be named Palmerendos, as well in memory of his Father Palmerin, as also of his Grandfather Florendos, from their deriving his Name, as being the onely flower of Chivalry. And as Palmerin was vertuous, so did his Sonne follow him in all bountie, piety, magnanimity, loyalty, liberality, curtesie and humanity: in which he had all the noble vertues that a Child might receive from his father, as you may at large perceive in his Histories. But because as yet his Deeds serve not to our purpose: we will leave him growing under his Mothers charge, and returne to them whom lately we left.

CHAP. XXI.

How Palmerin to colour his intended and desirous Voyage into *Christendome*, perswaded the Soldane to send his Armie to *Constantinople*, and what followed thereon.



Now greatly desirous was Palmerin to returne towards the Soldane, and therefore would not make his way through *Palmeris*, but journeyed thitherward, whence the King of *Caliscia* stayed his coming: who came to meet him with all the Lords and Captaines of his Army. Thus having brought the Countrey in quiet obedience to the Soldane, with their Women they retur-

returned towards his Quarters, sending word before of their speedy coming. The Soldane was not a little joyful of the good tidings, as also of the fortunate victory against his Enemies, wherefore he left the City of Calpha, and determined to meet them at a Battle of Merue, which he had lately ordered, and so because he feared for the number of his Army, which was now conducted in better equipage, then before it was wont to be seen in Assyria.

The King of Babilonia caused the Captives to be lead before, who (by his commandment) when they came in the Kings presence: threw their Armour to the ground, and then threw themselves on their knees kissing the Earth, presenting themselves before him with great reverence. All these ceremonies finished, Palmerin, the Prince Olorico, with the other Governours of the Field came, and kissing his Highnesse hand, he entertained them very graciously: and for as much as he had embraced Palmerin, he would needs move between him and the King of Babilonia. In this order rode they on to the Palace Gate, where his Lady Lerher and Alchidiana her Daughter, tricht up in vestures of surpassing value, attended their coming: and after the accustomed reverence, on all sides, entered the great Hall, where the Princess taking Palmerin by the hand, before her Father, and all his Barons, thus spake.

Sir Palmerin, so well is your prowess and heavenly deeds esteemed by every one, as my praise cannot extoll them to advantage: notwithstanding, I dare say before my Father, and all his Lords here present, that he is so much indebted to you, as he can never returne sufficient recompence. These words uttered with such affection, were noted by every one, especially the Prince Olorico, and that Sir Palmerin made this answer to the Princess: Madam, here may you behold the Prince of Arabia, one of the best knights that ever I knew, and who hath more moove service to your Father and you in this Calvary, then any

any other beside: For with his owne hand he slew Gramich, who was chiefe Leader of the Phrygians Army. Beside, such and so many have borne his rare Exploites, as no one that I know may be equall'd with him. And all this he admitteth to your service, wherein he earnestly desireth to continue, so please you to accept him for your Knight: believing this assurance before hand, that hereafter he will adventure his Life in your cause, wheresoever it shall like you to command him. For this cause (Madam) you may not refuse him, being the man that among the Assyrians, doth best deserve to be your Servant. Alchidiana, who well understood to what end his speeches tended, and the occasion why Palmerin thus spake, advised her selfe well, and returned this answer.

Do helpe me our God, I know well that the Prince Olorico is as puissant and renowned as any man of whom I yet heard: notwithstanding, I hope the Solban my Father will not be ingratesfull in the knowledge thereof, and that sufficiently I dare warrant you. What I desire you, faire Sir, to tell me how the Quene of Tharus intreated you, and what is your opinion of her? In good sooth Madam (answered Palmerin) she is one of the most courteous and vertuous Ladies that ever I came in company withall, and to whom I greatly desire to doe any service. You have good reason (qu. the Princess) in that she came farre to see me, and discover her love: which others could as well accomplish, as good, or rather in Honour begone her, if they would hope of any ease in their passionate desires. Palmerin being thus not to understand her meaning, entered into other kind of talk, untill supper time, which finished, each one returned to their Chamber. When the Prince being himselfe alone with his Friends, thus sayd. My most deare Friends Palmerin, how long will you be so long to be without company, in all perfections that a knight ought to have, howe easily excepted? Wherein (if I be not deceived) you

doe for me against all reason, for a thousand times are you more beloved, then your selfe can love any. Notwithstanding, for this default, if so it may be named, and for the words this dayesd in my presence to Alchidiana, I remaine bound to your Service: for in truth you know not the good you did me, supporting my imperfection of speech when I was before my Goddresse. Yet know I not whence such a liberality should proceed, if not by being rabelled with regard of her celestiaall countenance, my over laboured spirit for sake me, and being too much for mented in this languishing body: abandoned all the parts sensative, placing it selfe onely in mine eyes, which never could imagine themselves satisfied, contemplating beauty of so rare and speciall estimation. And were it not my hope onely consisteth in you, computing my small desert, and the excellency of my Love: long ere this had my soule forsake her inordinate habitation, which soundly secretly fell into these oppressing passions. And this I earnestly intreate you to let her understand: in that I feare least the happy alteration, to want of wisdome and civility. Will me, quoth Palmerin, I promise you my uttermost ability, and so much will I doe, as one friend may for another, to discharge my selfe of the promise which heretofore I made her.

And let me intreat you on mine owne behalfe, to remove that opinion of speciall love, which you report the Princesse beares me, being not such as you doe imagine: for (noble Prince, and my deare friend) you need not despair of the benefit whereof I have so solemnely assured you. After many other speeches, they slept till the next morning, when clothing themselves in their richest garments, they went and gave the good morrow to the Soldane, who very honourably thanked them: and Palmerin espying convenient occasion, thus began.

My Lord, you have sufficient experience, that by the bounty

bounty and great labour of the Gods, you have obtayned victory against your enemies, to the no little content of your Subjects: all which being so happily finished, beseemed the thought, to feare the perfection of higher Enterprizes. Wherefore my Lord, I thinke it expedient, so it may stand with your good liking, considering your provision for the Sea, is in such readinesse, your people likewise acquainted with your intent, before we medled with the Brethren of Amaranos, came daily in troopes to offer their Service: that now you send your Army to Constantinople, for your answer once heard, right soon will we Embark our selves, and set forthwards on our voyage. For the rest, I pray you deliver these Prisoners, to be used as your slaves: But as for the Princes, I thinke (having seen the fortune of their Brethren, and their owne bad successe in Times) that they will serve you with continuall loyalty. My Sonne, (quoth the Soldan) let all be done as you have appointed, for such is my confidence in you, that this your intent cannot but soe to a good end: wherefore my Gallies and all things being ready furnished, depart when you please, having first sent your Souldiers aboard.

The Prince Olorico being present, offered againe to go in this Voyage, with like number of men, as he brought against the Brethren of Amaranos: for which the Soldan greatly thanked him, promising him such satisfaction at his returne, as would agree with his owne content. Alchidiana taking in all part, the words of Prince Oloricoes behalfe: sent for him to come speake with her, which he did, and finding her very sad and melancholly, he demanded if any one had done her displeasure, and what the cause might be of her passion? Ah my deare friend (quoth she) how can I but be grieved having no enemy in the world, hath so many enemies as myselfe? Alas, my heart hath chosen you for my only Lord and friend, thinking to finde place worthy my conceit,

and

and that your Love would answer me with the like: but in ought I can perceive, I am too much beguiled, soe you, whether as ingratefull, or carelesse, use affecting speeches to me, imposing no other end, but that in leading you, I should take the Prince Olorico for my Husband. Do you imagine me so mutable and inconstant, that I shall, or can love any other but you? That my affection entirely settled so high can be so easily a stonefall, as to like the man so much more, than I do you? And (which most of all offendeth me) not contented to mocke me, in obtaining my true love: but discourteously would persuade me to chuse another? Let all our Gods be judge, if I have not just cause to complain of you, where I have greater reasons to hate and despise my wronger selfe: Because that I have more then deserved your love, yet (as for much unwise) I cannot consider, that in the heart of an ingratefull person, Love hath no place of continuance abiding. But seeing our Gods have in such sort subjected me, as against my will I am constrained to love mine enemy; in vain were it for me to resist against them, that they beholding the unspotted love of the one, may in the end punish the ingratitude of the other. Thus thinking to continue longer speech, so many violent sighes intercepted her, as she was not able to proffer one word more, whereby Palmerin enforced, thus answered. I beseech you Heaven, excuse me not with these noble words, for although the Prince is so worthy to be beloved, as any man that ever I saw: yet were I very much unpunished of him, and a more stranger to good consideration, should I receive that speciall felicity, then which I can desire no greater.

I know (sweet Noble) that you Love me intirely, perswade your selfe then, that my Loyalty is no lesse, nor can death cause me to gainsay the promises I have made you: and were it not to the great disadvantage of mine honour, to forsake this honorable Warre your Father hath intended,

intended, which might procure him to misse the service of me: assure your selfe I would forsake Dignities, Arms, and all, to do the service you worthily deserve, which at my returne shall be effected. Palmerin dissembled the matter so well, as the Princesse was well pacified: and taking his leave, returned to the Soldan: Before whom he caused to be brought the Princes, and Lords that were Prisoners, and at his request Mauleus gave them Liberty, with this charge, that they should serve him in this War. Which that they might the better accomplish, he gave them Horse, Arms, and all other things necessary, making all possible speed could be devised, that his Army might set forward to Sea.

CHAP. XXII.

How Palmerin Sayling with the Soldans Armie, was brought by Tempest into the Sea of Almaine, where he took Landing with the Prince Olorico.



Palmerin quickly consented soe to Embark the Armie) desiring the Prince Olorico to accompany him to the Haven, to the end they might make choice of the best vessels for themselves: and for buying them all, they found a goodly Carracke, new and very well appointed, wherein many Prisoners lay chained, who formerly had been taken by the Soldans Gallies, and other Robbers of the Moores. Of whom Palmerin demanded what people they were? They answered that they were Christians, and had of long time lived there in that shalme. Palmerin not a little glad of these newes, asked of what Countrey they were, whereupon one of them that could well speake the Arabian tongue, thus answered: We are all borne in Almaine, to whom Palestine hath

hath excelled in cruelty. These words were marvellous welcome to Palmerin, and so; which inwardly he thanked his God: but the better to dissemble his joy, he thus spake: This Country should seeme to be very farre from hence, because I neuer heard thereof before. So finding this it well fit for his purpose, he appointed it for himselfe, and the Prince Olorico, discharging all others that were therein, two Knights onely excepted, to whose charge he committed the Christians: causing his Voyages, Tents, and all other necessaries, to be carried aboard, as well the Prince Oloricoes, as his owne, accomplishing every thing in such order, as within three dayes after the Souldiers were ready to depart. And now the day is come to launch away, when the Soldane and other Cabotanes, accompanied the King of Babilonia to the Haven: But the faire Alchidiana would not be gone, by reason of her griefe and sorrow for her Friends departure: For when she came to take her leave of Palmerin in his Chamber, she fell (in a manner dead) at his feet, and soon after she delivered these lamenting speeches:

This is no common farewell, my belov'd Lord, which you now take of me, but say it is my very last Adieu: for my heart perswades me, that I shall never see you more, because the extremities of my sorowes are such, as well I know I cannot long endure. Adieu then sweet Friend, who instead of joy and comfort, leavest me in despaire, which never can have end but by my death.

God Hadam say not so, (qu. Palmerin) for I hope right soon to see you againe. So leaving her, Olorico and he went towards the Haven, the Prince being so passionate to leave her sight, by whose sweet looks his life was maintained as had not his friendly companion comforted him, he had bin unable to depart the Palace. But being come to the Port, and seeing the Winds and Sea serviceable, both to trille the time with any longer stay, they came to take their

their leave of the Soldane, who tooke great care for their contentment, and many times embracing Palmerin, commending to him the disposition of all his affaires, said: My noble Sonne and Friend, I bid you in presence of our God, that if you returne hither againe with victory, with such honours I will endow you, as shall be sufficient for the whole World to talke on. Palmerin humbly kissing his hand, went aboard, the Mariners hoysing Sails, launched forth into the Sea: with such a brave noise of Drums, Trumpets, Clarions, Cornets, Fifes, and other Instruments, as though Heavens and Earth would have encountered together. Palmerin thus floating on the government of Neptune, imagined how with safetie he might forsake his company, wherefore he commanded to unbinde all the Christians. For (quoth he to Olorico) seeing they are Mariners, and well skill'd in the Art of Navigation, they may stand us in good stead, if time so require, or any suddaine Tempest shew'd itselfe ne: but the better to beguile his owne people, he caused them to sweare their faithful Service to him.

The night being come, and he seeing that every one slept soundly: called two of the Christians, and in the Almaine tongue thus began. My friends, give thanks to God for your Fortune, in that you Christians have found one of your Faith and Religion, who hath good hope shortly to deliver you from these Heathen hells: therefore leave apart, and regard well your Quadrant, if you can compute any meanes to get the Coast of Almaine. The Christians more glad then can be expressed, answered, that they would accomplish his commandment, and therefore he should repose his trust in them. About Midnight, as God would, began a great Tempest and blustering of Wind, so that in despite of the Pilots and Mariners, the Fleet was severed in many parts: but the Christians perceiving that this Wind served well for their avails, knew so well

bold to order their Cause, that in short time they got farre enough from their companie, and thus continued the Wind for tenn or twelue daies, for which Palmerin devoutly thanked God.

So happily stayed Palmerin with his Almaignes, that one of them at length tolde him, they were neare the Straites of Gibraltar: for which Palmerin not a little Ioyfull, said: How with it they might passe Spaine without feare, and to the swifter tract Almaigne. But when they began to Coast the Straite, the Turkish Mariners were amazed, saying that the Christians knew not their Course, being more then eight thousand Leagues south of their Campaie.

Palmerin fearing to be discovered before he came to his intent, answered in anger; that the Christians knew their Course better than they did, bidding them to paze no more on paine of their liues: which threatening, presently made them all to silence. Afterwards, they sailed with good Winde, as they took Landing at a Port in Almaigne, which at this day is called Toledo: When the Christians said to Palmerin, how that was the place where they were borne, where (if so he pleased) they desired their libertie. Palmerin assuring them of their request, answered that he himselfe would land there, and therefore went first on shore, feigning to seek fresh Water, and all things accomplished to his owne desire: he caused his Horse to be brought forth, and Oloricoes likewise, who was importunate to beare him company. No sooner was Palmerin on shore, but he kneled downe, giuing thanks to God for his safe deliuerance. The Merchants and Mariners of the Citie, seeing them whom they thought lost in the Sea, more then ten yeeres before, were greatly abashed, welcoming them home with exceeding Ioy: but they answered, that they ought rather to thank the Knight in greene Armes, for he deliuered us from the Moores and Infidels, without Mansome.

Olorico

Olorico amazed at these signes of Ioy, as also when he saw Palmerin pray, knew not well what to thinke: which Palmerin presently perceiving, and to resolue him of all doubts whatsoever, said. No longer need I new my good Lord and Friend, to hide the affaires and secrets of my heart from you: know therefore, that I am a Christian, and a Gentleman of the Emperours Court of Almaigne. But that which most of all grieueth me, is that I am constrained to forsake your company, and returne againe to my Lord, for too much should I offend my Lord, to goe with you in the Seldans Service. Wherefore my loving Friend, let me intreat you to hold me excused, swearing to you (by the faith of a Knight) that whether else it shall like you to goe, I will accomplish your mind in any thing. I intreat you likewise, to entertaine all my Squires and Gentlemen into your Service, and among them to share all my treasure in the Ship, because I will haue nothing with me but my Horse and Armour. And notwithstanding all this, leaue not to present your selfe before the Seldane and Alchidiana: for to them will I write such matter of you, as they shall accept you in my place, and with as great honour as euer they did me. If Heauen so fauour me, as I may come to the knowledge of my Father, I will certifie you with the truth of all. As for my counterfeiting to be dumbe, was onely but to awaite opportunity, when with safety I might escape from thence.

So Olorico at the first was amazed, what may be said of him now? Notwithstanding, he loved Palmerin so perfectly, as he returned him this answer. Although Sir Palmerin, we are of contrary faith and Opinion, yet hath your Noblenes and humanity gained such preiudice over me, that as you haue long time liued a Christian among the Turke, so for your sake will I liue a Turke among the Christians, dissembling in like sort as you did, and neuer shall any occasion force me to forsake you, till you haue

found your Father, and know if he be descended of the Souldans blood. No honor will it be for me now, to returne againe to the Asilian Princes, and as for my people, I forcé not though they go backe againe with my Treasure: for on my Knighthood, I will be no richer then you, nor will I referre any thing with me, but what belongs to a Knight Errant, which is Horse and Armes. For the rest, let Fortune do the best she can, I hope for all this, one day to be King of Arabia. When noble Friend, be not offended, for I will beare you companie: if death or strong imprisonment doe not with hold me. Palmerin embracing him said.

Ah worthy Prince, so noble is your Mind, and replete with Nobility, as perswade your selfe to finde me your loyal Brother, and fellow in Armes, never to forsake you while I can lift my Sword, so please you to aboue with me. So calling the chiefe of them in the Ship, they said as much to them as you have heard, commanding them not to stirre from Arabia, before they heard some other tidings. As for their strange conceit at these newes, I bequeath to your judgments, yet durst they not gainsay their Masters: but launching into the deepe, sailed backe againe into their own Countrey.

Palmerin and Olorico for this night lodged in the Citie, to refresh themselves: and the next Morning, after they had taken leave of the Merchants, they delibered, they set forward on their journey. Continuing their travaile they layes together, at length they met a Knight, who having them Armes after the Turkish Manner, said. Gentlemen. God save ye, if I should not some troublesome to you, because Iudge you to be Strangers: I would gladly know if you could tell me any tidings of two Knights, which long since left this Countrey. How were they named (quoth Palmerin?) Sir said the Knight, one of them is Trineus, Sonne to our great Lord the Emperour; and the other, the most valiant Palmerin d'Oliua. Two yeeres and more since they

they left the Court, without any newes what is become of them: saying that we heard they were a while with the King of England, and thence they conveyed his Daughter, the Emperour continuing so sorrowfull for their loss, as every houre his death is expected. May it be (quoth Palmerin) that all this while Trineus is not returned? What danger tell Noble Almaigne sustaine, by losing their yong Prince? Overcome with exceeding griefe and sorrow, by report of these unhappy tidings, to himselfe he began in this manner.

What shall I do? Dare I be so presumptuous, as to present my selfe before my Mistress? What sufficient excuse can I make for the loss of her Brother? Doubtlesse, if it were such a Hell to me, to finde the means for my departure, from that long Captivity in the Souldans Court, much more will it be to me now in search of the Prince, for without him I dare not approach the Emperours presence.

While he thus secretly discomfited with himselfe, he became so exceeding passionate, as Olorico thought he had lost his senses: which was the cause, that without any further enquire the Almaigne Knights departed from them, when Olorico amazed at this suddain alteration, said:

How now Sir Palmerin? What hath moved you to this heaviness? I beseech you conceale not the cause from me: for if it be by any offence, that the Knight offered which spake to you, some shall I deliver him his penance. Wherefore tell me I pray you, for undoubtedly I will not suffer you to rest, untill you have acquainted me with the truth. Palmerin knowing how dearly the Prince loved him, and that onely for his sake he had left Countrey, Parents, and Friends: reposing on his loyalty, imparted his Love to him, as also the losse of Trineus and the Princesse Agriola. Olorico then laboured to perswade him, advising him to compasse some secret speech with his Lady, of whom he might learne how to recover her lost Brother, and the faire

Agriola of England againe. Palmerin following his counsell, pacified himselfe, and he kept himselfe so closely as he could, from being knowne to any.

CHAP. XXIIII.

How *Palmerin*, by the meanes of *Urbanillo* his Dwarf, spake with his Lady *Polynarda*, with whom he stayed five dayes, to recompence some part of his long absence, and to the great contentment of them both.



Such expedition in their Journey made these Noble Companions, and most worthy Knights, that at length they arrived neare a Strong Castle, which was about foure Miles distant from Gaunt, where the Emperour as then was disposed for Hunting, for the delight of the Ladies: but chiefly to expell his owne melancholie and sadness, for the losse of his beloved Sonne, as also to recreate the Princesse *Polynarda*: who under pretence of shadowing the cause, by her Brothers absence, lamented continually for her Noble Friend *Palmerin*, of whom she could understand no certain tydings, albeit she travailed her very uttermost endeavours, which forced her to so many extreme imaginations, as that the very least was worse then death it selfe.

The Emperours Traine lodging each way about the Castle, hindered our Knights from any good Hostage, so that they were constrained to lodge in a homely simple house: Where they demanded of a Courtier which lay there, what time the Emperour would depart thence: Who answered that his Highnesse was minded that day to returne to Gaunt, to conferre with the Princes Electours of speciall affaires concerning the Empire. Palmerin joyfull hereof

hereof, caused his horse to be bridled: and accompanied with *Olorico*, went and Ambushed themselves in a little Whet neare the High-way, where the Emperour must needs passe, to the end he might behold his Lady *Polynarda*. Palmerin attending her comming who was the only support of his life: his heart leapt with conceit of his Joy to come, yet trembled likewise, because he durst not present himselfe before the Imperiall Majestie, without the Noble Trineus.

Some after, by the Guard of Archers that came soonest, he well perceived the Emperour was at hand: when remembering the honours and labours he had received in his Court, the teares trickled downe his Cheekes, chiefly for want of his Highnesse Sonne, which was so especially committed to his trust. Then followed the Emperesse, and with her the faire Princesse *Polynarda*, clothed all in blacke, witnessing by her outward habit, the secret sorrowe of her heart. Her thoughts still hammering on her private griefes, yet assailed with a suddaine Motion, she gave such a sigh, as Palmerin easily heard it: which troubled him in such sort, as without the assistance of *Olorico*, he had saue dole from off his horse. *Polynarda* beholding his suddaine alteration, without any regard of her Mother, called *Urbanillo* the Dwarf to her: who since his comming from England, never boudged from her, and to him she said. Past thou heretofore (*Urbanillo*) sawe these two Knights, who shadowed themselves in the Wood here, while we passe by? Do trust me *Padour* (quoth the Dwarf) I never sawe them, to my remembrance. I pray thee (said she) ride to them so fast as thou canst, and demand of them from me, of whence they are? And if they can tell any tydings of thy Father, and my Brother *Trineus*. The Dwarf, who was a good Doctor in such like affaires, dissembling that his horse would fall, suffered the Train to passe by, and then rode towards the Knights, who were waiting on the Princesse

Princesse beauty. Palmerin well knowing Virbanillo, and seeing him come in such haste, was not a little glad, thinking now he should heare some newes of his *Spittelle*, wherefore he sent to Olonco. *I pray let us go meet this Postman for I thinke his returne is onely to us.*

Now the Dwarf come to them, and bowing humbly saluted them, *Sir.* *I beseech you faire Knights to tell me whether you belong to the Emperour or are strangers? For the King whom I serve is very desirous to know: and that for matters nearly concerning her, whereof if you can any way truly resolve her, your reward shall answer your some contentment.* What Virbanillo (qd. Palmerin) lifting up his voice: *Doest thou not know thy Master?*

Oh Heaben (quoth the Dwarf) prayd be my Spaker for ever for this Adventure. And moved with extream joy, he fell at his Masters feet, saying: *Oh my Lord, what comfort will this be to the Princesse Polyarda, when she shall understand of your presence? And not without doubt shall cause for by this means is she delivered from the great torments in the world. And that nothing may want to furnish this long expected joy, tell me if the Knight in your company be the Prince Princes or no? It is not he (quoth Palmerin) for it is more then a yeere, since that of him, and the faire English Agnol, (after to it I unfortunately lost them) I heard any certain report. For this cause Virbanillo, it behoves thee to be faithful and secret, not otherwise being my being here to any but my Master: of whom thou shalt learne, by what means I may best come to see her? The Dwarf taking his leave of his Master, turned his horse to be gone, but coming backe suddenly againe, said. *Is this Sir Proleme that is with you? Madam Brionella will not be a little gladd to heare of him likewise.* *I pray the (qd. Palmerin) I tell him in company with the rest.* When he told them over againe (said the Dwarf) *In giving the spurs to his horse, he galloped till he came to the Princesse.**

who seeing him returned in such haste, knew not well what to think: yet fearing to be discovered by a Knight that accompanied her, determined not to request his tidings, untill she came home into her Chamber. But never was poor lover in greater agonie, when she expected her friends in some private place, then was the faire Princess at this present: where as soon as she came to her Chamber, she called for the Dwarf, who being come, she said; *I pray thee Virbanillo, by the reberend dutie thou owest me, whence are the two Knights, & what answer did they make thee? They are such sweet Spadams (quoth the Dwarf) as when all the men in the world could tell no tidings of my selfe by happy fortune, have found: for by them I bring you the Key of Paradise, if your self will but find the means to enter. And I pray thee, quoth the Princess, tell not with me in this sort, for now is no time of sport or merriment: tell me who they are I desire thee? Answer then faire Spadam (quoth he) that one of them is my Mr. Palmerin, who thus concealeth him, because he hath not brought the Prince your Brother with him, and he (humbly kissing your hand) commendeth him to your gracious favour, desiring you to send him answer, how he may secretly speake with you, because he would not be knowne to the Emperour, or any other of the Court. Now welcom these long expected newes were to the Princess, I leave to the opinion of long absent friends. Whereupon (quoth she) doth Palmerin live, and is he near at hand? Now hath my heart his only desired comfort: and such is my hope, that seeing he is come, my brother (by his means) shall not be long hence, to such good fortune as all his actions destin'd. Presently she ran to tell Brionella these newes, who likewise was exceedingly joyfull, because she imagined Palmerins companion to be her Proleme. Whereupon they concluded together, that Palmerin should the Night following come to the Garden, where first his sweet amours were solicited, and by a Ladder of cords he should ascende her Chamber. This resolution*

set downe, the Dwarf departed to execute his charge, when Polinarda thus began to Brionella. Ah my deare Friend, how impossible is it for me to hide the joy my heart concealeth, that was so late in such surpassing heaviness?

What will my Ladies now thinke, when they beholde their Mistress so pleasant? Let them speak what please them (quoth Brionella) shew you render them account of your behavious? Yet thus I thinke, that your discretion is so good, when you have seen the onely comfort for your cares: that you can so well discipline your thoughts, as the most warlike Eye shall hardly discern you. Tell have you said (quoth the Dwarf) if Love could be governed by wisdom: but the pleasure which the wisest have received by his rules, hath in the end discovered their vanity and follie. Such were the speeches betwixt these two Ladies attending all the Night in good devotion, when each one thought to see her Lord and best beloved, that their long separations might somewhat be qualified.

The Dwarf being gone on his message, as you have heard, the Knights reported themselves on the greenegrass till sunne setting, that they might more covertly enter the Citie: and when he came that they would set forwards, Palmerin said to Olimco. My Lord, we will take this by way, which leadeth to the Citie, for I intend to fore I depart, to have some news from my dear Mistress. Doe which may you please (quoth the Dwarf) yet must I needs marvel at you, that you would bee so long absent from such an excellent Maistresse: Trust me Archidani is faire, yet may not she be equall'd with your Lady. The griefes I have endured (said Palmerin) by my long absence, are not to be spoken of: yet could no way compensate my satisfaction. By this time they were come to the Citie, and to a Lodging appointed them by Vibanillo, who being now come to his Master, delivered the message he was commanded. Palmerin understanding his Mistress pleasure,

pleasure, presently unarmed himselfe and wrapped a Scarlet Mantle about him, taking his trusty Sword under his Arme, he intended Olimco to stay there till he returned, or heard further tidings from him, leaving Vibanillo, in his company, with charge to use him as his owne person.

He being come to the Wall's lovely Paradise, found the Ladder ready prepared for him, whereby he made a speedy passage: and finding Brionella, there staying his coming, embracing her sweetly, said. Trust me Love, the want of my Proleme your friend, hath not a little grieved me: but by the grace of God, ere it be long I hope to bring him with me. Ah my Lord (quoth she) right happy is your good coming hither: for your presence hath been here most of all desired. But albeit she set a good countenance on this answer, yet were her secret sorrows innumerable, being deceived of the comfort she expected. Palmerin who thought he stayed too long from his Ladies Chamber; who angrily had thrown herselfe on a pallet, because he stayed to speake with Brionella, then falling on his knee before her, he offered to kisse her hand, which with dissimbling disdaine, she would not suffer him, saying: Truly you shall receive no favour of me, before I know certainly who you are: for I stand in doubt to be deceived, and that you are some other then my Palmerin, seeing you have been so long time from me, and (which is more,) would never vouchsafe to send to me.

When taking a Light in her hand, and earnestly beholding him, hardly could she set it from her againe, when welcoming him with an infinite number of sweet kisses she thus said: How know I well that this is my Palmerin: what Countrey might be so desirable, or fortune so contrarie, that could with her own all change from me? What it might have stood with mine honour, for myselfe to have sought you out: with good will could I have endured the Travail. Yea, much more then you have done for me,

me. How often (considering the dangers of the Sea) hath very death surprized me? And into how many sundry opinions have I fallen? Sometimes to disguise my selfe into a Mans attire, to enter the estate of a Knight Errant, and begin a search which never should have ended, till I found you: For this hath been received for a generall Rule, that by too long sufferance and expectation one may endure a thousand deaths: and think not but the very least of my afflictions, have been of force to deprive my life. Consider that griefe, desire, remembrance, languor, sorrow, hope, suspicion, teares, complaints, and other such like passions common in love, continually beate upon the heart with burning affection, and so such inconvenience their issue growes, as the vitall spirit is chased from the body. For Gods sake Shabam (quoth Palmerin) leave these wounding speeches, and suffer me to take a little life, in beholding that which is no lesse divine than humane, for my affiance deserves not these accusations. When discovered he all his fortunes passed, which drew the Prince to no little admiration, when she said;

What be mine eyes, seeing that by your meanes my Brother Timon is left: for my reborn, and to satisfie your passion to my Lord and Father, you must needs goe into his againe. Whereupon Shabam (quoth Palmerin) but before I begin this Journey, let me knowe that sorrowfull rigour: which is the comfort in love, and another life and Soule together, which heretofore you have granted, and I hope will not now deny me. What may I hope (quoth she) of your constancy since your absence? For not long since I was solicited with a Witch, which told me, that you committed breach of fealty with a Queene, to my no little griefe: although full often I reproved you theretofore, to cause you forsake that sinne, when me thought the Queene thus answered. We then assured Polydore, that although Palmerin esteem these above all other, yet shall

shall he leave some part of his love with me. Hearing these words, I brake forth into teares, wherewith you seemed to be moved, and so forsaking her, followed me: and here with I awaked, finding (indeed) my face besprent with teares, and my heart overcome with insupportable griefe. Palmerin abashed hereat, remembered what entertainment the Queen of Tharsus made him at the Banquet: of her sundry delights and great favours for his arrival, her piercing, amorous, and alluring speeches, wherewith she incessantly did sollicite him: and such was his conceit, as he verily persuaded himselfe, that by enchanted practices she had abused him: whereupon he said, I swear to you Shabam, by the Religions bowes of our Love, that never did I commit such wrong against you: if the Queen of Tharsus, of whom you have spoken, did not one night deceive me by an Enchanted drinke, which unwittingly I received as I sat at supper, causing me to lose both sense and understanding: and so acquainted her with his Dreame that night likewise.

Doubtlesse my Lord (quoth she) considering the extremity of her affection, she practised some meanes to compass her desire: but seeing it fell out in that sort, and believing you would not willingly offend me, I am contented to pardon that fault. In these and such like speeches, they spent that night, and four more afterward, all which time Palmerin was kept unseen in her Chamber: till his departing time being come, when the Prince attyring her selfe in her wonted Mourning Garments, and Chaping her countenance to her former sorrow, showed her pleasures past: and thus we will leave them, returning to our Assyrians dwelling on the Sea.

CHAP. XXIII.

How after the Tempest was past the *Soldans* Armie assembled together, and came against *Constantinople*, where by the Emperours power they were discomfited: and the King of *Balisarca*, his Sonne *Guerefin*, and diuers other great Lords of *Turkie* slaine.



NOW the Tempest (which had throwne *Palmerin* on *Hercules* Pillars, after many long and contagious *kozmes*, began now to cease, the Sea being faire and calme, and the Windes very quiet, whereupon the King of *Balisarca*, Generall of the Armie, in short time assembled together the most part of his fleet, and came upon the Coast of *Natolia*, where he attended the rest of his *flottes* and Gallies. And having there stayed about fiftene dayes, among all the Whippes the long stay whereof caused him to doubt, lest he haue happily perished in the Sea, and overcome with exceeding grieue, he thus began:

O gentle *Palmerin*, the flower of all *Chiballie*, in a lucklesse houre dost thou betake thy selfe to the Sea: what answer shall I make the *Soldane* for the losse of thee, and the Prince *Olorico*, being so especially committed to me trust? Now cannot fortune be so favourable to us as she would: for by thy losse I utterly despaire of expected victorie. To cut off these bootlesse complaints, he was counsell'd by the Lordes, Knights and ancient Captaines, to send forthward to *Constantinople*, to discharge themselves of their promise to the *Soldane*, least in returning without dealing with the enemy, they should be reputed for fearefull and fainehearted Cowards. Setting their sailles to the land at

at length they came to the Bosphor. Now was the Emperour very aged and sickly, hauing altogether committed the superintendence of the Empire, to his Sonne *Caniano*, who had a Sonne aged euentene yeres, named *Cariteos*. And being aduertised of the coming of so many *Assyrians*, *Turkes* and *Moors*, he sent to all the *Christian* Princes for succour: the greater part whereof, was there as now arrived, with resolute determination to welcome these Infidels.

When the Emperours sences had espied the Enemy to enter the Straight, yong *Cariteos* beholding the Knights on all sides, some on the Wallies, and other in the field: came and kneeled before his Graundfather, earnestly desiring him to graunt him his knighthood. For my Lord. he, a better time and occasion cannot be then now. The aged Emperour granted his request, and with the teares in his eyes said. In the name of God, my Son, maist thou recurre thy order, and to the glorious maintenance of the *Christian* faith: albeit thy youth forbids thee to venture so soone.

Presently arose the yong Knight *Cariteos*, and clasping on his Helmet, was the first that went forth of the Citty, accompanied with tenne thousand Horsemen, and twentie thousand Footmen, to hinder the landing of the Enemies: which a great while he did with such valour, as the Haven was changed with the blood of the slayted. The King of *Balisarca* hearing thereof, commanded his Archers to their taske, whose shafts flew so thicke in such multitude, as it were the Mayle that falleth from the Cloudes: and on the other side he got thirty thousand men on Land, who assailed the *Christians* so furiously, as yong *Cariteos* was slaine, and a great number of Noble personages, which was the cause that the *Christians* retired to the very Gates of the Citty. The Prince *Caniano* aduertised of his Sonnes death, & the great danger where-

CHAP. XXXIX.

Now *Palmerin* tooke his leave of the Emperour, his Father and Mother, to follow the search of the Prince *Arion*.



Certaine dayes after the solemnity of this honorable Marriage was ended between *Frytoll* and the young *Princess* of *Hungaria*. *Netrides* likewise gone to the seat of government: all the *Lords* and *Princes* of the Empire, except such as continually abide in the Emperours Court, returned to their owne homes, the like did all the strange *Knights* that came to the *Tournaments*, except the *King* of *Spaine* and the *Lords* of *Macedon*. Wherefore *Palmerin* now rememb'ring his promise to his Lady, and how long he had stayed without at *Constantinople*, determined to depart, and understanding that his Father was with the Emperour, came to them with these speeches.

My gracious *Lords*, it is now thre Moneths and more that I have remained here by your commandement, contrary to the promise that I made my Lady: wherefore (with your leave) I am now determined to depart hence, before the Duke of *Lorraine* returne backe again, that he may assure my Lord the Emperour, that I am gone to seek my Friends. My Sonne (quoth the Emperour) unwilling am I thou shouldst leave us so soon, but if the matter may not be contraited, in respect you are bound to her by faithfull promise, who abideth all other deserbeth loyalty: I myther may not will gainsay you, but in your returne so soon as may be. You shall therefore not lack a good company of *Knights*, who may prevent all further accidents, which your travaile in strange

Coun-

Countries happily may offer: that my heart enjoying life by your presence, may once more see you before my date be expired.

I beseech you my Lord, answered *Palmerin*, grā he not your selfe by my absence, which shall not be long I hope, neyther will the multitude of *Knights* availe in my enterprise, for more by fortune then by force of Armes must the adventure be finished. Doe then as you thinke good answered the Emperour, in meane time I will cause provision for your traine. *Palmerin* having now licence to depart, perswaded *Frytoll* so earnestly as he could, to abide at *Constantinople*, as well for the love he bare his Father *Armid*, as because he was loth to part the new married couple: but all the circumstances he could use, might not perswade him: for his religious vow to his friend, exceeded his affection to the *Princess*, so that for a flat resolution, he answered, that nothing but death should separate their company. *Palmerin* seeing *Frytoll* continue in his former amity, and that the desire which conquers all men, could not prevail in his noble minde: rejoiced greatly therat, determining to recompence his Princely kindness, if fortune did not contrary him in this enterprised journey. And fearing least any new occasion should arise to delay this intent, dispatched presently his Letters to the Emperour of *Almaigne*, and his Lady *Polynarda*, honouring his Highness Ambassadors with many sumptuous gifts. Having now ordered all his affaires, and every one being ready to mount on Horsebacke, he came to bid the *Queen* his Mother farewell: for well he knew, that if he could any way hinder his departure, his journey should be soon prevented. The *Queen* with Motherly love embracing her Sonne, said: Ah my Sonne, hast thou been so short a time with me, and wilt thou now leave me: trust me it is a point of great ungentleness: to deale so hardly with thy mother: but seeing the Emperour and my Lord have given their

P

their

their consent, may gaine say will be to little purpose. And nothing would it abate me to set before chine eyes, the incertainty of fortune, her sleights and trechery, commonly against great persons : when they are in the way to prosperitie, honor and renowne. Wherefore my Sonne, I commit thee to the protection of Heaven, desiring thee to regard mine honor, which by thee ought to be defended, and now may runne in danger of common reproch, in that the vulgar sort judge after their owne humours, not according to the quality and estimation of vertue. For this cause let thy returne be the sooner, as thou tenderest my life and thine owne good.

All which Palmerin promised to doe, and so coming downe into the Court, found there the Emperour and his father mounted on horsebacke, who bare him company two miles from the City : where after many courtesies betwene them, the Emperour and Fiorendos returned to the Court againe, where the Duke of Lorraine stayed their coming, when taking his leave likewise, went aboard and sailed with so good a winde, as in short time he arrived in Almaine, where he was graciously welcomed by the Emperour, and especially by the Princeesse his Daughter, to whom he reported the honourable behavioz of Palmerin, and how he was siveyne Prince of Greece and Macedon. Whereof was she so joyfull: as never could she be satisfied with the discourse, making many demaunds to the Duke, as well of the Triumphs, Tourney and exploits, as also of the marriage celebrated at Constantinople: whereto the Duke returned such fit answers, as nothing wanted to extoll her friends honor, yet with any occasion of jealousy to the Princeesse, whereto ambitious Ladies are commonly subject.

But now returning where we left before, you must note, that Palmerin being departed the Confines of the Emprre, entred his fathers Realmes, where in every City

he was entertained with great triumphing : especially in the City of Hermida, where the Merchant dwelt that was Palmerins Master, for whom he sent, but he was advertised by his Wife, that her Husband was gone to the Sea, and his two Sonnes with him, wherefore he gave her many Rich gifts, and Letters for his Masters free enfranchise and liberty. At his departure from thence, he came to the place where Urbanillo his Dwarfie was borne, whose father was there living a poore ancient Knight, and his sister of as tall stature as Urbanillo, whom Palmerin (at her Brothers request) sent to Constantinople, to his Mother. And for the honor of the Order his Dwarfes father had receyved, he gave him the Village wherein he dwelt, and in the presence of the Macedonians put him in possession thereof, who not a little commended the discrete and liberal minde of the Prince.

From thence he journeyed to the chiefe City of Macedon, where remained the Aged King his Grandfather : but how the Citizens entertained him, and what honourable Triumphs were made at the Court, I list not here sette downe, because it would be more tedious then beneficiall. As for his Aunte the Princeesse Arismena, she at his coming met him in the Base court, with all her Ladies: and as Palmerin fell on his knee before her, to kisse her hand, she stayed him in her armes, saying : God forbid say Palmerin, that the knight of greatest fame in the World, should reverence so simple a Damosell as my selfe : but rather am I bound by duty to honor you, as the man by whose speciall vertues, our Lineage is this day crowned with perpetual memory.

Harpe Aunt (answered Palmerin) if before I knew you to be my fathers Sister, I devoted my selfe to your service, with much more Affection shall I beare to followe it now : Wherefore suffer me (I wote Madam) to kisse your hand, as being the Lady to whom I rest continually bound.

cent. I beseech you my Lord (quoth the Princesse) to pardon me, for never shall a Macedonian Maiden be so repayed, but that she well knowes her duty to her betters. At these speeches came the King of Sparta, the Dukes of Pontus, and Mecena, and the Prince Eustace, whom the Princesse welcomed with exceeding honour. After all courtiers ended, Palmerin sayd.

I vnderstand Madam, that the King your Father is crazed and sickly: if it be so I am very sorry, I pray you thereto let us goe for how his Majestie fareth. When you please my Lord (quoth the Princesse) for I thinke if heretofore he receiues health by you, Fortune may at this time afford the like: and yet (as I haue read) there is no remedy for troublesome age, but onely death it selfe, which is the Gate to Immortality, and eueth all Diseases whatsoeuer. So entred they the Kings Chamber, and the Princesse going to the Bed Chamber to her Father, said: My Lord, for here the good Knight Palmerin your Nephew, may it please you to speake to him, and bid him welcome: Well know I that he is right welcome to your Majestie, were there no other cause then the happy recovery of your former health, which his Adventurous Traveill heretofore brought you.

The good Old King, whom the Pallie caused to shake and tremble: raised himselfe up a little, and beholding Palmerin, with weak and feeble voyce, thus spake. Come neare my Noble Sonne, that these armes halfe dead may embrace thee, and my lips now drie and withered, may once kisse thee before I die. So holding him between his armes, and lifting his eyes to Heauen, said. O my God, for ever be thy name honoꝝ d and praised, in vouchsafing me to see my Sonne before my death. Ah sweet death, the end of all afflictions, and beginning of felicity, now art thou welcome, for beate not thy stroke, in that I haue now seene the honorable defence of my Subjects hereafter, yea such a worthy friend

stand for them, as neuer had they the like. Ah my Son, how dearly ought I to love thee: how gracious hath thy remembrance bene of me: yet feele I myselfe so weak and feeble, no nature cannot prelong my life these daies. Alas, I know not which of vs twaine hath greatest cause for joyce; either the Father seeing his Sonne, even when he is ready to leaue him, or the Sonne finding his Father attending his coming before he giue up the ghost. I hope my good Lord, said Palmerin, that you shall not leaue us so soon, therefore take a good hart, and that no doubt will prelong your life. Alas my Sonne, quoth the King, but welis age hath so weakened my body, and euen dyed by my fatal blood, no longer I may nor liue: and haue not hope to see thee lengthened my languishing daies, thou hast found my body feeble, which yet sustaineth feeble life, onely by thy presence.

Now that I may leaue this world with content, and trouble with better quiet to mine end: tell me (good Sonne) the whole matter concerning thy Father Floren-dos with the perfect discourse of thine owne fortunes. The Palmerin rehearsed every circumstance, both of his Fathers belibery, how he had married the Queene Griana, and in what estate he left them both at his departure.

CHAP. XL.

How the aged King *Primaleon* of *Macedon*, Grand-Father to *Palmerin*, dyed: and how the King of *Sparta* espoused the faire Princessse *Arismena*, Sister to Prince *Florendos*.



At two dayes had *Palmerin* stayed in the Court of his Grand-Father, but the aged King resigned his life to the celestiall powers: for which cause, all the Triumphs ceased, and generall sorrow entertained for the losse of their good King. *Arismena* who so reuerently loved her Father, as in his life time she

would not match in Marriage with any one, because it was his will it should be so: never the less her selfe discontented therewith, but her Father being now dead, she committed the whole affaires of the Realme to the Countie Roldin, one appointed for that office by generall good liking. With such honorable pompe was the funerall Obsequies executed, and the Princessse gracious behaviour therein so especially commended: as the young King of *Sparta* became amorous of her, and discovered his minde to *Palmerin*, in treating him so to favour the cause, as he might make *Arismena* his Queene.

Palmerin very joyfull of the Kings motion, in that he was one of the chiefest Estates of Greece, acquainted his Aunt with the Kings request, and what an honor it was to her to be so matched. For was the Princessse hart so cold by her Fathers death, but seeing the young beautifull King loved her so well, it began to warme againe: so that considering her alone estate, being now in yeares past foure and twenty, she made some excuses by her Fathers late decease,

decease, but *Palmerin* perceived by her modest yielding looks, that the heart consented, although the mouth was loth to utter it. Wherefore the next day they were espoused together, by which means the King was more affected to follow *Palmerin*, as he determined before he came from *Constantinople*: as well for the great kindness he found in him, as for his labour in furthering him with the end of his desires.

Now was the King more importunate on *Palmerin*, to accept him for his Companion in his Travell: who at length condescended, although he imagined, that his Aunt had rather have her new Husband tarry with her. The day being appointed for their departure, *Palmerin* concluded with the King of *Sparta*, that he should send *Arismena* to *Constantinople*, there to stay his returne with her Brother *Florendos*. For her safe conduct thither, all the chiefest Knights that came thence with her were chosen, except *Don Eustace*, Sonne to the Duke of *Mecana*. And *Palmerin* fearing his Morage would be longer then he expected, commanded *Urbanillo* his Dwarf to return to the Queen *Arismena*: and if I stay (quoth he) longer then a yeare from *Constantinople*, go then to *Almaigne* with this Letter to comfort my Lady, and take with thee the Sister, whom I sent to the Queen my Mother.

The Dwarf (although he had rather have gone with his Master, then attend on Ladies) not having again say him, returned with *Arismena*, who in short time after arrived at *Constantinople*, where the Prince *Florendos* very joyfully received her, being not a little contented that she was joined in Marriage with the King of *Sparta*, yet his Fathers death he took very heavily. Who welcome she was to the Emperour, Emperesse, and Queene *Griana*, I doubt not but you can sufficiently imagine, who continually comforted her till her Husbonds returne. Before *Palmerin* departed from *Macedon*, he established all things in

due and decent order, creating the Countie Rouldin Lieutenant General for the Realme: commanding as usual, full obedience to him, as to their Soberaigne Lord the King his father. Afterwards he took order that his Shipping might be ready, because he would delay no longer the search of Tryneus.

CHAP. XLI.

How *Palmerin* and his Companions sayling on the Mediterranean Sea, were taken by *Olimacell*, Admirall to the great Turke: and of their fortunes in *Greece*, where *Palmerin* saved *Layana* the Princesse of *Durace*.



Now Rouldin being established in the Government of Macedon, and the Shipping ready which *Palmerin* had appointed: he went aboard with his boord Friends that would not leave him, viz. Frisoll, the Prince Olorico, the Duke of Pontus, the King of Sparta, and Eustace Donne to the Duke of Mecena. These five having sworn themselves to the search of Tryneus, committed themselves to the mercy of the Winde and Seas, not knowing where they should find Landing. Whiling thus sayled five or seaven dayes together, he was nothing rough or tempestuous: they climbed up to the maine top, to see if they could discern any thing. And as they were debating merrily together, they suddenly espied a great Flotte of Shippes, which with winde at full might apace towards them: but because you shal understand of whence and what they were, attend the sequell and you shall be resolved. the Duke Olimacell, as you have read in the former part of this History, after he had given the Princesse Agriola to the great Turke, con-

ferred into so great credit, as in recompence of his gift, he was made high Admirall of Turkie: so that being renowned for a Knight of peregallie desert, the Turke gave him the charge of his great Army, wherewith he should continually disturb the Christians. This Olimacell was General of this huge Fleet destroyed by *Palmerin*, wherent some what amazed, he called one of the Pilots, demanding if he knew the Ensigne of whence they were. The Pilot had no sooner beheld him, but he patiently said they were Turkes, and no way was there for themselves to escape, because he saw five light Gallies were made out to him, and the rest came mainly upon them. But *Palmerin* as a Prince experimented in dangers, thus spake to his Companions.

Valle Friends, where knightly force or bounty cannot availe, it were worse folly to use it, we are but five, and all in one ill Fall, and farre we cannot flye before we shall be taken: I thinke it best therefore that we use sound dissimulation, and so expect when Fortune will better teach us the way to recover our losse, and revenge us on our Enemies to their confusion. Withdraw your selves, and leave me alone to talk to them, because I can well speake the Arabian language. Yet thinke not that cowardise or feare of death makes me use these speeches: for in an action indivincible, hardynesse and knightly valour will be esteemed as folly and indiscretion. Have then patience, my good Friends, I hope that all shall turne to our good.

As soone he ended his speeches, but he heard the Capitaine command them to yield, or else they should die. Woe: (saith *Palmerin*) that goes very hard: assure us our lives, and we yield, otherwise not. I promise thee, said the Capitaine, neither thou nor thy company shall have any harme. So saying upon the Ship, they brought it to the Admirall Olimacell, presenting to him all the Knights they took thereon: for which he heartily thanked them, saying.

The History of Palmerin D'Oliua.

Tell me Gentlemen and dissemble not, are ye Turke or Christiane? Sir, quoth Palmerin, saying Fortune hath bin so contrary to vs, you shall vnderstand truly what we are. We are Christians and paye knights, searching adventures to gaine honoz and profit, in some Princes service, be he Heathen or Christian. And because we cannot now shew you what we are able to do: so please you to intee vs enjoy our libertie, and graunt vs the benefit of our Armour. We will promise you leuell and faithfull service. Olimaell, who was by nature stern and austere, seeing these few knights so young and brave accomplished persons, imagined their assistance would greatly abate him, wherefore he thus answered, Gentlemen, if you will sweare to me by your faith that you will not depart from me without my licence, but will loyally employ yourselves in what I shall command: you shall have your Armour againe, and I will not vse you as my Slaves and prisoners, but as my honest companions and friends. Which on the they all take to him, wherefore they were immediately Armed againe, and remained in the Valley with Olimaell: who seeing their armour so rich and costly, esteemed them to be of noble blood, and therfore caused them to be very honorable intreated.

So saying on, at length they came nere to the great City of Albania, when Olimaell commanded two or three foyers, to goe vnderstand in what estate the City was: who were advertised by certaine Frenchmen, that the people were vnprohibited of any fortifications, so that winning the Port, the whole City might easily be conquered. These tydings caused them forcibly to enter the Town, where setting on fire the Shippes on fire, they went on shore, and murthering the Warders at the Gates, took the City at the first assault, when Palmerin and his noble friends (to the great sorrow) declared how well they could stand off such assaults. The City thus overcome, and the

Emperour of Constantinople. PART 2.

the chiefest Citizens therein taken Prisoners, the Turke following their foy was, marched further, and came to the City of Durace, where the faire Princesse Laurana abode, of whom Palmerin was sometimes Amorous: when he imagined by her excellent Beauty, that it was she who so often sollicitated him in his Dreames. Palmerin being there come on Land, presently knew the Countrey: wherefore he said to his companions.

I now perceyve deere friends, that Fortune forceth vs from ill to worse: This speake I in respect of this City, against which we must be compelled to fight, and not many yeares since, with the price of my Blood I labored to defend it. But because the Dukes Daughter is as worthy a Lady, as in my heart I reverence and honour: I beseech you every one to employ yourselves, to preserve both her and her Labyes, and demand them of the Kingdome for our part of the spoyle.

Whiles Palmerin thus conferred with his friends, Olimaell vnderstood by certaine Prisoners, that the City was very slenderly defended, and therfore no great matter to winne it quickly. Yet at the first Assault, they were so ballantly repulsed, as Olimaell and his men beganne to be payre of bid: wherefore he made open Proclamation, that he who first Entred the City, should obtaine of him any Boone he would request. Palmerin ioyfull of this promise, caused five strong Scaling Ladders to be raised by against the Wall, wheron he and his friends ascended, and on the Wall cryed, the City is ours: wherewith the people within were so dismayed, having endured a long and furious Skirmish, as they all fledde out at the further Gates. The Turkes then burned the Gates on the Sea side, and entering the City, put olde and young to the sword. But Palmerin and his companions feigning to pursue them that fledde, ranne strait to the Pallace, at the entrance wherof they found many foyers, who had taken the Duke, where

for he went to find the Princesse Laurana, who sat in her Chamber, still more dead with griefe, because he heard that his Father was slaine. But he couched to the assistance of the King of Spaine, Frycoll, Olimco, and others, desiring them to conuoy the Princesse, in that manner the other Ladies should fall into the Tyrants power: and so coming to Olimell, on his knee he began in this manner. You know my Lord the promise you made to day, by vertue whereof, because I first got over the wall into the Citie: for my sake I request the Dukes Daughter, and for my friends that followed me, her Ladies and Gentlewomen, for other spoils of the riches and treasure we desire not.

Olimell granted his demand, charging his people on paines of their liues, not any way to offend the Ladies. In this manner was the Princesse saved, whereupon the Duke of Pontus presently went to her, and taking her by the hand, acquainted her with these joyfull newes, whereupon she thus replied. Can it be possible that Palmerin, who heretofore ventured his life in my fathers defence, against the Countie Passaco of Meccena, should now become so familiar among Turks and Moors? What he so forgot his hono^r to God, that himselfe is not only a vassall to the enemies of his faith, but also likewise takes their assistance against Christ Jesus? Be silent good Madame, answered the Duke, for if his name be knowne we all perishe: what hath bene done, is for the safety of your life, and our liues likewise, which he hath obtained of the Generall of the Army.

With these words she was somewhat pacified, and the old sisters of iove, which now began to spread abroad, ceased her telling this answer. In sooth my Lord, said I am become Palmerins prisoner, I thinke my honour in better assurance: and my fathers death is the lesse grievous to me, in that this matter may serve to better effect then

then I can conceiue. By this time was Palmerin come to her, who entreated her to keepe all things secretly, for he would endure a thousand deaths, before she should be any way dishonoured. In time (quoth he) we may be delivered from these v^{er}tythonds, as for you and your Ladies, the Emperall hath openly commanded that you be reverently v^{er}ied.

Altho^u and thanks my Lord, quoth the Princesse, and saying matters are so come to passe, yet doe I reioyce that I fall into your power. The Citie of Durace left in the same state as Albania was, the Turkes went abroad, taking no part thence but Laurana and her Ladies, whom Olimell intended to take to the great Turke. So passing along the Coast of Thracia, they spoiled many Citties on the shore, took the King and many Noble men: so that no other way stood open for a number of Christian prisoners. Now Olimell rememb^red, that the Christian Princes beinge when he was in their dominions, would rise against him, wherefore he gave charge to the Turkes, for their course towards the Citie of Durace, then the great Turke kept his Court.

Some time before these daies before his taking, the Emperour (who was great with Child) to one of his Ladies (who had beene journey from the Sea: but when she was in the Emperours womb, the griefe she conceived, caused her presently to fall in trouble, when she was delivered of a lovely Daughter, named Francelina. At this time the three Magical Sisters, who appeared to Palmerin on the Mountain Artificia, and one of them afterward in his going to Buda: made their abode in an Isle thereby named Carderia. When they (by their hidden Philosophy) heard how the King was taken, and should be kept in perpetuall prison, without the helpe of his Daughter which was newly borne: they concluded to frame such an enchantment

The History of *Palmerin D'Olive*.

chantment, as murther the Turke and his power, as he that would not deigne to kisse his shewe, should be delivered from imprisonment. Hereupon the youngest of these three Sisters went to the Castle where the noble Duke remained, where she was very honourably entertained: because the Duke desired to know, if the King her Husband was dead or alive, and if any hope might be expected of his deliverance.

The Damoiselle Enchantresse advertised the Duke, that in departing with her Daughter *Francelina*, the King her Husband should enjoy all liberty, and in time to come, she should be married to one of the best Knights in the world.

We neede not doubt that the Duke was hereat amazed, yet the love of the Mother to her Infant, cannot conquer the Love of the Wife to her deare Husband: which among all Loves is the most honest and loyal: So that in hope to see him againe, on whom depended her wealth and welfare she gave her Child to the Damoiselle, intreating that she might be bred as beloved the daughter of a King and as the sweete beauty of the Infant deserved. She returning to *Candaria*, with the Child, made her Sisters very joyfull by her coming, who there nourished the Infant till she was three yeares old: when the beauty of the young Princeesse began to shew it selfe, as faire *Cynthia* doeth among the Starres.

So she was the Sisters enclose her in a strong Tower, made of rufuse for young *Francelina*, wherein was the most goodly Garden in the world: there was she attended by her Nurses, and five waiting Gentlewomen: and such Enchantments were imposed in the Tower, as no man should ever see her, but she be the best Knight of his time. The Entrance into the Tower was very strait and narrow, barred by a great Gate of Iron and charged by two furious Lyons. Over the Gate stood a huge image of Copper, holding a mighty Pace of Steele, wrought

Emperour of *Constantinople*. PART. 2.

wrought by such cunning, as if any might but he that was determined to end the adventure, should assay to enter, hardly might he escape to returne againe. Moreover, the conquerour should not deigne the first demands of the Princeesse, which was the deliberance of her Father: and for this cause the Sisters enchanted the faire *Francelina*, whose history we must yet see, proceeding where we left before.

Olimacell being thus on the Sea, laden with Christian spoiles and prisoners, at length entered the port of the great City of *Tubant*: where he made such a cheerefull noyse of Drummes, Trumpets, Clatons and Cornets, as though the greatest Monarchy in the world had come to take landing. The great Emperour marvelling at this suddaine melody, sent one of his Knights to understand the cause, who being certified by *Olimacell*, what great victories he had obtained against the Christians and the number of prisoners he brought with him returned, to the Pallace, where he told his Lord that the Admirall *Olimacell* was come, and had brought with him great spoiles from the Christians, where among which he is a Christian King in personne, many worthy Knights and Gentlemen, and a young Princeesse of incomparable beauty. Not a little joyfull was the Emperour at these newes, whereto coming into his great Hall, where the imperiall seates of many Kings are erected, himselfe sat downe in the one, and faire *Agriola* of England in the other, expecting the coming of *Olimacell*: who in triumphant manner set forth with his prize, habed mounted on a lusty Carrier unaptuously caparisoned, and adbaunting his sword by a side in signe of victory. Being come to the Pallace, *Olimacell* saluted his Lord with great reverence, standing by him to make report of his conquest, and make present of his prisoners after their estate and calling.

First he caused all the riches to be brought, and all the meanest

meanest captiues one after another to his the great King's
 taste: then commanding them to be carried thence, he
 gan in this manner. It is not to be doubted, most high and
 mighty Monarch, that this victory gotten on the Christians,
 enemies to our Lord, hath both obtained unto your
 Majesty: therefore it is great reason, that to the honour
 and praise of his Majesty, the great and chief honour
 should be done. The buttes hereof are the true mes-
 sent, and their regions abounding your mercy: who from
 the very meanest to the highest, shall handle the felices
 at your Majesty's taste. When every man had done
 their reverence, and the King of Thedalia should next fol-
 low, who though his knees were prone and behind him,
 yet had a Crown of Gold on his head: shew what he
 was although he was himselfe in the Thedants power, and
 Olimacell had commanded him to kiss his shoulders sweete,
 hololy made this answer. For will I so much displease my
 God, by touching Thedalia: thou art in such sort to abuse
 myselfe, being a King, & a man of justice to faith-
 full Christians: to kiss the feet of the most filthy and un-
 cleane creature in the world: retaining the brotherhip which
 I owe to my maker. It is in thy power to take my
 life from me: but not to constrain me to do the thing where-
 in consists my damnation, and a thousand deaths I will
 endure, before I will do more as in thought to thee. Agri-
 olaine (quoth the Admirall) do not thou speake so basely
 in the presence of my Lord: did not my regards of
 him withhold me, I would I separate thy caried head
 from thy shoulders. With these words he gave the King
 such a blow on the face, as made him fall on his knees to the
 ground.

At this point, quoth the King, well hast thou shewne
 the nature of a villaine, that without command speakest a
 King captive, and imprisoned of thines: but might it so
 please the Lord, in open field will I prove thee a dog-
 all

all and unchristened Curie, that thus abusest the blood roy-
 all. The great Turke seeing the King so moved and angry,
 the blood likewise trickling from his nose and mouth: com-
 manded him to be carried thence, to one of the strongest
 Castles in Natolia, where he should be enclosed without a
 me company, that this captivity might be the more grie-
 vous to him.

When the King of Thedalia was departed, Palmerin
 approached, leading the Princess Laurana by the hand, he
 and his five companions being Armed, except their Hel-
 mets, Gantlets and Swords: whereat the great Turke
 marveling, demanded of Olimacell why he suffered them
 to be Armed? My Lord, quoth he, these five Knights were
 the first prize I took, who (after they had given me their
 oaths) have done such service to your Majesty, especially
 this, pointing to Palmerin, one of the best Knights that ever
 I saw: as full well do they deserve liberty, which in re-
 compence of abandoning their lives in your service, under
 your high correction, I promised them. By this time,
 answered the great Turke, for thy sake I likewise confirme
 it, and if hereafter they will abide with me, I will make
 them greater then ever they were. While the Turke was
 making these promises, Agriola having well noted Palme-
 rin, knew him, and with the suddaine conceit thereof was
 ready to swoon: but staying her selfe on her Chayre, sayd.
 Diuine bounty, who is this? are not mine eyes deluded and
 my thoughts beguiled? At these words Palmerin knew
 her, which before he did not, by reason of her strange dis-
 guised apparell: yet thought he best to conceale his in-
 ward joy, least crooked Fortune should now againe pre-
 vent him.

The great Turke seeing Agriola look so pale and wan
 started from his Chayre, and taking her in his armes,
 said. Alas Madam, hath any suddaine ill befallen ye? both
 any one in this company offended ye? by our Gods if I
 know

know him, presently should he die the death. The Prince trembling with feare, seeing Hippolyta was not present, spake thus in English. What tell me Lord and Madam Trincus say, if he be in this company, seeing I have so long ago forsaken him, and thus (though God knowes perforce) in state of sin, have taken the enemy to him and out with? For one can not have I that this misdeed hath not carnally hurt me, for which protection I thank the heavenly Majesty. At these speeches Palmerin was so glad, as the feare of death could not with-holde him: but in the same language he thus answered.

Feare not good Madam, Trincus is not in our company: but so please you to say I am your Brother, you may happily save my life, and practise your deliberance. The Turks miscounting by Palmerins perswasading, that he had caused this suddaine alteration: imagining him to be her Husband of whom he had heard her talke so often, in a great rage sayd, to night, how durst thou presume my Ladies presence, knowing the sight of thee would any way displease her: By the Worth of Mahomet thou shalt immediately die, that all such audacious villaines may take an example by thee.

Agriola knowing the Turks cruelties were very pernicious and commonly no sooner said then executed, embracing him thus replied. Oh my Lord, doe not the thing in haste, for which afterwards you will be sorry, for I assure you on my honour, the knight that spake to me is my Brother, and hath left his Countrey onely to find me: and him now I love so effectually, as if you put him to death, imperillle to it for me to live afterward. When the Turks heard her speake with such affection, qualifying his anger, said, I promise ye Madam, for your sake, he shall have no harme, but be entertained with love and honour: conditionall ye, that you forget this melancholy, and henceforth shew yourselfe more pleasant, for in seeing you I am more

grieved

grieved, then if I had lost y most of my dominions. In saith my Lord answered Agriola, now shall I be merry, seeing you intend to love my Brother, for greater good cannot happen to me then his gentle entreatance: and henceforth shall I treade under scote, the said remembrance of my Countrey & parents, having him with me, by whom I hope to gaine my greatest comfort. So the Turks arising from his Chayre, caused Palmerin and Laurana to accompany Agriola, and the other five Knights having kissed his hand: he went to his Chamber, commanding Olimell (for his greater honour) to shew Agriola, where as he went, thus spake.

Believe me Apraxall, if I was offended when thou broughtest me Prisoner hither: thou hast now made me sufficient amends, in that by this I enjoy my Brother, whom I was out of all hope to see againe. Alas Madam, (saith he) little did I thinke him to be such a one, for had I: his blage should have been much better which fault I hope hereafter to recompence. I commend him to thy courtship, said Agriola, let him and his friends have all things they want, according as my Lord hath appointed. So taking her leave of them, she entred her Chamber, where she and Hippolyta conferred with Laurana, of all her fortunes passed, and the adventures of her Brother. Now was Palmerin and his companions, by the Turkes commandement, lodged nere the Wallace, and to each of them he sent a goodly house with costly furniture, thinking by these means to conquer Agriola, and purchase that of her which he long had desired, and talking with Palmerin, said. Right well may you be Brother to my Lady Agriola, in that your beauty and complexion bestows great likelihood: seeing that our Gods have permitted, that for her comfort you should be brought hither: perswade her I pray ye, that she be no longer repugnant to my will, for could I be her a Child by her, I would think my selfe the happiest Lord on the earth.

Beste, I would have you forsake the folly of your Chastity, and give your selfe to our Law, which is much better then yours: and you shall see how our Gods will favour you, likewise what great good you shall receive thereby. My Lord (quoth Palmerin) I will labour with my Sister, so much as lies in me to do, as for your Law as yet I am not acquainted therewith: but when I shall finde it to be such as you assure me, easily may I be drawn thereto, and to serve you with such loyalty, as so great an estate doth worthily deserve. I confesse my selfe likewise greatly bound to your Majesty, in that you have accepted my Sister as your Wife, and to me a poor slave given both Life and Liberty, which I beseech you also grant the Partners, in whose Well it was my chance to be taken. In so doing they may be greatly moved by your magnificent liberality and mercy.

The great Turke presently gave his consent, causing theyr safe Conduct to be openly proclaimed: So Palmerin and his Friends humbly departing to their Lodging, the Turke went to Agriolacs Chamber, where sitting downe by her, he thus beganne. Now shall I perceive Madame, how much your Brother may prevaille with you: For he hath promised me so to order the matter, as you shall grant my long desired sute. My Lord (quoth she) my Brother shall command me nothing, but I will do it with all my heart: as for your request, it is not in my power, but in the hand of God, who defendeth me as best him pleaseth. Nor can I change the opinion I have held so long: though by having my Brother with me, I enjoy farre greater content then I did before.

It sufficeth me (said the Turke) to see you so well pleased, and as for your Brother, that you may perceive how well I love him: before one Moneth be expired, I will make him the chiefest Lord in my Court, next mine owne person: so kissing the Princesse, he departed to his Chamber.

ber. The day following, Palmerin said to his companions, You see my friends, how friendly Fortune smileth on us. but least she change, as evermore she is wont: we must, practise some good means to escape from these Turkish Incidents. Better, seeing we have found the Princesse Agriola I hope Tryneus is not so secretly hidden, but we shall heare some tidings of him. Of her therefore will I enquire, if she know what became of him & Ptolome, when I left them: in meane while you may closely conclude with our Partners, that they be ever ready at an hours warning, for I hope we shall see hence before eight daies be past. Palmerin went to Agriolacs Chamber, and there by good hap he found her alone: whom after he had humbly saluted, the Princesse thus spake to him. My noble friend, you must be carefull how you spake to me, especially before the aged Lady you saw here yesterday, for she understandeth all languages, and if we be discovered, there is no way but death: therefore when you see her with me; conferre rather with Laurana, and say to her what you would have me know, because she is a Lady both vertuous and faithfull. No lesse (Madame) have I alwaies thought her, quoth Palmerin: therefore I beseech you make account of her, and acquaint her with your greatest affaires, for she is Daughter to one of the most gentle Princes in the world. But Madame, I would gladly know what became of Tryneus, after that so unhappily I departed from you. The Admirall Olimaest, quoth she, came with his Gallies so soon as you were departed, who took us and then separated us in sunders: scant permitting me to spake to him as Ptolome, nor know I what is become of them. It sufficeth then Madame, answered Palmerin, that I have found you, for on you dependeth the life of Tryneus, who shall not long (I hope) be concealed from us: therefore advise your selfe on the day when you will depart, for I have a ship ready to carry you from this servitude. Thanks be to heaven, quoth

The History Of *Palmerin D'Oliva*

the, for so good fortune, I will be so ready as you shall not stay for me. *Palmerin* entred *Hyppolita*, who brake off their talke on other occasions, where we will leave, and returne to the *Prince Trineus*.

CHAP. XLII.

How *Tryneus* being Enchanted into the shape of a Dog in the Isle of *Malfada*, there came a Princess of the *Moors*, who requested him of the aged Enchantresse, to whom he was given: and what happened to him afterward.

THinke as yet you remember, without repetitions of the former discourse, in what manner the Knight, Cosen to the Admirall *Olimacell*, to whom the *Prince Trineus* was given: arrived by Tempest in the Isle of *Malfada*, and how he with his people, were transformed into divers Kindes of Beasts, among whom *Tryneus* had the likeness of a goodly Dog. Being thus disguised, a young Princess named *Zephira*, Daughter to the King of the same Countie, came to demand counsell of the aged Enchantresse *Malfada*, for the cure of a certaine Disease, which by strange adventure happened to her in this manner.

This young Princess one day being pleasant in her Fathers Court, among many of her waiting Ladies: entred a goodly Garden, which abounded with great variety of sweet flowers, and after she had walked a pretty while in an *Arbour* of *Musk-roses*, she espied a Cilley flower, which seemed so faire and beautifull in her eye, as she was provoked to goe crop it from the stalk. Having this delicate flower in her hand, wherein (by misfortune) a venomous worme was crept, she took such delight in smelling

it: as her breath drew by the worme into one of her Nostrils, not being able to get it out againe. So the venom and poison of this little worme engendred a putrefaction, and other like *Ulcernes*, which gave a smell so filthy and loathsome, as hardly could any abide to stand by her. Her Father not a little agrieved at this mischance, sent for the most skilfull Physicians, to know what remedy might be concluded upon: but all their pain and travell was in vain, for the Disease continued still without any amendment. In the end, the King fearing it would turne to a Canker incurable, and having heard what strange things the Enchantresse *Malfada* performed, sent the Princess *Zephira* to her, where she being arrived without any danger, because she would not hurt any inhabiting in the Isle, declared to the Sorceresse the whole manner of her misfortune.

The Enchantresse answered that she could give her no remedy, and hard should she. Rude any at all, except it were by an ancient Knight, who remained in the Court of the King of *Ramara* and *Grisca*, a valiant Subject to the Soldan of *Persia*: and the Knight was named *Muzabelino*. The Princess was so displeased at this answer, seeing her intent frustrated, as she would receive no succour: wherefore, walking in the fields, to expresse her anger, and so to the Sea-shore, where the Ships lay confused, she beheld the Dog which was the *Prince Trineus*, and so farre in liking was she with him, as she desired the Enchantresse to give him her, and having obtained her request, returned to her Father, who lay sicke in one of his Cities called *Nabor*, whereof the whole Kingdome bare the name.

When the King saw his Daughter returned without cure, his melanchallie conceit so took to his hart, as within three dayes after he dyed. Having made his Testament before his decease, he gave his Daughter as her portion a

Citty called Elain, one of the greatest & surest strengths in the Realme, with all the Signories belinging thereto. So Maulerino his youngest Sonne, he gave an other like position, which was a daies journey distant from Elain. After the Kings Funerall rites were solemnized, the Princesse with her Brother Maulerino, went to their owne possessions: doubting the fury of the Prince Tyreno, their Close Brother, who alwaies had shewne himselfe proud and contentious.

She being thus in good quiet by her selfe, tooke no other pleasure then in playing with her Dog, becaus he seemed very subtil and politique, so that she prepared a Couch for him at her Bedside. Tyreno being crowned King after his Fathers deceasse, began greatly to despise that his Sister should enjoy the fairest Citty in the Kingdome: For which cause he cunningly practised all the meanes he could to put her to death. And that he might the better compass his mischievous purpose, he secretly sent a Messenger to the Master of the Princessees Horses, that if he would but consent to kill or poison his Brother and Sister, he would give him fifty thousand Mervaphes, and make him Governour of Elain. The wicked Noble man, greedy and covetous, seeing the large promise of the Tyrant, consented thereto: so that one night the Princesse being asleep, he entered her Chamber with his Sword drawne, there to have murdered her, and afterward the Prince her Brother.

Tryneus, who had lost nothing belonging to a man, but nobly shape and voice, seeing the Traytor enter his Ladies Chamber with his Weapon drawne, started up presently, and setting his two foefete on the Villains breast, bit him so cruelly by the face and throat, as he being unable to help himselfe, was constrained to cry out aloud. With this noise the Princesse awaked, and her Brother likewise, who lay in the next Chamber, coming in haste to see the cause of this outcry: and knowing the Traytor, beat him so sore with the

the pommel of his sword about the stomach, as in the end enforced him to confesse his Treason. Whereat Maulerino not a little marveling, and wrathfull at his villainous intent, smote his head from his shoulders. In the morning he appointed such guard in the Citty, as no stranger might enter without great examination. The Princesse knowing how her Dog had saved her life, loved him afterward so tenderly, as she would feed him at her owne Table, and none but her selfe might give him any food. Here will he likewise pursue a while, and declare the deliberance of the Princesse Agriola.

CHAP. XLIII.

How the great Turk became enamoured with the Princesse *Laurana*, by meanes whereof he was slaine, and *Agriola* delivered.



Almerin being upon a day in his Chamber with his companions, practising some meanes for the deliverance of Agriola the Princesse Laurana of Durace, came to them, framing her speeches in this manner. Gentlemen, if any of you be desirous to deliver us from this cruell enemy, who holds us in this thral and bondage: I have devised the best meanes that may be, and thus it is. The Turke, the most luxurious and unchaste man in the world, not contented with infinite number of Concubines, hath many times made love to me, so that to compass mine intent, I have made him promise within three daies to graunt his request. In this time I have intreated the Princesse Agriola to shew him the most disdainefull countenance that may be, which she hath faithfully promised, and for this cause hath sent me to you, conwaye hence

hence all the riches he hath giuen ye, and which he her
seife will likewise send ye: so that when the houre is come
for me to fulfill his pleasure, one of you being privately ar-
med, shall in my place murder him, in rebeuge of the ill
Christendome hath sustained, by the last unhappie voyage
of Osmell, who determined very shortly, as I under-
stand, to goe spagle the Ill of Rhodes. Palmerin being glad
of the Princesse notable intencion, thus answered. Be-
cause (O Adam) I lately promised the Turke, not to de-
part his Court, but to keepe him company, when he desired
his Adventall, that I and my companions should goe with
him to the Rhodes: I cannot be the man to end this wo-
thy revenge, therefore one of you (my friend) must re-
solve to performe it. In meane while, you O Adam Lau-
rana may returne to the Turke, pleasing him with faire
and friendly speeches: for if never so little suspition be gi-
thered, not one of us can escape with life. Feare not, said
the Princesse, I will be the matter so carefully as you can
desire, right well know I how to enflame his hart with
queint looks, coy disdaines, feint poydings, and other such
like ceremonies used in love: as feare not you to prosecute
the stratageme, in that a beginning so good, must needs
lead to a successe end. The young Duke of Pontus, who
began to grow affectionate towards the Princesse Lau-
rana, said.

In faith my Lord, so please you to commit the charge
hereof to me: so will hope I to execute the same for her
sake that do so woefully intomb it, as I dare warrant to
deserve no reproch thereby. For my first carrell to gentle
Love, shall be so gracious, as in qualifying the valiant
heart of our enemy, I will winne me selfe her to love as
no other: and her faith received, if I bring not his head to
O Adam Laurana, let me be accounted as one of the worst
worthless knights that ever bare Armes. Robertise me
therefore of the place and helpe, and doubt not of my faith-
full

full performance. At this pleasant answer they all began to
smile, whereupon Palmerin thus spake. Behold me noble
Duke, considering your youth and brave disposition, I know
no one in this company more meet for the Princesse Lau-
rana, then you are: but I thinke when the appointed houre
shall come, you will be a little more angry with the Turke
then her, if she have you in that subjection as it seemes she
hath. Yet let us not now trifle the time in vaine, when
such weightie occasions commandeth our diligence.

So returned Laurana to the Princesse Agriola, acquaint-
ing her with the knights determination, when not long
after, the great Emperour entred the Chamber, accompanied
with Palmerin and the King of Sparta, and that he might
the better speake to her he so earnestly desired, he caused
Palmerin to sit betwene him and Agriola, then turning
to Laurana, he began to devise familiarly with her. Which
when Palmerin and Agriola perceived, the better to be-
galle him, he made a signe to the King of Sparta, that he
would enter into some talke of hunting: whereat the Turke
presently arose, and taking Laurana by the hand, led her to
the window, with these speeches. Mistress of my heart, and
the very fairest creature that ever mine eyes beheld, will
ye grant the request I made to you yesterday? Do you
not what great honour I have done to O Adam Agriola?
Notwithstanding, if you will love me, I will make you my
wife, that I may have issue by you to succeed in my King-
dome, and your honours shall be nothing inferiour to hers.
And though she still deny me the favour, which with long
and continuall persuite I have desired: yet doe you con-
sider my griefe, and in the first time you benchsafe me no pre-
ty, the extreame afflictions I endure for your love, are ra-
ted at the price of my life. And for this, quoth Laurana, that
so great a losse should come to the Orientall Empire by
me, rather will I forget the accustomed regard of mine ho-
nour, to be accepted into your grace and favour. And the
cause

cause that made me deferre so long from this answer, was the feare I haue of Madamo Agriola, and her Brother, to whom I was giuen by your Admirall after my Fathers decease.

What to the end my Lord, that none of them may suspect our love, I thinke it convenient that Hyppolita, who alwayneth in your Chamber: remove her selfe to the Ladies attending on Agriola, and her shall you commaund to geue me the key of my Ladies Chamber, which hitherto she hath vsed to carie. By this meane may I the more safely, and without suspition of any one, come in the night to fulfill your desire. The Turke imagined he had gained the Princesse his love: and was not a little ioyfull wherefore he said.

Sweete Lady, you shall haue the key as you request. nor shall she longer lodge in my Chamber, when you feare so much. Moreover, this night will I perswade Agriola, that I sale my selfe not halfe curiant: and therefore to keepe her selfe in her owne Chamber, and so may you come boldly to me this night. If any one chaunce to meete you, say, that I sent for you: and if they dare be so bold as to hinder your coming, in the morning shall my Janizaries put them to death, whatsoever they be. So taking a Ring from his finger, wherein was a stone of inestimable value, he gaue it to the Princesse, saying. Hold Madame, take this as a pledge of my promise: for which Laurana humbly thanking him, thus replied. My Lord, I see Agriola hath foure or fve times earnestly noted you, I thinke it good therefore that we speake of talke: assuring you that I will not faile at midnight, when ebery one is fast asleep to keepe my word, and in the Mantle which you sent me yesterday, I will courtly enter your Chamber, conditionally that you keepe your promise to me afterward.

Doubt not thereof, said the Turk, and so taking his leaue of her, went presently to his Chamber, where finding Hyppolita

Hypolita, he commaunded her to take thence her Bed, and carie it to the Ladies Chamber, likewise taking the key from her, he sent it by one of his Pages to Laurana, who having it in hand, came laughing therewith to Palmerin, saying.

How say you my Lord, haue I not handled the matter as it should be? The Turke moved with pittie of our strait imprisonment, hath giuen me the charge of Madam Agriola: so by his Page hath he sent me the key of her Chamber, and Hypolita shall lodge now among other Ladies. And because this night the action must be fulfilled, doe you aduertise the Duke of Pentus, that at midnight he faile not to come, to see drunken Holofernes as he hath deserved. Palmerin and the King of Sparta, praising God that their affaires went forward so luckily: returned to their Lodging, intreating Agriola to be ready at the heure, that their intent might not be hindered by her. Afterward they rehearsed to their companions, what was concluded by the Princesse Laurana: wherefore quoth he to the Duke, prepare to bring your Armour secretly to Agriolacs Chamber, where you shall finde the King of Sparta and my selfe. Meane while, Frytoll, Olonco and Eustace, see that all our Baggage be conuayed into our ship, which may safely be done without suspect, considering what great multitude of Souldiers are Embarking, and therefore provide all things ready against our coming. The heure being at hand, Palmerin, the King of Sparta, and the Duke of Pontus, went to the Princesse Chamber, where the Duke was immediately armed, except his Helmet, which he left on the Table, covered with the mantle wherof Laurana spake, putting on the Attire the Princesse wore vpon her head, and so finely was he disguised in those habits, as in the dark he might be reputed rather a woman than a man. And being ready to depart about the practise, he said to Palmerin. I thinke it best my Lord, that you and the King of Sparta, conduct

condemned the Ladies before to the Doore: so if in mine attempt, I should happen to faile, yet should you loose but the worst in your company. So importunate was he with them to follow his advice, as he caused them to depart presently to the Haven, where they were joyfully welcomed by F. Roll, and the rest, without murthering any by the way to hinder them. When the Duke saw himselfe lost, long, yet not he was to oppose himselfe to his intent, satisfying on his love be their fate.

Some Changeling suffered the mighty Holofernes to be beheaded by the Merchant Judith: afford me at this time the like grace, and give me strength to worke his death, who is my greatest living enemy to Christians. This said, he went to the Duke's Chamber, where he found the doore already open, and approaching the bed: the Duke (who being thought it was Lamina) raised up himselfe, and taking him by the arme, said. Welcome sweete Lady, so very long have I expected the coming. Ah Traytor, quoth the Duke, I am not he thou lookest for, regard of honour will not suffer her to staine in such sort. With which words he stabd him to the heart, and smiting off his head, reposed it in the Gentle that Laurana gave him: so going to Agriolus Chamber, and clasping on his helmet, went present to his friends, whom he found in prayer for his good success, and shewing the head into Laurana's lap, said.

W. name, he that was so importunate for your dishonour, and a witness of his love to you, hath sent you his head here by me: wherewith I present you so devoutly, as henceforth I dedicate my life & service to your disposing. At these words, quoth the Princesse, this becometh not but make me so constantly to be yours: as to say so much, it toucheth not the impeach of mine honour. I will strive with my uttermost endeavours to pleasure you. As the Duke would have replied, the other knights came to

look

look on the head, which when they had cast into the Sea, they presently boiled satie, and before day had gotten sarre enough from thence.

In the morning, as the Parriners came from their Colleges towards the City, they cipped the head floating on the water, and taking it up, shewed it to their companions, to know if they could tell whose it was. When they beheld it so dreadful, the mustachoes streaming out like stiffe bushes, and the locks of haye hanging downe, they knew not what to thinke: and one of them having well marked it said:

By all our Gods, if I be not deceived, this is the head of my Lord the great Duke: at which words all the other began to seeze and wecke. Hyppolita seeing faire Phobus let forth the morning light, came to the Princesse Agriolus Chamber, where not finding her nor Laurana, the chamber likewise spoiled of many things: she doubted immediately that they were fled, wherof to be resolved, she went to the great Duke's chamber, and seeing the Pages standing at the doore, said; Why enter ye not? the houre is past, and my Lord is not yet risen. Lady, quoth they, as yet he hath not called vs, and you know that yesternight he forbade our entrance till we were called: it may be he slept but badly this night, and therefore now is contented to take his rest. I feare, quoth she, some other matter then sleepe doth hinder his calling you, so throwing open the doore, and entering the Chamber, saw the blood dispersed on the ground, and the headlesse trunk hanging before the bed, with which sight she made a very pittifull outcry, wherant many noble men and Gentlemen came, who having beholding what had happened, joined with them in sorrowfull complaints. Some was the report of this murder blazed through the City, so that Olimaell hearing thereof, ranne thither in all haste: where he found no souldier present, but Hyppolita thus began. Ah Olimaell, thou broughtest

broughtest the traitors hither, that have slain my Lord, and by the means hath this Treason been committed. By all our Gods, said one of the Turks Nephewes present, it is true: but because thou hast suffered Agriola, her Brother and the other Knights to escape, thou wiltain shalt abide it dearly. So driving forth his Semitarr, killed Olimaell therewith, saying. Such be their reward that traiterously betray their Sovereignes: mine Uncle of a worse Faunt made thee his chiefest Admirall, and thou for his kindnesse hast requited him with death, but now thy Challenge is doubly recompensed.

Olimaell the slaine, his men ranne furiously on the Turks Nephew, and slew him, with fifty Knights beside that defended his quarrell: and had it not been for an ancient Wassa, who with an hundred Souldiers came to part them, they were in danger of a greater sedition, because they saw none pursue Palmerin and his Companions.

The Wassa that had thus pacified the tumult, by promises perswaded the Fauntines, and prevailed so well with them: as the same day he was declared venger Brother to the Soldane deceased, and great Emperour of Turkie. Many injuries did he to Chastendaine afterward, in revenge of his Brothers death: which yet we will sojourn, to rehearse what happened to Palmerin, and his Companions, being on the Sea.

CHAP. XLIII.

How Palmerin and his companions met two Turkish Ships, from whom they delivered Estebon the Merchant and his Sonnes: and came to the Isle of Malta, where Palmerin lost them all, and of the sorrow he made for this mishap.



Aurana was so joyfull, that she had so fortunately escaped the Turkes hands, and beside was so revenged of her chiefest enemy, as nothing could yield her greater contentation: but how much more would she have rejoiced, if she had knowne the slaughter at the Wallace?

As she sat discoursing heron with Palmerin and the Duke of Pontus, Erisoll being aloft on the decke, espied foure Shippes comming towards them with full saile: whereupon he called to his companions, that they should presently arme themselves. For (quoth he) I see two Robbing Shippes, and they have taken two other, or else my indgement faileth: let us therefore labour to withstand them, lest we runne a further danger.

Sooner had he spoken these words, but they all put themselves in readinesse, so that when the enemy closed with them, and many entred the Ship, thinking it was needed: they had a sharper entertainment then they expected, for not one escaped alive that came aboard, but either were slaine or throwne into the Sea. In briefe, they overcame both the Pirats, and left not one alive to carry tybings hereof into Turkie. Afterward, as Palmerin searched the Cabins, to see what Prisoners the Swozes had taken: he espied his Waffer Estebon, the Merchant of Hermida, and his two Sonnes by him, with two other Merchants